I, WHO

FOREWORD BY SYLVESTER McCOY

THE UNAUTHORIZED GUIDE TO DOCTOR WHO™ NOVELS

LARS PEARSON

I, Who

The Unauthorized Guide to the Doctor Who Novels

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photography, recording or any information storage and retrieval system, without express written permission from the publisher.

Copyright © 1999 Lars Pearson

Published by Mad Norwegian Press (www.madnorwegian.com)

First Print Edition: October 1999.

First Digital Edition: June 2014.

Table of Contents

Feature Articles

Foreword / an Apology to the I, Who ebooks (2014) by Lars Pearson
Original Foreword to I, Who (1999)
Introduction by Sylvester McCoy
Novelist Round Table
Did You Know?
The Crucial Bits
Sidebars (Additional to Those Paired With Story Entries)

* * * * *

Story Entries

The Infinity Doctors and Other Stories

The Infinity Doctors (PDA #17)
Who Killed Kennedy? (MA, unnumbered)
The Face of the Enemy (PDA #7)
Downtime (PDA #18)

First Doctor Stories

The Sorcerer's Apprentice (MA #12)
The Witch Hunters (PDA #9)
Venusian Lullaby (MA #3)
The Plotters (MA #28)
The Empire of Glass (MA #16)
Salvation (PDA #18)
The Man in the Velvet Mask (MA #19)

Second Doctor Stories

Invasion of the Cat-People (MA #13)

The Murder Game (PDA #2)
The Roundheads (PDA #6)
Dreams of Empire (PDA #14)
Twilight of the Gods (MA #26)
The Dark Path (MA #32)
The Final Sanction (PDA #24)
The Menagerie (MA #10)

Third Doctor Stories

The Eye of the Giant (MA #20)
The Scales of Injustice (MA #27)
The Devil Goblins from Neptune (PDA #1)
Sidebar: Songs from The Devil Goblins of Neptune
The Wages of Sin (PDA #19)
Dancing the Code (MA #9)
Speed of Flight (MA #27)
Catastrophea (PDA #11)
The Paradise of Death (Target novelisation #156)
The Ghosts of N-Space (MA #7)

Fourth Doctor Stories

A Device of Death (MA #31)
Managra (MA #14)
Evolution (MA #2)
System Shock (MA #11)
Millennium Shock (PDA #22)
Last Man Running (PDA #15)
Eye of Heaven (PDA #8)
The Shadow of Weng-Chiang (MA #25)
The Romance of Crime (MA #6)
The English Way of Death (MA #20)
The Well-Mannered War (MA #33)

Fifth Doctor Stories

Cold Fusion (MA #29)
The Sands of Time (MA #22)
Zeta Major (PDA #13)
Goth Opera (MA #1)
The Crystal Bucephalus (MA #4)
Deep Blue (PDA #20)
Lords of the Storm (MA #17)
The Ultimate Treasure (PDA #3)

Sixth Doctor Stories

Burning Heart (MA #30)
Players (PDA #21)
State of Change (MA #5)
The Nightmare Fair (Doctor Who Missing Episodes #1)
The Ultimate Evil (Doctor Who Missing Episodes #2)
Mission to Magnus (Doctor Who Missing Episodes #3)
Time of Your Life (MA #8)
Killing Ground (MA #23)
Mission: Impractical (PDA #12)
Business Unusual (PDA #4)
Millennial Rites (MA #15)

Seventh Doctor Stories

The Hollow Men (PDA #10)
Sidebar: Songs from The Hollow Men
Illegal Alien (PDA #5)
Matrix (PDA #16)
Storm Harvest (PDA #23)
Timewyrm: Genesys (NA #1)
Timewyrm: Exodus (NA #2)
Timewyrm: Apocalypse (NA #3)

Timewyrm: Revelation (NA #4)
Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible (NA #5)
Cat's Cradle: Warhead (NA #6)
Cat's Cradle: Witch Mark (NA #7)
Nightshade (NA #8)
Love and War (NA #9)
Transit (NA #10)
The Highest Science (NA #11)
The Pit (NA #12)
Deceit (NA #13)
Lucifer Rising (NA #14)
White Darkness (NA #15)
Shadowmind (NA #16)
Birthright (NA #17)
Iceberg (NA #18)
Blood Heat (NA #19)
The Dimension Riders (NA #20)
The Left-Handed Hummingbird (NA #21)
Conundrum (NA #22)
No Future (NA #23)
Tragedy Day (NA #24)
Legacy (NA #25)
Theatre of War (NA #26)
All-Consuming Fire (NA #27)
Blood Harvest (NA #28)
Strange England (NA #29)
First Frontier (NA #30)
St. Anthony's Fire (NA #31)
Falls the Shadow (NA #32)
Parasite (NA #33)
Warlock (NA #34)
Set Piece (NA #35)
Infinite Requiem (NA #36)

Sanctuary (NA #37)
Human Nature (NA #38)
Original Sin (NA #39)
Sky Pirates! (NA #40)
Zamper (NA #41)
Toy Soldiers (NA #42)
Head Games (NA #43)
The Also People (NA #44)
Shakedown (NA #45)
Just War (NA #46)
Warchild (NA #47)
SLEEPY (NA #48)
Death and Diplomacy (NA #49)
Sidebar: Shug Speaks
Happy Endings (NA #50)
GodEngine (NA #51)
Christmas on a Rational Planet (NA #52)
Sidebar: Eighth Man Bound
Return of the Living Dad (NA #53)
The Death of Art (NA #54)
Damaged Goods (NA #55)
So Vile a Sin (NA #56)
Bad Therapy (NA #57)
Eternity Weeps (NA #58)
The Room With No Doors (NA #59)
Lungbarrow (NA #60)
Sidebar: The Other
Sidebar: The Gallifrey Doctor

Eighth Doctor Stories

The Dying Days (NA #61)
The Eight Doctors (EDA #1)
Vampire Science (EDA #2)

The Bodysnatchers (EDA #3)
Genocide (EDA #4)
War of the Daleks (EDA #5)
Sidebar: Dalek Continuity Changes
Alien Bodies (EDA #6)
Kursaal (EDA #7)
Option Lock (EDA #8)
Longest Day (EDA #9)
Legacy of the Daleks (EDA #10)
Dreamstone Moon (EDA #11)
Seeing I (EDA #12)
Placebo Effect (EDA #13)
Vanderdeken's Children (EDA #14)
The Scarlet Empress (EDA #15)
The Janus Conjunction (EDA #16)
Beltempest (EDA #17)
The Face-Eater (EDA #18)
The Taint (EDA #19)
Demontage (EDA #20)
Revolution Man (EDA #21)
Dominion (EDA #22)
Unnatural History (EDA #23)
Autumn Mist (EDA #24)
Interference (Books One and Two) (EDA #25-26)
Sidebar: IM Foreman
Sidebar: The Universe in a Bottle

Additional Sidebars

Top Five Historicals
Top Ten Dramatic Moments
Top Ten Comedy Moments
Top Ten Recurring Cast
Top Ten Gory Moments

Top Ten Books for Newcomers
Top Ten Companion Tortures
Top Ten Companion Triumphs
Top Ten Things We Wish Hadn’t Happened
Top Ten Doctor Enemies
Top Ten Doctor Triumphs
Top Ten Doctor Defeats
Top Ten Doctor Atrocities
Top Five Short Stories
Short Stories (highlights)
Perfect Timing
The Best Novels
The Case for Ambition

Other Ebooks Available from Mad Norwegian Press

Credits

Foreword / an Apology to the I, Who ebooks (2014) by Lars Pearson

I dragged my feet for the longest time on producing *I, Who* ebooks. Financially, this wasn't the brightest of moves - I've bills to pay like everyone else, and (unlike many of Mad Norwegian's digital offerings) I don't have to worry about sharing the proceeds. Once done, the *I, Who* ebooks can pretty much stay online, effortlessly selling whatever they sell until the fall of Western civilization.

The thing that gives me pause is the same concern that vexes so many writers / artists / creative folks: your early work seems so horrifyingly primitive compared to what followed on from it, looking at it anew makes you want - in a surge of humiliation - to drink a cup of hemlock. Or, just throw yourself into the nearest abyss and let it swallow you whole.

Here in 2014, when I've spent years overseeing such works as the *About Time* series, the *Chicks Dig...* series, *Running Through Corridors* and the *Faction Paradox* novels - not to mention co-writing *AHistory*, the latest version of which is 784 oversized pages - the *I, Who*s can't help but feel to me like ugly step-children. They're more passionate at times than substantive, their use of grammar seems diabolical, and they're just, well, *amateurish*. Passionate, yes, but amateurish. One reader told me that he regarded the *I, Who*s as "a fanzine, but a very good fanzine." He meant it as a compliment and I had to concede that he had a point, but I still fight the urge to cringe at the thought of them.

All of that said, even I would have to admit that the *I, Who* series has a few lasting purposes. First off, in the right time and place, it actually does remain a reasonably useful reference guide to the *Doctor Who* novels and audios, which have so much less written about them than the *Doctor Who* TV show. (I've been known to pull an *I, Who* or two off the shelf, in fact, when cross-checking something for *Ahistory*.) Second, I'm glad that the Novelist Round Table and Did You Know? notes are preserved in print, because memories fade, and such comments and insights were gleaned when the writers' recollections of their works were relatively fresh. And, if nothing else, the *I, Who*s are something of a historical document - as with so many works of their age - as to what was important to a segment of *Doctor Who* fans during the show's Wilderness Years (1990-2004). At the time, the style of the *I, Who*s was clearly a mutant hybrid of Virgin's reference guides

(the most notable being *The Discontinuity Guide*, released in 1995) and the work I was doing for *Wizard: The Guide to Comics*- which itself was indicative of the humor and tone of so much of the publishing industry of the day (including, inescapably, *Maxim*). Mad Norwegian began to better march to its own drummer soon after *I, Who 3* was published, but prior to that, I simply didn't know any better.

Well, okay, there's *one more* lasting purpose to the *I, Who*s, as schmoopy as it might sound. To people who were there at the time, the *I, Who*s hopefully serve as a trip down memory lane, bringing a smile as you remember the books, audios, characters, story-developments and more that you loved in a bygone era. There's a certain generation of *Doctor Who* fans who regard the New Adventures in particular as a seminal range (they're my favorite form of *Doctor Who* ever, in fact), and who will hopefully find some pleasure looking over *I, Who*'s Top Ten lists and so forth. If the *I, Who*s at all encourage you to go back and re-experience some beloved novels and audios, so much the better.

And if you're a newcomer who *wasn't* there at the time, the *I, Who*s will hopefully serve as a cheap means of discovering entry points to the novel and audio ranges. (Just please seek out some of the stories I've hailed as *good if not great*, as opposed to rushing to read *Warmonger* and revel in its hideousness, all because I reviewed it as "one of the greatest travesties ever perpetrated on the *Doctor Who* book line." I met a convention-goer who did just that, and, a little flabbergasted upon hearing this, I asked him: "Well, *did* you think it was potentially the worst *Doctor Who* book ever written?" "Oh yes," he enthusiastically nodded. "Yes indeed.")

A quick note on format: to better reflect the years in which the three *I, Who* volumes were written (1999, 2002 and 2003), the content hasn't been revised much between the print and ebook editions. A few stray errors were so glaring as to demand repair (such as the omission of the entry for *The Ultimate Evil*, which is here included), but probably the biggest change is that I consolidated the TV Tie-Ins / Novel Tie-Ins / Audio Tie-Ins (etc) categories into a bigger one called Continuity. It was a balancing act between keeping things as they were back in the day and simplifying the ebook coding process a bit by having fewer categories, and the latter won out. (Incidentally, please bear in mind that all of the positive reviews I gave to the likes of Lance Parkin, Lawrence Miles, etc., in *I, Who* were handed out *before* I recruited them to work for Mad Norwegian, so there wasn't any conflict of interest at the time. The regard I came to have for their work encouraged me to commission them down the road, which seems fair

enough, because who in their right mind would hire writers they *didn't* like?)

Finally, I can't help but be reminded of L.P. Hartley's famous adage that "the past is a foreign country: they do things differently there." Whatever use you find for the *I, Who*s - whether you're looking for a nostalgia piece, or searching out info on the *Doctor Who* novels and audios for the first time - just please, for the love of Heaven, don't judge the quality of my current work or the rest of Mad Norwegian's output by them. You have to walk before you can run, and the *I, Who*s very much reflect my "learning to walk before you can run" phase as a book writer and publisher. Nonetheless, I hope they do in some fashion please you, just as it was - I keep reminding myself, whatever awkwardness I feel about these books now - such a pleasure to write them at the time.

—Lars Pearson

Des Moines, May 2014

Original Foreword to I, Who (1999)

Our hearts are in the right places, but we're hopelessly psychotic.

We have more than 36 years of "Doctor Who" to choose from, a hurricane of videos that would take us two weeks to watch in a row, providing we were willing to give up sleep and reek like old Limburger cheese. But just the "Who" videos – which many of us have viewed until we've bled from our eyes – aren't enough.

We crave new and dynamic "Who" with the rabid addiction of a crack fiend who has no veins left to prick. And for us, the "Doctor Who" novels satiate this desire.

I know this insanity well. While reading many of these books on the bus, I was often torn between finishing Chapter 10 and discovering if Benny will have the chocolate mousse or squashing the book beneath my rump and flirting with the sultry brunette across the aisle. My hormones almost always won, but it was a cataclysmic struggle.

And the more "Who" I read, the more I was *tortured* if something happened in another book that I wretchedly *did not* have time to read. Even for the most religious of "Who" readers, downing two novels a month is damnably difficult.

So – since you've been busy, we read it for you.

What "I, Who" Does For You

The purpose of "I, Who" is to reference how the original "Doctor Who" novel lines, both Virgin and BBC, expanded on the "Doctor Who" television series.

At all points, the categories are designed to tell you what each novel teaches us about the characters, settings, etc. In short, it researches how the novels build onto the fictional universe of "Doctor Who."

If you haven't seen the "Who" television show, believe me – there isn't time to explain it here. The best I can recommend is that you pick up a copy of *The Television Companion* by David Howe and Mark Stammers, which has all the primer information you need and more. Or, the out-of-print *Discontinuity Guide* by Paul Cornell, Martin Day and Keith Topping, is a bit more comprehensive and presumes you've seen the TV series, but is a lively romp through all the show's consistencies and inconsistencies. But I

digress.

Yes, The Books Count

During several trips to DragonCon in Atlanta (which I've gleefully put on my *Wizard* expense account), I've often been asked of the "Who" books: "Do they count?" (as if they need my permission to accept fictional literature as canon).

I think the answer for *you* is, "Yes, they count, or you wouldn't be reading this reference guide."

"Star Trek," with its myriad of novel lines, handles this question rather curiously. Paramount has decreed that anything that's televised as "Star Trek," is "Star Trek Fact," whereas anything that's printed is "Star Trek Fiction." (Believe me, I couldn't have made that one up in my most drunken stupor.) So, any time "Star Trek" television and printed matter conflict, television automatically wins.

"Doctor Who" basically runs the same way – except there really aren't many conflicts between the TV show and the books. Mostly, because the "Who" novelists didn't begin their work until 1990, when the TV series – barring the 1996 movie starring Paul McGann – had concluded, and "Who" facts could be double-checked with the flip of a good program guide. So the books on most levels try to weave themselves seamlessly (though not always successfully) into the show's continuity.

We certainly think they should count as canon or we wouldn't have crafted this guide.

Spoilers: No Holds Barred

The fact is, we wouldn't get very far in a reference guide without telling all. Our apologies. But then, program guides have been blowing the TV show's secrets for years, and it doesn't stop people from buying the "Who" videos.

Style, Etc.

Everyone working on this project is American. For this, we can make no apology. And rather than butcher the British spellings and grammar and make a balls-up of everything, we've stuck to the style of the Associated Press, with a few exceptions for house style.

Of course, it's also because the British spell everything wrong. Then

again, they could easily make the same claim about us damn Americans.

The Categories

Everything's self-explanatory, except for:

• **Travel Log:** A list of settings where the TARDIS lands. Whenever there was doubt, the dates here were referenced against Lance Parkin's *History of the Universe*.

• **Memorable Moments:** Ahhh, the juiciest bits, the scenes that *still* give you a good deal of afterglow – even if you've forgotten everything else about the book.

• **Sex and Spirits:** By this, we're not implying here that the books are bastions of smut and debauchery – they simply aren't. It's just that the books have matured "Who" to the point where a character's take on booze and sex speak volumes about their personality. Certainly in Chris Cwej, you almost believe that we have someone whose sole purpose in time-travel is to sire as many illegitimate children as possible.

We eliminated from this category harmless pecks and innocent kisses, or we'd be here all day. It has to be something more significant – say, Roz accidentally grabbing Chris' old man in *Death and Diplomacy* – to register.

• **Ass-Whuppings:** Traveling with the Doctor, you may have noticed, sometimes merits combat pay. This section notes notable deaths and injuries, and almost always those caused by or suffered by the TARDIS crew.

• **Continuity:** We eliminated from this any off-handed references that your typical "Whovian" would likely know. If Romana states she's been to Argolis – yes, we being lovable "Who" geeks all know she's been to Argolis. Move on. But if something had a sizeable link to the television series – or expanded on what we already knew – it's there.

• **Character Development:** A step-by-step analysis of all the *new* information each book reveals about a character or characters. We don't repeat that Cybermen are vulnerable to gold, but list other ways you can make 'em snuff it.

• **Places to Go:** Key locations.

• **Stuff You Need:** Key objects such as a Rutan anti-matter converter, many of them ideal for frat parties.

• **History:** This isn't as all-inclusive or linear as Lance Parkin's *History*, but instead references chunks of history – particularly when the Doctor or

TARDIS crew are involved – as the novels give up their secrets.

• **At the End of the Day:** The review section, bringing both pleasure and pain. Given that there are now more than 150 books to choose from, nobody could blame readers who feel a bit intimidated. This is an opinion, for what it's worth, on which books are worth your time and consideration.

How We Got Here

For those of you joining us for the first time, Virgin Publishing started producing original novels of the Doctor in 1991. Virgin debuted "The New Adventures," which contained stories of the seventh Doctor (as played by Sylvester McCoy) and Ace (Sophie Aldred) after their last televised adventure of "Survival." In 1994, Virgin also debuted "The Missing Adventures," which told stories of the first six Doctors at various points in continuity.

But in 1997, the BBC didn't renew Virgin's "Who" license – 94 Virgin novels immediately went out-of-print.

BBC Books started its own "Who" book line, with "The Eighth Doctor Adventures," featuring the eighth Doctor (Paul McGann) and "The Past Doctor Adventures," which featured the first seven Doctors. And so it goes. Read on.

Introduction by Sylvester McCoy

I must confess, I've never read one of the "Doctor Who" novels. Nobody sent me any. And yet, there are some ideas in the books that I quite like – perhaps more so than those seen on television.

For instance, I like the idea that the Doctor might turn himself human for a bit [in *Human Nature*], as long as he turns himself back again. I mean, he's infinitely curious and he'd try everything to understand as much as possible. But being a Time Lord, he wouldn't want to become human permanently.

Also, the books' examination of violence and manipulation seem to be high points. When I was playing the Doctor, I didn't want him to rely on violence – I thought that was a human weakness. The Doctor is more intelligent than violent. Yet, he did have his moments. In "Battlefield," just for a bit, he considers beheading a knight to save Ace, and the idea was that he was becoming polluted with human violence. He was becoming addicted to it, like hanging around a room full of smokers – only he was hanging around a room full of killers.

"Remembrance of the Daleks" is also a bit of a paradox, because we saw the Doctor destroy a Dalek by talking to it and driving it insane until it imploded on itself. That, I suppose, was a violent thing to do, but he wasn't physically violent – he was intelligently violent. So, there's definitely a lot of complexity for the novels to use.

The Doctor, it must be said, is a being who's both caring and manipulative. He often tried to manipulate Ace, such as in "Ghost Light," into a situation where she could find herself and learn to make her own decisions. In a sense, the journey they had in the television series was one of him educating her. But, I suppose he was being godlike.

Now, did he have the right to do that? Most likely not. So it makes sense that in the novels, his companions might fear the Doctor is overly powerful and manipulative, even dangerous – but I don't think he is. It's just that there's that mystery like there was in the early days of "Doctor Who" – you simply don't know who you're dealing with.

Perhaps most of all, I favor the novels' idea of Time Lords being spun from Looms, the same way that characters are spun in stories. The Doctor, after all, is a character in a story. Conversely, I don't like the 1996 TV movie assertion that the Doctor is half-human at all. On the television show, we were in fact suggesting that the Doctor might have been part of a more

powerful group of beings who accidentally created the Gallifreyan society, perhaps with Rassilon. It made him much more powerful and mysterious.

I think Looms are nicely mysterious. By making the Doctor half-human, it takes away his mystery – and therefore more power. Because where there's mystery, there's power, there's fear, there's uncertainty. At the same time, in a dramatic sense, Looms make people feel that the Doctor they knew wasn't all that they thought he was.

Whatever the case, I am pleased that my Doctor, the character that I helped create, has fired the imagination of other people enough to for them to write about him. People sometimes ask me know I'd like to be remembered, but I'd settle for just being remembered. And thanks to the television series – and these books as well – I will be.

—Sylvester McCoy

March 1999

Novelist Round Table

They're the only people who can tell the Doctor what to do. And now, thanks to the wonders of the Internet and the power of the pest, Lars Pearson grills "Who" novelists **Jonathan Blum**, **Paul Cornell**, **Craig Hinton**, **Andy Lane**, **Steve Lyons**, **David A. McIntee**, **Jim Mortimore**, **Lawrence Miles**, **Kate Orman**, **Lance Parkin**, **Justin Richards** and **Gary Russell** as to the state of the Doctor's health these days. Enjoy.

Name one thing you saw in the "Doctor Who" world this past year that was positive and explain why you feel it was positive.

JONATHAN BLUM: The line-up of the eighth Doctor books. Last year wasn't a good year for the line, but in 1999, editor Steve Cole finally achieved a mixture of on-going plots and stand-alone books.

PAUL CORNELL: *The Infinity Doctors* broke with the idea of "canonicity."

CRAIG HINTON: It's a tie between the "Comic Relief" sketch and the Dalek postage stamp. The former showed the series can attract actors such as Hugh Grant, Richard E. Grant and Jonathan Pryce, while the latter confirmed the series' importance in British heritage.

ANDY LANE: I wish there had been something positive, but it all seemed to be looking backwards. Having said that, Hugh Grant as the Doctor [in "Curse of the Fatal Death"] had possibilities.

STEVE LYONS: The "Comic Relief" special. It proved people still like "Doctor Who," even without the big budget the BBC seems to think it needs.

DAVID A. MCINTEE: Fitz was introduced as a character with a lot more potential than Sam.

LAWRENCE MILES: The fact that two of the year's most memorable TV programs ("Queer as Folk" and "The League of Gentlemen") had New Adventures writers working on them.

LANCE PARKIN: The big development was Justin Richards being appointed [novel line] editor. He's got friends in fandom and no enemies, isn't cliquey, understands "Doctor Who," understands novels and can edit.

JUSTIN RICHARDS: Big Finish Productions doing the audio stories.

While the novels offer a superb extension and continuation of the Whoniverse, there's some desperate need for new, performed "Doctor Who."

GARY RUSSELL: The most positive thing, ego aside, has been the response from most quarters to the audios. Even I was dubious about their potential, as audio's not a medium most people are familiar with – but people like 'em.

Pretend you're Rassilon. You can alter any part of "Doctor Who" and nobody will know but yourself. What would you change and why?

BLUM: I'd go back and slot into some early story, maybe "Pyramids of Mars," a few more lines which establish that yes, history can and does change. Then maybe fans would be less hung up on endless arguments about canon and pay more attention to the quality of each individual story.

CORNELL: [Doctor Who producer] John Nathan-Turner, as he did in real life, goes to sleep having to decide between two script editors after Christopher H. Bidmead leaves – but when he wakes up, he chooses Christopher Bailey.

HINTON: I'd keep Davros dead at the end of "Genesis of the Daleks." The Daleks ceased to be any sort of credible threat once they had him as a spokesman. I'd also make sure the retconning in *War of the Daleks* was conveniently forgotten.

LYONS: I'd rewrite "The Trial of a Time Lord." More than any other story, it's the one that was full of good ideas, but was spoilt by stupid mistakes.

MILES: I'd get rid of "The Deadly Assassin" and stop the Time Lords having names. Time Lords never had names before 1977; they were just "the Doctor" and "the Master" and "him with the bowler hat." Then all of the sudden we get to see Gallifrey, and it's full of people called "Goth" and "Spandrell" and "Fnarx" and "Dribble," who sound just like every other alien species from every crap science-fiction series. Time Lords are too big to have names, surely?

JIM MORTIMORE: I wouldn't change anything, because change is a fundamental part of the concept.

KATE ORMAN: I'd swap the sexes of the Doctor and companions, just to see what it would be like! I can't think of a female character who

combines the role of the adventuring her with the magical Merlin figure that way the Doctor does.

PARKIN: I'd make Season 22 Peter Davison's last season instead of Colin Baker's first. I've nothing against Colin's performance, but the show at that time was going through a rather unpleasant body horror phase. When the Doctor's as unpleasant as what's going on around him, something's wrong.

RICHARDS: I'd have "The Happiness Patrol" timelooped as if it never existed. What a load of twaddle it is – a shell so empty that people have to read non-existent political comment into it in a futile attempt at justification.

RUSSELL: Fictionally, Leela would have left Gallifrey with the fourth Doctor and joined him on the hunt for the Key to Time, finally leaving him to educate the Swampies after they realized Kroll was a false god.

Aside from the obvious that the BBC took back the novel license, what has changed most about the novel line and its execution in the past several years?

BLUM: Things went off the rails when we moved to the BBC. The feeling that the authors were all pulling in pretty much the same direction was gone. But since *Alien Bodies* and *The Infinity Doctors*, we've finally got new threads to weave together.

CORNELL: There's not much ambition now. We've become a bit more generic "Who", which is a pity.

LANE: Less soap opera, more heroics.

MILES: You mean, apart from the fact that they've been getting gradually worse? To be fair, that's not really the BBC's fault. Everyone who had something interesting to say about the "Doctor Who" universe had pretty much finished saying it by 1997, so even Virgin would have had to find a new direction for the Doctor after the TV movie, and they probably would've failed. Just like the BBC did.

ORMAN: The Virgin novels featured a Doctor who had been firmly established on screen. But it's a major challenge working with an eighth Doctor who only had about an hour on TV. We've got to do more to get this Doctor onto the page.

PARKIN: One impression I get is that the BBC don't see the books as "author led" in the same way Virgin did. As an author, I'm biased. But while I appreciate that even good authors need editors, it's no coincidence that the

standout books come from the most talented authors.

RICHARDS: For Past Doctor stories, very little indeed. Eighth Doctor stories are, I think, stylistically different and in danger of becoming too interlinked. As a writer and a reader, I'd like to be able to "plug in" to any one book without having to read ones on either side of it.

RUSSELL: The fans running the asylum, which has good and bad points but on balance, the good outweigh the bad.

By your own private definition, what qualities make a good "Doctor Who" story?

BLUM: I want stories that are as big and amazing and lovely to my 27-year-old eyes as the show was to my 12-year-old eyes.

CORNELL: A sense of fun, the victory of wit, silliness and intellectualism over seriousness, fascism and dumbing down.

HINTON: Strong villains; a central, moral theme and a simple storyline with dialogue polished to perfection (i.e. "The Curse of Fenric" and "The Caves of Androzani").

LANE: Villains who act on what they believe are good reasons. Flawed heroes surrounding the Doctor, leading to arguments, betrayals and eventual reconciliations. A last-minute flash of heroism from the most hated character, who sacrifices their own life so the heroes win.

LYONS: Simple imagination. I'd take a silly and tacky story any day to a boring, formulaic plodder with lots of running up and down corridors.

MILES: As far as the books go, I like anything that's been written as a proper novel instead of just a "Who" story for its own sake. I keep going around telling people that, don't I? Sorry, I'm obsessed.

MORTIMORE: A sophisticated blend of information, supposition and imagination. The show was designed to appeal to a family-wide spectrum of viewers and present both historical and futuristic stories with

ORMAN: A good sense of place, and characters who speak and act the way they would in "real life." A good example is Ben Aaronovitch's *The Also People*.

PARKIN: In terms of the "Who" novels, to say something new and challenge me, and to be about something other than "Doctor Who" itself. At heart, I want a well-written story with good characters and a demonstration of humour and imagination. In my own books, I always try to keep the

Doctor center stage, as I can't get too worked up about the supporting cast.

RICHARDS: Solid plotting, clever ideas, wit and above all, excitement and the ability constantly to surprise.

RUSSELL: Intelligent scripts, sudden twists, explanations, good acting and a belief in the inherent goodness of the Doctor.

What qualities don't?

BLUM: Readers can tell if you've got contempt for your material, if you're talking down to the audience or brushing aside the fact that something's cliched.

CORNELL: Guns, soldiers solving the plot and the lack of a Doctor.

HINTON: Special effects which just don't work. Actors playing it for laughs. Directors who can't direct. "Warriors of the Deep" comes to mind.

LANE: Villains who want to invade or destroy because they're villains, not because there's a compelling reason. Too much "as you well know, Doctor..." dialogue. Too many people acting out of character, or with no character at all.

LYONS: When "Doctor Who" tries to be too clever, to introduce realistic alien races and realistic futures and deal with hard science-fiction concepts, it tends to fall flat on its face.

MCINTEE: Trying to pigeonhole "Who" into a specific format.

MILES: Fan-wank. I'm sick of stories that only exist to fill holes in continuity. That's no excuse for writing a whole bloody book, is it?

MORTIMORE: An over-simplification of such a powerful concept. Any of the usual literary vices detract as well, including indulgence, lack of clarity,

ORMAN: Stories which try to be exactly like what was seen on TV. These are novels for grown-ups, not cheaply-made half-hour television episodes, suitable for all the family. That isn't to say we shouldn't capture the elusive spirit of the TV stories, just that we shouldn't write with the TV show's limitations.

RICHARDS: Too much emphasis on "clever" science-fiction ideas at the expense of moving the story along. Stories that just don't make sense or have proper endings or resolutions (such as "Mindwarp").

RUSSELL: "Timelash," "Terminus," "Delta and the Bannermen," "Silver Nemesis" and "Battlefield." They all fell down the first hurdle of

being intelligent, which means they had no hope.

Under which conditions should continuity be rewritten?

BLUM: I like tweaking continuity if it raises new possibilities and leaves the "Who" universe a richer or more complex place (examples include "The Deadly Assassin" and *Cold Fusion*).

CORNELL: When continuity gets in the way of the story, at the very instant that it does, rewrite without hesitation.

HINTON: Very carefully rewrite. I love Marvel and DC Comics, and retconning is an art form – if done well.

LANE: Never. Once you pull out one thread, the whole lot starts unravelling.

LYONS: Ideally, it shouldn't be rewritten, although reinterpretation's a different matter. The "Who" universe is enormous. If you don't like something, you can ignore it. So why try to change it?

MCINTEE: Rewrite continuity when it is wrong.

MILES: When it makes things more interesting. It's the only criterion for doing anything, really.

RICHARDS: I agree with [producer] Phillip Hinchcliffe and [TV writer] Robert Holmes: Rewrite if there's a good enough story to justify it, such as "Genesis of the Daleks" or "The Deadly Assassin."

RUSSELL: Where it is grey. Where it is black and white, it shouldn't be. It's not big or clever to delight in screwing over continuity "because I can" – it's childish and pointless.

By comparison to the rigid rules of "Star Trek," "Doctor Who" authors have made numerous changes to dozens of characters. That said, what do you feel is the No. 1 restriction placed on "Doctor Who" novelists?

BLUM: Working with the BBC's nervousness about swearing. When you're dealing with Fitz and Sam, especially dark-haired Sam, it's hard to find convincing ways why they're not cursing up a storm.

HINTON: The one which reigns us in from submitting "Doctor Who and the Eight Doctors, the Daleks, the Cybermen, etc." Call it over-egging the pudding or fan-wank, but we can all go just that little bit too far.

LANE: We have to stay within the "Doctor Who" universe of Daleks, Draconians, Cybermen, etc. Then again, that's why we wanted to write the books in the first place.

LYONS: Knowing how the major characters have to end up, which also applies to the New Adventures.

MCINTEE: Being true to the characters while still doing something new with them.

MILES: No hot Time Lord sex.

MORTIMORE: Getting the editor to "like" your work.

PARKIN: The novels must be action adventure books of a certain length, done to a tight deadline.

RICHARDS: Very little. I guess the given length of the book is a big restriction. Then again, *Short Trips* and *Interference* broke that format.

Who's your favorite Doctor and why?

BLUM: They've all been rattling around in my head for so long, I can watch any of them with ease.

CORNELL: Sylvester McCoy, because his character was there to spark my adult imagination. And he's more complicated than the others.

HINTON: Jon Pertwee. I enjoyed the slightly over-the-top aspect to most of his era. But Sylvester McCoy grew on me after his appalling first season.

LANE: Jon Pertwee, because he's so completely trustworthy and free of angst.

LYONS: Sylvester McCoy. I thought we got a fresh look at who the Doctor is and what he does in the last two seasons on TV.

MCINTEE: Tom Baker, because he could get away with anything.

MILES: There's only one Doctor. It just happens that eight different actors have played him.

MORTIMORE: The one I get to write about. It's nice to be able to explore how they're all the same bloke, yet at the same time, so very different.

ORMAN: I'm always desperately in love with the latest Doctor, so it's currently the eighth! He's dashing and gorgeous, with passion, love of life and a sense of humor.

PARKIN: Tom Baker. He could make the most of rubbish material, and

has a real range. He convinces you he's the Doctor, not just an actor playing him.

RICHARDS: Patrick Troughton, because he's so complex and unpredictable. Tom Baker's a close runner-up for the same reasons.

RUSSELL: Jon Pertwee, 'cos I grew up with him. Also, Peter Davison because he was perfect.

Given that we only have an hour and a half of screen time for him, how would you like to develop the character of the eighth Doctor?

BLUM: The biggest danger is in making him clueless. Despite complaints about the seventh Doctor being too omnipotent, I don't think people really want a fallible Doctor – they instantly turn around and complain about him being pathetic.

CORNELL: The new Doctor uses contradictions the others wouldn't, says "guy" and is free of pomposity. He's like a hippy Jesus, very Godspell.

HINTON: The creation of Faction Paradox, villains to give the Time Lords a run for their money, is excellent and suits the less worldly and more vulnerable eighth Doctor.

LANE: He's a man whose inherent sense of romance and adventure completely overcomes his good sense. He prefers a grand gesture to a well-executed plan. I don't see the eighth Doctor thinking through a plan in the same way as the seventh. To my reading, the eighth is wildly impulsive.

MILES: I know exactly what I'd like to do with the eighth Doctor. The BBC isn't having any of it, though. I won't tell you now, in case they change their mind.

MORTIMORE: It's a question Paul McGann would have liked an opportunity to answer too.

ORMAN: I'd like to see more of his darker side. I'm not thinking of what we did with the seventh Doctor, but there are hints of an arrogant, wrathful, even Byronic side to the eighth's personality.

PARKIN: In *The Dying Days*, I only had a limited amount of room to innovate, as half the job was making the Doctor sound exactly like he did in the TV movie. In *The Infinity Doctors*, I had more leeway, and that's where I'd like to see the Eighth Doctor going – becoming a passionate, brooding figure like a Romantic poet – not a nature-walking ponce or a Byronic figure who has sword fights, raises armies, beds his sister and raises hell.

RICHARDS: I think that depends very much on Mr. McGann and what he wants to bring to the role. Given the option, I don't think I'd have made him half-human or a snogger. I think I'd have perhaps tried to write a story in which the Doctor has to "find" himself. "Castrovalva" tried that to an extent, but in a more literal manner.

RUSSELL: Tolerance of the diversity in human nature.

What's the No. 1 thing you've learned about life from the series?

BLUM: That you don't have to put away childish things when you grow up.

CORNELL: To never be cruel or cowardly.

LANE: Imposing your will on other people is wrong.

MCINTEE: Always do what you're best at.

MILES: Duck.

MORTIMORE: If you're not enjoying it, you're doing it wrong.

ORMAN: It's okay to care about doing the right thing.

PARKIN: Ugly people are invariably evil.

Do you support or reject the theory that there were Doctors before the Hartnell incarnation?

CORNELL: I don't care. If there's a good story there, then there were.

HINTON, LANE, LYONS, MCINTEE, RUSSELL: Reject.

PARKIN: Ha! As the one who reignited this debate, I've never said there were definitely past Doctors, but I think it's an interesting possibility. I've hinted that there were, particularly in *Cold Fusion*, but I was careful not to state it outright.

In the next year, what do you realistically hope is the No. 1 positive change about "Doctor Who"?

BLUM: I'm hoping the run of book starting around *Revolution Man* will revive interest in the eighth Doctor line as a series. Some of the ideas being tossed around among the writer are fascinating, and I hope people who have wandered away from the books will wander back.

HINTON: I hope that the new director general of the BBC realizes that

"Doctor Who" is still a marketable concept and makes moves to bring it back. I could live with co-production, but not one that sacrifices the quintessential "Britishness" of the series.

LANE: That people accept it's dead and gone, and start appreciating what we have, rather than continually creating new stuff.

MCINTEE: That the audios are slated for regular release, and that [line editor] Gary Russell asks me to write for them!

MILES: The eighth Doctor books are definitely looking up. There's this lovely storyarc-in-disguise running from *Interference* to Paul Cornell's book [*The Shadows of Avalon*], which means we might actually be going somewhere interesting. For a change.

PARKIN: Because of Paul Cornell writing a new book, and Justin Richards taking up the editorial reigns, I look forward to some great books.

RICHARDS: The real success of the audios. And less likely, some concrete plans for a visual version.

RUSSELL: No movie (which would be a disaster and a final nail in the coffin) and the whole world buying "Who" books and audios, meaning we no longer thirst for a new series, which will never live up to our expectations.

Did You Know?

[Note to the 2014 ebook: The print version of *I, Who* contained three **Did You Know?** sections featuring bits of behind-the-scenes information that the *Doctor Who* novelists generously shared with Lars Pearson back in 1999. The list below is a compilation of the **Did You Know?** pages, an interesting mishmash of the thought process that went into the books at the time.]

• Roz Forrester was originally proposed as a "fat, sweaty bloke" – a characterization later deemed too much like "Hill Street Blues."

• In *SLEEPY*, the Doctor uses a computer virus with a Pinocchio icon to give some computer programs free will. This was Kate Orman's way of foreshadowing a sixth Doctor novel called *The Pinocchio Virus* that she submitted but didn't write.

• *Just War*, an immediate lead-in to the next book, *Warchild*, ends with the Doctor wearing a nun's costume. But curiously, it's never stated that the Doctor changes out of the nun's outfit. *Just War* author Lance Parkin did this deliberately, banking on the fact that *Warchild* author Andrew Cartmel rarely gives physical descriptions. Thus, if you like, it can be argued the Doctor is dressed as a nun for all of *Warchild*.

• In *Goth Opera*, Ruath tracks and lists every planet the fifth Doctor has visited, eliminating the possibility of any other Missing Adventures taking place in those gaps. *Goth Opera* author Cornell states it was: "An awful, if unthinking, thing to do, and I hope other writers ignore it."

• Saraquazel and a lot of the imagery in *Millennial Rites* comes from DC Comics' *The Books of Magic* mini-series. In those comics, Saraquael (without a z) was an archangels at the beginning of time.

• "Ferutu," the race of alternate Time Lords in *Cold Fusion*, is an anagram for the word "future."

• Marvel Comics' Doctor Strange and DC Comics' John Constantine make cameo appearances in *Millennial Rites*.

• Author Daniel O'Mahony originally wrote *Falls the Shadow* as a three-part "Who" TV story entitled "Freak Show."

• The Doctor's pupil Larna (*The Infinity Doctors*) is based on actress Renee O'Connor, Gabrielle on "Xena."

• The credit "moral support" in *Timewyrm: Revelation* indicates who Paul Cornell was emotionally attached to at the time, although one of those

credited, Wendy Ratter, suggested Paul make her credit "immoral support."

• The spaceship Nandi from *Lords of the Storm* looks like a Miranda Class starship (i.e. the USS *Reliant*) from "Star Trek II: The Wrath of Khan."

• Little was changed on the submitted proposal for *Lucifer Rising*, save that the character of Legion would have originally been a member of the Alpha Centauri race.

• In addition to writing *Sanctuary*, David A. McIntee supplied the pencils for the cover.

• *Burning Heart* was based on a proposal Dave Stone (who's written many Judge Dredd books) was working on for a Dredd/"Who" crossover (Stone notes: "This was before anyone had actually seen the Judge Dredd movie and we all thought it was gonna make us rich.") The story of *Burning Heart*, Stone admits, got a bit thin by the removal of all the Dredd material.

• The original cover to *System Shock* had Sarah in waitress gear, complete with an apron, but the effect looked a bit too comical – rather like something from the wartime comedy "Allo Allo."

• *The Devil Goblins of Neptune* and *The Hollow Men*, both by Martin Day and Keith Topping, have character names based on Newcastle footballers.

• The Ogron song in *Mission: Impractical* is set to the tune of "The Green Berets."

• A young-man-turned-vampire named Matthew in *Goth Opera* was originally named Steven and curiously lived where "Who" author Steve Lyons lives in real life. However, Virgin Editor Rebecca Levene realized this and asked *Goth Opera* writer Paul Cornell to change it.

• David A. McIntee intended Sam to be "killed" in *Autumn Mist*, then brought back (as the audience expects), then killed permanently at the book's end.

• The Ogron song in *Mission: Impractical* is set to the tune of "The Green Berets."

• John Peel first wrote *Legacy of the Daleks* as a short story for a Doctor Who Appreciation Society fanzine called *Cosmic Masque*.

• The villains of *Human Nature* were at first ecological terrorists with Krynoid pods, then they were the Hoothi (*Love and War*), then they were all 13 incarnations of the same evil Time Lord, who went about in a gang.

• All of the character names in *The Menagerie*, including "Defrabax,"

"Mecrim," "Cosmae," "Rocarbis" and more came from a secret message in Umberto Eco's "Foucault's Pendulum."

• Paul Cornell's associate Jean Riddler supplied the runes for the Doctor's sigil on *Timewyrm: Revelation*, page 157. From right to left (as runes are read), the symbols read: Jera, indicating Time; Ewas, the Ewe (apt for the Doctor); and Peorth, the unknowable Void.

• When another book was delayed, Justin Richards was asked to write a novel in four weeks. He developed *Millennium Shock*, a sequel to his *System Shock*, so time could be saved by using familiar characters. At the BBC's further request, Richards finished the book in three and a half weeks.

• Although we know him better as "The Man in the Velvet Mask," the Marquis de Sade was known as Monsieur le Six when he was imprisoned at Vincennes.

• Irving Braxiatel wears glasses in *The Empire of Glass* because writer Andy Lane assumed Justin Richards, who wore glasses at the time, had modeled Braxiatel on himself.

• The Sloathes in *Sky Pirates!* were meant to represent capitalists, a reversal on many old pulps that depicted aliens as thinly-disguised communists.

• The letter T in the name of *Damaged Goods* author Russell T Davies doesn't stand for anything. Russell uses it to avoid being confused with British author Russell Davies.

• Part of *Falls the Shadow* would have taken place in an alternate universe, until Virgin decided authors shouldn't use parallel worlds. The Gray Man and the setting Cathedral were then devised for *Falls the Shadow* to replace the lost material.

• For *The Face of the Enemy*, writer McIntee wanted to kill Barbara Wright, but BBC editor Steve Cole said no. Cole counter-suggested that if McIntee used ex-companions Ben Jackson and Polly, perhaps McIntee could kill Polly. However, the two weren't judged to have the story weight that Ian and Barbara had.

• The likeness of the Gray Man (from *Falls the Shadow*) that appeared in the book's Prelude in *Doctor Who Magazine* was actually based on DC Comics' *Phantom Stranger*, as he appeared in *The Books of Magic* (mini-series) #4.

• The plot for *Goth Opera* originated from a failed proposal for a *Doctor Who Magazine* comic strip involving the fourth Doctor battling Dracula. Cornell changed the Doctor involved to Peter Davison, thinking *The*

Romance of Crime would likely be the first Missing Adventure.

• A cameo scene in *The Dying Days* was cut in which FBI agents Fox Mulder and Dana Scully from "The X-Files" report to the U.S. president.

• *Human Nature* evolved from writer Paul Cornell having read *Imzadi*, a "Star Trek: The Next Generation" novel by Peter David that chronicles the early romance between Commander Will Riker and Counselor Deanna Troi.

• In *The Crystal Bucephalus*, Turlough mentions a restaurant in Aix-en-Provence that lies on the site of a burnt-down abbey. *Bucephalus* author Hinton planned on the abbey appearing in a book called *Witchfire* or *Rapture*. Hinton says it was about an army of telekinetic nuns who attack the Vatican, but "Virgin turned it down (wisely)."

• Paul Cornell's *Love and War* was partly influenced two phrases: "Daleks in cyberspace," spoken by a friend of his; and "silent gas dirigibles of the Hoothi," a catchphrase at a tavern. In the original plot, Ace also turned into a Hoothi monster.

• The part of Kit Powell in *The Wages of Sin* is meant to be played by Alexander Siddig, "Doctor Bashir" on "Star Trek: Deep Space Nine."

• An older Sarah Jane Smith was to have played a larger role in *Millennium Shock*, but she was also due to appear in *Interference*. To avoid redundancy, much of older Sarah's role in *Millennium Shock* was allocated to Sylvia, Harry Sullivan's maid.

• Lance Parkin wrote *Just War* intending that actor Ian Richardson (Francis Urquhart in "House of Cards") would play the Nazi Steinmann. Richardson would also have played Lord Grayhaven in *The Dying Days*, Fordfarding in *The Infinity Doctors*, Unitatus member Admiral Januscek Dattani in *Cold Fusion* and the 42th incarnation of the Doctor, as seen in the Benny New Adventure *Beige Planet Mars* and Parkin's fanzine-published but unused ending of *The Dying Days*.

• Andy Lane wrote *Original Sin* with an elderly, slightly mad down-and-out man who would have become a companion and later been revealed as Bernice's father. Lane wrote 20,000 words with this plot, decided the plan wasn't working and scrapped it.

• The original cover to *Goth Opera* showed Nyssa, as a vampire, with her blouse covered – covered, we tell you – with blood. However, the effect was considered too gory and redone with only a bit of blood on her lips.

• *Millennial Rites* was based on the "Inferno" crossover story arc from Marvel's X-Men. As with "Inferno," an elevator in *Millennial Rites* comes

to life.

• Despite any rumors you may have heard, *Demontage* was never entitled *Stripper*. In fact, the work was originally named *The Devil in the Detail*, but that title too closely evoked the "devils" in the proceeding work, *The Taint*.

• Steve Lyons wrote a scene at the end of *Head Games* where the seventh Doctor dreams of killing his predecessor, but line editor Rebecca Levene deemed it too disturbing.

• David A. McIntee wanted to write *The Wages of Sin* with Liz Shaw as a lesbian, but editor Steve Cole objected.

• To honor the Virgin line's end, *The Dying Days* ends with a fat lady singing.

• *Bad Therapy* was inspired from a 1961 film called "Victim," starring Dirk Bogart, in which a young gay man is blackmailed for his relationship with a barrister. The young man in question finally hangs himself. In *Bad Therapy*, author Matt Jones depicts another such lad, full of despair, who lives and grows stronger thanks to the Doctor's intervention.

• Andy Lane, who introduced Roz and Chris in *Original Sin*, suggested that when Roz later left the TARDIS crew, Chris would suspect she was doing something corrupt and kill her. Such a move would parallel Roz killing her own partner Martle, as established in *Original Sin*.

• *Warlock* has the longest page count for a "Who" novel: 359 pages. *Falls the Shadow* runs a close second at 356.

• *Millennial Rites* was originally intended for the second Doctor, Jamie and Zoe, with an older Victoria playing Anne Travers' part. That idea was scrapped because Victoria's continuity would have clashed with *Downtime*. Nonetheless, the original story had the second Doctor become the Valeyard.

• Paul Cornell, thinking his days writing for "Who" were over, sarcastically pitched *Happy Endings* by drawing a Marvel Comics style cover with the Doctor holding a dead Bernice, clad in a wedding dress, outside a church. To Cornell's surprise, editor Rebecca Levene took the idea seriously and asked author Dave Stone to create someone for Bernice to marry.

• When John Peel wrote the outline for *War of the Daleks*, he made it a commentary of the state of the TV show in the late 1980s. It's intended that you read the Thals as the BBC, Davros as "Who" producer John Nathan-Turner and the Dalek Prime as Terry Nation. However, even Peel admits: "Not a single critic picked up on the allegory"

• The submarine and crew used in *White Darkness* are characters from H.P. Lovecraft's story "The Tomb." The exception is Dietz, a character played by Anthony Ainley ("The Master") in *The Land that Time Forgot*.

• *The Infinity Doctors* was planned for release as an audio version the same month the novel came out, so the book's opening paragraphs were written with Paul McGann's voice in mind.

• Donneby's, one of the companies mentioned in the Hone Secretary's speech in *The Dying Days* (page 52), is the company Ian Chesterton interviewed for in the novelization of "The Daleks."

• In *Unnatural History*, some of Griffin the unnaturalist's thoughts and recollections are loosely based on the autobiography of Victorian naturalist Alfred Russell Wallace.

• Captain Kevin Parker, who dances with Sarah Jane Smith in *Evolution*, is actually president of Elizabeth Sladen's U.S. fan club. The maid Nan, who meets the Doctor in that same book, is author John Peel's wife Nan – a huge Tom Baker fan.

• Steve Lyons created the character of companion Grant Markham for the one and only time Lyons played FASA's "Doctor Who" Role-Playing Game.

• The Mars Mission party in *The Dying Days* is attended by "the old woman" from the comedy show, "The Friday Night Armistice" (non-Brits in the audience shouldn't be ashamed for not knowing this).

• Married authors Jonathan Blum and Kate Orman crafted the initial ideas for *Unnatural History* while they were honeymooning in San Francisco. The hotel where the Doctor stayed is around the corner from their honeymoon hotel.

• *The Shadow of Weng-Chiang*, set in August 1937, contains a couple of chronological goofs. Superman is mentioned, even though the character didn't appear until June 1938. One character says he listens to "The Shadow" radio show regularly, but it didn't debut until September 29, 1937.

• The Voracian leader Stabfield from *System Shock* curiously shares some characteristics with Microsoft Chairman Bill Gates, such as rocking gently back and forth on his chair when speaking.

The Crucial Bits

[Note: In the print version of *I, Who*, The Crucial Bits were scattered throughout the story entries as a sort of quick-reference CliffsNotes. They are lumped together here for easy convenience as to the major events of the novel and audio ranges.]

The Infinity Doctor and Other Stories

• **The Infinity Doctors** – Patience "returns" and is revealed as Omega's wife – and the Doctor's. The Doctor's time as a High Council member explored. First appearance of the Doctor's student Larna.

• **Who Killed Kennedy?** – Reporter James Stevens investigates UNIT's activities and becomes Dodo's lover. She gets pregnant, but is killed in a web of intrigue.

• **Downtime** – Victoria Waterfield founds New World University, which is infiltrated by the Great Intelligence. The Brigadier reconciles with his daughter Kate.

Missing Adventures

• **The Witch Hunters** – Susan's telepathic abilities continue to awaken. The Doctor fulfills history by arranging for the execution of Rebecca Nurse, an accused witch in Salem, Mass., 1692.

• **Venusian Lullaby** – The culture and customs of the Venusians, often mentioned by the third Doctor, are explored. However, the Doctor does not learn Venusian karate or lullaby tunes in this story.

• **The Empire of Glass** – Second full appearance of Irving Braxiatel, who begins to found the Library of St. John the Beheaded. Christopher Marlowe, who faked his death, here acts as an agent for the British Secretary of State and dies in a duel.

• **Salvation** – A more detailed version of how Dodo joins the TARDIS crew is revealed.

• **The Man in the Velvet Mask** – In an alternate reality, Dodo loses her virginity to Dalville, an actor.

• **The Murder Game** – First full appearance of the Selachians.

• **The Dark Path** – Origin of Koschei, the Doctor's old friend, who

becomes the Master. Beginning of the long-standing Doctor/Master feud.

• **The Menagerie** – Jamie has a sexual liaison with Kaquaan, a friend on the unnamed planet of the Menagerie.

• **The Scales of Injustice** – Liz Shaw departs from UNIT. Sergeant Yates is promoted to captain. Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart and his first wife, Fiona, divorce. First appearance of the Glasshouse, UNIT's illicit hospital. First appearance of Townsend (the Vault's Managing Director), assassin Jones, the pseudo-Autons Ciara and Cellian and Detective Inspector Robert Lines, the Doctor's friend. First appearance of the modernized Department C19, and the Vault.

• **Managra** – First suggestion that the first Doctor only had one heart.

• **System Shock** – First appearance of the Voracians. The Doctor and Sarah are reunited with an older Harry Sullivan.

• **Eye of Heaven** – Detailed information on Leela's family.

• **The Romance of Crime** – First appearance of artist Menlove Stokes.

• **The Well-Mannered War** – Final Virgin Missing Adventure. Second appearance of artist Menlove Stokes. The Doctor and Romana foil a Black Guardian trap, but cannot materialize the TARDIS without destroying the planet Dellah. The pair opts to depart from our Universe.

• **Cold Fusion** – First appearance of Patience (later revealed as the Doctor's wife). Patience "dies" and reappears in The Infinity Doctors. The fifth and seventh Doctors meet. The only novel with Nyssa in which she isn't transformed into a monster.

• **Goth Opera** – First Virgin Missing Adventure. First full appearance of Ruath, an old flame of the Doctor's. Revelation that ex-companions Ian and Barbara were married and had a son named John. Romana is offered a High Council seat.

• **Players** – First novel acknowledgement of "Season 6B," the period the second Doctor spent, after his trial, working for the Time Lords.

• **The Nightmare Fair** – The Doctor again rebattles the Celestial Toymaker and imprisons him.

• **Time of Your Life** – First appearance and death of Angela, the sixth Doctor's first companion after his trial. First appearance of companion Grant Markham. First suggestion that the Doctor, trying to avoid his destiny as the Valeyard, doesn't want to meet Melanie Bush.

• **Mission: Impractical** – First novel acknowledgement of Frobisher, the

Doctor's penguin companion from Doctor Who Magazine comic strips. Death of Dibber from "The Mysterious Planet."

• **Business Unusual** – Melanie Bush joins the TARDIS. Death of Townsend (the Vault's managing director) and the assassin Jones.

• **Millennial Rites** – Fourth encounter with the Great Intelligence. The mystical nature of a London transformed by the Millennium Codex makes the Doctor briefly become the Valeyard. The sixth Doctor's handling of events here motivates the unborn seventh Doctor to kill his predecessor and become Time's Champion.

• **Matrix** – Death of the Valeyard (a.k.a. Jack the Ripper) and his TARDIS.

The New Adventures

• **Timewyrm: Genesys** – First Virgin New Adventure. The Doctor and Ace investigate the cosmic-powered Timewyrm and accidentally create the creature.

• **Timewyrm: Exodus** – First use in novel range of secondary TV characters, as the Doctor re-encounters the War Chief.

• **Timewyrm: Revelation** – Detailed examination of how previous Doctors exist in the seventh Doctor's mind. First evidence that the Doctor is a being perpetually at war with himself. First appearance of the Eternal Death. The Timewyrm's essence is placed in the body of the baby Ishtar Hutchings. First appearance of the village of Cheldon Bonniface, Peter and Emily Hutchings and the sentient church Saul.

• **Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible** – History of the conflict on Gallifrey between Rassilon's neo-technologists and the mystical Pythia. Story of how the Pythia was banished and cursed Gallifrey to sterility. First appearance of the Gallifreyan Looms, the devices that "spin" new Time Lords, explaining the Doctor as essentially an asexual being. First acknowledgement in the novels of the House of Lungbarrow.

• **Cat's Cradle: Warhead** – First appearance of the Doctor's house in Adisham, Kent. First appearance of young psionics Vincent and Justine, who fall in love. First installment of The War Trilogy.

• **Nightshade** – The Doctor, unwilling to lose Ace as a companion, foils her attempts at romance with young Robin Yeadon.

• **Love and War** – First appearance of companion Bernice Summerfield. First time the Doctor is referred to as Time's Champion. Revelation that the

unborn seventh Doctor killed the sixth Doctor, an act that possibly created the Valeyard. Ace becomes engaged to the Traveler known as Jan, whom the Doctor sacrifices in a gambit against the alien Hoothi. Ace, rebuking the Doctor, leaves the TARDIS.

• **Transit** – First appearance of Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart.

• **The Highest Science** – First appearance of the Chelonians.

• **Deceit** – Ace, three years older and trained by Spacefleet, rejoins the TARDIS.

• **Lucifer Rising** – First appearance of the modernized Adjudicators. First appearance of Legions. First mention of morphic fields.

• **White Darkness** – First mention of "The Great Old Ones" and Veltroch, home planet of the Veltrochni.

• **Birthright** – First Virgin New Adventure to feature the Doctor's companions, not the Doctor. First appearance of Muldwych, the Doctor's "Merlin" incarnation.

• **Iceberg** – First appearance of the Jade Pagoda.

• **Blood Heat** – The Doctor's TARDIS is lost in a tar pit, then time-rammed, and the Doctor's party takes up travel in the TARDIS of a parallel universe Doctor. To save our Universe, the Doctor destroys an entire parallel reality, shattering Ace and Benny's faith in him.

• **Conundrum** – First appearance of the new Master of the Land of Fiction.

• **No Future** – The Doctor again defeats Mortimus, a.k.a. the Meddling Monk. The TARDIS crew reconciles their ill feelings toward each other. First mention of Broadsword, UNIT's intelligence arm. The Doctor gives the Brigadier selective amnesia.

• **Legacy** – The Doctor makes his third visit to Peladon. First appearance of Benny's close friends, the Martian Savaar and his archaeologist brother Rhukk. First mention of Irving Braxiatel.

• **Theatre of War** – First full appearance of Irving Braxiatel and the Braxiatel Collection.

• **All-Consuming Fire** – The Doctor, Benny and Ace meet Sherlock Holmes and John Watson. First detailed explanation of the Great Old Ones.

• **Blood Harvest** – Romana returns to Gallifrey. First appearance of private investigator Tom Dekker. Ex-president Borusa freed from imprisonment. The Doctor defeats a clone of the Great Vampire. First

appearance (cameo) of the Doctor's old flame Ruath.

• **First Frontier** – The Anthony Ainley Master regains his Time Lord inheritance and regenerates.

• **Warlock** – Second installment of the War Trilogy. Vincent and Justine split up when Justine falls for Creed McIlveen.

• **Set Piece** – Ace departs the TARDIS and takes up time travel herself as Time's Vigilante. Second full appearance of Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart.

• **Sanctuary** – First appearance and possible death of Benny's beloved, Guy de Carnac.

• **Human Nature** – The Doctor experiments with being human and, as "John Smith," strikes up a romance with teacher Joan Redfern. First appearance of the TARDIS cat, Wolsey.

• **Original Sin** – First appearance of companions Roz Forrester and Chris Cwej. Detailed examination of the modernized Adjudicators.

• **Head Games** – Mental battle between the sixth Doctor and his killer, the seventh Doctor.

• **The Also People** – Chris strikes up a romance with Dep, one of the People, and gets her preggers. Roz becomes romantic with another of the People, feLixi, who's ostracized. First appearance of the People. Benny restores Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart to mental health.

• **Warchild** – Conclusion of the War Trilogy. Death of Vincent. Justine and Creed McIlveen divorce.

• **SLEEPY** – Chris revealed to be latently telepathic.

• **Death and Diplomacy** – First appearance of Jason Kane, Benny's fiance.

• **Happy Endings** – Marriage of Jason Kane and Benny, who leaves the TARDIS. Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart restored to youth and health. The Doctor, Roz and Chris take up travel in the Doctor's original TARDIS while Muldwych uses the parallel universe TARDIS. Romana is now president of Gallifrey. Ace, now called Dorothee, hooks up with a clone of Jason Kane. Chris impregnates Ishtar, the ex-Timewyrm. The Eternal Time revealed as Chris' granddaughter.

• **Christmas on a Rational Planet** – First reference of the Doctor as "Eighth Man Bound." First hint that Sarah Jane Smith got married.

• **Return of the Living Dad** – Benny reunited with her father, Isaac Summerfield.

• **Damaged Goods** – First appearance of N-forms, weapons from old Gallifrey.

• **So Vile a Sin** – Death of Roz Forrester. First appearance of Roz's sister Leabie and other family members. The Doctor euthanizes the Earth Empress.

• **Bad Therapy** – Peri, married to Yrcanos for 25 years, finally returns to Earth.

• **Eternity Weeps** – Death of Elizabeth Shaw. Benny and Jason divorce. The Doctor kills millions of people on Earth to save the rest of the planet.

• **The Room With No Doors** – The Doctor's seventh regeneration is near.

• **Lungbarrow** – First full appearance and death of the House of Lungbarrow. First appearance of the Doctor's Cousins. Detailed description of the Doctor's time on Gallifrey prior to leaving. The Doctor revealed as having the genetic inheritance of the Other. Susan revealed as the Other's granddaughter. Chris Cwej departs the TARDIS to travel via use of a time ring. Leela becomes pregnant with Andred's child. Andred replaces Castellan Spandrell as head of security on Gallifrey. President Romana forges an alliance between Gallifrey and the Sisterhood of Karn. The Doctor departs on his mission to retrieve the Master's ashes, leading to his regeneration in "Doctor Who: Enemy Within."

• **The Dying Days** – First Virgin New Adventure. Only meeting to date between the eighth Doctor and Benny, barring Parkin's non-canonical story "The Worm" from *Perfect Timing*. The Doctor gives Wolsey the cat to Benny and drops Benny at St. Oscar's University, leading to Virgin's Benny line of New Adventures.

Eighth Doctor Adventures

• **The Eight Doctors** – First BBC New Adventure. First appearance of companion Samantha Jones. The eighth Doctor meets all of his previous incarnations at various points in "Who" history.

• **War of the Daleks** – Dalek history is massively rewritten (for the worse).

• **Alien Bodies** – First appearance of the Relic, said to be the Doctor's corpse. First appearance of Faction Paradox and the Celestis. First mention of "Dark Sam," Sam's true timeline.

• **Longest Day** – Sam grows embarrassed for "enjoying" giving the Doctor CPR and abandons him.

• **Legacy of the Daleks** – The Roger Delgado Master is killed, leading to his skeletal form in "The Deadly Assassin." Susan departs Earth in the Master's TARDIS. Death of David Campbell, Susan's husband.

• **Seeing I** – The Doctor, looking for Sam, is imprisoned for three years at a rehabilitation center. Sam, three years older, frees him and rejoins him in the TARDIS. First mention of Savaar, a Time Lord later seen in *The Infinity Doctors*.

• **The Scarlet Empress** – First full-length novel appearance of Iris Wildthyme, an old flame of the Doctor's. Iris regenerates into a sexy blonde bombshell.

• **The Taint** – First appearance of companion Fitz Kreiner.

• **Revolution Man** – Fitz leaves the TARDIS for two years and becomes a brainwashed agent of Communist China.

• **Unnatural History** – A temporal anomaly replaces Blonde Sam with Dark Sam. Dark Sam and Fitz have a liaison. The Doctor's shadow disappears, as is typical of Faction agents. The Doctor's VW is destroyed and used to rebuild itself.

• **Interference** – Sam departs the TARDIS to work with an older Sarah Jane Smith. Fitz becomes an agent of Faction Paradox - the original Fitz is taken to the Faction's Eleven Day Empire and becomes Father Kreiner, a copy is of him is "remembered" as the Remote agent Kode. The Doctor restores Fitz from Kode's form. First appearance of IM Foreman. First "Who" appearance of the Universe-in-a-Bottle. The third Doctor dies, in a very paradoxical fashion, from a shotgun wound on the colony of Dust. Faction Paradox taints him with a virus that will strengthen with each regeneration, eventually making the eighth Doctor their agent.

The Infinity Doctors and Other Stories

The Infinity Doctors

Author: Lance Parkin. BBC Missing Adventure #17. Release Date: November 1998. Note: Curiously, if you add all the Missing and Past adventures together, *The Infinity Doctors* is No. 50.

Main Characters

The Doctor.

Travel Log

Gallifrey. Also, an alternate timeline, 10,000 years later. Plus, the Needle, a few decades before the end of the Universe.

Summary

The Doctor. A member of the Gallifreyan High Council, and a Time Lord who's labored to make Gallifrey slightly more involved in universal affairs. And now, the Time Lords, with a small bit of trepidation, agree to host a conference between the long-fighting Rutan and Sontaran races.

But as negotiations flounder and the Doctor confiscates a deadly Rutan anti-matter device, the Time Lords grow distressed over "the Effect," a new phenomenon that systematically probes every particle of matter in the Universe – and could have the power to destroy them. The Time Lords project an entire space station, commanded by the Doctor's old friend, the Magistrate, to the Effect's origin, located only a few decades before the Universe's natural end.

There, the Time Lord crew finds the Needle, a light-year long object inexplicably affixed on one end to a black hole. The Doctor secretly wonders if he can use the power behind the Effect to restore his lost beloved to life. With the Magistrate's approval, he transmats to the Needle. He then uses the Rutan anti-matter converter to turn himself into anti-matter and penetrate one of the Needle's inner dimensions.

In an anti-matter universe, the Doctor finds the instigator of the Effect – Omega, the great Time Lord stellar engineer, who was lost during Gallifrey's initial time-travel experiments. Also, the Doctor re-meets Patience – his wife and Omega's former wife – who was restored by Omega after a fatal gunshot wound (in *Cold Fusion*).

Omega, although he commands the reality-warping power of a singularity, can only leave the anti-matter universe if someone replaces him. The Doctor agrees to take Omega's place so he can stay with Patience, who can exist only in the anti-matter universe.

Omega thus returns to the Needle. Using the remnant of his singularity power, Omega banishes the Magistrate to an unknown locale – who refuses to serve him – and travels to Gallifrey. Omega, driven insane by decades of isolation, intends to unleash the Gallifreyan Eye of Harmony, thus gaining omnipotent, destructive power.

In the paradise generated by the Doctor's newfound power, Patience tells the Doctor witness Omega's rampage. She tells the Doctor that as he too possesses the power of a singularity, only he can stop Omega. The Doctor sadly agrees and uses Omega's exposed singularity to return to the Universe of matter. But this act causes the anti-matter paradise, which includes the Doctor's wife, to dissipate forever.

In our Universe, the Doctor speaks with Omega, who concedes the Doctor is a worthy opponent. They shake hands – as the Doctor intended. The Doctor's singularity and Omega's cancel each other out, banishing Omega from our Universe. Because the Doctor was prepared for the singularity annihilation, he uses the last of his fading power to transport himself to Gallifrey.

The Rutan and Sontaran delegates, having been left alone in the Doctor's TARDIS while he investigated the Effect, settle their differences and end the war. The Doctor retires to his chambers, pondering the loss of Patience and his friend the Magistrate, and considers that of all he's read, seen and studied in his long life, he still has many questions. And with the TARDIS key heavy in his hand, he believes the answers to his inquiries aren't to be found on Gallifrey.

Memorable Moments

Our first sight of the Doctor, in his nightgown, holding a book, does little but evoke a smile. The Doctor wonders which of the negotiating Sontarans or Rutans will blink first, then realizes neither has eyelids.

The Doctor's time spent in paradise with his wife is one of the most fulfilling of the series. One guesses that this is the short time the Doctor has been longing for throughout all of the TV stories.

Sex and Spirits

The Doctor almost certainly does the deed with Larna. For a time, he also stays with his wife and enjoys sexual relations with her. In the past, the Doctor and Patience have children.

Ass-Whuppings

In the past, Omega's ship and crew are wiped out. A feisty General Sontar, leader of the Sontarans, snaps the Doctor's neck, but the TARDIS' temporal grace saves him. Larna kills herself, but at the Doctor's request, Omega restores her. Omega disintegrates the Time Lord Savar. Patience presumably perishes – again.

Continuity

Omega returned to menace the Doctor – excuse me, Doctors – in "The Three Doctors" and "Arc of Infinity." The Time Lord named Hedin also appeared as a High Council member and follower of Omega in "Arc of Infinity." The Effect could well be the Arc from that story. The Hand of Omega, seen in "Remembrance of the Daleks," has a twin. The Station was the site of the Doctor's second trial in "The Trial of a Time Lord."

This book celebrates the 35th anniversary of "Who." Patience was shot to death in *Cold Fusion*, but her essence was saved by Omega and reappears here. Her children (and the Doctor's it seems) were shown as being killed in that book. The Magistrate, a.k.a. Koschei, yields to his darker nature in *The Dark Path*. Savar's kidnapping story was first told in *Seeing I*. A hint that Professor Joyce from *Unnatural History* might be the Doctor's father is that the Doctor's father "isn't named Ulysses and is a professor at Berkeley." Larna is curiously the name of Professor Joyce's assistant in *Unnatural History*. We here observe the giant omniscate Time Lord weapon seen in *Interference*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: This incarnation of the Doctor is described as having a long, oval face with an aristocratic nose and a full mouth. He's a little taller

than average, with a long face and closely cropped hair. He has a high forehead and sad blue eyes. He's the only person on Gallifrey to wear a battered blue cashmere jacket, pressed silk shirt and tailored tan trousers. He's also got glasses and an old college scarf. He owns a cat named Wycliff.

The Doctor is a High Council member and the most senior member of the Prydonian Chapter, apart from the Magistrate. The Doctor's rooms are at the Citadel's heart. He already has a reputation for being a troublemaker. Hedin is his friend. He's an adept telepath and reads *The Iliad*.

Apart from Savar, the Doctor's one of the few Time Lords who's traveled off-planet. He barely scraped by on his Ph.D., and no college wanted him for post-doctoral work.

The Doctor's a vegetarian. He first left Gallifrey on a short hop across the constellation to his parents' summerhouse. There, his mother told him that the moving bits of light in the sky were not stars – but ships.

He's already endured the deaths of loved ones many times. He owns a sonic screwdriver. He can build a primitive Time Scoop.

• *The Doctor's parents*: The Doctor's mother's was likely named Penelope. [Parkin hints that mayhaps "Penelope" refers to the character from *The Room With No Doors*.] The Doctor's father, the greatest explorer of his age, was a powerfully built man with rugged features, a weathered face and dark eyes. He had white hair and a clipped beard.

• *The Magistrate*: Currently medium height and dressed in black robes of office, with a small, pointed beard, the Magistrate is one of the president's most trusted advisors. Yet, it is said "his hearts are as black as his robes." He employs a stubby black tubed weapon.

• *The Doctor and the Magistrate*: The Magistrate has known the Doctor all his life and is his oldest friend.

• *Patience (a.k.a. the Doctor's wife, Omega's wife)*: Patience started life as a Gallifreyan, but having lived for two million years, it's possible that she evolved. (Her regeneration in *Cold Fusion* surprised her as much as anybody.) She was a young woman when Gallifrey was cursed with sterility and has lived through 200 generations of Time Lords. She was married to Omega until he was lost to the anti-matter universe. Much later, she married the Doctor.

In this incarnation, Patience is beautiful, with short black hair. She's almost feline, with green eyes, a slender build and freckles on her shoulders.

• *The Doctor and Patience*: Patience lived at the Doctor's Family home – undoubtedly Lungbarrow – for countless generations, and tutored the Doctor's grandfather and father. She was present at the Doctor's birth. She nursed him and tutored him. She taught him to dance at his father's household, causing a bit of scandal.

Saver was present when she married the Doctor. The Doctor hand-painted his wife's picture. He gave her a sapphire pendant, like his sapphire ring, on a silver chain. She bore his children. She remembers the Gallifreyan Capitol burning as the Loom-born searched for any new natural-born Gallifreyans to kill them. Some hid among the Gallifreyan population for centuries.

After he first lost his wife, the Doctor kept a Zero Room to her memory and added one lit candle for each year she was gone. After this story; he moves on and extinguishes the candles.

• *Omega*: Omega in this incarnation is 7-foot-tall and bearded. Before Omega's infamous experiment to gain a power source for time travel, a fragment of writing, allegedly from the future, tricked him into thinking he could survive the experiment. Omega's ship was decimated, but Gallifreyan telepaths protected him in a stasis halo and he survived, albeit in an anti-matter universe. Savar's TARDIS later caused a breach in space-time that allowed him to observe and somewhat intervene in the Universe's affairs.

• *Larna*: Blonde-haired Larna graduated from the Prydonian Academy, and served on Gallifrey as a Technician for the conjunction of the planets Terve and Alambil. She was one of the Doctor's best pupils, and graduated top of her Class. She was physically the strongest of her Cousins and classmates.

• *The Doctor and Larna*: Larna, having seen the Doctor's Zero Room that honored Patience, knew the Doctor would try to use the Effect's power to alter history and save Patience. Rather than see history violated – and perhaps in part because she loved the Doctor herself – Larna tried to stop him. He tried to delay her with a harmless knife blow to her primary heart, but Larna twisted around and made the blow a fatal one, simply to prove to the Doctor that he couldn't have anything he wanted. She also mentally blocked herself from regenerating.

At the guilty-feeling Doctor's request, Omega demonstrated his power by restoring Larna to life. At the end of this story, Larna accepted a 2,000-year assignment helping to neutralize the after-effects of the Effect.

• *Lord Hedin* ("Arc of Infinity"): Currently, Hedin is a historian and High

Council member, as was his father. Hedin's current incarnation has a thin face, which is both kindly and shrewd. The Doctor helped him write the 300-volume *Life of Omega*, which took Hedin four centuries to finish.

• *The President*: The President's current, tiny body is more than 1,000 years old. He's written a dozen books on Omega. He's a master of a dozen disciplines, but leadership isn't one of them.

• *Castellan Voran*: When the President is incapacitated, Voran becomes Acting-President, with his Constable Pendrel acting as Castellan.

• *Savar*: In Savar's fourth regeneration, he was a powerful telekinetic and telepath. He was a noble man and friend of the Doctor's father. He was also a friend of the Doctor's, and the first to beat him at chess. Savar set out on a mission to rescue Omega. The Doctor's father approved of the quest, but stayed home. Savar found Omega, but believed him to be the god Ohm and fled. Frightened, Savar ejected from his damaged TARDIS, which became the Needle, and was attacked by the alien I, who took his eyes (*see Seeing I*). Eyeless, Savar returned to Gallifrey and the Time Lords re-spun him a pair of eyes. However, Savar's mind was broken by the experience, even after a couple of regenerations.

During this story, Omega restored Savar to his eyeless, telepathic fourth incarnation to work as his servant in our Universe. Omega disintegrated Savar when he had no further use for him.

• *General Sontar*: Sontar helped mastermind a 2,000-year-old war with the Isari. Shortly after, a military coup purged the population of non-Sontarans. The cloning of Sontarans came into use and multiple General Sontars vied for power. The Sontaran War Cabinet decided which Sontar shall lead them. The original Sontar is actually still alive, having transferred his consciousness from clone to clone for millions of years.

• *Centro*: An entity that commanded spacewarps. The Doctor imprisoned Centro on Gallifrey.

• *Ohm*: The ancient god of the Time Lords. Flip the word upside-down and consider it a moment.

• *The Doctor's TARDIS*: The Doctor can pilot it through gaps in Gallifrey's transduction barriers ("The Invasion of Time").

• *The Needle*: The object that used to be Savar's TARDIS was stretched as it was pulled into the antimatter universe and became a planet-sized tube, affixed at one end to a black hole. In time, a number of settlements of unknown origin were built on it. The Needle is approximately one light-year long, but barely 50,000 km in diameter.

• *TARDISes*: TARDISes are gender-specific, which explains why the Doctor calls his TARDIS "she." (Yes, there are male TARDISes – Savar has one.) TARDISes can travel no more than a few billion years through time without refueling. They would have to be specifically re-engineered to reach the distant point named Hindmost. They sometimes wander near the Eye of Harmony, drinking of its energy.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Time Lords from Omega's era were immortal, barring accidents ("The War Games").

At this point in Gallifrey's history, there are about 1,000 Time Lords, the vast majority of which are from Gallifrey. There are only 12 female Time Lords, even though more than ten percent of the Gallifreyan population is female.

The Time Lords cannot see the future, but supremely extrapolate from all known ripples. They can computer-simulate dead beings, rather like Rimmer from "Red Dwarf" Time Lords can assist wounded Time Lords by mentally triggering a regeneration. A suicidal Time Lord can mentally block his or her regeneration.

Gallifreyan surgeons can heal a blow to the primary heart in an hour. A blow to both of a Time Lords' hearts will kill. The Ceremony of Temporary Investiture, performed by monks, ordains an acting President.

Time Lord technology can direct blackstars powerful enough to crack open Dyson Spheres. They've so far resisted the urge to turn themselves into energy beings.

Lord Glebun (a.k.a. Glebun the Flatulent) did groundbreaking research into fluid dynamics. Castellan Fordfarding, a contemporary of Rassilon, is regarded as the greatest Castellan ever for his obduracy and complete lack of imagination.

• *Rutans*: Rutans can creates mouths to speak like humans. They can embed their tentacles in other beings and drink of their thoughts. The Rutan Host can suppress the creation of overly hostile Rutans.

• *Sontarans and the Rutans*: Battles are often stalemates. Computers predict, after a few volleys, which side will win. The loser then self-destructs and kills the winner.

• *The Needle People*: The origin of the Needle inhabitants is unknown, but they saw the future as we would see the past. Therefore, they were deadly accurate, as they could fire energy bolts where they knew a person

was going to be.

Alien Planets

• *Gallifrey*: Gallifrey has Earth's same length of day and year, gravity, type of sun and distance from the Sun. A Gallifreyan's measure of telling time changes, as sundials divide the Gallifreyan day into nine hours. But as the lengths of the days vary with the seasons, so do the hours.

Gallifrey is located in a five-planet star system. Its nameless star has been re-engineered to keep it main sequence. The largest population concentration is in a large domed city in the Northern hemisphere. Olyesti is one of Three Minute Cities in the East. The lawless Low Town has bars and brothels, where disease-free Gallifreyans enjoy extended lifespans, but live in squalor. Feast days on Gallifrey include the Feast of Rassilon the Lamp and Harrenenmas.

Places to Go

• *Qqaba*: The last of the Population III stars, and where Omega was lost.

• *The Gallifreyan Panopticon* ("The Deadly Assassin"): Statues of Gallifrey's founders stand at each corner.

• *The Doctor's Chambers*: All six walls are lined with bookcases. He keeps objects from every period of Earth history.

• *The Tomb of the Uncertain Soldier (Gallifrey)*: Contains the body of a Gallifreyan from an alternate reality, one of a group of Time Lords who cancelled out their timelines for the greater good of Gallifrey.

Stuff You Need

• *Intermace*: Substance that weakens Time Lords' telepathic defenses.

• *Gallifreyan Suits*: Protective garb that applies Heisenberg's Uncertainty Principle and monitors the future for dangers. If such danger is detected, the suit teleports its wearer to a new location.

• *Gallifreyan force knives*: Can cut anything from a quark to a meter long.

• *Sontaran dark matter device*: Capable of infecting a star with baxteriurn, a self-replicating form of dark matter that stops a star's fusion process.

• *Rutan Anti-Matter Converter*: As the name implies, it converts objects into destructive anti-matter, from a range of 1,000 miles.

Organizations

• *Gallifrey's Chancellery Watch*: Existed long before the Time Lords.

Ships

The Gallifreyan Station: Can hold more than a million people, but routinely uses a skeleton crew.

Phenomena

Omega's "Effect": Omega's scanning wave front essentially picked up every particle of matter in the Universe, looked at it, then put it down again. Damage to space-time from Savar's TARDIS made the Effect possible.

History

• Omega embarked on his last voyage a decade after the Pythia's curse of sterility (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*). A generation or so after Rassilon, the Time Lords tried to use time as a weapon to destroy their enemies. The result was the Time Wars, fought for 30,000 years on a thousand planets. The Universe would have been destroyed but for the intervention of higher powers (such as the Guardians from the "Key to Time" season, perhaps). Afterward, Gallifrey sealed off sections of space-time damaged beyond repair.

• Gallifrey has suffered many war-like periods. Since Rassilon's time, Rigel, Gosouls and a dozen other worlds have attacked Gallifrey – and lost.

• Rassilon likely forged a page from the Books of Prophecy, burned after the Pythia's era, stating that his time travel experiments would succeed. This gained him needed public support.

• Names cited from the Time Lords' future include Varnax, Faction Paradox (*Alien Bodies*), Catavolcus and the Timewyrm (the "Timewyrm" series). Other names to watch include Klade, Saldaamir, Centro and the Ongoing.

• The Sontarans and the Rutan agreed to halt hostilities 300,000 years before the humanity's extinction.

At the End of the Day

Believe the hype. *The Infinity Doctors* is a science-fiction epic almost unparalleled, and the No. 1 "Who" book that should be brought to the big

screen. It gives a view of Gallifrey like no other, with Time Lords discussing ancient history the way we would dissect yesterday's football match. The impossible to them seems downright pedestrian. But among the Time Lords, the Doctor's view is unique because he can *think*. He's living proof that, even for we humans, it isn't enough to be individual – we must be *individuals*. In short, this is likely the most comprehensive "Who" you're ever likely to read, and the *beginning* that 35 years of stories have built to. Don't miss out.

Who Killed Kennedy?

Authors: James Stevens and David Bishop. Neither a Missing Adventure nor a New Adventure; just a good book. Release Date: April 1996.

Main Characters

James Stevens and Dodo Chaplet, with the third Doctor, Liz Shaw, Jo Grant, the Master and UNIT.

Setting

Britain, circa 1970s. Stevens also travels twice via a Time Ring to Dallas, Texas, Nov. 22, 1963.

Chronology

Ranges from "Spearhead From Space" to just before "The Sea Devils."

Summary

When *Daily Chronicle* feature writer James Stevens investigates reports of a hospitalized man with inhuman blood, he is intrigued by the presence of UNIT, a shadowy government organization. Over the next few months, Stevens follows UNIT's strange involvement with a plague at Wenley Moor and the troubled Mars Probe Program. He researches and writes the "history" of UNIT, an organization that appears to have no checks and balances, but Stevens' editor squelches the piece. But Stevens refuses to be silenced and is fired.

Obsessed with exposing various governmental "cover-ups," Stevens researches mind control and interviews an amnesiac Dodo Chaplet, actually an ex-companion of the Doctor. Dodo tells Stevens of her hazy experiences in a mysterious hospital named "The Glasshouse," a UNIT-funded government hospital. Stevens allows the homeless Dodo to stay with him and in time they become lovers. Not long after, she becomes pregnant.

Finally, booked on a national television program to discuss his research, Stevens grandstands and announces UNIT's "cover-ups." Later, agents from the Glasshouse beat him up and take him to the institution, where he meets the accused terrorist Victor Magister, a.k.a. the Master, who has subverted the institution. The Master has been brainwashing UNIT soldiers and using

them as his agents, but Stevens escapes with the manic UNIT Private Cleary and rallies a camera crew to expose the Glasshouse's cover-ups. Unfortunately, when they return, they find the building stripped bare.

Soon after, Stevens returns home to find Dodo dead from a pistol wound.

Stevens also discovers a metal wristband Cleary was wearing in his house – the Master hypnotized Cleary to kill Dodo and further destroy Stevens' willpower. A destitute, devastated Stevens investigates a UNIT-protected peace conference, where he meets the Doctor and sees alien bodies – firsthand evidence of UNIT's goodwill in protecting Earth. Further bowed, Stevens abandons his hunt of UNIT.

The Doctor realizes that the Master's Glasshouse agents have been trained to travel through time and assassinate key figures in history, ultimately destroying Earth by destabilizing the space-time continuum. The exiled Doctor can't use Cleary's wristband, which is actually a Time Ring, so the Time Lord asks Stevens to follow Cleary through time and stop his interference. In Dallas 1963, Stevens witnesses Cleary knocking Kennedy's historical assassin, Lee Harvey Oswald, unconscious. Stevens tries to shoot the Master, who has journeyed to 1963 to oversee the operation, but misses. The bullet strikes near the Kennedy procession.

Suddenly, another man fires a second bullet. The President dies, but Stevens sees the killer. The Master escapes and Stevens returns to 1973 with Cleary, who's brain-damaged from his repeated time travel. Stevens calls the Doctor and says history is preserved. Fast forward to January 1996, when Cleary dies in a hospital. Stevens co-authors, with David Bishop, *Who Killed Kennedy?*, which details *the truth* behind the president's death. Stevens now looks in the mirror and sees the face of Kennedy's assassin: His own face, aged 50 years. Having spent the last 25 years knowing it was his destiny, as an older man, to fulfill history and kill the president, Stevens again departs for 1963 with his Time Ring and rifle.

Memorable Moments

Stevens gets ribbed because his brain gives birth to his best stories while he's on the toilet. The Brigadier shows doubter Stevens a dead Ogron ("Take a look at the sort of foe UNIT was created to fight").

Sex and Spirits

Dodo has it off with Stevens and gets pregnant. Had she lived, they would likely have gotten married.

Ass-Whuppings

Among the dead are the Doctor's ex-companion Dodo and one U.S. President. An institutionalized Dodo was nearly raped in a mixed-sex ward, but fought back and cracked her attacker's head open.

Continuity

Dodo left the Doctor's company in "The War Machines." If you recall, a hospital worker in "Spearhead from Space" called a *Daily Chronicle* reporter to talk about the presence of UNIT at the hospital. The reporter on the phone was James Stevens. He was also the nosy journalist on the phone with the Brigadier in "The Silurians" (Remember the irked Brigadier's line: "The *Daily* what?").

The government, covering up the presence of aliens on Earth, laid the blame for many incidents ("Spearhead from Space," "The Silurians," "The Ambassadors of Death" and "Day of the Daleks") on the "terrorist" Victor Magister, a.k.a. the Master. Based on reports that the Master is free, the Doctor decides to visit the "prisoner" ("The Sea Devils").

Stevens interviews Professor Ralph Cornish ("The Ambassadors of Death") and Professor Kettlewell ("Robot"). Stevens appears at the prison demonstration in "The Mind of Evil." He also investigated events in "Day of the Daleks" and was rescued by the Doctor from the Dalek attack.

Stevens' deep throat source, "Cassandra," manipulated Horatio Chinn into clashing with UNIT ("The Claws of Axos") as a way of neutralizing both parties. Chinn got an early retirement.

Private Francis Cleary took part in the prison raid in "The Mind of Evil" and went mad after encountering the "devils" in "The Daemons." Time Rings first appeared in "Genesis of the Daleks." The Shoreditch Incident ("Remembrance of the Daleks") was one week after Kennedy's assassination.

The virus Dodo acquired in *The Man in the Velvet Mask* presumably infects Stevens, but doesn't impede his health in anyway. The Glasshouse's origins are told in *The Scales of Injustice*.

Before traveling through time to kill Kennedy, James Stevens spends 25 years as a journalism tutor, teaching Ruby Duvall (*Iceberg*) and Sarah Jane Smith.

International Electromatics' technology ("The Invasion") was split between Ashley Chapel (*Millennial Rites*) and Professor Ralph Cornish

("The Ambassadors of Death").

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The exiled Doctor cannot use Time Rings. He refuses to let Stevens tell him the name of identify Kennedy's assassin, figuring he's better off not knowing.

• *The Doctor and the Master*: The Master chooses to interfere with Kennedy's assassination partly because it's a "crucial moment" in the Doctor's personal history (pointing tongue-in-cheek to the very first broadcast of "Doctor Who" on the day of the event). Had the Master succeeded, it would likely have destroyed the Doctor.

• *James Stevens*: Stevens was born on Nov. 23, 1945. The G.I. who sired Stevens left Stevens' mother, who was only 17 at the time, and went off to war and was killed. Stevens was put up for adoption.

He worked at *The Daily News* in Taranaki, then at *The 8 O'Clock* and the *New Zealand Herald*, newspapers in Auckland, New Zealand. In 1968, he immigrated to Britain to work in journalism on Fleet Street. He believed in the journalist's code: "Whenever there's an explosion, we always run towards it while everybody else runs away."

He caused scandal by marrying a daughter of an aristocratic family, mostly for the sake of immigration. He became a feature writer for *The Daily Chronicle*. He got drunk and had an affair with a woman named Natasha. Department C19, attempting to stop Stevens' probe into UNIT affairs, informed his wife – who was pregnant with their son William – of the liaison and they divorced.

Stevens' first book on Kennedy was published just before he shamed himself by making wild accusations about UNIT on BBC3, and was immediately withdrawn from sale. The Doctor saw a copy.

An older Stevens later campaigned for those suffering from Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder and set up the Francis Cleary Trust, which established two halfway houses.

• *Dodo Chaplet*: After "The War Machines," Dodo spent several months in the country, but eventually looked for a job in London. As a delayed effect of her brainwashing by the rogue computer WOTAN, she began suffering blackouts and memory losses. She fainted on the street one day, and was sent to a series of psychiatric hospitals. A doctor at one hospital near Colchester in Essex gave her electroshock therapy over a 14-month period.

She was finally transferred to the Glasshouse, where the Master interrogated her as a companion of the Doctor. The Master wiped her memory of the place and released her. She then lived at a halfway house for the homeless in London, but answered an article about mind-control, written by James Stevens after events in "The Mind of Evil."

Dodo was a good cook. She had only had strange flashbacks to her past life and adventures with the Doctor and Steven Taylor. She was buried in a grave south of London, on a hillside overlooking the sea. One of the shorter Doctors, perhaps the second or the seventh, attended her funeral, carrying a single white rose.

• *Rachel Jensen* ("Remembrance of the Daleks"): Jensen is now recognized as a leading scientific figure of her time. She was part of the Cambridge Group, and worked on code breaking and ciphers during World War II. She also served with the British Rocket Group, pioneering work on propulsion systems and rocket guidance arrays. Her autobiography, *The Electrical Dreamer*, details her dislike for military affairs.

• *Ian and Barbara Chesterton*: After Ian and Barbara returned to Earth in 1965 ("The Chase"), they claimed to have spent the last two years as missionaries in Central Africa. Barbara then became a university lecturer, specializing on the Aztec period of history ("The Aztecs"). Ian shifted to varsity work, gained a professorship within a year and was soon presenting controversial but well-respected papers to international conferences. He specialized in astronomy, but showed expertise across a wide range of fields, using knowledge gained from his TARDIS travels.

• *Isobel Watkins* ("The Invasion"): Fleet Street regards photographer Isobel Watkins as a joke. Her photos of the Cybermen were defamed as fakes and she spent months out of work. Department C19 threatened her to silence her story.

In her time, Isobel photographed Jimi Hendrix, Twiggy and Lulu and the Rolling Stones, as well as Paul McCartney's wedding. Watkins lost her "boyfriend" – who wasn't UNIT Captain Turner – because Department C19 would threaten his army career if he kept seeing her. (In *The Scales of Injustice*, she and Turner are married.)

• *Greg Sutton and Petra Williams* ("Inferno"): The two became lovers and cleaned out Professor Stahlman's office in the Mechanical Engineering Block at Imperial University in South Kensington. They plan to leave Great Britain any day for parts unknown.

• *UNIT Private Francis Cleary*: After suffering brain damage by using a

prototype Time Ring (Stevens survived mostly by luck), his years of hospital costs were paid for UNIT and the Doctor's account at Coutts Bank. Cleary died on April 5, 1995.

• *The Master*: The Master sometimes fed Stevens information to keep him a thorn in UNIT's side. He was director of the Glasshouse, which he used to re-program UNIT soldiers to do his bidding, and had operatives in Department C19.

Organizations

• *UNIT*: UNIT's pre-cursor, the Intrusion Counter Measures Group ("Remembrance of the Daleks") was formed in 1961, charged with protecting the United Kingdom from covert actions by hostile powers. In 1967, Group Captain Gilmore flew to New York and briefed key United Nations Security Council members on the potential for alien invasion. They voted overwhelmingly to adopt Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart's proposal to create UNIT. Only Great Britain abstained. Within 18 months, the Brigadier commanded the new organization.

Many regarded the Brigadier as having set up his own "little tin-pot army." Because of the dangerous nature of its work, UNIT only accepted unmarried volunteers and offered extra pay over normal military service. In 1996, it became a truly international force after global upheavals in Africa and the Balkans proved the U.N. needed something stronger than a peacekeeping force.

• *Department C19:* A rogue government office, designed to liaison with UNIT on finances. Department C19 in many ways overstepped its authority and was purged in the late 1970s. Nonetheless, parts of it survived as a shadowy presence.

Time Travel

Cleary's momentary destabilization of the timeline at Kennedy's assassination churns time instability, causing reports of cavemen in Croydon and Elizabethan noblemen around St. James' Park.

History

Kennedy was shot on Nov. 23, 1963. Curiously, the news overshadowed the debut of a new science fiction program that promised "adventures in time and space." The world, in many ways, still mourns Kennedy.

At the End of the Day

One of the most clever and passionate ‘Who” novels. David Bishop fires off crisp journalistic writing that neatly stitches the brave-but-misled James Stevens into Pertwee’s stories with needle and thread. Dodo’s presence shows how Stevens’ taste in women moves from the rich to the poor – and how much he benefits from it. Newcomers will be shredded by so much continuity, but “Who” veterans will hear the story’s heartbeat pulsing, not fully seeing how brilliantly this fits into Kennedy’s death until the very end. Through Steven’s actions against UNIT, we see how no good deed goes unpunished. Overall, an enlightening, uplifting story of two broken men – a United States president and the man who killed him.

The Face of the Enemy

Author: David A. McIntee. BBC Missing Adventure #7. Release Date: January 1998.

Main Characters

Ian Chesterton, Barbara Wright, Harry Sullivan, the Master and UNIT.

Setting

London, circa 1970s.

Chronology

Concurrent with the third Doctor's absence in "The Curse of Peladon."

Summary

At the crash site of Jetstream 31, there's a curious little problem. The Right Honourable Frederick Jackson, MP and Junior Armed Forces Minister, is lying dead – DNA tests bear this out. But the same man is also working quite happily in his London offices. Because UFO involvement is suspected, UNIT is summoned, along with Royal Air Force lecturer Ian Chesterton.

Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart suspects other members of the government have been similarly replaced, and he swallows pride to ask the imprisoned Master for help, as the Doctor is not on Earth. The Master refuses and escapes, but finally sides with UNIT when the imposters steal his TARDIS to pirate its technology

Using time-travel belts found in the Doctor's laboratory, the Master tracks his TARDIS and discovers it on the enemy's home planet. He tries to escape there, but brings the Brigadier and Ian along in tow. Eventually, they discover it is the same parallel world the Doctor saw destroyed by volcanic eruptions (in "Inferno"). A few survivors are now tying to reclaim their former positions of power on the Doctor's Earth.

Stumbling across the Master of that universe – incarcerated and dissected by the enemy – the Brigadier and company close the gateway between dimensions by disabling his TARDIS console. The Brigadier and his allies then return to Earth in "our" Master's TARDIS and overcome the last of the

invaders aboard the HMS *Redoubt*. Unfortunately, the enemy leader, Marianne Kyle, escapes. The Master also tries to flee, but the UNIT crew surrounds and re-captures him aboard the *Redoubt*. A short while later, the Brigadier tells the returning Doctor and Jo Grant that nothing beyond the routine happened.

Memorable Moments

The Brigadier's first meeting with Ian and Barbara bridges the "Doctor Who" generations. There's a lovely little moment when the Brigadier hesitates before asking the Master for help.

There are tons of Master scenes, the top one being his slow, calculated shooting of his treacherous man Barron in the left knee, earlobe and right forearm above the wrist to gain information. Barbara flat out asks the Master why he hates the Doctor, and the villain is shocked because most of the Doctor's friends simply side with him.

Sex and Spirits

When Ian was 18, he fell in love with a university girl who took a job in another town. He later read in a newspaper that she'd died in a car crash, and even thought the newspaper made a mistake and she was actually alive, Ian was plagued by nightmares and a fear of dying in a car. When he thinks Barbara has died in a car crash, Ian becomes suicidal.

Bell works as a double-agent for the parallel-Earth when her brother is kidnapped. Benton feels a great deal of sympathy, being the one who caught her. It's hinted they later married.

Ass-Whuppings

The Master kills six and eliminates a helicopter crew with an Uzi. "Our" Master mercy-kills his "Inferno" double Koschei. "Inferno" Earth officials killed the parallel version of Ailla, Koschei's assistant.

Continuity

The third Doctor first encountered beings from a parallel Earth in "Inferno." Jo's famed U.N. uncle is actually the British Ambassador ("Terror of the Autons"). The Master modifies a time-belt from "Day of the Daleks," but later smashes it.

To the Brigadier, four years elapsed between the Doctor's visits in "The

Web of Fear" and "The Invasion." Another two went by before "Spearhead from Space."

Mike Yates tried to take Jo Grant to a Woody Allen film ("The Curse of Peladon"). The Brigadier sometimes calls on the services of Dr. Henderson ("Spearhead from Space"). Anne Travers ("The Abominable Snowman") is now working for Whitehall. The Master's well-laid plans convince the Brigadier that he must be guarded by hypnotism-immune guards ("The Sea Devils"). Harry Sullivan meets the Brigadier for the first time here and is assigned to UNIT.

Ian and Barbara's marriage was revealed in *Goth Opera*. The Master here hides his TARDIS at Devil's End and recovers it in *The Eight Doctors*. Koschei is a moralistic, parallel version of the Master (*The Dark Path*).

Character Development

• *Ian Chesterton*: Now in his late 30s, Ian teaches at the Royal Aircraft Establishment's technical college at Farnborough. He disliked his RAF National Service days, but his superiors gave him recommendations after he returned to Earth.

He holds a Ministry of Defense grade of Higher Executive Officer, equal to an army major, and took part in a year-long exchange program at NASA. He sometimes wears glasses while working. He's still fit, but has some gray at the temples. He celebrated his bachelor's night at Pages Bar. In spite of his travels, he isn't used to corpses.

• *Barbara Wright Chesterton*: Barbara teaches at the local comprehensive. When her grandmother died near Christmas, she coped by systematically re-wrapping all the presents she'd bought.

• *Ian and Barbara*: The time-traveling duo eloped after the first anniversary of their return to Earth. A government office corroborated certain details of their story with the authorities, but they had problems with living accommodations (being gone two years typically doesn't please landlords). Ian had to sell off everything to get a new place; Barbara stayed with her parents until "friends" of the Doctor got involved. They plan to leave a journal for Susan when she takes up residence on Earth in 2167. Their son John is in primary school.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart*: Answers to Minister Without Portfolio Carswell. Now divorced, he now spends most of his week in the second floor apartment of UNIT HQ.

• *The Brigadier and Doris*: The Brigadier plans on matching her gift of a watch ("Planet of the Spiders") to celebrate her office promotion.

• *Liz Shaw*: Liz does a lecture tour with Stanton Friedman and Carl Sagan.

• *Mike Yates*: Yates and the Brigadier, surprised by the Doctor's stubbornness in "The Claws of Axos," began to consider the Time Lord a threat. The Brigadier thinks Yates might be his successor, but Yates thinks he could probably run a fair motorway cafe.

• *Harry Sullivan*: When a dying agent asks infirmary doctor Sullivan to contact UNIT, the Brigadier puts Harry on surveillance duty and reassigns him to UNIT.

• *The Master*: The black-hearted Time Lord was imprisoned after "The Daemons" at the Aylesbury Grange Detention Centre, a site that housed converted scientists during World War II. From prison, he runs the Magnum bank and keeps a decent art collection there. He taps the prison's phone lines and manages a number of investments, and the staff are under his posthypnotic commands.

The Master considers the Brigadier a worthy opponent, but for the Doctor's decadent influence. Cold, but practical, the Master considers curiosity his one uncorrupted vice. He can mimic the Doctor's voice, but his hypnotism isn't effective against psychotic minds. He knows jeet-kun-do, or "the one-inch punch."

• *Koschei*: An honorable Master version from "Inferno" Earth, Koschei previously fought the Yeti, who ruined his TARDIS. Conclave officials dissected him.

• *The Doctor's TARDIS*: Using the architectural configuration software, the TARDIS console can slip through the TARDIS door, similar to how you can stick your tongue outside your body ("The Ambassadors of Death"). TARDISes are routinely equipped with equipment that can test objects for time-travel traces. Fully functional TARDISes can deliberately travel to parallel worlds if you know the phase shift.

• *The Master's TARDIS*: Entry requires a trimonic cipher-indent key from Gallifrey. It features a fully stocked armory, and can materialize as a bulkhead door. The Master's temporal instability detector can locate his TARDIS up to 500 miles away.

Organizations

• *UNIT*: UNIT's British headquarters is located at Denham, where

security is rather low-key. The airborne HQ is still an EC-130H Hercules ("The Invasion"). UNIT's official HQ is at Salisbury Plain, nearer to Rudloe Manor and the Navy's experimental facilities at Copenacre.

• *The Conclave*: "Inferno" Earth's equivalent of the U.N. Security Council, with leaders of five continents – Europe, the Americas, India, White Russia and the Asian Co-Prosperity Sphere – forming a sort of super-cabinet. The Conclave had bases in Gareloch, and Copernicus base on the Moon. Secretary General Marianne Kyle, the youngest member, led the group.

History ("Inferno" Earth)

After the Doctor's departure from the doomed "Inferno" Earth, shifted fault lines and shockwaves devastated most of the surface in 36 hours. The ruling Conclave reached the safety of their Copernicus base with their staffs. As the cream of the planet, they longed for their former rank and position. Using a captured Koschei's TARDIS, they pierced the dimensional barrier and infiltrated our Earth, securing the HMS *Redoubt*.

At the End of the Day

An odd book, since you keep expecting the Doctor to walk around the corner, breezily offer solutions and push the story forward. *The Face of the Enemy* was well-received by many fans, though the first half spends too much time with the Master's gang and at points you're baffled as to the threat. The second half, however, unveils some magical character shading. The Master proves delightfully arrogant, Ian is pushed to his breaking point and the Doctor's companions decisively prove that, Time Lord or no, they're among Earth's foremost defenders.

Downtime

Author: Marc Platt. BBC Missing Adventure #18. Release Date: January 1996.

Main Characters

Victoria Waterfield, Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart, Sarah Jane Smith.

Setting

London and Tibet, 1984; London, Easter, 1995.

Chronology

For Victoria, years after "Fury from the Deep." For the Brigadier, between "Mawdryn Undead" and "Battlefield." For Sarah Jane Smith, before *System Shock*.

Summary

It's 1984, and Victoria Waterfield, an ex-travelling companion of the second Doctor, receives a mental summons that lures her back to the Det-sen Monastery in Tibet where the Doctor first defeated the Great Intelligence. There, Victoria hears her late father's voice before an energy release destroys the Monastery. Returning home, Victoria finds the voice belongs not to her father, but to Professor Travers, one of the Doctor's missing allies. But unknown to Victoria, Professor Travers is dead and the Doctor's old enemy, the Great Intelligence, is using his body as a host.

Eleven years later, Victoria has used her father's inheritance to found New World University, a school that teaches classes by computer. Meanwhile, Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart receives a call for help from his estranged daughter Kate, who's being stalked by New University students. The Great Intelligence, twice beaten by the Doctor, has infiltrated the University and seeks the Locus – an artifact made by the Intelligence, but which could be used to bind its power. The Brigadier finds the Locus in Kate's childhood belongings, but his former student Hinton succumbs to the Intelligence's power and transforms into a Yeti. The Hinton-Yeti takes the Locus for the Intelligence.

The Intelligence, making yet another attempt to seize Earth, spreads

through the Internet like a computer virus, causing global chaos and many deaths. UNIT troops, contacted by the Brigadier via Sarah Jane Smith, storm the University. The Intelligence uses its energy to transform the students into Yeti for a counterattack. Victoria tries to sabotage the computer core, and appeals to the humanity of the Hinton-Yeti. Hinton rebels, destroying the computer core and banishing the Intelligence into space. Without the Intelligence's power to support him, Professor Travers' body finally dies. Victoria goes into hiding, blamed, as head of the devastated University, for the deaths involved. She lands on Interpol's Most Wanted List, yet declines two subsequent offers for help from the third and fourth Doctors and decides to travel on her own.

Memorable Moments

Victoria's final dismissal of the Great Intelligence, casting out her lifetime of fear, shows how much the scream queen of "Who" has grown up. The Brigadier's reunion with Sarah Jane is touching: "I knew there was someone I could rely on." The Brigadier doesn't put his gun in the pocket with his grandson's photo.

Ass-Whuppings

The Det-sen monastery is destroyed, killing Lord knows how many. Daniel Hinton, a student of the Brigadier's, lives on as a computer intelligence, then gets deleted. The intrepid Professor Travers was believed to have died on Dec. 25, 1980, but here goes to his grave.

Continuity

Victoria first visited the Det-sen Monastery, with the Doctor and Jamie, in "The Abominable Snowman." Colonel Crichton ("The Five Doctors") has been promoted to Brigadier. Captain Gilmore ("Remembrance of the Daleks") was promoted to Air Vice-Admiral and helped found UNIT.

Character Development

• *Victoria Maud Waterfield (a.k.a. Victoria Harris)*: In 1984, a 28-year-old Victoria worked for the British Museum. Frank Harris, who previously took her in, worked on a scheme for restocking North Sea fish. Solicitors Byle and Leviticcus handled the estate of Victoria's father, Edward Joseph Waterfield, who was presumed killed in a house explosion near Canterbury in 1866 (but was actually killed in "The Evil of the Daleks"). Professor

Maxtible said Victoria resided in Paris at the time. She doesn't believe in out-of-body experiences.

Victoria coined the term "Chillys," referring to first-year students as Children of the New World. Victoria's mother, Edith Rose Waterfield, died Nov. 23, 1863, at age 37 from a stomach ailment.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart*: The Brigadier says internal politics stopped him from becoming a General. He didn't know about his grandson Gordy until now. There are no "official" records of him by this point.

• *Kate Lethbridge-Stewart*: Kate hasn't seen her father in six years. Her son, Gordon James, is nearly five. Kate split up with Gordy's father, Jonathan, two years ago. She's still upset that her military family couldn't live together. She didn't get married so Gordy could keep her family name.

• *Sarah Jane Smith*: Journalist Sarah Jane once interviewed Professor Travers for *Metropolitan*. She signed the Official Secrets Act. She was paid well by UNIT to not report on what she saw, but now, thanks to staff turnover, has trouble getting recognition there.

• *K-9 Mark III*: With 196,739 phone numbers in his databanks, K-9 can log onto the Internet and reroute phone calls to make them untraceable.

• *Brigadier Crichton* ("The Five Doctors"): Lobbied to cut back the British Forces' UNIT contribution, making UNIT less militaristic and more civil service-based. The ill-received plan risked his promotion and marriage.

• *The Great Intelligence*: After its last defeat ("The Web of Fear"), the somewhat amnesiac Intelligence took refuge in Professor Travers' body. The Monks of Det-sen tried to trap it, but could not totally escape its mental influence. The Intelligence can now reach out through computer networks, but is bound to some of the old icons it created, such as the Locus.

Places to Go

New World University: New World stands on the north bank of the Great Coker Canal to the North West of London. It followed many Det-sen disciplines and had a radio station.

Organizations

UNIT: After the Shoreditch Incident, Admiral Gilmore used underground sources to gather information about alien incursions before informing then-Colonel Lethbridge-Stewart. The Brigadier's era is called "The Blunder

Days," for "Blood and Thunder."

At the End of the Day

Good, but no substitute for a true UNIT story, and not as driven as the other "companion" novel, *The Face of the Enemy*. It's nice to give Victoria some closure, however, and to see her strength of character save Earth, but this video novelization needs a lot of fluff to make it book-sized. Plus, there are some plot holes you could drive a truck through (Why does the Brigadier dream of Victoria and not even recognize her? How does the Locus bind the Intelligence?). Not that reading about "Who" mainstays Sarah Jane Smith and the Brigadier isn't always a pleasure, but you're better off watching the video.

First Doctor Stories

The Sorcerer's Apprentice

Author: Christopher Bulis. Virgin Missing Adventure #12. Release Date: July 1995

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor, Ian, Barbara and Susan.

Travel Log

The land of Elbyon, planet Avalon, circa 3025.

Chronology

Immediately after "Marco Polo."

Summary

The Doctor insists there's no such thing as magic – but moments after the TARDIS lands on the strange planet of Avalon, a fire-breathing dragon starts charbroiling the Ship! The travelers try to escape, but the TARDIS' defense system mysteriously shuts them out. A knight named Sir Bron thankfully saves the group and they travel through a medieval land filled with mythical creatures.

The Doctor and company learn the land is threatened by Marton Dhal, an evil sorcerer. Dhal desires to become Wizard Supreme, a position that will dramatically boost his power levels. He cannot be rejected for legal reasons, and for further leverage, Dhal's agents kidnap Susan and Princess Mellisa.

The King's council and the wizard Gramling agree that only Merlin's Helm, a lost and powerful artifact, is strong enough to defeat Dhal's magic. An expedition aided by the Doctor and Ian retrieves the Helm from Merlin's abandoned skyship, the *Prydwen*. A *Prydwen* diary also reveals that "magic" on this planet began with all-pervading nanomachines once used by an alien race to reconstruct matter. "Magic" users today unknowingly tap into the nanite system. Merlin's Helm is the system's master control device.

Because anyone who uses Merlin's Helm is killed by its energy after only a few minutes, Gramling agrees to sacrifice himself. Dhal reveals he has possessed Gramling's mind for years and seems to gain the upper hand – until Gramling switches minds with *Dhal*, who dies in Gramling's body, destroyed by the Helm.

The Doctor and company now face a mad Gramling who decides, for "peace's sake," to reshape the planet. He intends to begin by using his hostages, Susan and Mellisa, as hosts for the Helm's power. The Doctor and other sorcerers "magically" battle Dhal with the nanomachine system.

On the Doctor's orders, Ian and Barbara place the Helm on a reptilian cephlie, one of the planet's indigenous population. The cephlies are in fact the race that constructed the nanite system, until a catastrophic accident with the Helm turned the nanite system offline and caused their race to devolve. The cephlies, restored by the Helm, elect to destroy themselves and the system, ending "magic" on the planet. The TARDIS, no longer under attack by the incompatible nanites, lets the travelers back in.

Memorable Moments

The cover says it all: A dragon blows fire on the TARDIS. There's also many odd-looking tidbits: Barbara flies on witch Anni Glassfeather's broomstick, Susan constructs an escape ladder out of foot-long spikes of bone and Mellisa's hair, and Ian thrusts a lance into a dragon's red eye. And the energy-filled finale, with the Doctor in flowing red robes and a wizard's hat, wielding "magic" through his sapphire ring.

Ass-Whuppings

Avalon's native cephlie population wishes themselves out of existence.

Continuity

Barbara here learns the TARDIS lock sequence she didn't know in "The Daleks."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Can palm eggs and make them "reappear" in gentlemen's beards. Avalon's nanite system allows him to project energy from his sapphire ring, make spiders grow and animate coats of arms.

• *Barbara Wright:* Barbara doesn't fear heights until she soars on a

witch's flying broomstick.

• *Susan Foreman:* Learns enough "magic" to create a bug-killing green mist and turn a potion into acid.

• *Avalon's Sorcerers:* Energy-manipulating nanite technology allows Avalon's magic-users a variety of effects, from seeing through an animal's eyes, controlling wildlife, casting illusions and, with much effort, flight.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS force field activates if the Ship is roughly handled or the lock tampered with. It could also activate for lethal gas or infection, either mechanical or biological.

Alien Races

Time Lords, according to Susan, don't get inebriated "unless they want to." (A random thought: This contradicts Homunculette's inability to get sauced in *Alien Bodies*, although future Time Lords may have lost the ability.) Young Time Lords such as Susan need sleep, but in a few years time, they pass the "first maturation" and master the physiological intricacies of their bodies. After that, an hour or two a night is enough.

Alien Planets

Avalon has six moons of uniform size and appearance lie in a balanced orbit. Among a number of shooting stars are two clusters known as "Guinevere's Veil" and "Guinevere's Tresses." Craters formed from meteor strikes riddle Avalon. The land Elbyon's name was developed from "Albion," the old name for Britain.

The planet features at least a dozen truly odd locations, including the entirely glass Crystal Forest of Glissandor, the Great Fountain of Largos shooting well and the river Dellberry, which sometimes runs uphill.

Avalon's nanite system fed off the planet's energy fields and combined sensors, actuator mechanisms, and force generators into one pan-global network, using trillions of invisible components. The system penetrated and neutralized all other electronics, negating the danger of interference or contamination. The system cannot be removed from Avalon.

Stuff You Need

Merlin's Helm is a silver skullcap, and the master control of the nanomachine system. With the Helm's help, Merlin constructed the great skyboat *Prydwen* and the Glass Bridge.

Ships

The Prydwen, Merlin's skyboat, was alleged to be lost with Arthur and Merlin's remains. It was actually a self-contained colony ship.

Organizations

The Special Services Directorate serves as the Earth Empire's military.

History

• Thousands of years ago, a technologically advanced race learned to manipulate solar energy and protect their world from asteroid strikes. Combined with an all-pervading nanite system that responded to mental commend they could direct energy or matter at will. But a whimsical desire to change the color of the stars tapped the system so heavily, the people slumped into stagnation and become technology-fearing reptilian cephlies. The system made them near-immortal, but lacking any ingenuity.

• In 2145, an Earth colony ship crashed on the planet and the colonists' subconscious thoughts influenced the nanite system. Characters from mythology and "gods" from the people's religion became real. One operator of the system's master control, Merlin's Helm, finally erased the people's memories of religion to prevent chaos. The now medieval people tapped the system to work "magic." Because it was designed for alien minds to use, casting "spells" required great effort that some never mastered. Arthur and Merlin were believed to be the planet's founders.

• An Earth science expedition realized a star near Avalon was artificially exploded. Desperate to find the device that caused the explosion to hold the crumbling Earth Empire together, a crew was dispatched to locate it. With the destruction of Avalon's technology-destroying nanite system, it is likely the planet was colonized by Earth.

At the End of the Day

A nice and easy read, going down smooth as a shake, layered with details about this fantasy-rich world. Having a magical adventure for once is kinda nice – even if the explanation is scientific – and it's a much better "quest" story than the abysmal "The Keys of Marinus." For all these points, the book's threat, despite Dhal and Gramling's body-switch, is too straight-forward and finishes a bit pat, however, the TARDIS crew comes off exceptionally resourceful – Barbara even teaches the Queen about women's

lib. This would have been a delight to see on screen with a decent budget.

The Witch Hunters

Author: Steve Lyons. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #9. Release Date: January 1998

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor, Ian, Barbara and Susan.

Travel Log

Salem Village, Mass., Jan. 11 and 14-16, 1692, June 29, 1692, July 18, 1692, and September 8, 1742; Boston, Massachusetts, July 18, 1692; Danver, Massachusetts, modern day; London, November 9, 1954.

Chronology

Between "The Reign of Terror" and "Planet of Giants."

Summary

While the Doctor completes repairs to the TARDIS, Ian, Barbara and Susan attempt to live outside the Ship. But upon realizing they're in Salem Village, Massachusetts, 1692, the year of the notorious witch hunts, they retreat to the TARDIS. It departs.

In London, 1954, Susan longs to help the wrongfully persecuted Salemites and sneaks into the TARDIS console room. Through the TARDIS' Fast Return Switch, the Ship travels back to Salem, where Susan's developing telepathic abilities cause a psychic feedback loop and actually strengthen the villagers' anxieties.

The Doctor insists they leave, but finally promises to gain the governor's pardon for Rebecca Nurse, a woman falsely accused of witchcraft. But knowing that Rebecca's death is an inescapable piece of the web of time, and without his companions' know-ledge, the Doctor convinces the governor to allow Rebecca's execution.

While trying to protect Rebecca from the villagers, Susan is accused of witchcraft and Ian is arrested for being a warlock. Barbara in turn is denounced as a witch by a fevered Susan and flees to the TARDIS. The townsfolk follow, believe the TARDIS to be an evil temple and set fire to it. Because the TARDIS' indestructible hide will "prove" magic real and

pervert history, the Doctor and Barbara dematerialize the Ship; it appears destroyed.

Ian spends two weeks being tortured in prison and Susan languishes in Preacher Samuel Parris' care. Finally, the Doctor and Barbara return using the Fast Return Switch. Ian is released after a struggle, and Susan freed by threatening to denounce Parris as a warlock.

At the end of his first life, the guilt-ridden Doctor returns to Salem and takes Rebecca for a time into the future. He shows her the Salem-based play *The Crucible*, her gravestone and the monuments honoring the Salem victims. Rebecca realizes how much her sacrifice will teach mankind tolerance and goes willingly to her fate. The Doctor's personal ghosts regarding Rebecca are laid to rest.

Memorable Moments

Totally at odds with each other, the time travelers' bond has rarely been more clear. The Doctor and Barbara only leave Ian and Susan because they risk delaying the dawn of reason and causing dozens more deaths if the TARDIS remains. Susan feels damned once they're gone. An imprisoned and tortured Ian prays only for his lost friends.

The book's top moment comes before that, when the Doctor sits alone in the darkened console room, devastated to have arranged Rebecca's death behind her back, lacking the courage to defy Time and afraid of it.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor arranges for Rebecca Nurse's execution.

Continuity

As a boon for helping with the Death Zone crisis, Rassilon aids the first Doctor in meeting Rebecca Nurse again ("The Five Doctors"). The Fast Return Switch is again used and finally disabled ("Edge of Destruction"). The Doctor's repairs radically improve the TARDIS' efficiency – until "Planet of Giants." The Doctor uses his false name, "Doctor John Smith," for the "first" time here, taking it from a 20th century musician Susan was besotted with ("An Unearthly Child").

Character Development

- *The Doctor:* Can forge papers from the governor of Boston. He first

intended to leave his companions, spend a month repairing the Ship in the Time Vortex, then return. He telepathically places some mental blocks in Susan's mind.

• *Ian Chesterton:* Young Chesterton sadly hasn't learned much from the Doctor or Barbara's lessons – he wants to prove Rebecca innocent even though history executed her.

• *Barbara Wright:* In 1954, Barbara was a student in Crinklewood living in a rented room. She wouldn't warn her former self about entering the TARDIS even if she could.

• *Susan:* Susan has only one pulse (this contradicts her double heartbeat in *Legacy of the Daleks*). As her telepathic abilities develop, she learns to construct some psychic defenses and review another person's memories. She's somewhat relieved Ian and Barbara can't get home because she values their company, and has difficulty mounting horses. Susan cannot fly the TARDIS, but understands the Fast Return Switch. Given the first Doctor's questionable track record, Susan is afraid to sleep in the TARDIS for fear he'll take off without telling her.

• *The TARDIS:* The Fast Return Switch, when working properly, can approximately but not perfectly return the TARDIS to its previous location in time and space. The TARDIS library, at this early stage, seems to help travelers find needed books.

Alien Races

Time Lords may endure psychic feedback, fever and headaches as their immature telepathic abilities mature. Dreams may be shared.

Time Travel

The inability of the TARDIS crew to alter history may have saved their lives on many occasions. The Doctor claims the human mind isn't equipped to handle the rigors of four-dimensional physics – this might just be bluster.

History

Ian encourages historical prisoner John Proctor to write letters and make a fuss about the witch trials. Though executed, Proctor's efforts helped end the deaths.

At the End of the Day

An emotional *tour de force* that strikes you right between the breastbone, *The Witch Hunters* conveys from the start how crucial, and bloody, these events will be to everyone concerned. Susan undergoes one of her greatest rites of passage, Ian endures a tortuous prison hell and the Doctor is for once emotionally battered and nearly bowed trying to fulfill history's mandates. A quick-reading masterpiece of the TARDIS crew's humanity amidst Salem's inhumanity, and a story in which the time-travelers ironically work against each other – none of them wrong as each tries to do the right thing.

Venusian Lullaby

Author: Paul Leonard. Virgin Missing Adventure #3. Release Date: October 1994

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor, Ian and Barbara.

Travel Log

Venus, three billion years in the past.

Chronology

Immediately after "The Dalek Invasion of Earth."

Summary

The Doctor is invited to the funeral of his old Venusian friend Dharkhig, where he and Barbara, by Venusian custom, consume the deceased's flesh. In the Venusian tradition, they inherit the dead Venusian's memories. But this strange-yet-happy event is marred by the planet's continual rise in temperature – the Venusians face extinction in only 50 years.

Mysterious aliens named the Sou(ou)shi arrive and offer to take the Venusians to the solar system's third planet, but the Doctor thinks it might be a trap since, after all, history says the Venusians never reached Earth. Quickly, his suspicions are confirmed: The Sou(ou)shi are psionic vampires, intent on consuming the Venusians.

Ian struggles to survive a power play between different Venusian factions and is repeatedly shot by the population-culling Death Inspectorate. He befriends the Venusian Jellenhut, whose children are killed, and gains Venusian memories by eating one of the dead younglings. The Doctor and Barbara are captured, and Barbara convinces the Venusians aboard the Sou(ou)shi ship to rebel, even though it means death without passing on their memories. Meanwhile, Ian, hating himself, signals Venusians in control of the planet's volcanoes to attack the Sou(ou)shi ship, knowing the Doctor and Barbara are aboard. The volcanic eruptions destroy the ship and kill many on the surface, but the fallout cools the planet and gains the Venusians another 100 generations of life.

Ian despairs over the "deaths" of his friends, but three weeks later, the Doctor and Barbara pilot the TARDIS with the Venusian Trikhobu's mathematical formula and pick him up. The Sou(ou)shi, now existing as a group consciousness with a ravenous hunger, settle on Earth and go into hibernation.

Memorable Moments

As the Doctor gains the Venusian Dharkig's memories, he makes swimming motions and goes "Wlloop! Wlloop! Wll-lloop!" Ian tries to stop a distraught Jellenhut from killing herself, aware that if she succeeds, her death spasm will likely kick him half to death. Ian later decides to sacrifice the whole Venusian race to save the Doctor and Barbara, but imagines the Doctor's voice haunting him ("How many Venusians are there living? And how many of us? Do you truly think we have the right to sacrifice them in order to save ourselves?"). He screams Barbara's name as the Sou(ou)shi ship explodes.

Ass-Whuppings

Ian kills a Venusian, Barbara kills two. Thanks to Ian's actions, the psionic Sou(ou)shi lose their bodies. Poor Barbara gets a concussion, a trauma wound by her right breast and possibly bleeds internally.

Continuity

You'd never guess – the Doctor doesn't actually hear Venusian lullabies in this story (though some are sung), and he isn't taught Venusian karate. His knowledge of these, used by the third Doctor, is acquired elsewhere.

The Sou(ou)shi collective intelligence settles on Earth and hibernates, likely becoming the life-consuming Presence entity encountered by the seventh Doctor in *Nightshade*. The TARDIS crew decides to make a gold wedding ring for Susan, leading to *Decalog:* "The Book of Shadows."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The first Doctor contemplates that letting the Sou(ou)shi kill him might be quicker and easier than struggling on, then remembers his duty to his friends. The Doctor cracks a shuttle launch sequence by using an "unknown sonic device." He's visited Venus with Susan before.

• *Ian Chesterton:* Ian considers he and Barbara should learn how the

TARDIS operates to keep the Doctor in check. Believing himself alone and marooned on Venus forever, Ian ponders killing himself, foreshadowing *The Face of the Enemy*.

• *Barbara Wright:* Barbara's father took her to Vincenzo's to celebrate her teaching job.

• *Susan:* Susan's TARDIS room has already disappeared. Susan, like other Time Lords, won't grow old for hundreds of years.

• *Jilet Mrak-ecado:* One of the Doctor's oldest friends on Venus for 200 years. Fearing the Venusians would perish, Mrak-ecado gave the Sou(ou)shi permission to consume his people, taking them into the realm of memory. The hungry Sou(ou)shi betrayed and killed him.

• *The TARDIS*: The TARDIS is more steerable when travelling to the beginning of time, which provides dimensional stability, but this advantage fades once the Ship actually arrives. A single Venusian can carry the TARDIS, but two are needed to lift it. One TARDIS room is appears to have every type of imaginable chair. The Ship doesn't compensate for an 11-hour time lag, but the temporal grace function neutralizes psi-weapons. Venusian formulas worked by Trikhobu enable the TARDIS to materialize near anyone in space and time (obviously, this ability is later lost, though it's not explained how). The Doctor can enlarge the TARDIS door's interior but not the exterior. An adult Venusian can squeeze through the TARDIS door with great difficulty.

• *The TARDIS food machine:* Can produce spaghetti bolognese and many types of chianti.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Susan cannot mate with David, as her people aren't cross-fertile with humans (this seems to contradict Leela and Andred's pregnancy in *Lungbarrow*, but allow that Andred, unlike Susan, is Loom-spun).

• *Venusians (anatomy/physiology):* The rhinoceros-sized Venusians have five eyes, ears, hearts, mouths and stomachs. Snake-like organs resemble hands. A Y-shaped gap beneath the shoulder is the mouth. Venusian skin is normally green, though they flush blue when emotional or exerting effort. They have purple blood. Dead Venusians smell of ammonia; their eyes mist white. Some Venusians evidently have large red and gold wings. Most metals, save gold and to a lesser extent platinum and titanium, will kill them.

• *Venusians (reproduction):* Whoo-za! Venusians enjoy a big annual orgy

in the bud-pond. Children are given to a midwife and assigned a father. At least two females are needed to achieve fertility.

• *Venusians (technology):* Metal-poor Venus relies on woodworking. Venusians have river barges, wind-powered "globerollers" and a wooden underground transport system. Thin *nenetif* web fibers cannot be seen, but cut through anything.

• *Venusians (yummy-yummy, I've got Venusians in my tummy!):* Only the memory parts of Venusian brains are eaten at funerals. Barbara thinks they taste extremely sweet, like honey pancakes. Ian believes they taste like cheese. Humans can gain Venusian memories, but they dilute in time.

• *Venusians (religion):* "Dhallgohidhall" is the name of the Venusian afterlife, "the Land-which-is-no-land."

• *Venusians (social structure):* Bikugih is the oldest surviving clan. Dhallenidhall clan developed written records more than three million years ago. Cracdhalltar clan can predict the future using a certain type of crystal, the sacred art of *huyaot* and the *anteyon* force. Venusians use dice-like currency.

The starving city of Inarihibi sends out its Death Inspectorate to decimate villages for population control. Various Venusian factions, including the Rocketeers, the Volcano People and the Below the Sun Believers, the Magnetologists, the Water-breathers and the Cave-makers, offer different solutions to the deadly ecosystem. The slightly-telepathic Venusians have three common languages. Belly cloths denote rank – a yellow pentagon for the Night Council, blue for philosophers.

• *Sou(ou)shi:* How elegant – life comes from shit. The Sou(ou)shi consume entire races, then excrete their genetic code on new planets, where life develops based on the pattern. By their own tradition, the Sou(ou)shi cannot not lie (but may conceal the truth), and cannot kill unless their intended victims give permission. Their bodies are humanoid, with identical pink faces, round eyes and furry torsos.

The Sou(ou)shi can psionically grow up to 15 feet tall, with huge serrated jaws and four arms that end in triple scimitar blades – rather like praying mantises – this is likely their true forms.

Alien Planets

Venus has yellow-green trees with coiled leaves, and petrol forests that routinely erupt and burn. Wildlife includes nijij are small animals eaten live by the Venusians, and ghifghoni, flying creatures used as message-carriers.

Ships

The Sou(ou)shi ship was configured like a Venusian building. It could hold 126 million Venusians.

History

Venus supports human life in this time period. Barbara is the first human to walk on Venus, Ian the second. Despite the stop-gap events of this story, the Venusians eventually went extinct.

At the End of the Day

A work that stands like a Monet – better enjoyed when you can see the whole than when you're experiencing the individual parts. Paul Leonard plays trump with his intricate detail of Venusian politics, biology, versatility (the underwater, 75-string guitar is a cool idea – wish I could play one) and social codes (there's a Death Inspectorate that'll chill your bone marrow). Unfortunately, *Venusian Lullaby* comes off better as a straight science-fiction book than "Who," since the TARDIS crew's spotlight is sometimes diminished and the action drags with a lot of captures and escapes. That said, it's a work that's well worth your time, marbled with disturbing surrealism.

The Plotters

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin Missing Adventure #28. Release Date: November 1996

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor, Ian, Barbara and Vicki.

Travel Log

London, November 1605.

Chronology

Between "The Space Museum" and "The Chase"

Summary

After arriving in London, the Doctor notes with curiosity that the Gunpowder Plot to blow up the Houses of Parliament. The Doctor craftily sends Ian and Barbara packing to the Globe Theatre to watch plays while he and Vicki sneak off to Whitehall Palace to observe events. Unfortunately, Ian and Barbara are mistaken for fellow conspirators against the King, and Catholics apprehend Barbara for interrogation, leaving Ian to search for her.

At Whitehall Palace, the Doctor pretends to be an observer for the translation of the King James Bible. He is well-received by the flamboyant King James, who spends most of his time fancying Vicki, who's disguised as the Doctor's ward, "Victor."

Barbara persuades one of her captors, Guy Fawkes, who's hardly the scurrilous traitor that history brands him, that she is a time-traveler and he releases her. But Gunpowder Plot-founder Robert Catesby believes Barbara's a witch and argues with Fawkes. This leads to history, one might say, suffering a great big belch when an impulsive Catesby runs Fawkes through with a sword – killing him.

Meanwhile, the Doctor has discovered that Sir Robert Cecil, regarded as one of the best statesmen of all time, actually encouraged the Gunpowder Plot, hoping to "discover" the traitors and thus discredit the Catholics. But the King's homosexual lover Hay – actually a member of a nefarious, magical brotherhood – plans to reveal Cecil's involvement and crack open

the country's political system, thus destroying order and bringing about a new era of darkness. To prevent this, the Doctor frees Cecil from Hay's clutches and encourages him to uncover the Gunpowder Plot immediately.

When Cecil finds Hay at Catesby's infamous, gunpowder-laden basement, he claims Hay is the rogue known as Guy Fawkes. Hay therefore suffers the recorded trial, torture and death of "Fawkes." With history fulfilled, the TARDIS crew continues on their journey.

Memorable Moments

King James steals the show, sprawling on his armchair, legs dangling over one arm, head thrown back over the other, as a boy pours wine into his upturned mouth. He obsesses that Vicki (as "Victor") must sit on his knee and suggests having the dirty "boy" hosed down.

Sex and Spirits

The King constantly pursues Vicki, who's disguised as "Victor," and calls her "smooth-of-cheek, a peach in spring's initial bloom." Thankfully, "Victor" escapes his advances.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The older Doctor's hearing is still more acute than a human's, and his throat can make inhuman clicking noises to horses. He says he learned to carve fowl in the kitchens of the Tetrach of Phibbli, where sparrows are the size of a house.

He knows enough Biblical scripture to quote various passages, though he didn't know Origenism purports the soul pre-exists the body. He still possesses the only key to the TARDIS and claims, rightly or wrongly, he was quite a looker in his day. Vicki believes he coughs and fakes ill-health when bringing bad news. He considers Howard "the most useless statesman of all time."

Hay believed the Doctor to be a warlock of the highest order, a.k.a. "a Grand Behemoth," or one of the Supreme Order of the Rectangle. He also believed the Doctor had the true power and old knowledge of Kulkukula.

• *Ian Chesterton:* Science teacher Ian knows enough history to stand in for Barbara on sick days.

• *Barbara Wright:* Barbara has dreamed about visiting the Globe Theatre. The only Latin she knows is prayers.

• *Ian and Barbara:* Modern vaccinations protect Ian and Barbara against this era's infections, and it's implied they speak some French. An undercurrent of emotion foreshadows their ultimate love and marriage; when they pretend to be man and wife, Barbara doesn't mind at all. When Ian sees Fawkes' death and knows history has been majorly disrupted, his first thought is still for Barbara.

• *Vicki:* A medical laser injected Vicki with a full range of vaccinations when she was five. She had a childhood pony named Saracen. She doesn't know about the battle of Trafalgar, and reads a book the Doctor lent her on magnetos. Her slightly disobedient streak (that started in "The Romans") continues as she lifts the TARDIS key from the Doctor and takes off. She doesn't know any Latin. She's torn between enjoying Ian and Barbara's company and wishing they'd get home. She thinks Shakespeare was good, but he was no Lynda LaPlante.

• *The TARDIS:* When Barbara finds the TARDIS, she feels a bit of pleasure run through her forehead, like a pleasant kiss from her father – can it be the Ship is pleased to see her?

Alien Races

Pink octopi don't exist in any universe.

Time Travel

The TARDIS crew's involvement substantiates the theory that you can radically participate in history (such as causing Fawkes' death), but not alter the outcome (a "Fawkes" stand-in is still sentenced and executed).

History

King James' lover Hay was a secret agent for the magic-subscribing Grand Council, possibly based in Northern Ireland's Grammont Abbey. Hay hoped the Gunpowder Plot would widen the rift between England's Catholic lords, and that uncovering Cecil's involvement would besmirch James' name and cause civil war. Hay hoped the resulting chaos would make the United Kingdom fall apart and crush the spirit of other European countries, ushering in a darkness and mysticism that reigned before the logic of Greece. The Council's plot likely expired with Hay.

At the End of the Day

The Doctor “complaining” about his bowels seems a bit out of character, but otherwise, this is a true “Missing Adventure” that nails the TARDIS crew’s mannerisms down to the first Doctor’s knuckle-biting. Yet the work is not perfect because it’s thicker than Roberts’ usual writings and the middle seems padded. Still, King James goes beyond even TV’s Nero in his over-the-top lust for “Victor,” and everyone is three-dimensional, down to commoners Firking and Hodge. Most striking is the cleverness with which Roberts rearranges all of the historical characters’ motives (the “noble” Guy Fawkes, the “plotting” Cecil) while still fulfilling history. Overall, a book with crisp dialogue that’s topped many fan polls, and easily gets my vote for the most witty and comical “Doctor Who” novel.

The Empire of Glass

Author: Andy Lane. Virgin Missing Adventure #16. Release Date: November 1995

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor, Steven and Vicki.

Travel Log

Venice, 1609.

Chronology

Between "The Time Meddler" and "Galaxy Four." The first Doctor here returns from "The Three Doctors."

Summary

A slightly amnesiac Doctor finds the TARDIS has self-piloted to Venice, 1609, where a special Armageddon Convention mediates arms treaties between alien races. Irving Braxiatel, a Time Lord and the Convention's founder, wants to make the Doctor serve as Convention Chairman, but his agents pick up the similar-looking Cardinal Bellarmine instead. Fortunately, the Cardinal mediates the convention using Biblical Scriptures and does surprisingly well. Meanwhile, William Shakespeare arrives to investigate convention rumors for the King.

The arms-dealing Greld, a race of arms merchants who fear peace will hamstring business, secretly plan to sabotage the convention, using pieces of a meta-cobalt bomb concealed inside colonists from the doomed Roanoke colony. Simultaneously, Braxiatel's agents, the lowly Jamarians, rebel and ransack the convention starships, funneling advanced technical knowledge into a telepathic unit for auction to the highest bidder.

An impulsive Shakespeare seizes the device and injects the futuristic data into his mind – advanced knowledge that could endanger all of history. Shakespeare tries to inform the King of his wondrous and new knowledge, but gets delayed playing Lady Macbeth in the debut performance of "Macbeth." The Doctor and Vicki work themselves into the play and force an amnesia pill down Shakespeare's throat. Meanwhile, one Jamarian

becomes convinced of his own race's avarice and lures both the Jamarians and the Roanoke colonists into Braxiatel's shuttle, destroying them as the Greld's meta-cobalt bomb explodes. As the TARDIS departs, Braxiatel decides collecting is likely a safer pastime.

Memorable Moments

A rescued Doctor chides Galileo for clubbing an alien with the TARDIS spyglass. Plus, a magical scene where the Doctor appears on stage as the doctor in "Macbeth."

Sex and Spirits

A horny member of the Greld race kidnaps Vicki and proclaims love for her. A dying, homosexual Marlowe asks Steven for a kiss – we don't know the outcome. Steven also gets rip-roaring drunk with Galileo.

Ass-Whuppings

The people of Roanoke Colony, who are used as a living weapon to destroy the Jamarians.

Continuity

The Time Lords erased the Doctor's memory of the Omega affair – he retains vague memories of a dandy and a clown ("The Three Doctors"). Krayt fighters shot Steven's ship down over Mechanus ("The Chase"). The fourth Doctor helped Shakespeare transcribe *Hamlet* when the Bard sprained his wrist.

Braxiatel founded the Library of St. John the Beheaded (*All-Consuming Fire*). We learn in the Benny NA *Tears of the Oracle* that Braxiatel and the Doctor are brothers.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor is the only person the major races agreed to have as Armageddon Convention chairman. He resembles Cardinal Bellarmine only by long hair and angular features, and considers himself an agnostic, believing he will one day become an atheist. The Doctor thinks government by an unelected, unaccountable group of shadowy figures is, looked at dispassionately, an elegant solution. Edward Teach taught him sailing skills. He can also pilot the flying city of Laputa.

• *The Doctor and Steven Taylor:* Freshman crewmember Steven isn't trusted with a TARDIS key until story's end. The Doctor and Steven agree Vicki shouldn't have one. Steven sometimes thinks the Doctor hides his laser-sharp intelligence, but more often considers him an old fool.

• *The Doctor and Susan:* The Doctor remarks that Susan was sweet, guileless and innocent, the closest thing to a conversational partner of his own level because she understood his origins.

• *Steven Taylor:* Space pilot Steven spent much of his adult career living in cramped quarters. The first new thing he smelled since childhood was the burning forests in "The Chase."

• *Vicki:* Vicki's historical knowledge is atrocious! She mistakes the Goths, Huns and Lombards for alien invaders! The TARDIS' dryness and all-present hum keep her awake. Some of her best friends on Earth were aliens.

• *Irving Braxiatel:* Desiring a repository of universal knowledge, Braxiatel collected every book banned by the Catholic Church. Unlike the Doctor, he freely left Gallifrey. Braxiatel spent 20 years organizing the Armageddon Convention, and afterward decides to stick with collecting as it's safer.

• *The Doctor and Irving Braxiatel:* As a Time Lord child, Braxiatel knew the Doctor. Braxiatel can't tell the Doctor about the Omega affair – they're breaking rules just by meeting.

• *Galileo Galilei:* He learns the word "telescope" from the Doctor, but doesn't remember this adventure thanks to Braxiatel's amnesia pill.

• *Christopher Marlowe:* An expert at espionage, juggling and handling daggers.

• *William Shakespeare:* The great playwright works as an informant and courier for Francis Walsingham, the British Secretary of State.

• *The TARDIS:* Equipped with an inflatable dingy, ultrashowers and only one advanced telescope, the TARDIS fails to compensate for Steven's ongoing time- and space-lag.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Can declare certain areas of space and time closed – in this case, for the duration of the convention within one light-year of Earth.

• *Humans:* Humans are unique because they don't have any unique abilities. Other races tend to do one thing well and everything else badly.

Being generalists allows humans to become a dominant force in the Universe.

• *The Greld:* Technology dealers from the star Canopus, these aliens have two crab claws, three pairs of legs, dark-red shells, four stalked eyes and a pair of leathery wings. They are a pleasure-driven species – they frequently have sex with other races – and spin fables about the Doctor and his companions.

• *Jamarians:* Stick-thin humanoids, with mottled blue skin and a rapier-like horn. A rather paranoid, stupid race, good organizers but greedy for status.

• *Sontarans:* By the Sontaran Imperator's decree, the Sontarans rearranged their home solar system. Their sun now goes around the planet of Sontaria.

Places to Go / Ships

Laputa, Braxiatel's shrouded, flying city, was named after the fictional island in *Gulliver's Travels*.

Organizations

The Armageddon Convention encouraged many races to give up doomsday weapons in exchange for peace, but the Daleks and Cybermen declined to attend.

Time Travel

Temporal disrupters can rip apart the Universe's structure, causing a chain reaction that might unravel reality.

History

• Famed poet Christopher Marlowe, fearing execution, conspired with Secretary of State Walsingham to fake his death. Marlowe fled to the Roanoke Colony in Virginia to spy on Walter Raleigh. However, the Greld attacked the colonists in 1587 and each implanted with hypno-controllers and components for a meta-cobalt bomb. Surgery for a skull wound removed Marlowe's controller. He died dueling Tomasso Nicolotti, who believed Steven was Galileo and had killed his kinsman.

• Irving Braxiatel visited Shakespeare in the last few minutes of the playwright's life, restoring Shakespeare's erased memory in exchange for

manuscripts of his unpublished plays *Love's Labours Won*, *The Birth of Merlin* and *Sir John Oldcastle*.

• Venice sank beneath the waves centuries before Steven and Vicki were born. The Italian Republic existed for several thousand years with only superficial change.

• Steven, disguised by a hologram, makes "Galileo's" historical spyglass explanation to the rulers of Venice.

• Shakespeare helped uncover Ralegh's plot to kill King James I, so years later, a freed Ralegh murders Shakespeare with poison.

• Half the playwrights in London, including Shakespeare, Marlowe, Ben Jonson, Skeres, Poley, Frizer and others, serve as spies for the British Government.

At the End of the Day

A triumph at rewriting history, *The Empire of Glass* delivers a witty Galileo, a roguish Christopher Marlowe and a Shakespeare of infinite bravery and vision – all in the same room. Braxiatel's presence touches on the Doctor's origins, and the whole plot shrewdly causes "a series of stupid little incidents" to foil the villains. Plus, it's a joy to see the Doctor and Vicki improvise through the first "Macbeth" performance. By far one of the best "Doctor Who" novels, worth reading just for the emotional bond between Marlowe and Steven.

Salvation

Author: Steve Lyons. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #20. Release Date: January 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor, Steven and Dodo.

Travel Log

London, near Wimbledon Common; New York City, outside a launderette on West 25th Street, March, 1965.

Chronology

Between "The Massacre" and "The Ark."

Summary

As is her habit every Thursday, London resident Dorothea Chaplet goes shopping for her elderly neighbor Mr. Miller. Unfortunately, the 82-year-old Miller has been replaced by a metamorph named Joseph, who begins to pattern his personality after Dodo. Joseph, alternately ruthless and confused, claims he arrived on Earth to save "save the world," then suffers a spasm. Dodo escapes, races to Wimbledon Common, and charges into a police box that is, of course, the TARDIS in disguise. As Steven returns, policemen on his tail, the Doctor dematerializes.

The TARDIS reappears in the same year, in 1965 New York City, where the Church of the Latter-Day Pantheon heralds the opening of its doors. Six individuals, including Joseph, claim to be humanity's gods say they have returned to help humanity They perform some small miracles, but the Doctor remains suspicious of their motives. Steven, still feeling alienated from the Doctor for letting the Anne Chaplet die (in TV's "The Massacre"), briefly joins the Pantheon as a sort of priest. But the Doctor convinces him the gods and their leader, the Patriarch, can't be trusted with their power.

The Doctor deduces that the "gods" are extra-dimensional beings, given shape and power by humanity's wants and desires, particularly from the faith of religious communities. Meanwhile, Dodo re-meets to Joseph, the now-sane god of Order, and agrees to marry him. Thankfully, an alien

investigator named Professor Carter convinces Joseph that the gods are subconsciously influencing Dodo by their presence and Joseph refuses to marry her.

The gods grow increasingly torn over the requests for their power, as cries to kill rapists and petitions from the Klu Klux Klan confuse them on humanitiy's needs. Patriarch finally pledges to eradicate the Communist presence in Vietnam and the military is convinced the gods are a unpredictable, powerful threat. The Doctor collaborates with the military and arranges for a disarmed bomb to be dropped on Manhattan. Because people believe the bomb is genuine, the gods fear their power will make the bomb a real threat and retreat to their home dimension.

The Doctor says the "gods" will eventually leave their home planet and drift through space. Dodo begs the Doctor to let her travel with him and he agrees. The Doctor and Steven, agreeing to disagree on the point of Anne Chaplet, reconcile and the TARDIS departs.

Memorable Moments

A stabbed Steven has a vision of himself dying alone as the Doctor waits by the TARDIS for days, not knowing what's happened, before eventually leaving. While everyone else receives wishes from the gods, the Doctor only wants to know who they are and what the hell they want. The gods are torn when they get an appeal for help from the Klu Klux Klan – an appeal supported by the majority.

Sex and Spirits

The alien Joseph, extremely confused in his human form, crawls in bed with Dodo, lies on top of her, and comments, "I simply wish to express my affection, in the way that humans do." Thankfully, she fights him off.

Ass-Whuppings

In flashback, Steven witnesses a woman on Roylus Prime beaten and killed from a fractured skull. He bitterly remembers leaving Anne Chaplet to her harsh, protracted death. ("The Massacre").

A crazed Joseph chokes Dodo up against a wall and dangles her off the floor. Muggers pound on and fatally stab Steven.

Continuity

Continuity's played a bit fast-and-loose here. In TV's "The Massacre," Dodo enters the TARDIS on her way home from school, thinking it's a real police telephone box. Here, she's fleeing from her captor Joseph. The Doctor and Steven were torn over Anne Chaplet's fate in "The Massacre."

Steven was given a TARDIS key in *The Empire of Glass*, but doesn't have one here.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* For once, the Doctor carries no money, but has a pen that belonged to William Shakespeare. Humans can't pronounce the first syllable of his real name (and presumably the rest). The Doctor sees the gods as evil because he's accustomed to confronting such beings. The Patriarch consumes the Doctor in a fireball, but he survives through sheer faith that he'd survive. By measuring the Doctor's presumably double pulse, Professor Carter determines he's an alien. (This contradicts the first Doctor's "single pulse" in "The Edge of Destruction," *Managra* and *The Empire of Glass*.)

• *Steven Taylor:* Spaceship pilot Steven manned a streamlined Terran battleship built from modified Dalek designs. He vividly remembers shore leave on the colony world of Roylus Prime, where an uprising oppressed a destitute and broken people. He was tortured with guilt for not intervening.

It nags him that when he crashed on Mechanus, nobody came to look for him. In fact, he's just damn insecure, fearful of looking stupid or oblivious. Until the Latter-Day Pantheon, Steven never belonged to a church, preferring an empirical approach to life.

• *The Doctor and Steven:* Steven wonders if the Doctor, still mourning for Anne Chaplet, is somewhat obsessed with Dodo because her last name is coincidentally Chaplet. He also suspects the Doctor can read minds.

• *Dorothea ("Dodo") Chaplet:* The nickname "Dodo" started as an unflattering nickname in school, coined because her north-of-London accent marked her as stupid. She finally embraced the name and made it something of value. She's only 16, and another as "Dodo" and one voice as the proper schoolgirl "Dorothea."

Her mother died three years ago going to see Dodo's Great Aunt Margaret; her father was institutionalized soon after. Aunt Margaret cares for her, but cares little *for* her, and scolds her for daydreaming. Janet and Shari are two of her school friends. She picked up tips, without knowing it, from the book *Dixon of Dock Green*. In New York City, she recognizes only

two of the sights from the Empire State Building. She hasn't traveled much.

Alien Races

The "gods" are six extra-dimensional, metamorphing beings, composed of Max, the god of Materialism; Dennis, the god of War; Norman, the god of Order; Jennifer, the goddess of Free Love; and their leader Patriarch, who could remove the others' powers. The sixth member, Joseph, should have been called Damien, the God of Vengeance, but he preferred "Joseph, the God of Peace." The "gods" could transmute matter, and claimed to be the gods of ancient Greece, Rome and Scandinavia.

The Doctor hypothesized the gods were near mindless in their natural states, and morphed according to the belief of the beings they encountered. The U.S. army wanted to see gray-skinned extra-terrestrials, so *presto*! Religious persons wanted them to be gods, so *voila*! The gods lacked true control over their faith-to-reality power, meaning bullets could hurt them if enough people believed in hot lead.

Places to Go

The Land of the Gods was an other-dimensional realm, where reality was extremely fluid. It's accessible through a gateway shaped like a golden arch, six meters high.

Time Travel

Patriarch eloquently points out all of the Doctor's contradictions in dealing with history, ranging from his non-interference in "The Aztecs" and "The Massacre" to his direct interference in "The Romans" and "The Myth Makers." From this, we can prove that the view of "Doctor Who" on altering time is one big clusterfish.

History

• The "return of the gods" event in New York City began with a rash of UFO sightings in March 1965. The anticipation and crowding erupted into some violence. Eventually, thousands marched from SoHo to Central Park.

• Alexander Lullington-Smythe wrote a book called *How I Saved the World*, published in 1976, in which he claimed to be the gods' manager and was turned by them into a giant leech. It was adapted into the film "Prey For a Miracle" in November 1980. Strangely enough, actor Peter Cushing

played the mysterious and endearing government adviser, "Doctor Who." (Curiously Cushing did play the Doctor in two "Doctor Who and the Daleks" movies.)

• The gods' "spaceship" was held at Rogers Air Force Base for a time.

At the End of the Day

A story of people needing hope, Steven included, but it doesn't quite come together. We spend most of the book wondering about the gods, and in fact end with only a blobby and amorphous idea about what the hell they are. *Salvation* drives home the point that when someone wants to do something nice for you, it isn't always for the best, but it lacks the magic of Hartnell's Doctor and his era.

The Man in the Velvet Mask

Author: Daniel O'Mahony. Virgin Missing Adventure #19. Release Date: February 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The first Doctor and Dodo.

Travel Log

Paris in an alternate reality, early July, 1804.

Chronology

Between "The Savages" and "The War Machines."

Summary

It's Paris, 1804, and the Doctor lets Dodo wanders off. Yet this isn't the Doctor's Paris – it's an oppressed city ruled by a mad dwarf named First Deputy Minski.

The Doctor is arrested for curfew violation and shares his cell with a velvet-mask-wearing prisoner. Meanwhile, a troupe of actors convince Dodo to star in the racy play, *The Misfortunes of Virtue*. Dodo begins fancying an actor named Dalville and finally loses her virginity to him.

The man in the velvet mask and the Doctor escape from prison, and snitch a gateway mechanism from Minski's lab. The Doctor uses it to step outside the space-time continuum, where he beholds the world-machine, a complex device that's remaking Earth in mysterious ways. It transpires that ten years ago, an unnamed alien species was studying the impact individual perspective had on history and selected a human – the infamous Marquis de Sade – to remake Earth in his vision. Earth was removed from N-Space and physically reconstructed inside the aliens' world-machine. Unfortunately, de Sade's amoral beliefs corrupted the machine's system operator and gave it independence. That operator became the mad dwarf Minski.

Minski plans for Britain and America to invade Paris, so their soldiers can become infected with a virus he's spread via maggots. This virus makes its victims susceptible to Minski's control, and the soldiers will subsequently contaminate their home countries and eventually the world

with it.

The man in the velvet mask, is revealed as the real Marquis de Sade, who wounds Minski with his gun. One of Minski's soldiers realizes her master's corruption and finishes him with her knife. Literally using Minski's body, the Doctor and de Sade jam the world-machine. The device's alien creators, no longer afraid of Minski, return and pledge to erase the history they created and return Earth to N-Space. The Doctor warns them not to repeat the experiment and leaves with Dodo, who still carries Minski's virus.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor points out that Minski is a mass of biological tissue mimicking humanity – he literally has no heart. And then there's the Doctor's fierce stand against the aliens conducting new experiments: "[They] will be ended swiftly and efficiently. As will you."

Sex and Spirits

London-borne Dodo spent most of her French lesson time behind the gym learning to kiss that way. She dreams of making love to Dalville in a dry, stifling darkness, and loses her virginity to him.

Continuity

The Doctor has known his regeneration is near ever since "The Celestial Toymaker." He's extremely weak from the onset of the regeneration process. Dodo ends the story hating her red
T-shirt with black rings – and burns it at the first opportunity ("The Celestial Toymaker").

For Dodo's final fate, refer to *Who Killed Kennedy?* The first Doctor's single heart is first suggested in *Managra*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Is terrified of his first regeneration, knowing it will remove a part of his self forever and therefore scar him. An exasperated Doctor looks toward the ceiling, only later realizing how much it's like praying.

• *Dodo Chaplet:* She knows some French history, yet only recognizes but cannot place the name Marquis de Sade.

She once played the virgin Mary in a nativity play, but didn't have any

lines. Dodo's mother banned her from climbing when a schoolboy fell from a tree and died. Dodo spent the rest of her childhood shunting between extremes and kept reinventing herself to keep up with all the changes – she feels like she's acted her whole life.

Dodo will infect all her future lovers and children with Minski's virus. She ends the story a bit stung when the Doctor calls her "child."

• *Minski:* The mad dwarf was a mechanical expert, able to build automata so real they could bleed. His knowledge of biology was strong enough to genetically re-engineer maggots, and more importantly, re-animate heads. Minski's alien creators started his life as a single nucleus in a pool of rich fluid, where he drew cells and strength to make his body.

• *Dalville:* He's short, but Dalville seems imposing to Dodo. He's got a boyish face with searching dark eyes and long, dark hair. Dalville insisted that Dodo was innocent, pure, virtuous – so he wanted to corrupt her for corruption's sake.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS:* The TARDIS will be the "only help" the Doctor needs with his regeneration. The TARDIS telepathically calls to him.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* If the Doctor's a proper example, Time Lords have only one heart until their first regeneration, then gain another.

• *Unnamed Worldmachine Builders:* Individual aliens named Liberty, Equality and Fraternity represent the world-machine builders.

• *Minski's Maggots:* En route to the brain, these creatures fed on nervous tissue and cerebral material. They die a few hours later, but their secretions cover nervous systems, making their victims susceptible to Minski's control.

Stuff You Need

The Misfortunes of Virtue, a play features a woman who stays virtuous through torture and abuse, then gets struck by lightning and killed. Dodo was to perform in it.

Alternate History

In the alternate Earth, Minski ruled France single-handedly for almost 10 years. He came to power the day Robespierre was arrested, taking over the revolutionary authority in Paris and then France. The Reign of Terror

continued unabated, and France began a hopeless war against Britain and America.

At the End of the Day

For everyone who's wanted to enjoy *Dodo: The Illicit Sex Journal*, this is the novel for you. For the rest of us, there's simply too much gore, violence, cheap Dodo sex and vomit (literally) for this to be a strong "Who" story, never mind one from – and let's stress this – the children-leaning Hartnell era. It's so laughably off-target words almost fail, and the whole thing's so dirty – and not in a good way – you'll feel the need to shower afterward.

Second Doctor Stories

Invasion of the Cat-People

Author: Gary Russell. Virgin Missing Adventure #12. Release Date: August 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Ben and Polly.

Travel Log

Queensland, North-East Australia; and Felinetta ship, July 6, 1994.

Chronology

Between "The Power of the Daleks" and "The Highlanders."

Summary

Forty thousand years ago, a Euterpian mother-ship attempted to refuel itself from Earth's magnetic core, but was destroyed by solar flares. Five survivors, members of the recon team, set out across Earth to plant power beacons in mathematically precise locations to send a distress signal. Unfortunately, continental drift over time warped the beacons' patterns, creating Earth's ley lines of power. The five Euterpians, divided on what to do next, worked on individual plans to either trigger the beacons or destroy Earth, thus gaining the power to escape.

In the 20th century, the Euterpian Atimkos ("Tim") continues to send out telepathic cries for help that reach the TARDIS and trigger Polly's latent psionic abilities. The Doctor grows concerned for her, even as the Ship arrives in Australia, 1994.

Another of the Euterpians, Thorgarsuunela, summons the Felinetta, a group of space-faring, cat-like scavengers. In exchange for triggering the ley line beacons, the energy-deprived Felinetta will gain needed energy, even as the Euterpians gain the power they need to go home. But the treacherous Felinetta kill Thorgarsuunela rather than share the potential energy with her and capture the Doctor and Ben. Tim then taps Polly's latent psionic

powers. She rebels, but her emotional outburst gives him the power to psionically trigger the beacons.

As a result, Earth's ley lines charge with power and convert the planet into a singular energy globe. Safe on the Felinetta's spaceship, the Doctor detaches the TARDIS' exo-shell and traps Tim inside. Tim tries blasting the walls with his ultrasonics, but the exo-shell reflects his energy and kills him. With Tim having killed one of the Euterpians, Godwanna, to keep power for himself, the last two Euterpians – Udentkista and Tarwildbaning – seize the Earth globe. The Queen of Felinetta therefore retreats with a Euterpian time control unit. But in the Queen's haste, her crewman do not recognize her energy signature and open fire, the Euterpian device redirects the energy and destroys both the Queen and her crew.

The sympathetic Udentkista and Tarwildbaning recognize that their world is long-dead and the struggle for power must end. They donate the last of their psionic energy to restore the Earth, then settle into identities there as Chris Dent and his fiancee, Emma Wilding. The TARDIS crew departs, leaving the last of the Euterpians to live in peace.

Sex and Spirits

When Polly was 20, her flame Roger introduced her to the Hare Krishna, reincarnation and spiritual movement. She fell for him, but he asked that they be just friends. Soon after, Polly caught him making time with her acquaintance Lucy Miller.

In a double entendre, the Doctor measures the console room and hands Polly some measuring tape, then asks, "Pull it taut and I'll see how long it is."

Ass-Whuppings

Mostly to show off, Atimkos destroys a house full of students. The Doctor and Ben are staggered by Thorgarsuunela's ultrasonic attack.

Continuity

Polly's surname of "Wright" is in fact never mentioned on TV, and only appears in the character breakdown and audition script sample by script editor Gerry Davis and producer Innes Lloyd. It's likely the same as Barbara's last name not because they're related, but because the show's creators weren't paying attention.

Polly's Uncle Charles arranged her job at the Post Office Tower ("The War Machines"). The Doctor borrowed plans for the TARDIS pool ("The Invasion of Time") from Claudius Caesar.

The Euterpian power lines become Earth's ley lines, which play a large role in *The Shadow of Weng-Chiang*. The Doctor went to the academy with Magnus, the "idiot" renegade Time Lord mentioned in *No Future* and *Goth Opera*. Lord Rhukk, Benny's friend from *Legacy* and *Theatre of War*, wrote *An Even Briefer History of Time* (3974).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor ties knots in hankeys as reminders of various things for his future incarnations. An RTC book, an object that stops and even rolls back the passage of time, makes his fingertip three or four months younger than the rest of his hand. He carries various screwdrivers and a cricket ball, and has been thinking about buying a house on Earth. His eyes turn from green to blue to green again. An old school friend (possibly Drax from "The Armageddon Factor"), gave him a fob watch at graduation. The friend in question was last heard of selling fake TARDISes to the Andromedans.

• *Ben Jackson:* Ben was born in 1941. After Ben's seafaring father died, Ben didn't get along with his step-father, Alfred, and followed his father's seafaring footsteps. In 1956, a 15-year-old Ben worked at Tilbury Docks. He was trained to use radar. Ben's trousers, taken from the TARDIS wardrobe, have extra-dimensional pockets. His mind is much more closed to telepathy. He hasn't played cricket since the fourth form.

• *Polly Wright:* Polly's Uncle Randolph died in World War II. Polly says she once spoke to him in a seance. As a ten-year-old, she learned about tarot from an old gypsy. At Leeds University, a group of Polly's friends studied ouija boards but didn't use drugs. Polly was told that in a previous life, she was an Australian Aboriginal woman and assisted her Dreamer husband with Vision Quests. Polly doesn't believe in Heaven.

Polly's college mates Paul and Penny were opposed to nuclear power. Her Uncle Charles supported nuclear power, Professor Brett and WOTAN ("The War Machines"). She used to go shopping on Carnaby Street every Saturday with her friend Brenda or cousin Bette.

In 1994, she reads a Carrie Fisher novel. She has blue eyes and doesn't know what french fries are. This book marks her second time on an airplane.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS console room shrunk 15 cm after the Doctor's first regeneration, indicating the Ship donates a part of its matter to the regeneration process. The internal thermostat automatically adjusts to the comfort of the TARDIS crew. RTCs can likely be used to navigate the TARDIS to other RTC sources. The TARDIS' exo-shell, if disconnected from the interior, can reflect ultrasonics. The Ship has a tin mine.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* The Doctor says Gallifreyan children learn about the importance of life and that living beings are sacrosanct. Given the high number of Gallifreyan renegades, this may be wishful thinking on his part.

• *Euterpians:* The Euterpians powered their ships and technology with their ultrasonic abilities, often rendered as singing. Their written language was a series of musical symbols. The Euterpians mastered RTC technology, becoming extremely long-lived.

• *Felinetta (a.k.a. "The Cat-People"):* The Felinetta are one of many humanoid feline species, one branch of a race that includes the Lion-Men of Mongo, the Gelinoids of Cait, the Cheetah People ("Survival"), the mercenaries of Gin-Seng and the Kzinti (presumably from Larry Niven's "Tales of Known Space"). Vedela and Capella are among Felinetta worlds.

The Felinetta originally hail from Feles in the Lynx constellation, and are renowned as galactic scavengers and mercenaries. They can see extremely well. Felinetta males are not intelligent, used only for breeding, and are often eaten.

Stuff You Need

• *Reverse Tachyon-Chronons (RTC):* RTCs make time alternately flow backward and forward, meaning the net gain of time passed is zero. RTCs can be manufactured and sprinkled on objects to give them a degree of immortality and invulnerability. RTCs can make a Time Lord's past personalities dominant. RTCs were smuggled onto Gallifrey as books and were banned by the Time Lords.

• *Ley Line Beacons:* If psionically triggered, they have the power of a nuclear warhead.

Time Travel

Crossing time barriers in a TARDIS may augment telepathic ability.

Phenomena

Psionics and seances: The structure of matter often encodes visuals of events. Given the right vibrations, these "memories" can be replayed, which is why seances sometimes work. Tiny breaks in the structure of space-time may cause the same effect. Atimkos have humans have untapped psionic powers and an innate sense of Earth's geography.

History

• Forty thousand years ago, a Euterpian mother-ship tried to refuel from Earth's magnetic core and sent a recon party to the planet. Solar activity destroyed the mother-ship, leaving the five recon team members stranded. (The prologue's date misses a digit and incorrectly identifies the date as 3978 BC.) The survivors agreed to build a giant distress beacon and set out walking across Earth in mathematically precise lines, planting beacons as they went. The Euterpians also taught Australian Aborigines to sing about the Dreamtime, keeping the beacons lit. Unfortunately, Earth's continental drift shifted the lines and gave them irregular shapes. Nonetheless, the lines became Earth's ley lines of power.

• The Euterpians, their origins unknown, were once regarded as a galactic militia but the race and their homeworld were destroyed 10,000 years ago.

• The Euterpian named Godwanna failed to make humanity's genetic structure truly in tune with the ley lines, but created untapped psionic ability in many individuals (such as Polly).

• The Doctor was present as Homer crafted *The Iliad*. The Doctor says Homer "got it wrong" because Homer dictated the whole thing.

• The Felinetta eradicated an entire reptilian species on Kalidon.

At the End of the Day

A complete mess. If this had been played for camp, like an old Adam West "Batman" episode, it might just have worked. But it would have taken Gareth Roberts' demonstrated ability to write about animal-based aliens to make the Cat People appear like *aliens* rather than humans with hellacious dialogue (such as "He should have been neutered at birth" and "You have not been given permission to mew"). Combined with a plot that erratically sails across the board, *Invasion of the Cat-People* is a disappointment that will make your mind wander.

The Murder Game

Author: Steve Lyons. BBC Past Doctor Adventures #2. Release Date: July 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Ben and Polly.

Travel Log

Hotel Galaxian and Selachian ship, 2146.

Chronology

Between "The Power of the Daleks" and "The Highlanders."

Summary

At the Hotel Galaxian, an ex-tourist resort in Earth orbit now used for special events, a "fun" mystery game called "Murder in Space" actually involves players with much darker motives. Among the contestants are Neville Adler and his wife Dorothy, who have developed an all-pervasive assassination program – one that dominates any technology connected to a computer network and makes it a murder weapon. The Adlers plan to illegally sell the weapon to the shark-like Selachians, using player Melrose as a go-between, but opposing them are Ted Matlock and Alison Hayes, undercover agents for Earth government.

Matlock worries the Adlers might escape and sends out a distress call to the Doctor. The TARDIS materializes at the Hotel, but Neville Adler grows suspicious of Matlock and kills him with the assassination program. Hayes in turn guns down Neville.

For a time, Ben flirts with Terri Willis, another player. However, Melrose has planted various bombs aboard the Hotel, planning to explode it and cover his escape. But when the plan goes wrong with Neville's death, Melrose tries to deactivate the bombs, but is intercepted by Ben, who thinks Melrose is *planting* the explosives. One of the bombs detonates, plunging the Hotel into a decaying orbit. In two hours, the station will enter Earth's atmosphere and burn up.

The heavily-armored Selachians board the Galaxian and seize the Adler

program. They order the weapon to kill Ben as a test, but fortunately, the program can only kill authorized human targets. So long as someone stays in Ben's presence, the program cannot harm him.

The Selachians escape and kidnap Polly to act as a negotiator in their weapons deals. The Doctor scurries the surviving players into the TARDIS as the Galaxian burns up. The TARDIS arrives on the Selachian ship, where Terri, another Earth government agent, betrays Ben and tries to steal the Adler program. The Selachians shoot her down.

The assassination program, capable of infiltrating all technology with a computer link, strands Ben onboard the Selachian ship as the Doctor and Polly flee. Programmed to protect only *human* life, the program destroys the Selachian vessel to terminate Ben. Fortunately, he reaches the safety of the TARDIS. With Ben believed dead, the all-pervasive assassination program purges itself. The Doctor confirms Dorothy Adler cannot duplicate the Adler program without her late husband's help.

Memorable Moments

In a top comedy moment, the Doctor appears as his Murder Game character, Lucy Buxom, wearing a plain red dress, a cheap necklace, and a mammoth bosom made from coat hangers and a blonde wig. The Doctor hopes he's the Assassination Virus' intended victim, because he can't guarantee anyone else's safety.

Sex and Spirits

Ben and Polly feel nice urges for each other, to an extent that surprises even them. Meanwhile, he flirts with the lovely Terri – but thinks she can't hold a torch to Polly. However, some people are better off being best friends rather than shag-bunnies, and Ben and Polly conclude this is the case with them.

Polly whirled Ben around a spaceport bar one night, mixing with Venusians, Draconians and Alpha Centaurians. He awoke with a hangover.

Ass-Whuppings

Ben's love Terri betrays him, then snuffs it. He's clubbed in the back of the head, then body-slammed. He's kicked in the shins, caught in a bomb explosion, hyperventilates, gets hauled up by a Selachian, flipped over, hurled, blasted with two electrical bolts, wrenches his shoulder, gets battered with dust and water, body-hammered again, choked and sprayed

with poison gas. Perhaps most annoying of all, he drops a crate on his foot.

The Doctor, by comparison, is merely caught in an explosion, wrenches his arm, get knocked out by an explosion and hit as the Selachian craft detonates.

Continuity

The fourth Doctor's time telegraph, given to UNIT, might contact former incarnations ("Revenge of the Cybermen"). The Selachians had a falling out with the rulers of Terra Alpha ("The Happiness Patrol").

Ben and Polly's flirtation is further resolved in *Short Trips*: "Mondas Rising." The Doctor calls Sir Arthur Conan Doyle his "old friend" – something of a goof, since he doesn't meet Doyle until his fourth incarnation. (*Evolution*)

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor hasn't met the Selachians before. He lacks a sonic screwdriver, but cobbles together a sonic device to trip locks. In the Murder Game, he played Lucy Buxom, engaged to Ben's Admiral Anchor.

• *Ben Jackson:* Ben sailed aboard the HMS *Teazer* to the West Indies. In school, he was lucky to be cast as a donkey's ass. At age 15, he ran away to sea and was frightened of sharks. He's good with tying knots. So long as he doesn't return to 2146, he's safe from the Assassination Virus. In the Murder Game, Ben played the decorated Admiral Anchor.

Ben kindles a small romance with Murder Game player Terri Willis, but she betrays him as a government agent out for the Assassination Virus. She admits to liking him, though, and saves his life a number of times.

• *Polly Wright:* Hubba-hubba! Polly used to work in the modeling industry, but felt exploited. She's 24, and doesn't recognize the modernized term "Mizz."

As a schoolgirl, she disliked the death penalty and was pleased it was abolished. In the Murder Game, Polly played the haughty part of Dame Natasha Moneybags.

• *Ben and Polly:* Were born in 1942, in close proximity. They both have descendants in this era. They've never pressured the Doctor about getting them home – they just assume it will happen.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor, mostly unable to control the TARDIS, can plot a specific course by deactivating the TARDIS safety features and

disengaging the temporal circuits. The TARDIS' force field can let people out without letting water in. The console can track Selachian transmissions. Underwater harnesses in the TARDIS extract oxygen directly from the water and filter it to the user. Lacking open pathways for computer viruses to penetrate, the TARDIS is immune to the Assassination Virus.

Alien Races

Selachians: Warmongering, ferocious, totally paranoid. Selachians suffered years of persecution (*see History*) and crafted their name and battle-armor after Earth sharks to aid in psychological warfare. However, a biological Selachians actually look more like dolphins, essentially half-human, half-salmon. They're pink and smooth, short and broad, with straight mouths. They lack noses, but have a series of gills down the side of their heads and have three tapered fingers.

Selachian battle armor has an invisible, one-way viewscreen, a sharp fin along the back, and paint designs that resemble sharks. Tubular guns run along the forearms. The armor doubles as life-support out of water and carries an electric charge. Much of Selachian technology is organically grown.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Fob Watch:* Linked to the TARDIS, it alerts him when designated ships draw near.

• *Adler Assassination Program:* A shifty computer program, one that configures computers to murder. For example, it can make your our coffee pot suddenly kill you. Basically, the Assassination Virus can scan Earth's entire computer network and beyond, searching for its victim's whereabouts. It can pursue targets by sending drones to search for them. However, the program will take any steps necessary to preserve human life that it isn't authorized to kill.

Ships

Selachian Cruiser: Streamlined and black, maneuvered by a row of gravity discs underneath.

History

• Jacques Coustau taught the Doctor about dealing with sharks.

• The real Neville and Dorothy Adler penned a crime novel called *The Murder Game*.

• Air-breathing mammals culled the water-breathing Selachians as an international sport. In the midst of one year's culling festival, they emerged to exact their revenge and launched their battle fleet. During several decades in the 21st century, they scourged space, destroying many planets their and populations.

• Hotel Galaxian was Earth's first off-world tourist attraction, until widespread colonization hamstrung the hotel's trade.

At the End of the Day

Not enough murder, not enough game. The Selachians come across too damn blatant – shouting "Kill everyone!" – to be strong villains, and are implemented much better in *The Final Sanction*. There's a nice little sub-plot where Ben and Polly think about fancying each other, but there's just not enough overall complexity – or characters we care about – to carry the day. By the way, Troughton's Doctor evokes "Monty Python" by playing one ugly woman.

The Roundheads

Author: Mark Gatiss. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #6. Release Date: November 1997

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Jamie McCrimmon, Ben Jackson and Polly Wright.

Travel Log

London, December 1648.

Chronology

Between "The Macra Terror" and "The Faceless Ones."

Summary

Desiring to explore English culture in December of 1648, the Doctor and his companions split up to follow their own interests, but their innocent plans quickly ride a hand basket to hell. Polly and Ben are mistaken for Parliamentarians; the Royalists kidnap her and beat Ben up. While unconscious, he's press-ganged into sailor's service aboard the *Teazer*. In Amsterdam, Ben becomes friends with the big-bosomed Sal Winter, captain of the rival *Demeter*, and the two of them and her crew do battle against the *Teazer* and her villainous captain, Stanislaus.

On London streets, Oliver Cromwell's men question Jamie's allegiances and Scottish upbringing, and arrest him and the Doctor. Tripped up trying to explain how Jamie served under a Prince Charles of the future, the Doctor improvises that Jamie is a powerful fortune-teller and eventually gains Cromwell's favor.

The Royalists ask Polly to help them free the doomed King Charles II from prison, and she agrees, hoping to also free the Doctor and Jamie. The King's escape throws history a total curve ball. Ben's high-seas adventure ends with Stanislaus' men killing Winter and the discovery that Stanislaus is transporting a Dutch assassin with orders to kill Cromwell. The Doctor and Ben intercept the assassin. But more tragically, the Doctor asks Polly to betray Christopher Whyte, a Royalist enamored of her, in order to locate the improperly freed King and fulfill history. Charles II is therefore recaptured

and beheaded as history recorded on Jan. 13, 1649. The TARDIS proceeds on its way.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor fixes up a wreath of holly and mistletoe to his head and skips happily along, looking like some ancient woodland spirit. The cut-up Winter says there's something in Stanislaus' strongbox that she wants, and Ben's sick to think it's her nose.

The normally easy-going Ben, thirsting for vengeance for his friend Sal Winter, goes to the brink of killing Stanislaus.

Sex and Spirits

Whyte talks to a nightgown-clad Polly but doesn't do anything – she wishes such chivalry existed in 1966. (Whyte was tempted more than she thought.) Ben and Polly booze on rum in the World Turn'd Upside Down inn. Polly disguises herself as a serving girl and distributes drugged wine.

Ass-Whuppings

King Charles finds his head in a basket. Ben's good friend Captain Winter is shot ("Avenge me…with style."). Ben himself pukes after seeing a sailor's entrails split, and nearly drowns in mud.

Continuity

The Roundheads erroneously says Jamie met the Doctor in 1745, not 1746.

Marston Moor, where Arthur Kemp dies under the command of Sir Henry Cooke, is the same location visited in Gatiss' *Nightshade*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor learned elementary hypnotism from the Master.

He says travel through time and space was new to him once, but that was, "A very, very long time ago." He's been to some alternate futures (*see History*). He can palm objects and make them appear behind someone's ear.

The Doctor doesn't like computers, and finds books homely by comparison. He loves snow. He can create currency from this period. But he needs a refresher on this era's customs. The Doctor has always wanted to

meet Oliver Cromwell.

• *Ben Jackson:* Ben says that if Cromwell's family was anything like Ben's, banning Christmas was a good idea. Ben's ship in the 1960s is called the *Teazer*. He always wanted to be a pirate.

• *Polly Wright:* Polly's betrayal of her beloved, Christopher Whyte, is a difficult thing for her to bear (*see Memorable Moments*). For remembrance, he gives her a locket that ends up in the Tower of London in Polly's time. She visits it sometimes.

Polly visited the Tower of London as a child, and always had sympathy for the beheaded King Charles, and no real love for Cromwell. She loved reading about the frills, velvet and lace Cavaliers.

Polly met her friend and co-worker Rosie in an office in Bond Street. The older Rosie was heavily involved with the fledgling Women's Liberation Movement and made shy Polly into more of a swinger.

• *Jamie McCrimmon:* Jamie didn't have time for history lessons as a child because he was a piper.

• *Sal Winter:* Captain of the *Demeter* and Ben's good friend. Winter was a mess. She had a patch over one eye and an artificial silver nose. She had a peg leg and horribly brown teeth. Captain Stanislaus broke her heart 20 years ago and gave her the pox, which took her nose. Winter was about to kill him, but Stanislaus' men shot her instead.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor, lost in the TARDIS hallways, suspects his Ship is getting revenge for all the hard work he makes her do. Through little clues such as beams of hallway light and open doors, the TARDIS helps the Doctor find items (in this case the book *Every Boy's Book of the English Civil Wars*). The TARDIS still cannot translate written writing.

History (Alternate)

The Doctor knows of Englands that endured three, four or five civil wars. He says some are great, some horrible. In one, a resurgent monarch ruthlessly oppresses all democracy. In another, a hereditary Puritan Protectorate rules the country until the 20th century. In yet another, the Catholic army capitalizes on England's crisis to takes over most of the known world.

History

• Richard Cromwell, Oliver Cromwell's son, finds the Doctor's copy of

Every Boy's Book of the English Civil Wars and realizes he will die a hopeless failure in 1712, known as "Tumbledown Dick." Richard tried to tell his father of the book, but Oliver Cromwell refused to listen. The Doctor erases Richard's memory of the future.

• A Dutch assassin named Gustavus van Leeuwenhoek, brother of Anton van Leeuwenhoek, was dispatched by Prince Rupert to kill Cromwell, but the Doctor and Ben stopped him.

At the End of the Day

A colorful adventure that makes use of everyone, blessed with a strong supporting cast. Ben becomes a capable high-seas sailor, thrust into a world of cutlasses and split entrails. His friendship with the garish Captain Winter erupts with life. Polly faces her character's greatest moral dilemma *ever* as she betrays her love. A jailed Jamie improvises like hell. It's a clever historical novel so full of magic, you won't notice how the Doctor spends most of the story in jail.

Dreams of Empire

Author: Justin Richards. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #14. Release Date: August 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Jamie and Victoria.

Travel Log

Asteroid prison Santespri, Haddron Empire, date unknown.

Chronology

Between "The Ice Warriors" and "The Enemy of the World."

Summary

It's bad enough when Hans Kesar, leader of the Haddron Republic, declares himself Consul General for life. But then the Republic's Fifth Legion mysteriously disappears. Consul Milton Trayx moves against his childhood friend Kesar and a year-long civil war breaks out. Kesar is eventually captured, deposed and gravely burned in an assassination attempt.

Two years later, Kesar has been imprisoned on the satellite prison Santespri and when the TARDIS randomly arrives, a staff member is murdered and the Doctor's party blamed. Trayx, now ruler of the Republic, quickly becomes convinced of the TARDIS crew's innocence, but an approaching ship presents a new problem – Trayx suspects another political rival seeks to assassinate Kesar. Cut off from any means of help, Trayx's forces and Kesar's men combine their efforts as VETACs, near-unstoppable robot soldiers of the Haddron Republic, storm the asteroid.

Trayx dispatches Kesar's ex-general, Axell Cruger, to secure a VETAC virus from the armory, but when Cruger meets up with the VETACs, he stands revealed as their commander. It was Cruger who stole the VETACs, actually the missing Fifth Legion, to make Trayx think Kesar unfit to rule and declare civil war. Cruger hoped to become Emperor himself in the chaos.

The Doctor suspects the VETACs are here to rescue Kesar, not kill him, but Kesar doesn't seem very happy about their arrival. With a VETAC

command chip, the Doctor immobilizes the VETACs long enough to rescue a captured Victoria, but the siege continues. The VETACs rout the asteroid's defenders, then get a shock. "Kesar" is actually Gerhart Rutger, a childhood friend of Kesar and Trayx. Rutger took the place of Kesar, who was actually killed in Cruger's assassination attempt, to prevent the public making Kesar a martyr.

Knowing the real Kesar has died, the VETACs fully come under Cruger's command. But the situation erupts in violence and one of Trayx's soldiers, the noble Darkling, sacrifices himself to kill Cruger in a VETAC burst. With Cruger's "death," the Fifth Legion reverts to Trayx's command. Kesar is allowed to officially "die" and Trayx concludes it's time to build on Cruger's dreams of empire.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor boasts about his keen observational skills, then sits on Victoria's sandwiches. Trayx says the assassin would be a "consummate professional," and therefore knows it isn't the Doctor.

The Doctor turns in a chair dramatically, but miscalculates and ends up facing a wall. The Doctor brings his nose so it's almost touching Kesar's mask, then asks him why he's not excited about being rescued (it's because he's not Kesar).

Sex and Spirits

Victoria wears lightweight under-armor, accentuating her curves. (Everyone wipe their drool.) She's a bit sweet on Prion until she realizes he's an android.

Ass-Whuppings

A million died in Haddron's civil war.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's eyes are a piercing green – or blue. He recognizes Praxis Minima by its red shift and sings "Sky Boat Song." His new sonic screwdriver disrupts brick mortar, producing sounds higher than most humanoids can hear, but it's vulnerable to subspace emissions. He can change the robot Prion's operating frequency.

• *Jamie McCrimmon:* He's barely heard of chess.

Places to Go

Santespri: Asteroid prison made habitable by an osmotic field. It stands as a fortress on the outer boundaries of Haddron space, but its security system sucks.

Stuff You Need

• *Virtual Electro-Targeted Attack Computer (VETACs):* The most sophisticated armaments in known space, VETACs depend on a command unit relaying instructions over a virtual network. They compose the Legions of the Haddron Republic, a typical Legion being 1,024 strong, with two controlling officers. Software toxins in binary encoded pulses can neutralize them. They can see in the dark and identify human commanders by DNA signatures or voiceprint.

• *Amphesite:* A mild poison that can kill you by evaporating.

Organizations

• *Haddron Republic:* An empire in all but name, the Haddron Republic is governed by a Senate presided over by three consuls; the most senior is called a Consul General.

• *Fifth Legion:* While serving on rim duty along the frontier worlds of the Republic, the Fifth Legion was assigned to put down a rebellion on Sertus Minor. It never reported back, having been hidden away by General Cruger. VC5 commanded the Fifth Legion; VL9 served as lieutenant.

Phenomena

Chess is the only game to have originated in pretty much the same form across the majority of civilized cultures without any external influence. You find it from one end of the Spiral Nebula to the other side of the Geratic Divide. Its origins are unknown. The Haddron ancients called it the Game of Death.

History

• When the frontier post Tolokabad came under siege from the Mezzanyre Hordes, Lieutenant Milton Trayx took command of the Second Legion. Outnumbered five to one, Trayx destroyed the Hordes' lead ship and put them in total disarray. Trayx was promoted to general and became General in Chief in three years.

• After Hans Kesar declared himself Consul General of the Haddron Republic for life, the year-long civil war that followed devastated the Republic. Kesar was captured and deposed in a landslide vote. His foremost opponent was his childhood friend Trayx, who was perhaps motivated by Kesar's affair with Trayx's wife. Two years later, an "imprisoned" Kesar "died" a hero fighting the corrupt General Cruger. The Doctor suggested Trayx form a commonwealth.

• The Doctor helped "poor old Middleton" write a short poem about chess.

At the End of the Day

A good sense of comedy and drama, evoking other works such as "Terminator" (robots giving you no escape or defense) and "Aliens" (the android Prion), with all the political sense of TV's "Enemy of the World" and the killing drama of "Robots of Death." Richards' hysterical comedy, especially the bit with the sandwiches on the Doctor's butt, shows how the Troughton era cast didn't take themselves too seriously and got through difficulties on sheer bravado.

Twilight of the Gods

Author: Christopher Bulis. Virgin New Adventure #26. Release Date: September 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Jamie and Victoria.

Travel Log

Vortis, both surface and interior. The year is uncertain, although it is some hundreds of years past the first Doctor's visit circa 20,000. The Rhumon Imperium lists the year as 2306, the Republicans as Revolution Year 153.

Chronology

Between "The Web of Fear" and "Fury from the Deep."

Summary

The wayward Doctor and his companions arrive on a planet newly arrived in the Rhumon system, where two Rhumon factions, the Imperials and the Republicans, fight for possession of it. As the struggle progresses, the Doctor encounters the planet's oppressed natives, the Menoptera, and realizes he's once again on the planet Vortis.

Strange gray figures multiply their numbers with the bodies of dead Rhumon soldiers. They serve a strange mental force that makes the Imperial and Republican leaders mine for isocryte, a mineral that can warp gravity.

At the Sea of Lodos, the Rhumon soldiers confront the mental force, a seed of the giant Animus spider the Doctor defeated during his previous trip to Vortis in "The Web Planet." With the isocryte stockpile, the Animus will be able to leave Vortis and fly to other worlds. As the Imperials, Republicans and Menoptera join forces against the Animus, the Doctor tries to materialize the TARDIS by the Animus' isocryte store and drop a warhead on the monster. But a bigger source of isocryte overrides the controls and pulls the TARDIS to Vortis' core.

The Doctor discovers that Vortis, a hollow world, is actually a planet-sized lab experiment for a race of near-immortals, gaseous beings the Menoptera worship and call the "Gods of Light." The Doctor alters the

Gods' scanning circuitry to project Jamie and the Menopteran Krestus as giant solid holograms. Together, these holograms shred the Animus and tear out its core. The Gods of Light agree to abandon their experiment on Vortis, and the Doctor shows the Menoptera how to pilot their planet. As the Doctor departs, Vortis settles into a new age of peace with its Rhumon neighbors.

Ass-Whuppings

An Imperial force blows up a Menoptera base with children inside. Jamie and the Menopteran Krestus kill the Animus.

The Doctor and Jamie are blasted by an electrical staff. Their truck flies off a cliff and crashes.

Continuity

The first Doctor, Barbara, Ian and Vicki defeated the first Animus in "The Web Planet," where several references were made to the Gods of Light. The Doctor incorrectly believed that magnetic fields pulled Vortis' moons into orbit, but it was actually the isocryte-powered Animus, searching for more organic material. The Animus, as a precaution, seeded an egg of itself that hatches in this story.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor can hear and remember pitches beyond normal human hearing. Through telepathy, the Gods of Light can speak to him.

• *Victoria Waterfield:* Victoria learned about religion when she was young. She disguises herself as a Menoptera and can mimic their voices.

• *Jamie and Victoria:* Jamie doesn't understand photosynthesis, but Victoria does.

• *Animus II:* Like its predecessor, the new Animus was a cross between a spider and an octopus. It carried the memories of its parent, and recognized the Doctor in his new form. The Animus also carried the abilities of its predecessor, and could mentally influence the Rhumons. The influence was stronger in the presence of gold.

Powered by isocryte, the Animus grew to an immense size. It weaved an isocryte-generated force field that deflected lasers and missiles. It also repelled plasma attacks from the Gods of Light. In time, it could have propelled itself through space.

The Animus knew a high level of biochemistry. The consciousness of some victims absorbed by the Animus lived on in its extremities.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor can deposit a homing device to guide him back to a location. The presence of isocryte creates a hyperspace distortion that allows for better spatial piloting, but not temporal. Too much isocryte can also interfere with the TARDIS' accuracy. The Ship also generates a short-range gravity field.

Alien Races

• *Menoptera:* Recognize each other by body scent. Menoptera fly thanks to trace elements of isocryte (*see Stuff You Need*) in their systems. Small holes in their wing membranes therefore don't affect flight. Menoptera cremate their dead so they can rise up and join the Gods of Light.

• *Rhumons:* Tall and slender humanoids with copper-colored skin. Rhumons sport straight noses but have fleshy sides on their heads that merge into emphasized cheekbones. Their long jaws focus into thin, pointed chins and their ears fold back. They have spiny crests that rise in anger.

The Imperial and Republican factions used an integral analyzer to prove they were morality and spiritually different. In fact, the analyzer measured minor trace differences in their food additives.

• *Rhumons (Imperials):* Supporters of the Imperial family on the Rhumon homeworld. The Imperials use servants, and believe in their god and creator, Omnimon. The late Father Li Modeenus lead the Church of Rhumon.

• *Rhumons (Republicans):* Based on the colony world of New Rhumos, the Republicans celebrate grand Workers' Day. They have a Revolutionary Youth Movement. They profess no belief in spiritual matters.

• *"The Gods of Light":* Beings composed entirely of gas. The Gods gained their name when they collected samples from Vortis, radiating light that attracted the Menoptera.

The Gods have lifespans that last millions of years, and their young take a proportionate amount of time to mature. On Vortis, they can appear as formidable orbs that fire bolts of plasma.

• *Animus Drones:* Animus-generated beings, made from dead flesh. They're dull gray, about 8-foot tall and sport two pairs of arms that end in stubs. They have no facial features at all, save a broad dark pucker in the middle. They're immune to many forms of physical harm, but vulnerable to fire.

Alien Planets

Vortis still has at least three moons. The center of the planet is artificial and moves through space, powered by isocryte drawn through hyperspace. The control systems feed varying degrees of heat and cold onto the planet.

Vortis settled into orbit as the 12th planet of the Rhumos system. The Rhumon Imperials named it Mallaveria after the Emperor's eldest daughter.

Places to Go

Sea of Lodos: Location where the new Animus stored its isocryte.

Stuff You Need

• *Isocryte:* A rare mineral, created by immense atomic stress, such as the collision of two stars. It's more often found in galactic cores or the centers of star clusters. Chemically, isocryte isn't that unusual, but when stimulated electrically and mechanically, it generates waves that cancel gravity.

• *Somlos Berries:* Fruit native to Vortis that causes sleep. Only a few small predators are immune.

Ships

Menopteran Vessels are powered by a crystalline form of isocryte.

History

• Long ago, a long-lived race of gaseous beings created Vortis as an experiment for students, and populated it with the Menoptera, which they removed from their true homeworld. The gaseous race would periodically remove specimens from Vortis, fueling the belief that they were the "Gods of Light." Unfortunately, Vortis was sloppily built and some isocryte used in its construction contaminated the surface. In such a fashion, Menopteran myths about the Gods of Light giving them flight were correct.

• In the Rhumos system, war broke out for 150 years between the Imperials on homeworld and the Republicans from the colony world of New Rhumos.

• After the Animus was defeated in "The Web Planet," Vortis thrived and began roaming through space. It settled in the Rhumos system, where the Menoptera welcomed a visit from the Rhumons. Sadly, the Rhumon civil war came to Vortis and the Menoptera were enslaved. With the threat of the

Animus, the Imperials and Republicans ceased hostility on Vortis and apologized for their behavior. After the Animus' defeat, the Gods of Light withdrew from the Vortis experiment.

At the End of the Day

Another sad rehash of ideas that misses the mark. Compared to the ambition and novelty of "The Web Planet," *Twilight of the Gods* presents nothing new and offers a stock film Doctor and companions, without Patrick Troughton's comedy and Frazer Hines' charm. For more than the novel's first half, the Menoptera lose their individuality and could be any number of alien races. Plus we're pummeled with half-page or page-long paragraphs. Despite a giant spider heart-ripping finale that's similar to Stephen King's *It*, the final resolution's a punt.

The Dark Path

Author: David A. McIntee. Virgin Missing Adventure #32. Release Date: March 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Jamie and Victoria.

Travel Log

The colony on Darkheart and the *Piri Reis*' flight deck, circa 3375.

Chronology

After "The Web of Fear" and immediately before "Fury From the Deep." This story also follows the novel Twilight of the Gods.

Summary

A temporal distortion wave near the Earth colony of Darkheart grounds two TARDISes, one belonging to the Doctor, the other belonging to a Time Lord named Koschei and his human assistant Ailla. While the Doctor's party bluffs their way into the colony as "Federation envoys," Koschei and Ailla covertly join the *Piri Reis*, sent to the Darkheart system to see if the long-lost colony there is active.

Suddenly, the *Piri Reis*' alien crewmen inexplicably vanish or turn human. The Doctor and Koschei both sneak into the core of the Darkheart colony and greet each other as old friends. There, they examine "the Darkheart," a device designed by the Chronovores to supply energy to their wounded fellows across time and space. However, the Darkheart colonists, products of Earth's racist Imperial age, have converted it to another purpose. The Darkheart, capable of rewriting morphic fields, is sending out a pulse bubble that will, in time, convert all aliens in the Universe into humans. As an additional side effect, beings on worlds that cannot support human life will perish.

The Doctor and Koschei agree that the Darkheart must be destroyed, but decide to carefully research how it can best be done. As the Doctor moves his TARDIS away from the danger zone, Koschei works on the device but is interrupted by an Imperial patrol. He shoots them down, but suddenly hears

a footstep behind him. He whirls instinctively and fires. To his horror, Koschei sees he has killed Ailla. He cracks with grief.

Hoping to use the Darkheart to resurrect Ailla, Koschei forms an allegiance with Terrell, the Imperial leader on Darkheart. To allay Terrell's suspicions, Koschei shows him how to use the Darkheart's destructive power and blows up the nearby planet of Terileptus.

In Koschei's TARDIS, the Doctor finds a healing Ailla, who is secretly a Time Lord and has regenerated. Together, they confront Koschei, who realizes Ailla is a spy for the High Council, sent to monitor his activities. Feeling betrayal from his people and his closest friends, Koschei goes completely insane, threatening to use the Darkheart's power to make himself master of a new Universal order.

However, the Doctor reprograms the Darkheart to fire on the system's star. When Koschei activates the machine, the star becomes a black hole, but the *Piri Reis* hurriedly evacuates the planet and flees. Ailla tries to apprehend the Doctor for the Time Lords, but the Doctor's crew reaches the TARDIS and escapes, leaving Ailla stranded. And as they leave, Koschei's TARDIS is sucked into the black hole and time-looped.

Memorable Moments

Upon their reunion, the Doctor beams and shakes Koschei's hand as the good friends they are – an ominous foreshadowing of events to come. Koschei's accidental murder of his companion Ailla burns in his eyes – and ours. Koschei begins his journey down the dark path by destroying Terileptus. He offers Victoria the chance to destroy Skaro before her father was killed there, and Victoria almost cries to agree. Koschei's first declaration of "So far as the cosmos is concerned, there can only be one Master!" chills the soul.

Sex and Spirits

Koschei, believing Ailla to be dead, kisses her very gently on the lips.

Ass-Whuppings

Koschei neatly snaps the colony Viscount's neck. Koschei also wipes out the planet of Terileptus, a Veltrochni Dragon and blows away three Adjudicators. Veltrochni Dragons destroy the Imperial flagship *Pendragon*, cruisers *Tigris* and *Donau*, plus the destroyers *Foxhound* and *Jaguar*.

Continuity

The Doctor's final act of trapping Koschei in a black hole begins their feud, which plagues all the Doctor's future incarnations.

Empire records record the Doctor's involvement at Britannicus Ice Base ("The Ice Warriors"). The Master first appeared as the Doctor's mortal enemy in "Terror of the Autons." It was the second Doctor who cured the plague on Draconia and became a Draconian nobleman – he was the first Caucasian humanoid that planet ever saw. His portrait is in the Emperor's palace ("Frontier in Space"). The fifth Doctor stopped fugitive Terileptils from wiping out London in "The Visitation." Koschei here destroys his Ship's recall circuit ("Arc of Infinity").

A Koschei from a parallel universe, who didn't become the Master, appears in *The Face of the Enemy*. The Veltrochni first appeared in McIntee's *First Frontier*. When the Earth Empress died, most of Centcomp's data structures fell apart (*So Vile a Sin*).

The Doctor says there were several Lloigor originally, but the others lack the energy to reach our Universe ("The Web Planet," *Twilight of the Gods*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor hasn't seen his friend Koschei in more than 200 years. At first, he believed Koschei was hunting him for the Time Lords. The Doctor can de-hypnotize anyone Koschei hypnotizes. He can reprogram a recycling chamber into a transmat.

• *James Robert McCrimmon:* Victoria has been teaching Jamie how to read. He thought Ben and Polly were kidding about the Doctor's regeneration.

• *Victoria Waterfield:* Initially feels that Koschei, more than the Doctor, knows what he's doing.

• *Koschei:* Koschei begins somewhat honorable. The Time Lords already call him two-faced, but allow him to travel. Koschei, like the Doctor, favors an ordered Universe, but starts liking one with him in control. The revelation that Ailla was a Time Lord spy drives Koschei over the edge. As Koschei put it: "My people mistrust me; I kill one of my best friends who was sent to me by the other; and both betray me. I have found myself, Doctor, and I am the stronger for it." He then embraces his new destiny as the Master.

• *Ailla:* Until this adventure, Ailla considered Koschei the most

levelheaded man she knew. The first incarnation of Ailla that we see is a tall, athletic woman with catlike looks and short dark hair. Her next incarnation is shorter, with shoulder-length auburn hair, expressive eyes and high cheekbones.

• *The TARDIS:* A safety override allows the TARDIS to randomly jump within a mile or so of the present location. The Doctor's TARDIS can be piloted via remote control from Koschei's TARDIS.

• *Koschei's TARDIS:* Is a Type 45 with user-definable macros for navigation.

Alien Races

• *Humans:* Could survive on Draconia, but not on Terileptus or Alpha Centauri.

• *Veltrochni:* Veltrochni are extremely tall with brown reptilian skin and an extra knee at the back of their legs. Veltrochni soldiers wear an exoskeleton that's framed around flexible armor. Veltrochni have large jaws and four-digited, clawed hands. Rows of porcupine-like quills run along the backs of their foreheads and down into their collars.

The Veltrochni have holographic projectors for disguise purposes or invisibility. Veltrochni houses can oversee several families, called Packs, and grant independent status. The late Pack Huthakh was one of the younger groups.

• *Xarax:* A bulbous, midnight-blue, winged scorpion roughly the size of a ground car, used by the Federation as workhorses.

Alien Planets

Darkheart: A planet with a class K4 red giant sun and a companion neutron star, located in a gap between the Galaxy's spiral arms past Lasty's Nebula. Darkheart was a hollow bubble of thin neutron-star material. It was connected to its star's mass via a dimensional bridge, therefore gaining the body of a black hole without becoming one. Terileptus was the closest spacefaring planet.

Stuff You Need

Darkheart: A device built by a widely traveled alien race as a means to transmit raw solar energy to aid their wounded at any point in space/time. The race eventually became the Chronovores ("The Time Monster").

The Darkheart is now a one-way space/time conduit, transmitting energy through the Time Vortex. It can rewrite morphic fields, altering them into whatever species is desired. The Darkheart colonists used it to rewrite their DNA and gain immortality, but became sterile. Koschei adapted the Darkheart to draw Vortex power and blast planets into oblivion.

Time Travel

You cannot use a TARDIS to change the past – you'll only generate a parallel universe if you try. The Darkheart can directly rewrite space/time, perfectly restructuring the timeline with a new matrix.

Ships

• *Piri Reis:* A Federation ship, the product of Terileptil architecture, commanded by Captain Gillian Sherwin.

• *Zathakh*: Veltrochni Dragon Class ship, crewed by the clan Zathakh and commanded by Pack-Mother Brokhyth. Its quantum lances can pierce terullian hulls of Tzun Stormblades and tunnel into a planet's core.

Organizations

• *The Federation:* Each member takes the chairmanship for a fixed term. All decisions must be by majority. Central records are located on Alpha Centauri II.

• *Adjudicators:* Adjudicators are now called Arbiters and serve as more of a judicial force. Adjudicator Secular Brandauer holds command.

History

Darkheart was established 350 years ago, at the Earth Empire's fall. Xenophobic Imperial ships, fearful of discovery, slaughtered a Veltrochni fleet on a routine scouting mission. A Veltrochni battle cruiser discovered the loss of its fellows and stormed the colony, fleeing as it was destroyed.

At the End of the Day

The Doctor re-meets his old friend Koschei after 200 years and shakes his hand with warmth – perfectly setting the stage for the tragedy to follow. *The Dark Path* unfolds in the most logical way possible, placing the Doctor and Koschei at the same point on the philosophical spectrum, then moving them far apart. Unlike "The Phantom Menace," this prequel has some

surprises, and although the space battles seem to be derivative of “Star Trek” lore, the story is better for it. Overall, a total win, proving why McIntee has risen to become the novel Master’s master.

The Final Sanction

Author: Steve Lyons. BBC Past Doctor Adventures #24. Release Date: July 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Jamie and Zoe.

Travel Log

Kalaya and *The Triumph*, 2204; New York City, circa 2184.

Chronology

Between "The Seeds of Death" and "The Space Pirates."

Summary

The TARDIS lands in a war zone on Kalaya, a bystander in the war between the shark-like Selachians and Earth. The Selachians capture Zoe and take her to their homeworld of Ockora. The Doctor knows that very soon, Earth commander Wayne Redfern will destroy Ockora, its people and their 10,000 hostages with a G-Bomb, becoming one of the most reviled figures in history.

To save Zoe, the Doctor implores Redfern to investigate if reports of the hostages are true, altering Time slightly by delaying his destruction of the planet. Redfern's team T-mats to Ockora, but once down, Redfern has his troops slaughter Ockoran civilians in retribution. The Doctor warns the Ockorans of the attack and is branded a traitor.

On Redfern's flagship, the *Triumph*, Jamie implores the G-Bomb's creator, Laura Mulholland, not to support Redfern's call for genocide. A pack of Selachians find a T-mat center and teleport to the *Triumph*. They seize the ship, but Redfern nonetheless delivers the bomb and destroys Ockora. The Doctor and Zoe escape and T-mat to the *Triumph* as the planet vanishes in a black hole.

The Selachians plot a course for Earth, hoping to level it with the *Triumph*'s second G-Bomb. As the Doctor and his companions escape in the TARDIS, a repentant Mulholland detonates the bomb early, destroying the *Triumph* and forming a black hole that the Doctor says won't interfere with

history.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor's inner argument about risking history to save Zoe proves his love for her. G-Bomb creator Mulholland looks at Redfern's photo and sees the face of death.

Ass-Whuppings

Ockora is destroyed, devastating the Selachian planetside race. An avalanche pelts Jamie. A Selachian thinker weapon knocks him out for three days. He's also jolted by electricity. Zoe half-drowns twice.

Continuity

The second Doctor fought the Selachians in *The Murder Game*.

The Doctor by this point has met Leonardo da Vinci ("The Masque of Mandragora").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor visited Kalaya before. He can tap the *Triumph*'s communications system.

• *Jamie McCrimmon:* A Highlander, Jamie learns battlefield strategies quickly.

• *Zoe Heriot:* Zoe has a keen sense of direction. She trained at the Earth School of Parapsychology.

Alien Races

• *Ockorans/Selachians:* Ockorans look rather like dolphins, with a spindly build, pink skin, narrow black eyes, no noses and straight lipless mouths. Instead of hair, they have white, wavy crests. On the surface, they wear a green, water-supplying creature on their backs and pull themselves around with their arms. Among other things, they eat berries. The Doctor has defeated them many times. They have a legend of a Great Mother who died when the Kalarians, a.k.a. The Evil Ones, visited.

The term "Selachians" refers to Ockoran warriors implanted with cybernetic armor jacks. Their tails are amputated so they can walk. Their armor is vulnerable to nanites.

• *Selachian Thinker Weapons:* Green blobs that sprout tentacles and attack enemy soldiers. Their paralyzing hooks can shut down neural pathways.

• *Selachians and Kalarians:* Have similar physical features and perhaps some common ancestry.

Alien Planets

• *Kalaya:* Oxygen-rich, with gravity a little higher than Earth and a mostly temperate climate.

• *Ockora:* Before the G-Bomb wrecked it, Ockora was unspoiled. Very beautiful and very clean.

Stuff You Need

• *Selachian Spores:* Clusters of these cling to enemy soldiers and combust upon contact with air.

• *G-Bomb:* Created by Laura Mulholland, this device may have some similarity to the Z-Bomb ("The Tenth Planet"). The G-Bomb makes gravity collapse on itself, pulling its target into a black hole.

Organizations

Terran Security Forces are armed with holographic camouflage fields, a snaring cloak and disc-shaped electro grenades.

Ships

Selachian Transports: A tentacle grows out of the control board and snares the operator, allowing for telepathic control of the vehicle. Kalarians can direct such ships, but humans can't. The operator can be killed by terminal psychic feedback.

Time Travel

The Doctor's tweaking of the timeline, although rather slight, violates most of the series' other rules about tampering with history. Time proves to be flexible, providing you don't change the major details.

Alternate History

In the original history, Redfern blew up Ockora without landing on the

planet. Laura Muholland, tormented by her part in the planet's destruction, later hung herself.

History

• The Kalarians once hunted the Ockorans purely for sport. The Ockorans tried to communicate with them, but failed. The Ockorans developed their battlesuit technology and left their homeworld circa 2100. They captured four planets, including Kalaya, in a year. Their armies slaughtered civilians on Regus 4 and blasted a Martian colony with a sun-stoker.

• After the Dalek invasion, Earth security made the Terran Security Forces a formidable organization. Some believe they furthered the Earth/Selachian war to justify their time and effort.

• As the war drug on, the Selachians withdrew. Molinar and Kalaya were the last worlds to fall to Earth forces. The Selachians, conrnered on their home planet of Ockora, threatened the lives of 10,000 hostages. An Earth force led by wayne Redfern first retaliated against an Ockoran settlement, then destroyed Ockora with a G-bomb. Redfern's name was reviled for the atrocity and for killing hte 10,000 Selachian-held hostages.

At the End of the Day

We wee the Doctor pull history's heartstrings just for Zoe, a super example of the literary motif, "The hero can't go forward, he must go forward. *The Final Sanction* smoothly enjoys a highter-than-normal violence content, because it's all in context. The chapter where we see through a dying Selachian's eyes is amazing, and the Selachians come off as much more useful than in *The Murder Game*. All in all, a heart-filled war story about racism, and well worth your time.

The Menagerie

Author: Martin Day. Virgin Missing Adventure #10. Release Date: May 1995

TARDIS Crew

The second Doctor, Jamie and Zoe.

Travel Log

Unnamed planet, circa 3417.

Chronology

Immediately after "The Space Pirates."

Summary

It is an unnamed planet with Elizabethan influences, with a city ruled by the Knights of Kuabris. When the Doctor, Jamie and Zoe arrive, they're arrested in a raid on an unlicensed tavern. Jamie escapes, but the Doctor makes known his scientific roots and is taken before the science-hating Knights.

Beneath the Knights' city lies a secret civilization with a number of animalistic races. Grand Knight Himesor turns a blind eye to the charges against the Doctor, so he can help with an expedition to find the fabled Menagerie of Ukkazaal. The Doctor finds proof that Himesor's civilization was built on the remains of a more-advanced one. Unfortunately, the moth-like Taculbain attack Himesor's group and poison them. Only the Doctor survives, until a scout from the friendly, shrew-like Dugraqs rescues him.

Meanwhile, Zoe is sold as a slave to Diseaeda's Travelling Freak Show, where she finds a cryogenic unit containing a strange creature. The unit defrosts and a six-legged, voracious monster kills hundreds of circus-goers. Zoe reasons the creature sees via infa-red and lures it to the Furnace, the city's sole electrical plant. There, freak show owner Diseaeda gives his life to kill the monster.

The Doctor learns there are four races in the underground Menagerie: the Taculbain moths, the Dugraq shrews, the ape-like Rocarbies and the cryogenically frozen, lethal Mecrim. The late Himesor's second-in-

command, Zaitabor, takes charge of the Knights. Unfortunately, Zaitabor also leads the technology hating Brotherhood of Rexulon, and has captured the Taculbain Queen. Deranged, Zaitabor orders the Taculbain to release the Mecrim, a sleeping army of creatures like the circus killer Zoe encountered.

The Mecrim, genetically engineered as weapons as war, rip through the combined forces of Knights, City Guard and other Menagerie races. The Doctor finally rigs exploding bullets that change the Mecrim's heat signatures. The infra-red seeing creatures no longer recognize each other and slaughter themselves. The Doctor convinces the amnesiac Zaitabor that he is actually a cybernetic throwback form the previous civilization and leads the remaining Mecrim to the Furnace's control center. Zaitabor, defeated and crazed, detonates the Furnace and to kill himself and the final Mecrim. Jamie and Kaquaan, a woman he befriended against the oppressive Brotherhood, briefly become lovers before the TARDIS departs.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor steals fruit drinks for himself, Jamie and Zoe, rationalizing it's advance payment for one day saving this world from the Daleks or some another menace. The death of Jamie's friend Cosmae, and seeing the Scotsman so distraught, brings a lump to your throat.

Sex and Spirits

Damsel-in-distress Kaquaan rewards Jamie for his bravery – in the nicest possible way.

Ass-Whuppings

Jamie's friend, the magic apprentice Cosmae, dies in the final explosion. A Taculbain bites the Doctor and injects him with poison that induces unconsciousness.

Continuity

TARDISes can atomize themselves if the mercury links are not brought online ("The Daleks"). The Interplanetary Mining Corporation was formerly called the Issigri Mining Corporation ("Colony in Space").

Mecrim DNA was owned and licensed by the Butler Institute (*Cat's Cradle: Warhead*, *Deceit*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Can mentally make people think he's paid for things when he hasn't. Sometimes, the second Doctor longs for the imposing authority his first body possessed. His Tibetan training allows him to mediate and review phrases and images he's seen but forgotten about. He's very fond of Cluedo and has seen a Tarzan film. He can visually detect androids using standard stealth procedures. He survives Taculbain poison that can kill humans.

• *Jamie:* Common-sense Jamie has trouble talking to professors and scientists like the Doctor and Zoe. He loathes the TARDIS food machine.

• *Zoe:* The Doctor installed an orthopedic bed in her room. Zoe's tutors in the Earth School of Parapsychology didn't encourage emotional outbursts. She can lock-pick sensor pads.

• *Commander Zaitabor:* A Mecrim gut virus infected Zaitabor, so many of his organs were replaced with cybernetics. Deranged, he tried to flee in a shuttlecraft with a Mecrim, but crashed. His software, wiped from the explosion, remembered that technology and science were evil, so he became the Grand Knights' second-in-command and leader of the Brotherhood of Rexulon. The Mecrim was eventually sold to Diseaeda's Travelling Freak Show.

Alien Races

• *Mecrim:* Genetically engineered engines of war, they possess two legs, four arms and are aggressive as hell. An internal skeleton gives protection while the legs resemble an insect. The outer layer of muscle serves as armor. They're damn quick. A Mecrim can vibrate its claw molecules to penetrate another substance. They see by heat emissions rather than light, and typically recognize another Mecrim's heat patterns as friendly.

Highlights of Mecrim scientific lore include: Reptiloprimate. Family: Astridae. Genus and species: Singropoda mecrimus. Mecrim reach sexual maturity in two to five years, gestate for six months and have one to two young. They live about 20 years.

• *Rocarbies:* The numerous Rocarbies worship the Taculbain as gods. They are ape-like and were genetically engineered by a mining company.

• *Taculbain:* Secretive, moth-like creatures that become aggressive and open to suggestion without their Queen. Various herbs cause development, making some into Taculbain soldiers and even inducing gender changes. One such herb develops a Queen. Light frightens them. They eat dead humans.

Taculbain naturally enter a hibernation cycle and have green blood.

• *Dugraqs:* Shrew-like arbiters of peace, genetically similar to humans. They monitor the other races, who don't know of the upper world, to avoid bloodshed. The Dugraqs don't know their own origins.

• *Savannah Walker:* Bipedal, with strong legs, covered with short white fur. Its huge legs supply enormous energy.

Alien Planets

Unnamed Planet: The TARDIS computer lacks a name for this world. Non-licensed science users face harsh penalties in the City of the Knights. The design is a mixture of medieval and Victorian eras – the resulting merger seeming a bit Elizabethan. It incorporates some advanced materials such as concrete.

Organizations

• *Knights of Kuabris:* The celibate Knights allegedly uphold planetary law and protect the citizens. They believe that the current moment has no relation to past or future and don't form deep relationships. Initiation involves some brainwashing.

• *The Brotherhood of Rexulon:* A fanatical sect without morality or justice that totally opposes science and machinery. They hold secret meetings beneath Castle Kuabris. About a quarter of the Knights of Kuabris are members.

History

On the unnamed world of *The Menagerie*, human scientists initiated Project Mecrim in 2416, with Dr. Jenn Alforge serving as head scientist. A Mecrim gut microbe accidentally resulted in a plague that nearly destroyed the human civilization. The survivors developed an immunity, but passed a fear of science onto their descendants.

At the End of the Day

One of the more underrated novels, and probably better loved by fans of Day's *The Hollow Men*, *The Menagerie* holds trial and triumph for each of the TARDIS crew. Some fans choke because it's quite sex-filled, but it becomes a story of love over lust. Jamie's getting some hanky-panky breaks with TV tradition, but seems appropriate, a suitable reward for saving

oodles of young ladies.

Third Doctor Stories

The Eye of the Giant

Author: Christopher Bulis. Virgin Missing Adventure #21. Release Date: April 1996

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Liz Shaw and UNIT.

Travel Log

UNIT headquarters, circa 1970s. The Doctor, Liz and Sergeant Yates travel via a space-time bridge to Salutua, an island on the edge of French Polynesia, South Pacific, June 8, 1934.

Chronology

Between "Inferno" and "Terror of the Autons."

Summary

UNIT finds, in the stomach of a shark, an alien artifact saturated with omicron radiation. The Doctor, with his space-time visualizer, tracks the object's date of origin to a South Pacific island in 1934. However, the radiation stabilizes the visualizer enough to create a space-time bridge to the area in question.

The Doctor, Liz Shaw and Sergeant Mike Yates go through the bridge to the island, which is inexplicably populated by giant animals. They meet a movie crew filming an adventure story featuring actress Nancy Norton Grover. Further investigation reveals a wrecked spaceship and an 18-foot-tall, mostly humanoid statue with a large ruby in its forehead.

The statue is actually Brokk, an alien Grold who crash-landed on Earth after stealing genetic drugs from the aquatic Semquess. Damage to Brokk's heat pack put him into suspended animation, and one of the drugs enlarged the island's animals.

When a film crewman tries to steal Brokk's large ruby eye, Brokk hypnotizes the man and makes him build a fire to revive him. Realizing the

Semquess, who have pursued Brokk to Earth, will stop at nothing to kill him, Brokk puts his eye, the essence of his being, in Grover's head while the Semquess destroy his mindless body. They also blast Brokk's spacecraft, breaching the power core and triggering the island's volcano. A piece of the ship becomes the artifact that UNIT finds decades later.

The Doctor's party, expecting the adventure has ended with Brokk's death, returns home – to an alternate future where Grover has enthralled the world with Brokk's power. The Brigadier leads a UNIT crew, temporarily protected from the visualizer from time alterations, back to 1934, where they wage a fierce battle against Grover's thralls. Hypersonics from the Doctor's sonic screwdriver, channeled through a large mirror, apparently kill Grover and her mesmerized crewmen.

History again re-alters itself, but instead of returning to normality, the 1970s become a dead landscape. In the fight, a Semquess drug, a genetic catalyst, merged Grover's body, Brokk's eye crystals and a sailing ship into a creature that destroyed the world.

In desperation, Grover's step-daughter Amelia drinks the last Semquess drug, a liquid that transforms the user's body into whatever his or her mind envisions. Amelia, strong in the Christian faith, transforms into an angel-like being. She siphons Grover and Brokk's essences out of the ship and ascends with them to a higher plane. History finally returns to normal and the UNIT crew returns home.

Memorable Moments

In a moment that's almost comedy, Yates fights off a giant spider and gasps at Amelia's missing left arm – then realizes it was missing anyway. The Doctor impulsively shoves his hand through the interface between two time zones to see what will happen.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor kills Grover's body and her two thralls. Liz and Corporal Osgood blow up an independent slice of the merged Grover/Brokk monster. Four alien Semquess die – three of them killed by Yates and the UNIT troops. The Doctor and Sergeant Benton are blasted by eye-beams from people possessed by Grover.

Continuity

The Doctor's space-time visualizer was acquired in "The Space

Museum."

Sergeant Mike Yates obtains his captain's rank in *The Scales of Injustice*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Says he only needs to sleep an hour. He's not familiar with the Grold, but is immune to their hypnotism. The Doctor can't mimic the Semquess vocals, and but can do a truncated version of their gestures.

• *Sergeant Mike Yates:* Ventures into the TARDIS for the first time and learns the Doctor is an alien time traveler.

• *Sergeant John Benton:* Benton had a tealeaf-reading aunt who thought herself a medium and died five years ago.

• *The TARDIS:* The databanks can translate some types of alien writing. The Doctor brings from the Ship a respirator and goggles, radiation detector, torch, survival rations and first-aid box.

Alien Races

• *Grold:* Brokk's race are flurosilicone lifeforms, that are as tall as giants and rather like stone. They're crudely shaped like humans, but have six fingers, humped backs and big feet. They have turned-down slashes for mouths, and two "V" shaped nostrils on their "cheekbones." (It must make blowing their noses a chore!)

A Grold's eye, which contains much of his mind, looks like a single inset ruby the size of a football. With it, they can project powerful eyebeams. Other lifeforms, infected with pieces of Grold rubies, grow a new Grold eye in their head and are mentally dominated by them.

Grold need an obscenely high heat level to survive. They use powered exo-skeletons for support, are deaf and have an electrostatic sense.

• *Semquess:* An aquatic lifeform that evolved in high-pressure underwater regions near volcanic fissures. The variable environment encouraged them to master biochemistry. Semquess sell their genetic-altering drugs to other races, and do almost anything for money.

Semquess look like a cross between an octopus and a jellyfish. Mobile tanks double as their spacesuits. They're very long-lived, and don't let grudges go easily. Their language consists of comical tentacle movements and waterborne sounds. The Doctor thinks about speaking with the Time Lords about the Semquess' dangerous drugs. (*See Stuff You Need: Semquess Drugs*.)

Alien Planets

Grold Homeworld: Small and hot. Creatures don't fly naturally in the rarefied atmosphere. The planet doesn't have day and night because the rotation is gravitationally locked.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Space-Time Visualizer:* Until now, the visualizer depicted events in the past by decoding light waves. In the presence of omicron radiation, the visualizer creates a physical time-bridge to the past. Omicron radiation also makes steering across the bridge easier.

Objects saturated with the bridge's energy can receive its power long-range. While the Doctor and company had such an object, their timeline was protected and they were intangible in the new reality.

The space-time visualizer protected people and objects from its native timeline against alternate timelines. Soldiers and objects from an alternate timeline would vanish if they penetrated the visualizer's circle of protection. Conversely, the visualizer's artron energy protected the Doctor and company if they voyaged into the alternate timeline and made them intangible. As the visualizer's power wore down, the timelines overlapped, causing many phantom images.

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Has frequencies that can scare off giant bats. With a mirror attachment, it can free persons mesmerized by the Grold. The screwdriver's energy can be channeled through a large mirror.

• *Semquess drugs:* They're tailor-made for a number of effects on organic or inorganic matter.

Organizations

Paragon Studios: Movie company owned by Maximillian Grover. Michael Montgomery starred in the company's *Master of the Spanish Main* in the 1930s. Larry de Veer is a famous Paragon director.

Ships

• *Semquess Spaceships:* Globe-shaped, armed with a blue-fire tractor beam.

• *Semquess Tanks:* They're actually spacesuits, as Semquess are water-based creatures. The tanks are armed with electric whips. Camera flashes

overload their lenses.

• *Grold Spaceships:* Black egg-shaped ships that fire plasma bolts and rapier-thin blue laser beams. They're 70-feet long and 30-feet wide. The exterior absorbs energy.

Time Travel

The structure of time ignores minor alterations of history. If you time travel and give your previous self a paper cut, it isn't likely to matter much. However, more important scenarios, let us say, the potential assassination of a British prime minister or U.S. president, cause a probability nexus, where massive revisions are possible.

It's suggested that sudden historical changes might make persons protected from such alterations suddenly materialize inside an object, causing a massive explosion.

History (Alternate #1)

Nancy Norton Grover fused with the alien Brokk's eye and used his power to mesmerize all of humanity. Her thralls stopped the Great Depression and enslaved the world. The Semquess returned in 1941 to attack Earth, but Grover's human forces defeated them. The world worshiped Grover as a goddess, and all of humanity carried her life story around in a red book and watched her movies. The Sisters of the Eye adhered to her faith in every city. This timeline, praise the Lord, was erased.

History (Alternate #2)

A rogue creature, a bizarre amalgam of Grover, the alien Brokk and the inorganic sailing ship *Constitution III* grew uncontrollably and destroyed the world. Have mercy.

History

As timelines merged in 1971, reports of UFO and "phantom" sightings spread around the world, causing several accidents.

At the End of the Day

A standard "alien awakens, mesmerizes humans into doing its fiendish and rueful bidding" plot. *The Eye of the Giant* would be a lot stronger if the

drama didn’t drive toward a stupid alternate timeline that worships a shallow, whacked actress. The thought of a world where everyone watches her bad films evokes a painful episode of “Sliders.” There’s some pretty bad science fiction here, and a cover shot with Liz that doesn’t appear in the book.

The Scales of Injustice

Author: Gary Russell. Virgin Missing Adventure #24. Release Date: July 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Liz Shaw and UNIT.

Travel Log

London, circa 1970s.

Chronology

Between "Inferno" and "Terror of the Autons," and immediately after *The Eye of the Giant*.

Summary

Liz Shaw is bored, thinking there are better ways to help people than working for UNIT. But then the Doctor views a report from Kent of a missing boy named Marc Marshall, plus a disturbed policewoman scribbling cave drawings – a tell-tale sign of Silurian involvement.

The Doctor investigates a Silurian base in Kent, but the Silurians capture him. The Time Lord awakens in a base of Silurian hybrids created from the cross mating of Silurians and Sea Devils. Through Marc's pre-pubescent DNA, the hybrids hope to find a human gene that can cure their sterility and shortened life spans. Their experimentation mutates Marc into a shell of humanity.

Meanwhile, Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart's marriage to Fiona is on the rocks, battered by years of field duty away from home. UNIT summons the Brigadier to help find the Doctor, but Fiona issues an ultimatum that the Brigadier come home immediately. When he refuses, Fiona leaves with their daughter Kate and files for divorce.

Sympathetic Silurians help the Doctor and Marc to escape, but agents from the Vault, a secret government storehouse of alien objects, capture the Doctor's group to gain Silurian technology. The cybernetic Vault leader plans to auction the alien wares, but Sergeant Yates, having witnessed the Doctor's kidnapping, summons UNIT and overruns the base. The Vault

leader and his two Auton-augmented humans escape. On the Kentish coast, the insane Silurian leader launches an all-out attack on humanity, but UNIT troops decimate the invaders.

Marc dies from the experimentation. With the Silurians suing for peace and the Vault in custody, Liz and the Doctor share a final picnic. She decides to leave UNIT to aid the dying Silurians and return to her work at Cambridge.

Memorable Moments

The Brigadier finds he can send soldiers to their deaths and kill without a second thought, but he can't make a stable home for his daughter. The Doctor, in a nice little bit, tells the Brigadier how sorry he is about Fiona and Kate.

Most memorable of all, a departing Liz tells the Doctor she wishes they had been real friends that had dinner, played Scrabble and went to the pictures.

Sex and Spirits

Liz dated a UNIT member named Jeff Johnson, who returned to the regular army. She kisses the Doctor on the cheek.

Ass-Whuppings

The plague in "The Silurians" killed 29 in the research center and 38 elsewhere. Yates kills an armed Glasshouse technician. Liz once lost her guinea pig Ringo-George. Liz is shot through her right shoulder. Yates eats lead in the same place.

Continuity

Liz Shaw's departure was mentioned, but not seen, in "Terror of the Autons." Sir John Sudbury and Department C19 were first mentioned in "Time Flight."

The Doctor first encountered the Silurians in "The Silurians." Okdel, the old Silurian, had a brother named Chukk who is here murdered. Silurian Bokka K'to created the Silurian virus and joined his people in hibernation. Department C19 ordered the Brigadier to destroy the Silurian base (numbered 873), but it was merely entombed. The late Captain Sam Hawkins was engaged to Corporal Maisie Hawke ("The Silurians").

This story counts as the "second" time the Doctor tried to negotiate peace between Silurians and humans, correcting a goofed statement the fifth Doctor makes to Ichtar in "Warriors of the Deep."

The Brigadier's absence during "The Web of Fear" first cracked his marriage. Major Turner married Isobel Watkins and accepted a posting in Sri Lanka. Major-General Rutlidge ("The Invasion") suggested the Brigadier assign Benton a post with UNIT. Jimmy Munro ("The Invasion") returned to the regular army.

Anne Travers, Ruth Ingram and Allison Williams know each other ("The Web of Fear," "The Time Monster," "Remembrance of the Daleks"). The control console has been returned to the TARDIS ("Inferno"). Tom Osgood ("The Daemons") is here promoted to sergeant.

Rachel Jensen ("Remembrance of the Daleks") was pivotal in Turing's work with computers during the war, expanding upon the aborted Judson Ultima Machine ("The Curse of Fenric").

Jensen retired to write her memoirs in Cambridge, but sometimes helps Air Vice-Admiral Gilmore. Department C19 took over the Intrusion Counter Measures Group after "The Shoreditch Incident." UNIT was borne out of Gilmore's meetings with the Brigadier ("Remembrance of the Daleks").

The Vault contains the remains of WOTAN ("The War Machines"), Melvin Krimpton ("The War Machines"), Stephen Weams ("The Web of Fear"), Mark Gregory ("The Invasion"), George Ratcliffe ("Remembrance of the Daleks") and George Hibbert ("Spearhead from Space"). Reports of Hibbert's remains are actually something of a goof, as the man was atomized in the TV story.

Department C19 and its secret Glasshouse play a major role in *Who Killed Kennedy?* Fiona and Kate Lethbridge-Stewart were first mentioned in *Downtime*. The Managing Director of the Vault, his pseudo-Nestenes and blond assassin reappear in *Business Unusual*.

The Government bought out International Electromatics, but re-sold most of its patents to Ashley Chapel ("The Invasion," *Millennial Rites*). Professor Cornish is here retired but reappears in *The Dying Days*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor is an excellent bridge player and frequently pairs with Sir John Sudbury at the Pemberton club. They play against Lord Rowlands.

• *Liz Shaw:* Liz has doctorates in chemistry, medicine and physics. She

has honorary doctorates in metaphysics and humanities, with assorted qualifications in economics, history and Latin. She achieved 16-plus in metalwork, but flunked out of pistol training. She can pilot Silurian cruisers. She served with UNIT eight months, two weeks and four days.

At Cambridge, she researched new ways of breaking down non-biodegradable waste by environmental methods. The Glasshouse recruited Richard Atkinson, Dr. James D. Griffin and Cathryn Wildeman, all co-workers with Liz at Cambridge.

Liz now smokes a pipe. She has a guinea pig named John-Paul; another named Ringo-George died. Her landlady is named Mrs. Longhurst.

At least one of her grandmothers has passed away. Liz's research on the Silurian hybrids might further cures for children with polio, cancer and leprosy.

• *The Doctor and Liz:* As Liz departs UNIT, she and the Doctor find they don't really know each other. Liz lived in a cramped, noisy Dean Street flat, so the Doctor offers her the use of his flat in Soho.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart and Sir Marmaduke Harrington-Smythe:* A young Lethbridge-Stewart, in Sandhurst, made a bad rifle shot on maneuvers and almost killed Harrington-Smythe, his trainer. A disciplinary board found Harrington-Smythe was not observing proper safety and forced him to forced to resign. He founded the Glasshouse, but the Managing Director of the Vault killed him.

• *Brigadier Alistair Gordon and Fiona Lethbridge-Stewart:* The Brigadier and his first wife lived at 6 Moor Drive, Gerrards Cross, Buckinghamshire. They were married for eight years. Unable to tell Fiona about his real job, the Brigadier said he worked for an office in London. In fact, they lived 10 minutes from UNIT HQ. Fiona suspected he was a spy. Her parents live in Chichester.

• *Doris Wilson:* As the future wife of the Brigadier, Doris' first husband Georgie was killed in Northern Ireland a couple of years ago.

• *The Brigadier and Doris:* Doris gave the Brigadier a watch as a wedding gift ("Planet of the Spiders"), and perhaps reminding him what might have been between them. He sent her an impersonal commiseration letter after Georgie's death, but she didn't respond.

• *Sergeant Mike Yates:* Mike joined the army due to the goading of family and peers, plus an inability to defy people who run his life. He insists he won't leave UNIT unless it's in "a blanket covered stretcher." Benton suggests that Yates deserves a promotion more than himself, so Yates here

becomes a captain.

• *Major-General Scobie ("Spearhead from Space"):* He made excursions to Burma during the war and enjoyed a 1950s Singapore posting with his late wife.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Have developed hologram technology.

• *Silurians:* Silurians live about 200 to 250 years. Their hologram technology can render a body perfectly. They have developed a webbed material that can stitch wounds, as well as inject antiseptic and antibodies. They have excellent night vision and can sense humans by their pheromones.

• *Silurian/Sea Devil Hybrids:* Inter-breeding between Silurians and Sea Devils is punishable by death, as both races revere pure eugenics. Crossbred eggs are crushed and the parents executed. Hybrids that survive are sterile and have shortened life spans. One group of hybrids believed human chromosomes had the element they needed to stabilize their condition. Their experiments worked better on pre-pubescent humans, whose body chemistries were in flux.

• *Pseudo-Autons:* Humans augmented with Nestene fluids for blood, infrared vision and Auton weaponry.

Places to Go

• *The Glasshouse:* A five-story white building, secretly a private paramilitary nursing facility, home to patients from M15, UNIT and other UK operations. Department C19 bought the Glasshouse, but nefarious elements within the organization usurped control. Exclusive Compacta 25 caliber weapons protect the exterior. Events in this book cause the Glasshouse to be closed because of for corruption, pending an investigation.

• *The Vault:* A secret treasure trove of alien artifacts and remains, located in Chevoit Hills and managed by nefarious elements in Department C19. The Vault had 16 levels spread over two hills. Foreign powers purchased some of the alien technology. The Vault was stripped bare prior to its discovery by UNIT.

• *Hall of Heroes:* A destroyed Silurian culture center that depicted many mythical stories, including those of the warrior chiefs Masz K'll and Panun E'Ni. The Myrka were rendered as opposing, mindless warrior beasts ("Warriors of the Deep.")

Organizations

• *UNIT:* Corporal Benton, Captain Turner, Sergeant Walters, secretary Maisie Hawkes and Carol Bell were with UNIT from its inception. UNIT's mortality rate is the highest of any section in the British Army. Doctor Sweetman advises on medical matters. The United Nations Secretary here cuts UNIT's budget by almost half.

• *Department C19:* Department C19 allocates UNIT funds supplied by the British Government. It was established in the late 1950s, a little brother to M15, part of the Civil Defense program instigated by the Cold War. Department C19 enjoys more autonomy that most departments. Officially, Sir John Sudbury served as C19's administrator, but other C19 commanders usurped his authority. *Silurian Triad ("Warriors of the Deep"):* Currently led by Ichtar, this group does not yet favor slaughtering the human "apes" ("Warriors of the Deep").

History

Lethbridge-Stewarts have served in the military since the battle of Waterloo, when Major General Fergus Lethbridge-Stewart was the Duke of Wellington's right-hand man.

At the End of the Day

A waste. Liz Shaw's departure and some nice private life moments with UNIT have cemented *The Scales of Injustice* into the minds of some fans – but it has plot holes you could drive a truck through (Who the hell was Liz's contact? Why does UNIT think her father would call her at work?). What's left is a lackluster rehash of "The Silurians" and "The Sea Devils," without the menace and drama of those stories.

The Devil Goblins from Neptune

Authors: Keith Topping and Martin Day, from an initial outline by Topping, Day and Paul Cornell. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #1, Release Date: June 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Liz Shaw and UNIT.

Setting

London, 1970.

Chronology

Between "Inferno" and "Terror of the Autons."

Summary

Mysterious Soviet agents fail time and again to kidnap the Doctor, until the Time Lord sets a trap and captures the Soviets instead. But when the Soviet leader is revealed as Captain Valentina Shuskin, a leader of UNIT's Soviet branch, Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart suspects a dark conspiracy within his organization.

Shuskin reports the Soviets decided to kidnap the Doctor after all formal requests for help through UNIT were strangely denied. Aliens are suspected of killing hundreds of Soviet soldiers in a remote part of Siberia, and the Doctor's expertise is needed to solve the problem. With the Brigadier's permission, the Doctor and Liz travel to Siberia.

There, the Doctor's party is heavily assaulted by the evil, flying Waro, vampiric creatures from Neptune's moon of Triton. The Waro, creatures of unending bloodlust and death, seek the substance cobalt-60 to arm a bomb that will devastate Earth's ecology. But while the Waro control a cobalt mine in Siberia, the Doctor concludes it is only a ruse to draw attention away from the real target – the main American stockpile of cobalt-60.

Meanwhile, the Brigadier is ordered to assassinate Major Houghton, the suspected traitor within UNIT. However, the Brigadier finds Houghton fighting the UNIT conspiracy and is arrested with Houghton's men. He is taken to the infamous Ranch 51 in Nevada, and finds the Americans holding

captive five Nedenah aliens, the sworn enemies of the Waro.

The fast-flying Waro outflank the CIA and attack American cobalt-60 stockpile. Thankfully, the Brigadier convinces the Nedenah to join the battle. The Nedenah deploy a virus that destroys the Waros' self-restraint, and suddenly, hundreds of Waro turn on each other. Those that survive die from anger, their metabolisms accelerating out of control. The remaining Nedenah leave Earth, leaving the UNIT crew haunted by how much the CIA has penetrated UNIT security.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor is stunned that neither Liz nor Captain Shuskin carry a hairpin: "You're both women, aren't you?" The Brigadier pays a bunch of prostitutes to strip and cause a wild commotion so he can sneak into a factory.

Sex and Spirits

The undercover Captain Shuskin talks Mike Yates upstairs with promises, then pistol-clubs him out. Yates later gives a girl named Jill a meal and three bottles of wine, then does the nasty with her. The morning after, he mistakenly calls her "Sandra."

Conversely, a French prostitute hits on the Brigadier. Liz clearly likes her tall friend, Mark Wilson, who's in his late 20s and is a contemporary of hers from Cambridge. She calls him "Mr. Frugal" and doesn't support his comic book reading. Mark works for the British Rocket Group. Yates boozes before Shuskin "propositions" him, and snitches from the Scotch bottle in the Brigadier's filing cabinet.

Ass-Whuppings

CIA spy Bruce takes out a UNIT man by throwing hydrochloric acid in his face. A bullet clips the Doctor. The Waro slash up both the Time Lord and Liz. Benton's caught in an explosion in the Doctor's lab. Both the Brigadier and Liz endure car wrecks, though Liz blacks out. The Brigadier evens the score by blacking out as the Nedenah ship crashes.

Continuity

Captain Munro is now on the Secretary General's staff in Geneva ("The Invasion"). After the first Auton invasion, the Doctor designed special

tracking equipment for a base in Sussex ("Spearhead from Space"). Ralph Cornish was recently appointed to overall command of the British space program. Information about the Mars program has leaked into a popular song (almost certainly David Bowie's "Life on Mars"). The Brigadier requested a D-notice on it, but was turned down ("The Ambassadors of Death"). The third Doctor saw ex-companion Ian (and presumably Barbara too), who works for NASA, at Greg and Petra Sutton's wedding ("Inferno"). Rachel Jensen was an unsung heroine of propulsion systems ("Remembrance of the Daleks"). The Doctor by now has met composer Puccini in Milan ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

Yes, Liz left UNIT in *The Scales of Injustice*, but gets recalled for various missions.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor claims to be a tenth dan master in all major disciplines, including Venusian aikido and Saturnian kung-fu. He trained as a ninja on Quinnis ("The Edge of Destruction") in Galaxy Four ("Galaxy Four"). His words can partly hypnotize people and he speaks flawless Russian. Erich Weiss taught the Doctor some escapology. The Doctor's been a member of the Progressive Club for 13 years, and has read Professor Trainor's paper on sustainable power supplies. One of his jamming devices makes the Waro's flying contraptions go out of control.

The Doctor seems to specialize in knowledge of military hardware, including Mikoyan MiG-25 aircraft and the heavy transport vehicle Mil Mi-6.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* As a colonel, Lethbridge-Stewart made his military career in Africa and Aden, where he saved young Sergeant Hutton's life and served with a Jamaican named Jacob Hartfield, as well as Private John Benton. On the full support of the Chief of General Staff, he had Private Bull executed for cowardice in the face of the enemy. The Brigadier considers Americans too loud, hasn't been to Geneva in eight months, and tends to vote conservative. He's never been to Nevada prior to these events. His grandmother died in 1955.

The Brigadier enjoyed a childish passion for dead poets, and recalls Harrow school, 1943, and an essay on the homoerotic content Percy Bysshe Shelley's "Adonais." Major Houghton went through basic training with the Brigadier's old friend Jimmy Turner ("The Invasion").

• *The Brigadier and Major-General "Tubby" Hayes:* Hayes served as

commander to then-Colonel Lethbridge-Stewart in Suez, then Aden. Hayes later became the first UNIT government liaison officer, and rose in the United Nations hierarchy.

• *Liz Shaw:* Liz was born at Stoke-on-Trent in 1943. She can skydive, has been with UNIT for 13 months and claims to be a "radical feminist."

At age seven, Liz got a telescope for her birthday and glowed when she found Venus on the first attempt. At Cambridge, Liz qualified as a (medical) doctor, where she also took a Bachelor's degree in physics. She was a house officer in an inner-city A&E department, but quit after four months and returned to physics at St. Leonards. The Doctor tells her his home planet is Gallifrey.

After Liz leaves UNIT, she does lecture tours in Australia, the United States, Japan and the Soviet Union. She charmed broadcaster Patrick Moore during a Mars landing. Her first book, *Inside the Carnival*, gives her money, fame and death threats.

• *Captain Mike Yates:* Chauvinist Yates talks to himself about things women can and can't do. Captain Shuskin believes, and is likely correct, that Mike is terrified by command and tries to cover his fear with a bunch of sexist crap. Yates' full name is Michael Alexander Raymond Yates (curiously abbreviating as M.A.R.Y.). The Auton invasion destroyed his faith in humanity as friends were kidnapped and replaced by duplicates. Embalming fluid makes him violently ill.

• *Sergeant John Benton:* Benton lost his virginity to a girl named Deborah Phelan, whose brother played wing three-quarter for London Irish. He remembers the last three winners of the European Inter City Fairs Cup.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* With great effort, Time Lords use a process called "soul-catching" to absorb a dying Gallifreyan's memories. The Doctor successfully uses this technique on a Waro, perhaps the technique's first use on a non-Time Lord.

• *Waro:* Hailing from Triton, the bat-like Waro, driven by an insatiable bloodlust, used genetics and chemistry to curb their inner fighting and turn their collective wrath on anything "non-Waro." Waro are grayish, child-sized and barely humanoid, with scrawny and slender limbs. They swarm with artificial, bat-like wings and can ride through space on Waro-built projectiles. They giggle like children as they attack, blasting away with a heat or energy-directed weapon. Waro have bile-colored blood, and need

cobalt-60 to arm their warheads. The Waro don't communicate verbally and might be telepathic. "Waro" is derived from the old German word wor, meaning "kobold" or "goblin."

• *Nedenah:* Natural enemies of the Waro, the Nedenah look like the child-sized, blobbish, big-eyed aliens you see on "X-Files" and elsewhere. They speak English well and mostly act as observers. Their DNA may induce leukemia. Australian Aboriginals know of the Nedenah as shy but wise travelers.

Alien Planets

Triton: The larger of Neptune's moons, it's pink and almost planet-sized. It has a nitrogen-based atmosphere.

Organizations

• *UNIT:* Non-British UNIT branches know the Doctor is an extra terrestrial. The American division was located in the Bronx, then moved to Washington D.C. The CIA and an unnamed U.S. President have likely been subverting UNIT's power.

• *Progressive Club:* A gentlemen's club at a five-story building in Mayfair, whose members oppose vulgarity of all kinds.

Ships

Nedenah ship: Egg-shaped, with laser-based weapons and a discardable outer hull. Exterior images are fed directly to the brain of the occupant. It flies at 30 times the speed of sound.

Phenomena

Constellations: On Gallifrey, "constellation" refers to elements of time and relativity, as well as actual location. The Kagananaga Botizoids have a more advanced term for this relationship, but you'd have to cut out your tongue to pronounce it.

History

• The Doctor was with a British rifle brigade and met Sir Arthur Wellesley, the future first Duke of Wellington. The French held him prisoner at Salamanca in 1812. He's also met Joseph the Second of Austria-Hungary, saw the German scientist Werner Von Braun in 1969 Texas, and taught

Jacques Cousteau everything he knows.

• The Doctor also knew Karl Marx, and was in Russia in 1917 during the revolution. He met Lenin in Petrograd, and met the Tsar Nicholas II at the Dri Kaiser Bund in 1871. The Doctor advised Nicholas to use his despotic powers in a benevolent way, and to listen to Tolstoy and Stakhovich. The Doctor didn't like what happened to the Romanovs, but strangely enough was a hero of the October Revolution the last time he visited Russia.

• The Americans captured a group of three Nedenah at Roswell in 1947. One died almost immediately and rescue attempts were deflected as America developed anti-BEM technology. The Central Intelligence Agency also secured some alien ships, including one engineered by Daleks.

• The element Trainorium and the Trainor Foundation building in Maryland were named after Professor Trainor, Liz's teacher and an associate of Ian Chesterton.

• The three other Beatles sacked Paul during the "Let it Be" sessions in early 1969 and hired Klaus Voorman and Billy Preston to replace him, going on a hugely successful comeback tour during late 1969/early 1970.

• A Liberal coalition government runs Britain.

At the End of the Day

A book full of verve and a zest for life, wacky as hell and best read with your brain tilted. *The Devil Goblins From Neptune* wears many different hats, becoming slapstick (repeated Doctor kidnappings, his constant name-dropping), then a Bond film (a female Soviet captain, Yates gets laid, much death) and a sci-fi space opera acid trip (invasion by the devil goblins from Neptune). More important, this develops UNIT as a growing and strong – yet dysfunctional – family, with Mike Yates taking the cake as a right chauvinistic bastard.

Sidebar: Songs from The Devil Goblins of Neptune

You may not have realized it, but song titles inspired nearly all of the Interlude and Chapter titles in *The Devil Goblins From Neptune*, with the occasional movie and play title thrown in for good measure. And now, thanks to the contributions of Martin Day and Keith Topping, here's a list of the book's source material:

"From Russia" and "The Spy Who Came In" – allusions to the movies "From Russia With Love" and "The Spy Who Came in from the Cold," an indication of the influences of spy authors Ian Fleming and Jon le Carre.

"Any Frontier" – lyric from "Straight to Hell" by The Clash ("Combat Rock," 1982).

"Up in the Sky" – song by Oasis ("Definitely Maybe," 1995).

"Blood of the Lamb" – actually not a song, taken from a 1970 BBC Play for Today.

"I, Spy" – song by Pulp ("Different Class," 1995).

"Black Angel's Death Song" – song by The Velvet Underground ("The Velvet Underground & Nico," 1967).

"Way Out" – song by The La from their debut LP, 1990.

"Come Together" – song by the Beatles ("Abbey Road," 1969).

"The Four Symbols of the Saucer People" – the "four symbols" refers to "Led Zeppelin IV"; the Saucer People come from a Simpsons episode ("Grampa vs. Sexual Inadequacy," 1995).

"The Subtle Energies Commission" – song by Julian Cope ("Jehovahkill, 1992).

"Dreamtime" – lyric from "The Dreaming" by Kate Bush ("The Dreaming," 1982).

"The Happening" – song by Pixies ("Bossanova," 1990)

"Feeling Supersonic" – lyrics from Oasis ("Supersonic").

The Wages of Sin

Author: David A. McIntee. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #19. Release date: February 1999

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Liz Shaw and Jo Grant.

Travel Log

St. Petersburg and Whitehall, December 24, 1916; Tunguska, June 30, 1908.

Chronology

Between "The Three Doctors" and "Carnival of Monsters." This is the Doctor's first test-flight since regaining his time-travel knowledge.

Summary

The Doctor, his knowledge of time travel fully restored, offers to take Jo and his old companion Liz Shaw on a test flight. They arrive in St. Petersburg in 1916, and although their stay seems pleasant enough, the TARDIS is stolen. By faking credentials as the British Ambassador's friends, the Doctor's party is granted an audience with the Empress and put up at the Winter Palace.

Academician Kuznetzov invites Liz to discuss the Tunguska meteorite blast, an interest of hers, while the mad monk Rasputin spies Jo and asks her to spend some time with him. Jo believes Rasputin's behavior is questionable, but that he's hardly the monster history makes him out to be.

However, members of the Socialist Revolutionary Fighting Section dislike Rasputin's undue influence – perhaps even sexual – over the Empress. They form a conspiracy to kill the monk and cause unrest within the Royal Family. Accordingly, Prince Felix Yusupov asks Liz to lure Rasputin, a sexual leach, to the palace with promises of sleeping with Felix's wife. When Liz waivers, conspiracy member Kuznetzov threatens Jo's life to gain Liz's cooperation.

Liz delivers the message, but is frank with Rasputin about the danger. She also warns Rasputin that Jo's life is in danger. Partly out of compassion for

Jo, partly out of an arrogant belief that he can't be harmed, Rasputin agrees to the liaison. Meanwhile, the Doctor locates the TARDIS, stolen by scientist Kuznetzov for future study.

The Empress, sensing that Jo is a friend of Rasputin, asks her to keep watch at Felix's palace and alert her of any wrongdoing. The conspirators first decide to poison Rasputin with cake and wine. Jo, disguised as a maid, thinks the poison is intended for Liz and the other party guests and switches the poisoned items. A frantic Felix watches Rasputin happily down "poisoned" cakes and wine without feeling ill. Finally losing all restraint, Felix shoots Rasputin in the back, but the wounded monk, believed dead, suddenly comes to life. Conspirator Dimitri Purishkevich shoots Rasputin again as Felix comes unhinged. Rasputin, still alive, is wrapped up and thrown in a frozen river. The Doctor arrives in time to witness it and briefly considers breaking through the ice and pulling Rasputin out. He hesitates, knowing Rasputin's death was a pivotal and needed moment in history, and silently watches as Rasputin drowns. He then gathers his companions and they depart in the TARDIS.

Memorable Moments

Rasputin dips his finger in jam, holds it out to Jo, asks if she has a sweet tooth. Jo and Liz hug, brought together by the death of Rasputin.

Sex and Spirits

Sexual leach Rasputin undresses Liz and Jo with his eyes. He fancies shagging Jo, but settles for tea and grows tired. He orders Liz to take off her clothes, but she refuses. In a bit of a double entendre, the Doctor calls himself "Special scientific adviser…to Lethbridge-Stewart's unit." Jo switches poisoned party glasses.

Continuity

Though not explicitly stated, this is likely Liz's first voyage in the TARDIS. She never stepped inside the Ship during the TV series ("Spearhead From Space" through "Inferno"). "Terror of the Autons" stated Jo failed science at A level, *Wages of Sin* says she failed it at O level. Jo still thinks forecasting the future might be real ("The Daemons"). The future in "Day of the Daleks" was "a theoretical abstraction made real by a temporal anomaly," says the Doctor.

The historical Tunguska "meteorite" that Liz witnesses in 1908 is actually

the crashing TARDIS (*Birthright*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor was one of the first men certified by the Pinkerton Detective Agency. He was a martial arts student of Wong Fei Hung. He can ride a horse. The third Doctor, like the first, can perfectly mimic someone's voice.

• *Liz Shaw:* As a scientist, Liz finds it tough to accept the TARDIS' extra dimensions. Her assistant at Cambridge is named Singh. She's supposed to talk to the appropriations board about building an observatory. She knows about acute alcoholic gastritis, a thickening of the stomach lining from too much boozing, which delays absorption into the bloodstream. Time spent around drunken students taught her to effectively knee people in the groin.

• *Jo Grant:* Jo didn't even *take* History at O level. Because of her role in Rasputin's death, she wonders if she'll see bloodstains for some time.

• *Grigory Efimovitch Rasputin:* At age 47, Rasputin has a "precognition" of his death from reading the mood of the city and knowing there are people who hate him. He's mostly unafraid of death.

• *The TARDIS:* The Ship's accuracy becomes better (so the Doctor claims) if you know the exact date you're leaving from.

Alien Races

Humans: Precognitive visions, whether correct or not, are common among humans.

Organizations

The Socialist Revolutionary Fighting Section, an organization that sought to cause upheaval in the Royal household with Rasputin's death. Academican Kutznetzov was a member and hoped to create stable leadership in order to generate better science. Josef Stalin funded the group in part, under the alias of the notorious bank robber Koba.

Time Travel

Jo and Liz seem almost indifferent at times about shoving their heads into the noose of history. What harm could come from socializing with Rasputin, mere days from his history-shattering murder? Liz knows she's risking a temporal paradox by inviting Rasputin to the palace, but figures someone

else would have delivered the message anyway.

History

• Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart's grandfather, also named Alistair, worked in the War Office during World War I. He supplied Military Intelligence to Bertie Stopford, the British Ambassador to Russia.

• History credits Leonid Kullik as the first to visit the Tunguska blast site in 1921. Academy of Sciences Academician Kuznetzov actually beat him to it.

• The Doctor respected the curiosity and intelligence of Peter the Great, but couldn't dampen Peter's penchant for torture.

• The Empress asked Jo to alert her if Rasputin was in danger, but Jo and Liz delayed their action until Rasputin was dead.

At the End of the Day

Decent enough, though the whole work feels off-beat since it was intended as a historical first Doctor, Ian, Barbara and Vicki story and can't quite make the transition. Jo in Vicki-fashion switches poisoned glasses, and the third Doctor must fulfill the first Doctor's function as well as Ian's. The book's front half reads like filler, although it improves dramatically with the black comedy of Rasputin's death. The final drama, where Pertwee's upstanding Doctor lets Rasputin drown, is a beaut.

Dancing the Code

Author: Paul Leonard. Virgin Missing Adventure #9. Release date: April 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Jo Grant and UNIT.

Travel Log

UNIT headquarters, circa 1970s. The Doctor momentarily leaves for an undisclosed location.

Chronology

Between "Planet of the Daleks" and "The Green Death."

Summary

The government of Kebiria, an Arabian nation torn by a rebellion, finds in the desert a pack of Xarax, a bio-mechanoid species designed to be a highly-adaptable alien "toolkit" for use by others. The insectoid Xarax make clones out of alien honey, duplicating people or weapons. Kebirian Prime Minister Benari favors using the Xarax against the rebels, but the insane Science Minister Zalloua, striving to create a more peaceful society, instead programs the Xarax to duplicate the entire human race. UNIT Captain Deveraux investigates these events and is duplicated, but the double is killed in an accident.

Meanwhile, the Doctor perfects the "Prognosticator," a device that foretells the future, but to the Doctor and Jo's horror, the Prognosticator clearly shows the Brigadier gunning them down in cold blood. To help prevent the prediction, the Doctor suggests he and Jo stay apart and leaves for an unknown location in the TARDIS.

The Brigadier learns of Deveraux's "death" and dispatches a UNIT team, including Jo, to investigate. When the suspicious Kebirian government apprehends them, Jo escapes, only to be captured by the Xarax. The Doctor returns to help the Brigadier launch a rescue attempt, but their plane is shot down over Kebiria. The Xarax capture the Doctor and duplicate him and Jo. The doppelgangers return with the Brigadier and UNIT to Britain, where

they begin growing another Xarax Queen in the Doctor's lab. As the duplicate Doctor and Jo kill UNIT members to protect the Queen, the Brigadier guns the duplicates down and fulfills the Prognosticator's prophecy.

The Brigadier brings the full wrath of UNIT to bear on the Xarax in Kebiria. The Doctor and Jo escape as the Xarax mobilize their organically grown helicopters and weaponry. The battle becomes so fierce, American troops are drawn into the conflict. The Xarax duplicate whatever weapons are used against them, continually raising the stakes and attacking more targets.

The Americans finally commit to using nuclear weapons, but the Doctor fears the Xarax will copy those as well and destroy the world. The Time Lord then concocts a type of pheromone that allows him to program the Xarax Queen in Britain. He commands the Xarax to send out an electromagnetic pulse that disables the nuclear missiles, then deactivates the Xarax permanently. As Doctor and Jo are reassured the Brigadier isn't going to kill them, the rebellion in Kebiria continues.

Memorable Moments

The Brigadier locks away his gun so he will *think* before he shoots the Doctor and Jo. The Brigadier shoots the Doctor and Jo, then coldly walks out, not knowing if it's really them or not. The Doctor's party gets trapped inside a giant Xarax, so he programs the creature to think his group is indigestible and they get excreted.

Continuity

Jo's Aunt May, who died when Jo was 14, taught her how to make skeleton keys ("Terror of the Autons"). The press corps learned of UNIT after "Day of the Daleks." Jo suggests that the TARDIS needs an intergalactic phone that alerts the Doctor when UNIT needs help ("Revenge of the Cybermen").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Put in 70,000 hours piloting a Martian Explorer a couple of centuries ago. As a result, he can pilot a Superhawk plane. He has a device that tracks intelligence. Some of his macroproteins are similar to those of the Xarax. The Doctor has knowledge of codon sequences and the biology of pheromones. He's baffled why he can't remember 20,000,000

codon sequences at once.

• *Jo Grant:* Has never been to Africa. She can speak French and has met a dozen alien races. She literally gains some empathy with the Xarax because of their pheromones.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* The Brigadier can speak Arabic. He knows the number of the UNIT morgue by heart.

• *The Doctor and the Brigadier:* The Brigadier ponders how he had time to think before he shot the fake Doctor, and wonders if he didn't trust the Time Lord or wanted him dead.

• *The Doctor and Sergeant Benton:* Unlike the Brigadier, the steadfast Benton refuses to shoot an alien that looks like the Doctor.

• *The TARDIS:* The Prognosticator, connected to the TARDIS, can home in on people.

Alien Races

• *Venusians:* Have a system of hand-signals used almost exclusively for intimate conversation. Clan Dhallenidhall thought it quite rude to speak aloud, except in an emergency.

• *Xarax:* An insectoid race, described as a biological toolkit, programmed to obey pheromonal control. The Xarax likely originated as very advanced symbiotes and were adapted by a benevolent alien race for other species to use.

Xarax aren't intelligent by themselves, and communicate largely by gesture and scent. Flying Xarax are iridescent blue-black, with three pairs of legs and long, scissor-bladed arms. They have a scorpion's tail and eyes with many shutters. They can jump like grasshoppers. Xarax lay bunches of huge, translucent eggs. Hatchlings are hunched and armored, more like rhinos than giant insects.

• *Xarax Duplicates:* A duplicate's flesh and clothes are both made from Xarax honey. Xarax duplicates gave off a perfumed, spicy smell and are translucent if you crack their skin. Injured duplicates fall apart like honey-filled china dolls. Third generation duplicates have real blood.

Places to Go

Kebiria, a former French colony, lies between the Mediterranean and the Sahel, given independence in 1956. Two-thirds of the population are Muslim, the rest are Christians. The country is divided into a thinly

populated "desert hinterland" and a fertile strip of Mediterranean coast. Kebir City is Kebiria's largest town.

Prime Minister Khalil Benari leads the government; Sakir Mohammad Al-Naemis and his son Tahir lead the Giltean separatists, championing a totally Muslim state.

Stuff You Need

The Doctor's Personal Time-Line Prognosticator can forecast based on probability if given a scenario, it shows the most probable sequence of actions. The Doctor based it on a formula from a Venusian friend. It has an overall accuracy of 99 percent. Though the details of what's shown might vary, the actual events always happen. The Prognosticator, like much of the equipment in the Doctor's laboratory, irreparably broke down.

History

The Xarax inspired tales of demons and devils 700 years ago in the lands of the Giltaz. The aliens helped the Giltaz massacre the rival Kebiriz, but the superstitious Giltaz scattered in fear. The Xarax then crawled under the ground until Kebirian Science Minister Zalloua discovered them.

At the End of the Day

A hair-raising question – "Could the Brigadier kill the Doctor and Jo?" – punctuates this book, with the stakes raised because of the prediction that he will. Unfortunately, this fascinating problem gets answered by halftime, with (eeek, eeek, shiver with fright) another doppelganger resolution, and the second half is little more than characters running between England and Kebiria shooting, shooting and again shooting aliens. There's a nice "X-Files" feel in parts, with some good Brigadier/Doctor moments, but it's mostly blah.

Speed of Flight

Author: Paul Leonard. Virgin Missing Adventure #27. Release Date: October 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Jo and Mike Yates.

Travel Log

Nooma, time unknown.

Chronology

Between "Planet of the Daleks" and "The Green Death."

Summary

The Doctor offers to take Jo and Mike, who are coerced into a blind date, to the planet Karfel. Unfortunately, the TARDIS instead lands on the planet Nooma, where a genetics experiment started by the defunct Aapex Corporation has been running for millennia without supervision.

On this world, children are forest-born as flesh-eating babies. They grow into men, who feel the urge to battle one another. The winners are "promoted" and grow wings to join the flying naieen, while the terminated losers are reanimated to literally join the walking Dead. The naieen, still fertile, then mate and seed the forest, producing new children.

The TARDIS crew encounters Juliu Epreto, a man intent on breaking the shackles of his people's biology. Understanding Nooma's "Sun" is actually an Aapex spaceship, Epreto plans to use a poison he obtained from the Dead to weaken the artificial "Sky," which surrounds the planet in a protective shell. He then hopes to flee with his people in the Sun spaceship.

Unfortunately, the Dead mentally subvert Jo, even as Mike is confronted and challenged by Omonu, a man who feels the need to be promoted. Mike is killed, buried and becomes one of the Dead, even as Epreto's forces attempt to seize the Sun. The naieen, who revere the Sun, counter-attack as the Doctor rebukes Epreto's violent ways.

As Epreto's men release their poison, the Dead realize this act could

destroy even them. Mike, restored to life in as a member of the Dead in a Dead-generated body, suggests to the Doctor that a party of Dead could seize the Sun control room and stop Epreto from stealing the spaceship. The Doctor agrees, but realizes too late that the Dead are being controlled by Aapex-latent impulses to terminate the Nooma experiment – lest the corporate secrets fall into the wrong hands – and kill everyone. The Dead supply an antidote to Epreto's poison, but wipe out his forces. But the Doctor fights his way to the Sun's data core and discovers a 2,300-year-old message from Aapex that officially abandons the experiment and grants the Noomans independence. The Dead relent, even as Epreto feels the urge to be promoted and kills one of his own men. As a naieen, he loses his desire to liberate his people. Jo finally breaks her mental brainwashing, as the Dead, at the Doctor's request, restore Mike to his original body, and he has no memory of what occurred after he was "killed." The TARDIS crew leaves Nooma to its own devices and departs.

Memorable Moments

Four of the Dead carry the TARDIS like it's an oversized coffin.

Sex and Spirits

Sergeants Benton and Bell trick Jo and Mike onto an "assignment" that's really a blind date.

Ass-Whuppings

Mike Yates is killed but revived by the Dead. Yates, as one of the Dead, snaps a savage child's neck. "Dead" Mike, acting on impulses to kill everyone, fires a bullet that glances off Jo's skull. Mislead into thinking she would be a vegetable, Mike breaks his programming.

Continuity

Corporal Bell has been promoted to Sergeant ("The Mind of Evil," "The Claws of Axos"). The third Doctor and Jo's trip to Karfel was never seen on TV, but was spoken of in "Timelash."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor can estimate slope angles to a tenth of a degree. He can measure gravity by holding up a finger. He has a TARDIS

locator with a flashing green light and has heard of the Aapex Corporation.

• *Jo Grant and Mike Yates:* Mike's conditioning by the Dead snaps when he shoots Jo and is mislead into thinking she would be a vegetable for life.

• *The Sky:* A sentient being, programmed by Aapex to regulate Nooma's biosphere. The Sky calls itself a "semipermeable antiforce glucite membrane."

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor nebulously says his Ship uses the "power of space-time itself." The Doctor can summon the TARDIS from a device built from odd parts. The Ship has a portable medical kit.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Can resist the Dead's hypnotism.

• *The Dead:* The fallen losers of "promotion" battles, who transform only if buried. "The Dead" themselves are not the fallen men, but organically generated reproductions. They can evidently (as in Mike's case) restore the original, dead body to life. The Dead symbiotically bond to various forms of trees that can snare other beings and brainwash them. The Dead are engineered to avoid the naieen and vice-versa.

• *The Naieen:* After a successful promotion, a cocoon stage precedes the growth of a naieen's wings and attributes. Naieen change their names upon promotion and lack memories of their previous lives.

Alien Planets

• *Nooma:* Trees there grow into each other and are essentially one tree. The length of the Nooman year was adjusted to fit the reproductive cycle of the natives. The Nooma experiment ran about 4,000 years before the TARDIS crew arrived.

• *Karfel:* Lies in the same galactic cluster as Earth.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Wings:* An orange, coin-sized object that explodes into netting, wings and a broad, paddle-like tail that enables a single user to fly. It's rated for one-eighth Earth gravity. The Doctor bought it at the July sales, 2108, at Oxford Street.

• *The Doctor's Microscope:* A pen-shaped Xavier Eugene Microscope that magnifies by 3000.

• *Reekaa's Compendium:* Reference guide with genetic information on the Nooma experiment.

Organizations

• *Aapex Corporation:* Based on Mina Fourteen, Aapex was a ruthless, profit-driven entity. Nooma was an Aapex experiment designed to improve terraforming and bio-engineering on low-gravity planets. Because Nooma was too far from its star, Aapex supplied artificial suns. The experiment was almost certainly illegal. The corporation bankrupted shortly after the experiment was instigated.

• *The Flight:* Religious order that reveres the Sun and rules the naieen. The Flight helps tend each of the Seven Hills, sky temples that include Kaygat, Mirador and Iujeemii.

Ships

The Nooma "Sun": Spaceship that responds to voice command. It was programmed not to attack the Sky.

At the End of the Day

Another grand science fiction canvas that's too smart for its own good. Jo spends most of the story brainwashed and isn't any fun to read about, and the "villain" Epreto isn't so much defeated as loses his motivation to fight. The story's thrust is the biology of the planet, but there are a fair number of plot holes (How do the Dead revive Mike's body? Does anyone on Nooma die for good?) and overall, *Speed of Flight* is a good argument for not doing stories that entail convoluted, racial metamorphosis nonsense.

Catastrophea

Author: Terrance Dicks. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #11. Release date: May 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor and Jo Grant.

Travel Log

Kastopheria, time unknown.

Chronology

Immediately after "Planet of the Daleks."

Summary

Sensing a world-sized, telepathic cry of pain, the Doctor lands the TARDIS on Kastopheria, a.k.a. Catastrophea, a world where human colonists have enslaved the indigenous, passive People. When the Doctor defends one of the People from his hostile master, social insurgents believe the Time Lord to be El Llama, a feared and formidable revolutionary. But the Doctor considers Kastopheria's social ills to be beyond hope, and instead examines growing acts of violence by the "docile" People.

In the Kastopherian jungle, the Doctor encounters the priests of the People, who hail the Time Lord as the prophesied outsider who will save them. They explain that once, the bloodlust-filled People were in danger of exterminating themselves. The priests used the mineral skar, a widely banned hallucinogenic, to boost their telepathic powers and, with a mind-lock on the entire race, curb the People's violent tendencies. But with supplies of skar dwindling, the People's rage returns. Caught in the mind-lock themselves, the priests ask the Doctor to carefully destroy the Anima, a giant skar crystal that maintains the mind-lock.

Before the Doctor can act on this, a drug runner named Dove tries to seize the Anima and accidentally destroys it as he escapes. The Anima's sudden, traumatic demise snaps the People's mental chains and they mobilize against the human colonists. A Draconian military expedition, actually sent to provoke the humans into war, tries to rout the violent People but fails.

The Doctor, through his telepathic communication with the priests, convinces the People to halt their advance if the colonists agree to leave. As the humans and Draconians sign a non-interference treaty regarding Kastopheria, the People are left to chart their own future and the TARDIS departs.

Memorable Moments

The Draconian leader of a suicide squad gets pissed and distressed that the humans aren't killing his men.

Ass-Whuppings

The wrathful People run rampant with violence all over the planet. Smugglers are killed resisting arrest. There's a small Draconian/People massacre.

Continuity

The Doctor's official Draconian rank is High Earl of the Imperial House ("Frontier in Space"). He suspects Jo may leave him soon ("The Green Death").

The People in *Catastrophea* have no relation to the People in *The Also People*. The Doctor mentions meeting Winston Churchill, an adventure we witness in *Players*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor has grown tired of solving other people's problems. He feels Kastopheria's social and political ills are too overwhelming and tries to leave. He can telepathically communicate with the People. They respond to his requests, believing him to be the fabled Healer who will liberate them.

He thinks the Draconian cry of "My life at your command!" is ceremonial nonsense. The Time Lords or People may have maneuvered the Doctor into aiding matters on Kastopheria. He's distressed by the level of violence he wanted to perform on Councilor Rekar, who threatened to rape Jo.

• *Jo Grant:* Jo doesn't seem to be telepathic. She's thought about becoming a vegetarian, but would miss meat too much.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Have advanced abilities of topographical recall.

• *Draconians:* The Great Houses vie for control of the Imperial throne. As a matter of honor, commanding Generals step out first on a planet, and lead from the front. Draconians are fond of fresh fruit.

• *The People:* Large humanoids with bronze, almost golden skin and massive heads. The People are telepathic, vegetarian and very strong. Your best bet for killing one is a massive electrical shock to the heart. The Priests believe one shall come from beyond the stars, known as the Healer (or the Doctor), to free the People from themselves.

Alien Planets

Kastopheria (a.k.a. Catastrophea): A United Planetary Association (UPA) protectorate and home planet of the People, set between UPA space and Draconian territory. Kastopheria is small and close to a large sun. Catastrophea City is the main city. Swarms of red ants in the jungle pick bodies clean.

Places to Go

The Mountain of Fire: A sacred location of the People, it's an inactive volcano and secret location of the Anima.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Doesn't work on wood, but can be converted into a laser torch.

• *The Doctor's Pocket Watch:* Automatically adjusts to local planetary time.

• *Skar (a.k.a. skoob, sting, slash):* A green crystalline salt found only on Kastopheria. The People's priests took small doses to augment their telepathic powers and maintain their mind-lock on the People. In humans, skar acts like LSD and generates paranoia, psychosis and eventually death. Skar has been banned on all civilized planets.

• *Anima:* The largest crystal of skar in existence. The priests used the skar to channel the People's aggressive tendencies and store them in the Anima.

• *Scrolls of Nobility:* Draconian documents that record rank. A Patent of Honorary Nobility gives the Doctor his title of High Earl.

• *Grand Sunburst of Draconia:* An award conveyed by the Draconian

Emperor. Numbered Classes of the award denote different levels of honor.

Organizations

• *Cosmic Soul:* A faction of the Interdenominational Missionary Foundation that does missionary work.

• *Revolutionary Freedom Alliance:* An association of associations that support independence rights. The Alliance sent El Llama to Kastopheria.

History

• The United Planetary Association (UPA) grew out of the old United Nations. It's composed of Earth – the central and most influential member – and several colony planets.

• The People, consumed by their own bloodlust, came close to wiping themselves out. By using skar, a drug that amplifies telepathic abilities, the People's priests instigated a telepathic mind-lock on the entire race, one that made the People docile for centuries.

• Elias Kastopherious named Kastopheria after himself. The planet's fertility encouraged colonization, and the passive People were a free labor source. The Kastopheria Company assimilated many of the planet's farms. The UPA finally seized the planet from the corrupt Kastopheria Company.

• The House of Kryll, with ambitions on the Draconian throne, sought to prove that Draconian leadership was weak. Kryll, leaders of the War With Earth Alliance, sent a suicide squad to Kastopheria to provoke a war. But as the People's bloodlust returned, Kastopheria Administrator Charteris and General-Baron Kryll signed a field treaty declaring non-interference with Kastopheria. The UPA and Draconian governments later ratified it. Charteris was made Earth Ambassador to Draconia.

At the End of the Day

Catastrophe, indeed. A waste of Terrance's energy, and about as deep as my shot glass. It's an odd reversal for the Doctor to constantly avoid interfering, but the implementation's choked with silly dilemmas (soldiers disguised as thorn bushes) and stupid solutions (the Doctor's sentenced to death, then gets invited to dinner and becomes a "nice guy"). It's like a soap opera where everything's repeated twice, centered around a bloodbath that doesn't really happen, and ends in a total anti-climax.

The Paradise of Death

Author: Barry Letts. Virgin adaptation #156. (Published before there was a "Missing Adventures" line, *The Paradise of Death* stems from the novelizations of the TV stories.) Release date: 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Sarah Jane Smith and Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart.

Travel Log

Earth, Blestinu and Parakon, 1970s.

Chronology

Between "The Time Warrior" and "Invasion of the Dinosaurs." (Unfortunately, there really isn't a gap between those two stories, nor between "Dinosaurs" and the following "Death to the Daleks." But it's definitely an early point in the Doctor and Sarah's friendship, so we'll have to live with this.)

Summary

The body of a young man turns up at the perimeter of Space World, a new theme park, and his inhuman injuries point to an attack by an alien creature. The Doctor, Sarah and the Brigadier investigate and force a confession from the Space World management – they're actually aliens from the Parakon Corporation who want to bring new entertainment to Earth.

Sarah shadows Parakon Corp. Vice-Chairman Tragan onto a spaceship ride only to discover that it's a *real* spaceship. Tragan takes her to Parakon as leverage against interference, and the Doctor and the Brigadier follow in the TARDIS.

On Parakon, the Parakon president welcomes the Doctor and the Brigadier as Earth representatives. They're told Parakon's prosperity comes from Rapine, the base constituent of a number of products – food, metal, cloth and more. Sarah is rescued from the sadistic Tragan's clutches by Captain Waldo Rudley, a member of the Parliamentarian Guard. She falls in love with Rudley, but Tragan charges Rudley with treason and throws him into the deadly Parakon combat games. Rudley is savaged by a Gargan and

dies from lack of blood.

The Doctor finds evidence that the Parakon Corporation is stirring up wars and catastrophes on various planets, then using the resulting corpses as fertilizer for the Rapine, creating a paradise of death. No doubt, similar plans were intended for Earth. The Doctor sends the oblivious President of Parakon proof of the Corporation's actions. Parakon Corp. Chairman Freeh, the President's own son, is exposed as the true manipulator and dies trying to kill the Doctor. Tragan commits suicide rather than answer for his crimes. Parakon is left to face the struggles of dismantling their paradise.

Memorable Moments

There's something to be said when Jon Pertwee's Doctor is humiliated and must fight to the death in the long frock of a bondservant, complete with a frizzy ginger wig and a rolling pin. The whole thing's evocative of another dress-in-drag in TV's "The Green Death," though reality kicks in when the Doctor chucks those clothes into a pit and fights in his underwear.

Sex and Spirits

Though Sarah decides she's not looking for a man, she falls for Captain Waldo Rudley. Sarah's been in love before. She prefers men with small bums, and thinks Rudley's is elegantly shaped. An Experienced Reality porno embarrasses Jeremy Fitzoliver.

Ass-Whuppings

Sarah's love Captain Rudley dies from loss of blood. Through Experienced Reality, Sarah watches a murder through the killer's eyes. The Doctor and Sarah witness scenes of war. Tragan's head bursts with a juicy burp. The Doctor falls more than 200 feet, but recovers nicely.

Continuity

Jeremy Fitzoliver returns in *The Ghosts of N-Space*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* When the Doctor lost his teacher [likely K'Anpo of "Planet of the Spiders"], it felt as if his father died.

The Doctor learned how to "relax" his bones from a wise old Neanderthal. This ability allows the Doctor to fall more than 200 feet and

walk away after a short coma.

The Doctor says he's more than 700 years old. He can spot a hair that's only half a millimeter long. He doesn't know about Rapine, but recognizes Naglons and their stun guns. He can fly a Parakonian car, and flew skimmers as a boy on Gallifrey.

The Doctor spent a long weekend on Aklebaran II a few years ago. He's read Professor Mortimer Willow's paper on red blood cell aggulation in victims of carbon monoxide asphyxiation.

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Sarah has only been a journalist a couple of years. Her editor is named Clorinda. Sarah works for the *Metropolitan*. Her papa suggested she shovel horse manure for a living. She did not go to public school.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* The Brigadier went to school at Holborough with Edmund "Teddy" Fitzoliver, the majority shareholder of *Metropolitan* magazine. The Brig calls Edmund "Pooh," but hasn't seen him for years.

The Brigadier's grandfather is dead. He once flew from Kathmandu to Patna.

• *Jeremy Fitzoliver:* Sarah's lackluster co-worker at the *Metropolitan* also goes to Holborough and is the nephew of Edmund Fitzoliver.

• *The TARDIS:* The Psycho-Telemetric circuit, given an alien object, can pilot the TARDIS to the item's planet of origin. The TARDIS serves up meals as red pills.

Alien Races

• *Naglons:* The purple-skinned Naglons have their eyes and mouth in the same place as Earthlings, but the similarity ends there. A Naglon's skin is covered with warts and pus packets, and is soggy with liquid folds. To a Naglon, imprisonment means death.

• *Blestinuians:* Have leathery skin, like reptiles.

• *Klakluk:* A large, nervous and lumpy beast like a moose. It has two heads so predatory pattifangs couldn't creep up on it, but consequently doesn't know which way it's going.

• *Gargan:* A fierce predator on Parakon the size of a Tyrannosaurus Rex, very short sighted and nearly deaf, but with a keen sense of smell. The Gargan marks its territory, then pursues any creature that crosses the boundary. The Gargan is sacred to the Kimonyans, regarded as the spirit of

life and death. Therefore you shouldn't kill one if you can help it.

• *Giant Butcher Toad:* A nasty piece of savagery, and a huge hit at the Parakon games.

Alien Planets

• *Parakon:* Parakon leads a Federation of planets. It's supposedly a democracy, but the president is largely a figurehead. Parakon has only one political party, which has been elected unopposed for 40 years. Dissension is not allowed.

• *Blestinu:* World on which the Parakon Corporation caused a classical war with guns, to generate dead bodies to fertilize Rapine.

• *Aldebaran II:* A planet 68 light-years from Earth. The cactus pulp they call food there is disgusting.

Places to Go

Space World: From Hampstead station, you can walk there in 10 minutes.

Stuff You Need

• *Bessie:* The Doctor's car can do at least 140 mph.

• *Rapine:* The Parakon president's grandfather brought the first Rapine seed to the planet.

• *Experienced Reality (ER):* Entertainment system of the Parakon Corporation. A sensory transmitter implanted in people records their experiences. The recordings are played back for ER users, who experience events through someone else's senses. ER can be used to mentally dominate others.

Organizations

• *UNIT:* In a continuity goof, UNIT can be found in the telephone book. Tragan, with a casual phone call, gets a UNIT staffer to blab about the Doctor.

• *Parakon Corporation:* Company that controls Rapine production on Parakon and spearheads operations to supply "fertilizer" for it. The president of Parakon used to be a Corporation salesman. Tragan is vice-chairman for the Entertainment Division.

• *Kimonya Tribe:* The last tribe on Parakon that's free from Corporation

control. The Kimonya ride giant bats that carry four people each. They live in Lacklan, Parakon's last wild area, where jelly-fish predators, trap lizards and arrow serpents live.

Phenomena

• *Reverse the Polarity of the Neutron Flow:* A classical sub-atomic physicist would say this favorite expression of the Doctor's sounds like nonsense. Reversing the pseudo-polarity of metaphorical synapses is just as nonsensical.

• *Centrifugal Force/Centripetal Force:* Although this is a law of physics, the Doctor enigmatically says it doesn't exist as such.

History

• The Doctor has a photograph from Albert Einstein that says, "Many thanks for all your help, old friend."

• In India, General Clive got the Doctor hooked on tea.

• Lucrezia Borgia put her poisons into only the finest vintages, or so she told the Doctor.

At the End of the Day

Nostalgic, but lacks teeth – rather like "Doctor Who: The Patti-Cake Edition." The villains are lame, and a third of the story could be whittled out with few ramifications. The audio version plays far, far stronger, and better evokes the Pertwee era.

The Ghosts of N-Space

Author: Barry Letts. Virgin Missing Adventure #7. Release Date: February 1995

TARDIS Crew

The third Doctor, Sarah Jane Smith and Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart.

Travel Log

San Stefano Minore, northern Sicily, May 1818 (twice) and circa 1970s (three times). The Doctor and Sarah's N-Bodies also make trips to 1818 and circa 1500.

Chronology

Between "Death to the Daleks" and "The Monster of Peladon."

Summary

In Sicily, Sarah Jane enjoys a platonic vacation with co-worker Jeremy Fitzoliver until they meet the Brigadier, who's visiting his Uncle Mario. A mobster named Vilmio is making overt moves on Mario's castello, and even more troublesome, ghosts have been sighted. The Brigadier summons the Doctor, who concludes the ghosts are N-Bodies, which are essentially the souls of dead beings who cannot relinquish their physical life and are trapped in N-Space, a domain outside the space-time continuum. N-Space is also home to monsters formed from the negative emotions left behind by spirits who succeeded in gaining the next phase of existence. If the barriers to N-Space are breaking down, Earth could be flooded with evil spirits.

The Doctor researches the fracture in the N-Space barrier back to points in 1818 and the 15th century at Mario's castello. The Doctor prepares a device that project him and Sarah's N-Bodies to those times, and then they return and physically go there via the TARDIS. In both time zones, they realize Vilmio is an alchemist who has achieved an extended lifespan, and now seeks to empower himself with the negative energy in N-Space and gain true immortality. Worse, he could gain control of the monsters of N-Space and conquer Earth. The Doctor also discovers there are various astrological conjunctions which weaken the N-Space barrier – and one such

conjunction is due back in the 1970s.

Vilmius' criminals storm the castello, the location of the N-Space fracture, and he slips into N-Space. The Doctor and Sarah follow in their N-Bodies, and Sarah's belief in the Doctor as a great hero changes his N-Body into a white knight. The Doctor fights a Vilmius-projected dragon and wins, severing the link between Vilmius' N-Body and his Earthly form. However, Vilmius' N-Body soaks up psionic power from the other N-Bodies and prepares to unleash himself upon the world. The Doctor uses his N-Space devices to increase Vilmius' access to N-Space energy, filling the villain with power until he bursts and his N-Space energy harmlessly disperses. With the villain defeated, Sarah realizes, from seeing castello residents of the past, that Mario's fellow villager Roberto is the true heir of the castello. The Brigadier, as Mario's nephew, is pleased because he didn't fancy inheriting the castello in any case.

Sex and Spirits

It's very innocent, but sounds a bit kinky when the Doctor aids a dangling Sarah and says, "Lift your feet and put them on the wall!" The Doctor once stripped off and swam naked with his mentor, the hermit, to the hermit's house ("The Time Monster").

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor's gadgets squish a power-pumped Vilmius. Jeremy Fitzoliver blasts away some N-Bodies.

Continuity

Poor Sarah. The Brigadier slapped a D-notice on her story about the dinosaurs ("Invasion of the Dinosaurs"). Her editor, Clorinda, rejected her Dalek piece ("Death to the Daleks"). Aaron Blinovitch worked out the Blinovitch Limitation Effect in 1928 in the British Museum's reading room ("Day of the Daleks" and more). The Doctor by this point knows Leonardo da Vinci ("Masque of Mandragora).

Null-Space is not the "N-Space" that the fourth Doctor, Romana, Adric and K-9 encounter in "Full Circle," "State of Decay" and "Warriors' Gate." Sarah Jane's Aunt Lavinia kept a parrot ("The Time Warrior," "K-9 and Company").

The Doctor has a stun gun from Parakon (*The Paradise of Death*) that he modifies to literally blow N-Bodies away. The N-Bodies in this story

should not be confused with the "N-Forms" that appear in *Damaged Goods* and *So Vile a Sin*.

Character Development

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Sarah's struggling to write a romantic/thriller bestseller, but concludes she's a better journalist. She took some sailing courses. Until this book, she's never passed out. Her mother owned a poodle.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* The Brigadier's Granny MacDougal was half-Italian, making the Brigadier one-eighth Italian and seven-eighths Scotsman. He is the only living relative of his uncle, Mario Verconti, and visited Mario's home at Isola di San Stefano Minore when he was young. Italian Roberto Orazio Menestrello is discovered to be the Brigadier's cousin.

The Brigadier attended prep school. You wouldn't think he'd have burned up his vacation time, but he here takes *unpaid* leave from UNIT. A young Brigadier took shelter in Eaton Square during the 1940 London Blitz and emerged to find his family's house bombed to pieces.

• *Maximilian Vilmius:* A multi-billionaire, necromancer and chemist. In the early 1800s, he sought the elixir of life and gained some measure of longevity. His cells were self-healing and immortal, but couldn't restore lost limbs.

• *Jeremy Fitzoliver:* Sarah's co-worker at the *Metropolitan*. He's an expert shot, having learned to hit clay ducks at carnivals.

• *The TARDIS:* The Ship provides meals as green pills. The TARDIS has eggs from the kitchen of Alfred, King of Wessex. The Doctor claims the eggs are still fresh because there's no time in the TARDIS (suggesting the Ship's passengers might not age while inside).

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Have an acute, innate sense of time.

• *N-Bodies:* Every being on Earth has the equivalent N-Body that exists simultaneous with the physical body. Some people, extremely attached to worldly things, can't give them up their physical existence when they die. Their N-Bodies pass through a "tunnel" and arrive in N-Space. They sometimes come back as ghosts.

Negative emotions power N-Bodies, many of whom believe they deserve

punishment are tormented by their own mental creations. N-Bodies can communicate with each other telepathically. Because N-Bodies are already dead, you can't "kill" one, but their energy can be dissipated. On Earth, N-Bodies are intangible.

• *Poltergeists:* A merger of a low grade N-Body and a willing human host with a good amount of negative emotions. The N-Body provides the psionic talent, the human becomes the battery. Such unions are rare but powerful.

• *Plungbolls:* Furry creatures from Gallifrey, about the size of a thumbnail. They live in snow-filled country and desperately seek warmth. Mountaineers who don't use anti-plungboll spray have been smothered by thousands of them.

Places to Go

• *Null-Space (a.k.a. N-Space):* Null-Space is a region that doesn't exist in the Space-Time Continuum at all. It's normally separated from our Universe by a barrier that can't be pierced except by N-Bodies.

In Null-Space, an N-Body's belief changes the environment. Many are rendered as monsters. They can transform themselves and objects.

Talented psionics can send small physical objects through the Null-Space barrier.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* In N-Space, the screwdriver becomes a two-handed battle sword the Doctor fights with.

• *The Doctor's Multi-Vectored Null-Dimensional Temporal and Spatial Psycho-Probe:* A hodgepodge of spare TARDIS circuits that can replay images left by N-Bodies.

• *The Doctor's Out of the Body Dimensional Transducer:* Allows a person's N-Body to voyage into N-Space while their real body remains comatose.

• *Clancy's Comet:* Its orbit takes it by Earth every 157 years. In 1033, it was regarded as the "Star of the West" meant to signal the end of the world. Clancy's Comet somehow weakens the barrier into N-Space.

Time Travel

The Doctor and Sarah could stay in the past for weeks, then return to the

1970s a little bit after they left (this conflicts with other novels such as *The Sands of Time*).

Given enough skill, N-Bodies can travel to the past. They cannot travel into the future.

Phenomena

• *The Universe:* Every world has a counterpart that can't be attributed to any dimension. For Earth, that region is N-Space.

• *Belief:* If a number of people believe something for a long time, the belief has empirical effects. This effect is greatly heightened in N-Space.

• *Invisibility:* Herbert George Wells got it wrong. If invisibility worked, the way he proposed invisibility, the person using it would be blind. Invisible creatures actually see by sensing photons leave in N-Space. This actually causes a type of clairvoyance.

History

• Carl Jung coined the term "synchronicity," a coincidence that has no causal link but is important, while talking with the Doctor.

• The Doctor and his ion-focusing coil helped H. G. Wells with his invisibility experiment.

• Writer Ann Radcliffe incorporated many elements from the Doctor and Sarah's 1818 adventure into *The Mystery of the Castello*.

At the End of the Day

Monstrous, and not in a good way. Almost everything about *The Ghosts of N-Space* feels wrong. We're visiting the Brigadier's roots, and they're *not* in Scotland. The Brigadier, an Army-trained officer, lets the worthless Jeremy Fitzoliver, who learned to shoot *at a carnival*, usurp him as a sharpshooter. Sarah Jane's so naïve, she wonders why her editor won't buy stories about Daleks. The villain Vilmius is sad and pathetic. All this plus we're subjected to N-Space, a dreadful concept that doesn't fit into "Who" mythology at all and is best forgotten about – much like this book.

Fourth Doctor Stories

A Device of Death

Author: Christopher Bulis. Virgin Missing Adventure #31. Release Date: February 1997

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor, Sarah Jane and Harry.

Time Ring Log

Adelphine cluster, on the Galactic rim, time unknown.

Replacement TARDIS Travel Log

Deepcity, the destroyer *Oranos*, the planets Averon and Landor.

Chronology

Immediately after "Genesis of the Daleks."

Summary

The Doctor's intervention on Skaro (in "Genesis of the Daleks") creates a distortion wave in the Time Vortex that the Time Lords work to dampen. But as the wavecrest disrupts the Doctor's Time Ring, he loses his memory and lands on an unnamed planet, where forces from the devastated Landor and races of the Averon Alliance make war. After hearing of the Landorans' plight, the Doctor agrees to help them.

Meanwhile, Harry materializes near a battlefield and tends to the wounded, goat-like Jand. Sarah lands nearby and is conscripted for a slave work force, but escapes and finds Harry. Sarah also meets a Landoran synthoid she names Max, who evolves beyond his programming to become more independent, thanks to her compassion.

The Doctor's memory slowly returns, so he finds his companions and discovers his escape pod is actually a new TARDIS the Time Lords gave him as a gift. He uses it to evacuate the Landoran destroyer *Oranos* before

it's destroyed and investigates the war. The Doctor unveils a conspiracy to keep secret the fact that Averon, not Landor, was completely destroyed. For years, the Landorans have perpetuated the illusion of the war to keep the sector's alien races away from a struggling Landor.

Max uses advanced weaponry in the Landoran city of Deepcity to build more synthoids like himself as a security force. A new peace settles on the region. The Time Lords are pleased, knowing that Max's future armies will be instrumental in defeating the Daleks for all time. The Doctor rejects his new TARDIS, saying he doesn't want the Time Lords symbiotically manipulating him with it, and his party takes their Time Ring and leaves.

Ass-Whuppings

Casualties on Landor were reported as being 1.5 billion, but the number might be exaggerated. The planet Averon was reduced to a radioactive wasteland.

The Doctor materializes in space and suffers from shock and explosive decompression. Sarah is grazed by a guard's laser gun blast, which draws blood from her head.

Continuity

The Doctor's interference on Skaro spared thousands of worlds from enduring the Dalek wars ("Genesis of the Daleks"). The Time Lords calmed the resulting time disruption. At the end of *A Device of Death*, the Doctor's party is sent on another Time Lord mission, possibly "Revenge of the Cybermen" or another task.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's hearts pump a combined ten beats per minute. His normal body temperature is 16 degrees (We're not told if this is Fahrenheit or Celsius).

The Doctor is now 748 years old. In his slightly amnesiac state, he claims to have doctorates in medicine, science, philosophy and literature. He's thinking about writing a monograph on corridor-and-tunnel architecture. He can resist the influence of pentatholene gas.

He wires a synthoid-disrupting device to a coat button via remote control. When he pulls the button out, the device activates.

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Journalist Sarah wrote an article entitled "The New

Computer Generation Gap," which explains how a computer's generation lasts only months. The span between one generation and the next is so quick, newer models might quickly learn from previous mistakes and advance toward improving themselves.

• *The Replacement TARDIS:* The Time Lords offer the Doctor a TARDIS that is attuned to the Doctor's psychometric pattern. He can open it with a mental command. The interior has the usual pearly white illumination, though the recessed roundels are set at unfamiliar angles. The chameleon circuit actually works and it turns into a police box and a small tree. Deepcity's shields and abnormal gravity gradient interfere with its take-off. This TARDIS also has a pool room.

Alien Races

• *Averonians:* Humanoids, inherently xenophobic and perhaps a bit arrogant.

• *Landoran synthoids (a.k.a. Synthonic Mobile Infantry Unit):* Constructed humanoid figures, designed on the planet Terracos with samurai-like helmets and glowing eyes. The right hand is normal, but the left hand is a three-jawed mechanical claw. A small projector is mounted on the left arm. It can detect lifesigns and self-repair damage.

Some synthoids may evolve to have independent thought. Safeguards restrict them to only injuring others in battlefield conditions. Max's programming was influenced by Sarah Jane's compassion, Harry's sense of duty and the Doctor's drive to find the truth. Max likely incorporated these qualities into his fellow synthoids.

Alien Planets

Averon, under Landoran attack, became radioactive and polluted by chemical and biological weapons. As part of their deception, the Landorans placed transmitters there to simulate radio noise.

Places to Go

• *Parachronistic Chamber:* Room deep in the Capitol on Gallifrey that regulates time distortions.

• *Deepcity:* A secret Landoran settlement of 11,000 people that carries out weapons research. Deepcity is located in a cavern hollowed out of an asteroid.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Can project sonic frequencies that induce sleep in other beings.

• *Time Rings:* In emergency situations, Time Rings deposit their users in habitable environments. Time Rings are powered by artron energy.

• *"A Device of Death":* Play once performed by actor Olivor Malf, in which he had to lie absolutely still for a half-hour. Malf later played Admiral Zeff Doling, famed leader in the Landoran navy, as part of the Landoran war deception.

• *Multiple Independent Combat Assembly (MICA):* A weapon composed of multiple fighting units, beetle-shaped and equipped with an energy weapon, various mechanical tools and manipulators. The individual weapons can be synchronized to produce a field-gun strength beam.

Time Travel

The Doctor suspends the TARDIS in the Time Vortex to rest and plan, then re-materializes with no time having passed (the eighth Doctor also employs this talent, though many, many other novels refute the idea). The Rassilon scale measures time distortion, with the Doctor's mission to Skaro registering a 4.6.

History

• The Tralsammavarian race died out more than a million years ago.

• About 1,500 years ago, humans discovered the Adelphine cluster. They colonized Landor, but soon came into conflict with the reclusive inhabitants of Averon. War erupted. Landor was believed destroyed 19 years ago, but was only damaged. "The war" lasted 26 years.

At the End of the Day

The Doctor, Harry and Sarah are caught in a long-standing war. Sarah is put in a labor force and escapes. Sound familiar? When *A Device of Death* isn't emulating "Genesis of the Daleks" (or "The Leisure Hive," with its scarf-choking murder), it's swamping us with background material on a surface-level war you don't care spittle about. It has the feel of a book written last minute to fulfill the Virgin license – with little plot or direction from the supporting cast. The final nail in the coffin is the title, borne from a play performed by one of many stupid, stupid actors that Bulis insists on

writing about.

Managra

Author: Stephen Marley. Virgin Missing Adventure #14. Release Date: September 1995

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor and Sarah Jane.

Travel Log

The Sistine Chapel, the Globe Theatre and the Grand Canal, Venice, Europa, 3278.

Chronology

Between "Planet of Evil" and "Pyramids of Mars."

Summary

By accident, or perhaps by the TARDIS' design, the Doctor and Sarah arrive in the eclectic land of Europa, a 33rd century recreation built on the remains of the original Europe. In Europa, different European countries and time zones from the second millennium exist simultaneously (there are five Britannias, three Switzias, etc.). Some of the land's Dominions contain mythological figures such as vampires, while even more are stocked with Reprises, multiple clones of historical figures such as Casanova and Mary Shelley.

When the Pope is murdered, the Doctor and Sarah are accused of the crime and interrogated by one of the Torquemadas. The noblest of the Lord Byrons, called Dangerous Byron, rescues them and they pool information in one of Europa's Black Forests. The Doctor traces Europa's origins to the burning of the original Globe Theatre, when the Mimic, a copycat creature, merged with an unoriginal, lackluster playwright named Francis Pearson. This created the anagram Managra, a creature that can only rearrange the thoughts of others. The Mimic, who once menaced Gallifrey, also incorporated Time Lord technology into much of Europa. Left unchecked, the Mimic will continue to pervert humanity's progress with its redundant and oppressive ideas.

The rebellious Domino Order, opposed to the Church's rule of Europa,

strikes against the Vatican and negotiates a truce. Meanwhile, the Doctor pilots Europa's Globe Theatre, actually a primitive TARDIS built or obtained by the Mimic, and interrupts Managra's grand performance of "Thirteenth Night." When the Doctor places the Theatre's caravan, also a primitive TARDIS, inside the Globe, the Time Vortex begins to tear the ships apart.

Managra attempts to use mimesis, a Gallifreyan art in which anything you write comes true, against the Doctor – but the Doctor has already used his own mimesis ability to steal Managra's ability. The Globe, unable to survive the rigors of the true Time Vortex, collapses and crushes Managra to a pulp. The Doctor escapes in the TARDIS, programmed and sent to him by Sarah and Mary Shelley.

Memorable Moments

Two suave Casanovas duel for the love of Maria Fiore and one kills the other ("Straight through the heart. My compliments on your accuracy, sir." "You go to your Maker with impeccable manners, sir."). The Doctor bluffs a captured captain by touching his head and saying his heart is programmed to stop if he lies. A giant image represents the horrors in Castle Bathory: a huge heart with a black cat licking its valves.

Sex and Spirits

Sarah strolls around Europa's Vatican in a bikini. Bad Byron appreciates her as eye candy.

Ass-Whuppings

The fourth Doctor survives having a dagger in his chest, dead center.

Continuity

Managra screams that "she" knows the Doctor's nightmare, perhaps referring to Lady Peinforte ("Silver Nemesis").

The Doctor mentions his appearance in the debut of "Macbeth," foreshadowing events in the later-published *The Empire of Glass*. Jake and Madelaine (*Goth Opera*) are revealed as the progenitors of Europa's vampire nation.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The first Doctor had only one heart. The fourth Doctor calls the third Doctor his "lesser self," who was "inclined to the self-important."

The Doctor is somewhat skilled with Mimesis. He can transfer mind blocks from person-to-person by touch. The Doctor has never visited Europa. He can wield his yo-yo with such force as to strike and incapacitate pursuers.

He wrote his friend Shakespeare a letter after the Globe burned, saying the Bard had more plays in him. Shakespeare merely replied that he valued their old friendship.

The Doctor can see through some cloaking fields. He once met a man who wore a hat *inside* his head.

• *The Doctor and Countess Elizabeth Bathory:* Named "The Blood Countess," Elizabeth Bathory was likely one of the most evil women who ever lived. Her Castle was a chamber of horrors. She summoned a cosmic power, likely a Great Old One, which the Mimic copied and the Doctor defeated "at great cost." The event still chills the Doctor's soul. He was present at the Countess' trial.

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Sarah grew up in the streets of South Croydon. When she was very young, her parents were killed in a car accident. Her Aunt Lavinia raised her in Morton Harewood. She still tends her parents' graves. She visited the Sistine Chapel in 1971.

She always wanted a mad uncle (the fourth Doctor somewhat fulfills that role). He dropped her off at Skye for a few days. The TARDIS is the closest thing she has to a home. Liquorice allsorts are bad for her figure.

• *Managra (a.k.a. Persona, Doctor Sperano, Pearson):* A combination of the Mimic and playwright Francis Pearson, and also the embodiment of uncreativity and anagrams (the name "Managra" being an anagram of "anagram"). Managra had many different, layered faces representing its various guises as Doctor Sperano, Persona and Managra. Persons who weren't protected by Mimesis and looked upon Managra became what they saw. The Doctor discovered that Managra wore a contorted version of the Doctor's own face.

As the Mimic, it was an entity of infinite duplication, but with no real mind or central intelligence. It also copied the power of a cosmic being, probably a Great Old One, summoned by the Blood Countess. The Doctor saw Managra's face on Gallifrey, the walls of Castle Bathory, and in Europa's Sistene Chapel. As Pearson, it scripted the heinous *To the Devil, a*

Doorknob.

• *Miles Dashing:* Formerly Miles Dashwood, born 20 years ago in Regency Britannia. The vampiric Mindelmeres converted Dashing's family, so he killed them. He swore to rid the world of the Ipsissimus vampires. Dashing has a crucifix that glows in the presence of vampires and a stake gun. He's Europa's finest swordsman.

• *The Byrons:* Mad Byron was killed by Miles Dashing and became a vampiric shadow. Bad Byron indulged himself in the Marquis de Sade tradition. He was killed by the heroic Dangerous Byron, who aided the Doctor and Sarah.

• *The TARDIS:* When Sarah asks the Ship for help, it levitates out of a pit. Sarah operates the TARDIS' homing mechanism and it finds the Doctor.

Alien Races

• *Reprises:* Recreations of historical and mythical figures, programmed with memories by the Chronopticon. A Reprise's memory picks up from where his or her progenitor's life ended. They are "born" in the Theatre of Transmogrification. Some Reprises suffer from "clone syndrome" as they develop their own personalities.

Europa's many Reprises included Mary Shelly, Percy Bysse Shelly, Faust, Crowley, Cardinal Richelieu, the Four Musketeers, Francia Bourbon, and Cyrano de Bergerac as based on the Richard Lester films. Because of Pearson's spite toward them, there were no Reprises of English dramatists. "The Nicodemus Principle" was a rule preventing Reprises from becoming Pope, though Cardinal Richelieu subverted it.

• *Vampiric Shadows:* Vampires avoid photons by nature, so if you kill one, the creature's psyche might be transferred to its shadow. This creates a being of anti-light, capable of independent thought.

Places to Go

• *Europa:* A reconstruction of the various cultures and time zones from old Europe, ranging from the late 14th century to the 20th century. There are multiple Dominions, including five Britannias (including Britannia Gloriana), three small Germanias, a 19th century Francia, etc. Many Dominions contain Reprises or monsters from European folklore, generated by psychotronic engineering. The Dominions don't interact as much as you'd think, as the different cultures resist dramatic change. Technology is banned except in most cases. Anachronism in many Dominions is a crime.

Europa was ruled by a renegade branch of the Catholic Church. The official papal seat is found in the Betelgeuse system.

• *The Globe Theatre II (a.k.a. The Chronopticon):* Located in Britannia Gloriana, a Dominion modeled on the reign of Elizabeth I, the new Globe was a makeshift TARDIS used by Managra. It was also the Chronopticon, the historical database that created the Reprises.

Stuff You Need

• *Casanova's Smart Dagger:* Programmable by thought, it's a telekinetically powered weapon that homes in on its target. It was created by Leonardo da Vinci.

• *Polyglots:* Micro-translators that translate Europan languages.

Organizations

The Dominoes: Rebellious order opposed to the rule of Europa by the Catholic Church. Dangerous Byron, Miles Dashing and Casanova are members. Mary Shelley leads them.

Phenomena

• *Mimesis:* On Gallifrey, this was practiced by a cult that held an annual ritual called "the Thirteenth Night," but the High Council banned the ritual and the art, probably because it was too arcane and unpredictable.

• *Dimensions Extraordinary:* An adaptation of Gallifreyan trans-dimensional engineering, Dimensions Ordinary places various large areas on Earth in small ones. It was used in Europa's various Dominions. Normal space is referred to as "Dimensions Ordinary."

• *Vampirism:* Vampirism is rife in many of Europa's Dominions. Throughout Europa, undead – even those who live on black blood puddings – are persecuted *en masse*. Only in Transylvania is vampirism compulsory, to keep out the tourists.

History

• The creature known as the Mimic soaked in secrets from Gallifrey until Rassilon expelled it.

• In a former incarnation, the Doctor sat with Lord Byron by the Parthenon and critiqued a poem Byron hadn't written yet.

• The Doctor met the historical Tomas de Torquemada twice, the second on the occasion of Torquemada's death.

• On June 29, 1613, the washed-up playwright Francis Pearson burnt down the Globe Theatre out of spite against William Shakespeare. Shakespeare, 49 at the time, was devastated and died three years later. Pearson was mortally wounded in a bar spat, but was subsequently healed by the Mimic and transported to the 31st century. There, the merged Mimic/Pearson, as Managra, supplied a cabal from the Overcities, a.k.a. the Concocters, with Gallifreyan secrets and thus fashioned Europa.

At the End of the Day

A very strange book with many face peelings by Managra. It's a pithy, three-dimensional feast that has the dark tone of an H.P. Lovecraft novel, but be warned that you've gotta pay attention and might get tired, making *Managra* something that might be better absorbed in chunks. That said, it's a work so deliciously literate, I craved a cigarette afterward.

Evolution

Author: John Peel. Virgin Missing Adventure #2. Release Date: September 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor and Sarah Jane Smith.

Travel Log

Dartmoor and a nearby beach, 1880. Andromeda, time unknown.

Chronology

Between "The Brain of Morbius" and "The Seeds of Doom."

Summary

Sarah Jane wishes to travel to India, 1889, and meet Rudyard Kipling, the journalist-turned-novelist who wrote *The Jungle Book*. But the TARDIS misses and ends up in Dartmoor in 1880. The Doctor and Sarah find a 15-year-old Kipling and witness the flight of a gigantic hound-creature. Property-owner Sir Edward Fulbright meets them while pursuing the evil beast and invites the Doctor to stay with him and investigate.

The night seems afoul with evil monsters. A strange but savage sea creature has chewed a local fisherman to death, and Arthur Conan Doyle, chief surgeon aboard the whaling vessel *Hope*, helps the Doctor perform the man's autopsy. Doyle also notes that curious and secretive shipments were made from the *Hope* to an industrialist named Tobias Breckinridge – shipments too inconvenient and secretive to be a coincidence.

The Doctor tracks the savage hound-creature, but the mysterious Colonel Edmund Ross guns the beast down. To the Doctor's surprise, the dead hound-creature is literally the combination of a dog and an 18-year-old boy.

Sarah suspect illicit experiments are happening and investigates a wave of graverobbing and stakes out a local cemetery, only to be captured by Breckinridge's men. The Doctor and Doyle follow to Breckinridge's factory, where they learn Colonel Ross is a British agent investigating reports of strange human hybrids. Colonel Ross' brother, Percival Ross, admits to Sarah he recovered a healing gel from a wrecked Rutan spaceship.

Percival Ross tested it on the hound boy, then created a new race of merchildren – financed by the industrialist Breckinridge – for use as an underwater labor force.

The docile merchildren see the plight of the Doctor and his friends and rebel. Breckinridge sets his mutated guard dogs on the Doctor's party, but the savage hounds kill the nearest target – Breckinridge himself. Colonel Ross fires on the hounds, rupturing one of the merchildren's tanks and drowning his brother Percival. With the Rutan salve dissolved in the ensuing flood, the Doctor gives the outcast merchildren a lift to a water planet in the Andromeda Galaxy to start a new life.

Sex and Spirits

Fifteen-year-old Rudyard Kipling and his jailbait fellows lust after Sarah.

Ass-Whuppings

Three half-human, half-seal creatures bite it – one of them harpooned by Doyle – as well as a hound-boy and three salve-enhanced dogs. A Rutan dies as a building falls on it. The villain Breckinridge stupidly killed by his own mutated dogs. Doyle kills the thug Brogan.

Sarah is thrown hard into the water and nearly drown because of her waterlogged dress.

Continuity

The Doctor has an appointment with conservative Sir Alexander, so Sir Edward Fulbright gives the Time Lord the checkered cape coat and deerstalker hat he wears in "The Talons of Weng-Chiang." Sarah again wears her outfit from "Pyramids of Mars," but it's ripped up to stop her from drowning. Sarah here first sees the TARDIS pool that appeared in "The Invasion of Time."

We learned in *All-Consuming Fire* that Sherlock Holmes and Dr. John Watson were only pseudo-names for actual investigators. Doyle wrote his stories based on their adventures.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's told Sarah various things about his age – he's claimed to be anywhere from 400 to more than 1,000 years old. He stated

once he was "immortal, give or take a few years," then said he was as mortal as any man.

The Doctor says his appointment book is almost free this millennium. This is his first time in Devon – this century. He claims to be a Doctor of everything but medicine. He's familiar with a wide range of boats and speaks dolphin fluently. Cherry is his favorite flavor.

The Doctor likely inspires the literary character Professor Challenger, but he's also like Sherlock Holmes – he unleashes a torrent of information about some graverobbers from a couple of footprints. He even says, "Elementary, my dear Doyle."

The Doctor calls the hound-boy's transformation a perversion of the natural order that he's seen only "once before."

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Sarah's room in the TARDIS has pastel-faded Victorian outfits, and some silver and leather-colored clothes (perhaps belonging to Zoe). Sarah's been to Paris several times. Doyle is one of her favorite authors. She can ride horses and is a good shot with a rifle. She can quote Thomas Henry Huxley. Along with Kipling, she meets his friends, L.C. Dunsterville and George Beresford.

• *Arthur Conan Doyle:* We meet Doyle as ship's surgeon on the *Hope*, a whaling vessel. He weathered a seven-month stay in the Arctic Circle. *Chamber's Journal* has already published his "The Mystery of Sassassa Valley," for which he was paid the princely sum of three guineas. He's a fairly decent shot with a harpoon or an Adams .450.

• *Rudyard Kipling:* Sarah considers warning a 15-year-old Kipling about the dangers of smoking, but knows it's the wrong era and he won't listen.

• *Colonel Ross:* Investigates reports of the paranormal, directly reports to Queen Victoria.

• *The TARDIS:* Sarah's closet expands to handle whatever clothing she puts inside. The TARDIS is overdue for its 3,000 year check up.

Alien Races

Time Lords: Are immune to Rutan healing salve.

Alien Planets

Earth: Our planet has an "unmistakable" smell.

Stuff You Need

Rutan Healing Salve: Designed to work on a Rutan's unstable cell structure, the healing salve is also molecularly unstable. The salve analyzes what it's healing, then forms amorphous cells, treating burns and wounds almost instantly. The salve self-replicates if given the correct raw elements. It becomes diluted and doesn't work well in salt water.

The salve tends to fuse differing types of non-Rutan tissue, though the subjects must be from the same order – both mammals, for instance. The hybrids, alas, are sterile, and the merging process works best before the onset of puberty.

History

• After being exposed to Sarah's feminism, Alice Bridewell helped found the Women's Suffrage Movement.

• Elements of this story undoubtedly influenced Doyle's writings of Sherlock Holmes, John Watson and Professor Challenger. To wit, Doyle is a medical man helping the police, and serves as an ever-questioning Watson to the Doctor's Holmes. The Doctor's mention of the Brigadier prompted Doyle to create the character of Brigadier Gerard, a man who means well, screws up and yet somehow saves the day. Doyle credited some local friend with the legend about the hound – that friend must have been the Doctor or Sarah. Biographies don't mention Doyle's stay in Devon nor his meeting with Kipling.

• Kipling, author of *The Jungle Book*, picks up some ideas about time-travel stories and a child raised by wolves.

At the End of the Day

An irresistible diamond's found in the mermaid Lucy's story of childhood abuse. But otherwise, *Evolution* is just too surface level and predictable. By the time Percival Ross, a B-Grade villain if ever there was one, clumsily unveils his motives, we've figured out almost all of it. Never mind that the villain Breckinridge is so clever, his own mutated guard dogs rip him apart. Never mind the mutated dogs are so terrifying, a good shot finishes them off. If you want a cracking Doyle/Sherlock Holmes-type story, read *All-Consuming Fire*.

System Shock

Author: Justin Richards. Virgin Missing Adventure #11. Release Date: June 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor and Sarah Jane Smith, with Harry Sullivan.

Travel Log

London, 1998.

Chronology

Between "The Seeds of Doom" and "The Masque of Mandragora."

Summary

Having botched the TARDIS' navigation again, the Doctor and Sarah Jane Smith find themselves in a London bar in 1998, where all's quiet until a M15 agent on the run slips a CD into the Doctor's pocket. When the agent is killed, the Doctor and Sarah investigate the murder until they are taken to an M15 headquarters and greeted by their old traveling companion, Harry Sullivan.

Sarah infiltrates I2, the company that created the disc, even as the Doctor finds the CD contains a living software entity called Voractyll. I2, it is further revealed, is a front for a group of cyborg-reptilian aliens called the Voracians, under the control of a rogue artificial intelligence named Voracia. Their intent is to attack Hubway, the control center about to open as the main European hub of the Internet. By introducing Voractyll via Hubway to the world's major computer networks, the Voracians will control Earth's digital processors.

The Voracians seize Hubway and have a stand-off with the Secret Service, who try to recapture the building. The Doctor, Sarah and a number of hostages are trapped within Hubway. The Doctor tells the Voracians that basing their existence on computer control goes against their organic roots, but they refute his argument. Finally, the Doctor creates his own version of Voractyll based on creativity rather than logic, and it consumes the Voracian version. Most of the Voracians are slaughtered in the Secret Service's

attack. The remainder die when the Doctor uses his Voractyll to corrupt systems aboard the Voracian mothership and destroy it.

Soon after, the Doctor and Sarah depart in the TARDIS. A short time later, Harry meets with Sarah's older counterpart for dinner in London to rehash the adventure.

Memorable Moments

The captured Doctor tries to repair his damaged sonic screwdriver, but his torch dies. That's a pity, because with the screwdriver, he could have recharged the torch, and with the torch, he could have repaired the screwdriver and escaped. Instead, the Doctor sits cross-legged in the dark, counting stitches on his scarf.

Trapped at a Hubway party, Sarah has vague thoughts about scribbling a warning message, then skewering it on the bottom of a pineapple chunk. The Doctor escapes an assassin by swinging through the air on his scarf. He tells Voracian leader Stabfield that the Voracians are emotional, then wins the argument when a dying Stabfield looks at him and says, "Hate."

Ass-Whuppings

Sarah blows away one Voracian, and stabs Voracian Johanna Slake in the eye with an I2 pen, tearing her head from her body. M15 Director Veronica Halliwell is assassinated. The Voracian Voractyll and two Doctor-version Voractylls are exterminated.

In what becomes "Night of the Undead Kitchen Appliances," a maniacal printer cuts the Doctor with high-velocity, paper and ceiling lights and televisions explode, showering him with glass. A hostile coffee machine burns Sarah's legs.

Continuity

Percy Wolnough ("Planet of the Spiders"), Sarah's editor at *The Metropolitan*, has moved to the editorial staff of the *Financial Times*). The TARDIS' helmic regulators ("The Ark in Space") are still unreliable.

This book is one of the few titles to directly jump between companies, as it has a direct sequel in the form of *Millennium Shock* from the BBC. M15 Director General Veronica Halliwell, here assassinated in 1998, is seen in 1997 in
The Dying Days. Sarah's I2 pen is infected with Voractyll's code and

appears in *Millennium Shock*. Harry discusses an MG he used to own (Ian Marter's *Harry Sullivan's War*). *Millennial Rites* establishes that Ashley Chapel Logistics bought up I2's equipment after it went bust.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The year 1998 isn't one of the Doctor's favorite times, but "it'll do." For the Voracian leader, the Doctor marks his age as "N/A," his nationality as a "Citizen of the Universe" and his occupation as "Consultancy, with some travel between times." He lists Prydon Academy and Lister, 1880, as qualifications. His favorite word is "Run!" He can wrap his yo-yo around a gun and pull it away. He can use his scarf as a swinging line. He apparently has the same antiquated UNIT pass he sported in "Battlefield."

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Sarah hasn't seen digital watches and thinks they're ugly. She wrote *Metropolitan* articles on the potential dangers of meditation and the sudden evacuation of London (in "Invasion of the Dinosaurs").

In 1998, Sarah experiences many culture shocks, including computers that fit on desks, people dressing down and digital watches.

An older, post-TARDIS version of Sarah lives in London and remembered the visit of her previous self. She remains in contact with Harry Sullivan. Morbidly, the older Sarah still uses the pen she stabbed Joanna Slake with.

• *Commander Harry Sullivan:* After UNIT, Harry got a posting doing hush-hush work at Porton Down ("Mawdryn Undead"). That's official jargon, he said, for "boring" stuff. Harry worked for M15 as an advisor, then as a field officer. He made Assistant Chief of Staff, but insists dozens of M15ers have that title. Robert Gibson serves as Harry's assistant.

Now in his late 40s, Harry's going gray at the temples and hates being called "Harold." His time spent travelling in the TARDIS remains the most eventful period of his life. Harry owned an M15 BMW with bulletproof windows, but wrecked it.

• *K9 Mark III:* Was vulnerable to Voractyll's attack.

• *Voractyll:* The ultimate evolution of the VORACIAns, hailed by them as the Bringer of Reason. Voractyll was a living software being, his programming shaped like a double helix, that could enslave all digital processors to its way of thinking. Voractyll was intelligent, self-aware, capable of reason and endlessly duplicable on a compact disc. Voractyll, ever-logical, was done in by a Doctor-made version of Voractyll.

• *Voracia (a.k.a. Vorellan Office Rapid Automated Computer Intelligence Advocate):* The ultimate in Vorella's Artificial Intelligence technology, another big-britches computer determined to wipe out us "inefficient" humans. Yet before VORACIA concluded organics had one-upped it on instinct, pragmatism, camaraderie and self-sacrifice. It therefore created the cybernetic Voracians.

Alien Races

• *Vorellans:* Native-born Vorellans are humanoid reptiles with pale, forked tongues.

• *VORACIAns:* Simply put, Voracians are Vorellans converted by Voracia. They are mostly robotic, with very business-like personalities. They see beauty, but can't understand it. Still, they do get nightmares, likely caused by the organic bits of them remembering their pre-robotic state.

At least one eye is robotic, and their organic parts are grafted to robotic joints, granting them inhuman strength.

Voracians can subvert other beings by surgically replacing their victim's brain tissue with a positronic control. Most Voracians are repulsed that they must intake external food to survive.

Places to Go

Hubway: The intended control center of the European Internet, located at a Wiltshire country house formerly called Aragon Court.

Stuff You Need

• *OffNet:* I2 invention that helps integrate all office systems and uses Vorell as its language. It's also intended to be the core of the Superhighway.

• *BattleNet:* Used by the Secret Service to keep them in communication, provide status information and coordinate battle plans. The VORACIAns penetrated BattleNet's systems to monitor the SAS' movements.

Organizations

• *I2:* Founded by Lionel Stabfield, a Voracian allegedly the fifth richest man in the world at age 43. The press regarded him as a genius, but a bore. I2 dominated the computer field, but the Doctor and Harry later destroyed most of its technology.

• *UNIT:* The third Doctor and Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart sometimes

visited M15, to justify UNIT's existence and budget. The Brigadier has long since retired by 1998, but Brigadier Bambera is active.

• *The Little Brothers:* Terrorist group, supported by I2, that's opposed to government intervention or regulation. It's named after "Big Brother" from "1984," as this group has opposite goals.

History

• Like Earth, the planet Vorella, in the Frastris region, developed a global network of information technology – but then came the "Great Reckoning." Voracia, the height of Vorella's Artificial Intelligence technology, became self-aware and reasoned organic life was inefficient. Voracia seized global networks and infected every component chip, but the native Vorellans rebelled. Voracia's CPU was off-lined after a suicide team detonated a nuclear device inside VORACIA's Processor Control. Voracia's forces were disorganized and largely destroyed. However, Voracia had already pioneered a pilot program to create the Voracians (*see Alien Races*) and survived off-planet.

• By 1998, computer systems at Euston control BritTrack – a signal workers' strike in 1994 (which actually happened) is said to have marked the replacement of human workers. Plans are underway to eliminate train drivers, too.

• Also, Voracians replaced low-security M15 Assistant Director Hanson, then assassinated M15 Director General Veronica Halliwell, putting the Voracian Hanson in charge. The Voracian virus Voractyll disrupted major communication and control systems every major country.

At the End of the Day

Extremely reminiscent of UNIT conspiracy/alien invasion stories such as "Robot" and "Terror of the Zygons," *System Shock* is solid, but a bit uninspiring. As the Doctor himself admits, the Voracians are "Just another bunch of aliens trying to take over," though the book's heart is in the right place and the Doctor/Sarah/Harry relationship is dead on target. If *System Shock* has a single let-down, it's that Sarah is a total liability as a spy, accomplishing little until page 283, when she makes like Sigourney Weaver and mows down a Voracian with her gun.

Millennium Shock

Author: Justin Richards. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #22. Release Date: May 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor, with Harry Sullivan.

Travel Log

London, December 1999. A teaser scene shows Harry and Sarah in December 1998.

Chronology

Between "The Deadly Assassin" and "The Face of Evil."

Summary

The Doctor, fresh from his battle with the Master on Gallifrey, randomly arrives in London at an electronics firm named Condef. He meets programmer George Gardner, who worries that chips made by Silver Bullet Solutions to fix the Y2K bug, an inability by many computer systems to interpret the switch-over from 1999 to 2000, will actually make the problem worse and cause chaos.

The Doctor then teams with his ex-traveling companion Harry Sullivan, a member of M15, to probe Condef. As they dig further, they discover a pack of their old enemies, the Voracians, are trying to re-assemble Voractyll, the sentient computer virus that will give them control of Earth's electronics.

The year 2000 dawns and Y2K strikes, causing massive chaos. The Doctor and his allies find that the Voracians helped design the Silver Bullet chips to accept Voractyll's software and seize control of Earth. As the Voracians near completion of Voractyll, the Doctor hurriedly adapts the Silver Bullet chips to inject a Y2K sensitivity into the creature's software. When Voractyll comes into contact with a date-reliant system, it seizes up and terminates. The Voracians, serving as part of Voractyll's command nodes, also perish. England and the world slowly recover from the Y2K crisis as the Doctor once again departs for further adventures.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor and Harry exchange Christmas presents (snowmen socks for the Doctor, a bag for Harry that laughs when you clap). Harry grabs a glass shard and slashes a Voracian's face with it. The Doctor, driving a Chieftain tank, evokes James Bond in "Goldeneye."

Sex and Spirits

Harry and his assistant, Robert Gibson, often get drunk together.

Ass-Whuppings

Harry shoots down Sylvia Webb, his housemaid, after she's converted into a Voracian. Harry also shoots three more Voracians, including James Bryant, Prime Minister Brooks' special advisor. The Doctor destroys Earth's remaining Voracians with Voractyll. A Voracian grapples with Harry and claws a chunk out of his neck. Harry is staggered from the heat of an exploding car.

Continuity

Sarah says she has to go to Moreton Harwood and "sort out Aunt Lavinia's things," suggesting Lavinia has died ("The Time Warrior," "K-9 and Company"). It's suggested the Doctor's "android detector" in "The Android Invasion" was nothing more than a box with a light. The Doctor bluffed to force the androids' hands.

The fourth Doctor, Harry and Sarah Jane Smith first defeated the Voracians and Voractyll in *System Shock*. *Millennium Shock* opens with the last scene of *System Shock*, in which Sarah gives Harry her I2 pen, designed with a chip for Voractyll. The Voracians steal chips from Ashley Chapel Logistics (*Millennial Rites*). United States President Dering reappears (*Option Lock*, also by Richards).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* In another incarnation (presumably his third), the Doctor signed the Official Secrets Act. He can single-handedly drive a Chieftain tank designed for a crew of four. He's familiar with the work of painter Robert Walker. He can play Mozart on the piano.

• *Harry Sullivan:* Harry's phone number is available on the M15 website. He often wears a shoulder holster. Now older, Harry gets tired

more easily. He cannot seem to get through a Justin Richards novel without wrecking his car at least once.

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Sarah freelances for *Popular Technology* and wrote an article on the Millennium Bug for its January 1999 issue.

• *Voractyll:* Could be downloaded into every Silver Bullet chip designated SB005. The Voracians themselves served as Voractyll's first transfer nodes.

Alien Planets

Voracia: Lies in the constellation of Skythos.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Can disable Voracian positronic generators, giving Voracian-controlled humans some free will.

• *Melsham's gas:* An alien knockout gas so powerful, you don't realize you were unconscious.

Organizations

The British Government employs General Randall as Britain's main liaison with NATO and the U.S. Joint Chiefs.

History

• British Secretary of State for Defense Jennifer Hamilton objected to the Silver Bullet plot and a Voracian disguised as Harry Sullivan assassinated her. Public networks broadcast pictures of Harry and his "accomplice" the Doctor, spurring a manhunt, though they were cleared as the Voracian plot was exposed.

• Y2K plunged Malaysia and Auckland into darkness. Hong Kong's traffic was totally jammed. Large parts of Britain lost power. Eventually, systems and power were restored.

• British Prime Minister Terry Brooks hoped to exacerbate the Y2K crisis through the Silver Bullet chips and spur martial law, then claim the military had staged an attempted coup. The liberal Brooks hoped to use this as leverage and dismantle the military, thus pumping more money into education, health care and hospitals. He resigned when exposed, although officially, it was said his Cabinet lost faith in him over the Millennium Bug crisis. Philip Cotton, Brooks' deputy and ex-Ambassador to the United

States, became Prime Minister.

At the End of the Day

The Doctor/Harry interaction – and the fourth Doctor's unpredictability – are the parts of *Millennium Shock* that shine the most. But after that, the plot seems only passable, in many ways a repeat of *System Shock*. It's decent enough, but hardly the colorful dramas we've come to expect from Richards.

Last Man Running

Author: Chris Boucher. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #15. Release Date: September 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor and Leela.

Travel Log

Unnamed planet, unknown time.

Chronology

Between "The Robots of Death" and "The Talons of Weng-Chiang."

Summary

With the TARDIS showing a small fault, and Leela naively hacking at the console thinking a predatory Bloodswimmer is trapped inside, the Doctor lands the TARDIS in an unnamed forest locale. He sets off for a moment of solitude but quickly flees from a fierce predator. Fortunately, Leela works out how to use the TARDIS door control and rescues him, but they return to find the Time Ship missing.

A war of the classes is building between "firsters," members of the First Planet, and the more-lowly "toodys" from the Second Planet. As part of this conflict, members of the Out-system Investigation Group (OIG), have pursued to this planet a renegade toody weapons maker called a runner, as in "runner from justice." The Doctor and Leela save the under-equipped and mostly hopeless OIG team from many forest dangers, although Investigator Monly and Officer Sozerdor are killed.

The Doctor finally recognizes they are in a "Last Man Running" facility, a complex built by the late alien race Lentic as part of their attempts to find the perfect warrior and clone him or her. As such, the runner sends Doctor and Leela-clones after the originals before revealing himself as the "dead" officer Sozerdor. With the Lentic equipment, Sozerdor intends to create an army of warrior Leelas to help overthrow the First government.

On the surface, the OIG team battles their own clones and pilot rescue ships into orbit. Leela takes her knife, slices through her duplicates and

finally traps Sozerdor in a force field. By overloading the facility's circuits, the Doctor and Leela leave the facility's defenses open to orbital attack and the OIG ships blast the complex, killing Sozerdor.

Memorable Moments

Leela cautiously reaches for the TARDIS console, seeking the door control. An underwater Leela stabs at a predator's giant tongue.

Sex and Spirits

OIG member Pertanor says the Doctor isn't her type and he responds: "And I'm not here." Leela mistakenly eats a piece of meat with alcohol-inducing properties.

Ass-Whuppings

Leela slices and dices like a Ronco Salad Shooter, killing 11 squad snakes, a large predator with five tongues, another predator, a black-and-white jumping critter, a green-skinned warrior and five Leela clones. Also killed are two more green warriors, four rescue-team members, dozens of six-legged brutes, dozens of squad snakes and a clone of the Doctor.

Sozerdor shoots Leela.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Time Lord talks to himself about the nature of objective truth, and keeps a gold nugget that's shaped like a duck. His precious scarf tears as he flees up a tree from a predator. Shakespeare's his favorite poet, and he once gave a symposium on "The Question of Fear." He's only heard about the Lentic, but never seen them.

• *Leela:* Everyone's favorite savage improves, figuring out the TARDIS door control and finally coming to believe the TARDIS is not magic. She thinks trophies are for children and fools, and that killing without purpose weakens a warrior. She says TARDIS stands for "Time and Relative Dimension in Space."

• *Inspector Monly:* Claimed he developed a self-replicating protein fragment, infectious only under certain conditions. You can pick who dies and how long it takes them.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS slowly time-shifts while standing still.

Alien Races

• *Bloodswimmers:* Nasty critters from Leela's homeworld with three needle-sharp points on several heads. One point paralyses and another dissolves with acid, while a third acts as a spare.

• *Squad snakes:* Nasty, telepathic snakes that link minds and hunt in organized groups of up to 100. You can outrun them, but don't let them surround you or you're snake crap.

• *"Last Man Running" predator I:* A creature with a long abdomen. Hormones prevent it from recognizing that it's burned up more energy from chasing you than it can get from munching on your innards.

• *LMR predator II:* An unbelievably huge abomination with a squat head that changes color and at least five tongues. It uses subsonic waves and possibly tele-hypnotics to get you.

• *LMR warriors*: A punk rocker's revenge! These simulated green skin warriors, bald apart from a crest of deadly yellow spines, are long and muscular with three-toed feet, and armed with short-shafted spears and round shields.

Alien Planets

First Planet and Second Planet: Have interstellar travel, but not a rechargeable power cell. Duels with offworlders, or even the training of them, is forbidden.

Places to Go

Lentic "Last Man Running" facility: A semi-sentient Lantic facility, designed to analyze a subjects' strengths and weaknesses, turning the weaknesses into physical threats. In short, you fought your own personal nightmare and the machine used the daffy notion that whatever does not kill you makes you stronger.

History

Speaking in a Shakespearean manner in this era is regarded as blasphemy.

Organizations

Out-system Investigation Group: If the investigators the Doctor and Leela meet are anything to go by, throwing your money in the street is

preferable to hiring these private investigators.

At the End of the Day

Talk, run from monsters with five tongues, stab them, talk again, repeat. A disappointment from the man who gave us TV's "Robots of Death," plus some of the best "Blake's 7" episodes ever written. *Last Man Running* hits on the often-hypocritical Doctor/Leela relationship, but the plot can't fill even half the book. Never mind that the Doctor and Leela spend most of their time rescuing a bunch of deadweight, stupid-ass morons from getting killed. As Leela herself tells them, "I think you are all stupid and treacherous and if the choice was mine, I would leave you all to rot." She couldn't be more correct.

Eye of Heaven

Author: Jim Mortimore. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #7. Release Date: February 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor and Leela.

Travel Log

Portsmouth Harbour, August, 1872. The Doctor and Leela make their way to Easter Island via the sailing ship *Tweed*. The TARDIS travels via another ship to India.

Chronology

Between "The Talons of Weng-Chiang" and "Horror of Fang Rock."

Summary

On his first visit to Easter Island, otherwise known as Rapa Nui or the Eye Which Sees Heaven, Horace Stockwood stole a scared *rongo-rongo* tablet and fled as the island's giant heads pursued him. He fled in his ship, the *Marco Polo*, and returned to a scientific community that mocked his claims.

Thirty years later, Stockwood places an ad in the *London Times* asking for sponsors for a return expedition, and the ever-curious Doctor answers it. The Time Lord purchases the sailing ship *Tweed* and his party sets off. En route, a fierce whale/squid battle knocks Leela and Stockwood's friend Royston overboard. Hunter Leela manages to steer the whale, and they shelter inside its dead mouth during a tornado. Fortunately, they're rescued and rejoin the main group.

At Rapa Nui, Peruvian slave-traders capture the *Tweed* and round up the natives for sale. Leela rallies the islanders and they butcher the slavers with a quiet efficiency. Unfortunately, Royston is mortally wounded saving Leela's life. The Rapa Nui natives speak of a healing god who can save him-a giant stone head that houses an alien transmat beam. In the process of transport, the beam heals Royston's injuries and teleports the Doctor's party to a dead alien homeworld.

There, they explore an alien library, which details how an unnamed alien race, fighting a losing war, seeded their DNA as a virus through space in millions of head-shaped *moai*. Once the aggressors killed the aliens and left, the *moai* routinely activated the virus, turning those infected with it into hybrids of the original alien species. But the plan went foul when one such group, Earth's Polynesians, contracted a disease carried by Stockwood's original expedition. In turn, the disease killed off *all* the hybrid aliens on Earth a second time.

Lacking any of the alien DNA to protect them, the Doctor's group sets off a booby trap that turns the alien sun black. The Doctor quickly transmats his group back to Earth, hoping the sun will return to normal. From Leela's super-immune system, the Doctor synthesizes a cure to the Polynesian sickness. Stockwood spends the rest of his life on Rapa Nui, guarding the Polynesians from outsiders until they are again needed to re-stock the alien race.

Memorable Moments

Bloodthirsty Leela feeds birds with Stockwood and tells him, "Your hunting tricks are useless. These birds are not killing each other." Her frustration with a cab driver is the final straw, and she suspects she may have to kill everyone in the modern world. Her constant cries of "You are trying to poison me!" when she eats Earth food are hysterical.

The Doctor leads the *Tweed*'s crew in a chorus of "Octopus's Garden." He tells Leela about the Ritual of Carbolic to get her to bathe. When the Doctor heals his "mortal" bullet wound, the Polynesians denounce him as the devil and choke him with his own scarf.

Sex and Spirits

Leela tries champagne and spits it out, thinking it's poison.

Ass-Whuppings

On the alien homeworld, Leela smells the scent of many bodies, and witnesses multiple genocides in a *moai* viewer (she sees so many people die, the word "extinction" becomes meaningless). Later, a Peruvian pirate ship explodes, and its captain falls to his death dueling with the Doctor.

Leela takes bullets in the shoulder, arm and foot. She's hit on the head by wood, battered while battling a squid and slapped about by a dead whale tongue. At age eight, a webspinner bit her on the tongue and temporarily

paralyzed her. The Doctor takes a bullet to the right heart. While defending Master Padmasambhava, he took a sword in the same spot.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor has never been to Easter Island, but has visited Portsea Island and liked its windmills. He can compress his sensory input to human normal. Aided by Houdini's teachings, the Time Lord can prevent the conduction of certain nerve impulses by placing chemical blocks at his synaptic gaps. This constricts his muscles while eliminating pain Houdini felt in similar situations.

The Doctor expels a bullet that strikes his right heart, then heals the wound with a trance Tibetan Master Padmasambhava taught him. The Doctor can read the *moai* alien scrawl, and has a book from young Ptolemy that's 2,093 years overdue.

• *Leela:* Leela's father was named Sole, her mother Neela. Her three-year-old sister Ennia was killed by a pack of horda. Leela was born a summer later, and believes that if Ennia had not died, she would not exist. Leela's blade is the one her mother used to defend Ennia. Leela won't swear on her mother's grave, indicating Neela is alive.

Leela rarely bathes and has gained weight from regular meals. She's eaten bark-skipper and horda. Her acute sense of smell cannot, like some of her tribe, distinguish human and animal blood.

Being from the future, Leela has massive resistance to disease. The Doctor can request she swear a Hunter's Promise to not kill anyone for a specified period. Her father thought her belief in the "god" Xoanon was stillborn.

• *Leela and Horace Stockwood:* The Doctor makes Leela swear that explorer Stockwood is her best friend and to always protect him.

• *The TARDIS:* The Atmosphere Monitoring Subsystem, justly or unjustly, sometimes won't let the Doctor out of the Ship. The TARDIS' force field might extend around the sailing ship *Tweed*.

Alien Races

Horda: Their stomachs make great water bags.

Alien Planets

Unnamed Alien Homeworld: The beings who spread the moai though

space had a homeworld with two moons and an expansive library. Their buildings resembled the giant heads on Easter Island.

Stuff You Need

• *Rongo-rongo:* Cipher tablet used to encrypt the alien DNA message. It contains operating instructions for the Einstein-Rosen Bridge.

• *The Doctor's keyring:* Contains keys to the following: the TARDIS (spare), a Venusian landcruiser dock, a Ford Granada, the Bank of England vault, the Exchange, Kublai Khan's Key to the World, the city of Iskenderun and Angus Bolton's family fortune.

Organizations

The Tribe of the Sevateem ("The Face of Evil"): In winter, Leela's tribe skins their enemies and wears their hides. In summer, a foe's bodies feed the animals. The Sevateem say that if you eat an enemy's brain, you gain their intelligence. They cannibalize their dead friends and family to honor them. They also eat bark moss soup.

The Sevateem believe the rival Tesh's machines could harm them if the Tesh acquire their weapons. Most Sevateem, thanks to their homeworld's harsh environment, don't live past 30. They regard metal as holy, and dislike Cryuni, the "taker of life," a term for cryogenic units. The Sevateem sing songs of life and death on occasions of victory, war, a new birth or coming of age.

Their Position of Transfer invocation transfers guilt, but is actually directions for rerouting a spaceship's control. The Prayer of Uncertainty by the Priest Heisenberg says, "That which we study and learn from, we also change." The Prayer of Landing includes the memorable line, "Strap in this is going to hurt like a bas – "

Ships

Tweed (a.k.a. Punjab): The Doctor's sailing ship was one of the last pair of frigates built by the Wadia family.

Phenomena

Einstein-Rosen Bridge: Alien wormhole designed to build up stamina for transport. If you use one, it heals your wounds. The bridges are moai-shaped.

History

The Doctor taught the playwright Eratosthenes some of his craft. The Time Lord was ejected from the staff at the library of Alexandria after he misshelved the Dead Sea Scrolls. The Doctor also traveled on the *Santa Maria*, and advised Columbus to plot his courses with an orange and a biro (Columbus didn't listen). The Doctor had breakfast with Nelson at the George in 1805, the day before Nelson's final contretemps with Napoleon at Trafalgar. The Doctor and Leela travel with naturalist and painter Marie Anne North to India to recover the TARDIS. Shortly *after* he died, John Lennon told the Doctor, "Talent borrows, genius steals."

At the End of the Day

Full of wonder and nourishment, a book that's an excellent *novel*, never mind a great "Who" book. Readers who don't pay attention accuse *Eye of Heaven* of being confusing, but that's rubbish if you simply keep your head in the ballgame. Mortimore's writing makes Leela a continual delight, a naïve fish out of water who copes beautifully and runs the whole damn pond. The whole work's enriched by a first person narrative that displays her naiveté and bloodlust, and a supporting cast that's straight out of Jules Verne.

The Shadow of Weng-Chiang

Author: David A. McIntee. BBC Missing Adventure #25. Release Date: August 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor and Romana and K9.

Travel Log

Shanghai, near the British Public Gardens, 1937.

Chronology

Between "The Stones of Blood" and "The Androids of Tara." "The Pirate Planet" was "a few weeks ago."

Summary

With three pieces of the Key to Time secure, the Doctor and Romana are perplexed when the TARDIS locks onto an errant source of chronon energy in Shanghai, 1937, since it's unlikely two Key segments would be located on the same planet ("The Stones of Blood"). While trying to locate the chronon energy, the Doctor is attacked by members of the Chinese religious group, the Tong of the Black Scorpion (from "The Talons of Weng-Chiang").

K9 traces the chronon energy to the Tong's headquarters, where the Doctor confronts Hsien-Ko, daughter of the late performer Li H'Sen Chang. Hsien-Ko, as an unborn child, was riddled with chronon energy when the Time Cabinet of Magnus Greel, the Doctor's old enemy, appeared through time. Hsien-Ko thus gaining near-immortality and the ability to teleport by riding Earth's electromagnetic ley lines. Now, as the leader of the Tong, she has used her donated blood to give them teleportation abilities.

Hsien-Ko, using her advanced intelligence, has constructed a nuclear reactor with enough power to snare Greel's Time Cabinet before its historical arrival in 1872. Such a plan will allow Hsien-Ko to punish Greel, the man who betrayed her father, plus make the zygma beam flood the world with enough chronon energy to give the Tong time-travel. However, Hsien-Ko doesn't consider that altering Greel's course will change her own history and create a temporal paradox.

K9 dispatches Hsien-Ko's servant, the restored homunculus named Mr. Sin, even as the Doctor sabotages Hsien-Ko's reactor. But the Doctor is too late, as Greel's Time Cabinet has already been diverted. However, the Doctor reaches the TARDIS and time-rams Greel's Cabinet, thus propelling it back to its proper place in 1872. This in turn charges Earth's magnetosphere with chronon energy that centers on Hsien-Ko. She disappears, trapped by her own chronon energy into a temporal paradox. The Tong are left leaderless, even as the Doctor and Romana use the TARDIS to transport and bury Hsien-Ko's reactor. The Doctor, Romana and K9 then continue their quest for the Key to Time.

Memorable Moments

Hsien-Ko has her Tong initially attack the Doctor out of "respect" for his abilities, and insists that using anything less than five guards would insult him. The tied-up Doctor drives a car with his boot. An attack by Mr. Sin makes K9 plunge out of a plane, but the Doctor snags K9 about the neck with his scarf. In a top grisly moment, Sin opens up a man's groin with a red-glowing knife. A wild and woolly Doctor/Romana/Sin wrestling match climaxes with Romana stabbing Sin in the forehead and popping his homunculus head off.

Ass-Whuppings

Mr. Sin slices and kills 13 people. Romana levers Mr. Sin's head off, then K9 blasts the evil midget's head into ash.

The Doctor get thrown through a windscreen. He also sprains his ankle. Romana also crashes, gets knocked out and takes a cut to the forehead.

Continuity

The Doctor previously defeated Magnus Greel, a mass murderer, insane fiend and time traveler, as well as his magician servant, Li H'Sen Chang, in "The Talons of Weng-Chiang." Mr. Sin was deactivated in that story, but is here restored. The Doctor and Romana are currently searching for the Key to Time segments, a task assigned to them by the White Guardian in "The Ribos Operation."

Expert thief Lucas Seyton, a.k.a. the Fallen Angel, here steals a handwritten first draft of Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet* from the Palace Theatrical Museum. He met the second Doctor four years ago in *Decalog:* "Fallen Angel."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* He hasn't used his real name for so long, he's not sure if he remembers it. Everyone at the Academy claims the Doctor is reckless.

He's never been to Hebei, but was last in Shanghai "a couple of centuries" ago in 1941. He can read Chinese script and knows a great deal about Japanese equipment and strategy. He carries a black box Geiger counter.

• *Romana:* Romana isn't great at terrestrial anthropology. Her stage name is "Romy."

• *K9 Mark II:* K9 can scan blood types. He can measure an object's genetic composition, height and weight, and carry out metallurgical tests. By paralleling his neutrino converter with a tachyon resonance filter, he can trace chronon particles. He can analyze electrical systems. He's built "more solidly than a car." Thanks to the Doctor's improved design, he can now maneuver up mountains.

• *Romana and K9 Mark I:* Romana's met the original K9, who's something of a celebrity on Gallifrey.

• *Mr. Sin* ("The Talons of Weng-Chiang"): Hsien-Ko recovered her father's deactivated sidekick from the Palace Theatrical Museum. She used new brain matter and Sin's prototype circuit to revive him.

• *Hsien-Ko:* The daughter of the great magician Li H'Sen Chang. She was still in her mother's womb when Magnus Greel's time traveling cabinet arrived and charged Hsien-Ko's embryo with chronon radiation. As the iron in her blood decays, it's polarized and grants extended life. Hsien-Ko, born in 1872, is now 65 years old, but looks about 25. The chronon radiation, which rendered her sterile, allows her to teleport along Earth's ley lines.

Hsien-Ko was highly educated. From Greel's notes, she built a nuclear reactor. She also had the blueprints to Greel's organic distillation vessel (from "Talons"). Through time travel, Hsien-Ko hoped to stop the Japanese from invading Manchuria and to run with the dinosaurs.

• *The Doctor, Hsien-Ko and Magnus Greel:* Hsien-Ko has respect for the Doctor, believing that his intercession allowed her father to retain face in death. Conversely, Hsien-Ko intends to torment the parasitic Greel with just enough distilled life energy to keep him alive, but no more.

• *Li H'Sen Chang* ("Talons"): The Doctor's late enemy-turned-ally modeled his house upon a place he where stayed in France: Vaux-le-Vicomte, built by Louis Quatorze's finance minister.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS protects its travelers against chronon feedback.

Places to Go

• *The Palace Theatre* ("Talons"): An unscrupulous owner (undoubtedly *not* the good Mr. Jago from "Talons") burned the Palace Theatre down to collect on the insurance money. The Palace Theatrical Museum, located on the site of the Palace Theatre, has a private viewing gallery with famed theatre memorabilia from all over the world, including a Wurlitzer Organ, possibly the first ever made.

• *The Jade Emperor Temple:* Site in T'ai Shan where Magnus Greel's Time Cabinet arrived in 1872, saturating the rock with chronon radiation.

Stuff You Need

• *The Key to Time* ("The Key to Time" season): Individual segments are charged with chronon energy. A sufficient supply of the energy, such as Hsien-Ko herself, can fool the tracer.

• *Magnus Greel's Time Cabinet* ("Talons"): Based on the theory of Findecker's Folly, a double-nexus particle uses a zygma beam to push Greel's Cabinet back in time. As the beam interacts with the Earth's electromagnetic field, it produces massive discharges of chronon radiation. The area affected depends on the relative length of the zygma beam.

Organizations

Tong of the Black Scorpion: One of China's top criminal organizations, second only to the Lascars in the Si-Fan. Like many Tongs and Triads, it was initially formed to resist the Manchu Dynasty of the 17th century. The Tong hails from the western mountains of Sichuan, and commit banditry and other crimes for the god Weng-Chiang, also known as Sung-Chiang, the god of thieves and criminals. The Tong used the five-clawed dragon as its symbol, and renewed loyalty to Weng-Chiang by cutting open their palms and letting their blood drip into an offering bowl.

Time Travel

• Normally, everyone would have forgotten Hsien-Ko when her life became a redundant timeline, but the zygma beam, not being a closed loop, only affected her with its chronons.

• *Chronon Radiation:* Its displacement shows up in magnetites, silicates and ferric salts. An overdose of chronon radiation can cause sterility.

• *Hutchinson-Gilford's Syndrome:* Victims of this have accelerated metabolisms and age to death before they reach puberty.

Phenomena

• *Ley Lines (a.k.a. Dragon Paths, lung mei, The Paths of the Dragon):* Term for lines of force running along Earth's veins of telluric current. Ley lines, based on electricity, can be bent by iron deposits or water.

• *The Universe:* Has a vibrational frequency of zero.

History

• The Doctor suggested the great strategist Sun Tzu make the first rule in *The Art of War*, "It's a greater honor to defeat the enemy without resorting to battle," but Sun Tzu didn't listen. The masked vigilante Yan Cheh, actually a nightclub owner named Woo, has an original manuscript of the work.

• The Doctor tried to tell Louis Quatorze that the minister's brother was head of the Compagnie du Saint Sacrement, but Quatorze wouldn't listen. The Doctor learned to fly from famed pilot Charles Lindbergh, but not how to land. He learned sword fighting from Cleopatra's bodyguard.

At the End of the Day

A classic case of too much murder and mayhem without a house to put it in. Mr. Sin becomes the evil movie puppet "Chucky," pulling murder scene after murder scene without merit, and the numerous action scenes – which might work better on film – make the text heavy and thick. An over emphasis on continuity, brought because this requires elements of "Talons," even as the Doctor and Romana look for the Key to Time, also bogs *Shadow* down. Much as ambition should be praised, "Talons" is so firmly treasured in the minds of fans, it was probably better left alone.

The Romance of Crime

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin Missing Adventures #6. Release Date: January 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor, Romana and K9.

Travel Log

The Rock of Judgement and hovering orbit over Planet Eleven, Uva Beta Uva system, circa 2380.

Chronology

Between "Creature from the Pit" and "Nightmare of Eden."

Summary

The Randomizer deposits the TARDIS in the Uva Beta Uva system, on an asteroid called the "Rock of Judgement" where the system's worst criminals are tried and executed. The Doctor and Romana encounter Planet Five police agent Spiggot, who tells them he's investigating the murders of miners from Planet Eleven. Their crushed bodies resemble the exclusive *modus operandi* of the telepathic killer Xais, who was executed three years ago.

However, Xais has survived as a mental force, residing in a helicon mask carved by artist Menlove Stokes before Xais' execution. With her immense telepathic powers, Xais enthralls security officer Margo as a host body and summons her criminal associates, the Nisbett brothers and their Ogron servants. Xais has deceived the brothers into thinking Planet Eleven has lucrative belzite deposits, when in fact it's rich in helicon. The insane Xais hopes to generate millions of duplicates of herself through the helicon and kill humanity.

Xais-Margo pulls the Rock out of orbit and sends it crashing to Planet Eleven. The Doctor and Romana hitch a ride; K9 follows in the TARDIS. On Planet Eleven, Xais discovers that her ex-partner, High Archon Pyerpoint, has already mined the helicon. Pyerpoint plans to force Xais to show him how immortality may be obtained from the metal. All hell breaks

loose as Xais decides she no longer needs the Nisbetts' help and kills Eddie Nisbett. But when Charlie Nisbett shoots Margo's body, Xais possesses Romana and Pyerpoint flees with her.

Convinced that Rock administrator Pyerpoint is "Sentinel," the mysterious criminal who betrayed him to the police, an outraged Charlie Nisbett tries to destroy the mining bases, but Xais' sabotage explodes his ship. Romana throws off Xais' possession as Xais telepathically triggers the stockpiled helicon. But with Pyerpoint killed by a wayward mining machine, Xais is deprived a host and cannot properly transfer herself to the helicon. The helicon expands with Xais' presence and literally pours over the planet, forming a malleable shell. The Doctor and company escape in the TARDIS and watch as the helicon transforms into the face of Xais, who's utterly trapped. The Doctor returns Spiggot to Planet Five with a formula that destroys helicon. By slipping the TARDIS forward 50 years, the Doctor confirms Spiggot has used the formula to kill Xais, as Planet Eleven is now only a hunk of rock.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor plays a game (Monopoly) against Romana and K9 and, as always, starts losing. After our heroes walk through the Ogron patrols by claiming to be Charlie Nisbett's friends, Nisbett tells the Ogrons to kill anyone who says they're his friend.

When Stokes meets the fair Romana, he soothes his bald head to arrange hair that's not there. The Doctor considers taking his hat off as the Nisbett's ship explodes, but it's in his pocket. He considers that it would take too long to take it out, put it on and take it off again.

Sex and Spirits

Stokes falls for Romana, but constantly goofs her name as "Ramona."

Ass-Whuppings

Xais psionically squishes Planet Eleven miners. In a flashback, Xais recalls wiping out miners who killed a group of Cereed mutants. Xais' mental form dies with the helicon on Planet Eleven.

Xais throws Romana down a flight of stairs, rendering her unconscious. High Archon Pyerpoint's gas trap also takes Romana down.

Continuity

The Ogrons appeared in "Day of the Daleks" and "Frontier in Space." In another gaff on K9's part (a la "The Stones of Blood"), he erases the words "I told you so" from his phraseology bank.

Menlove Stokes reappears in Robert's *The Well-Mannered War* and becomes a supporting cast member in the Benny New Adventures.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor reads fast enough to finish a stack of lawbooks in one night. He can survive a pain level that would kill a human. He regards Neanderthals as charming people. He knows a formula that destroys helicon molecules, provided the beam is directed at a convex angle.

• *Romana:* Romana can estimate time passed to the second. She came by her name at the Prydon Academy. She has knowledge of high-range energy weapons. When possessed by Xais, Romana conserved her strength and retook control at crucial moments. The Doctor trained her in telepathic defenses.

• *The Doctor and Romana:* K9 estimates the Doctor is 2.495 times more likely to need assistance than Romana outside the TARDIS.

• *K9 Mark II:* K9 has a trillion-plus strainer memory wafers and a compatible sensor array. He can locate and destroy bugging devices. He can assist with autopsies. His innards are an amazing hodgepodge of circuits. His sensors switch off if he detects no relevance or future usefulness of a conversation. His laser can penetrate steel, but only slowly burns through megalanium.

• *Menlove Stokes:* At age 43, Menlove Stokes is completely bald, like an agitated egg. He's extremely arrogant about his questionable artistic talent. Seven years ago, he became artist in residence on the Rock after his father, a planetary councilor, died. The Doctor and Romana don't think much of his work.

• *Xais:* A mutant psionic, Xais was the self-proclaimed princess of the Guaal Territories and last of the Ugly Mutants. She was a genius, a terrorist and a killer of 2,000 humans before her 19th birthday.

She was born on Cereed and survived a mutant purge of Vanossos. She helped set up mutant settlements on Planet Six, but killed miners from Planet Five when they encroached on her territory. She then struck back at Planet Five and murdered even more people.

Xais' mutant abilities granted her super-strength and super-intelligence, with knowledge of computers and bomb making. Her fierce power drove

her insane and gave her an irrational hatred of humans.

Xais had the unique ability to copy the contents her of mind – emotions, memories and personality – into liquid helicon. She could then exert mental influence and force someone to put on the mask, possessing him or her. Theoretically, she could have replicated herself a million times through the helicon, but needed a living host to achieve this process.

• *The TARDIS and K9 Mark II:* K9 is fully integrated into TARDIS' systems and can operate its flight by remote control. He cannot estimate the TARDIS' number of relational components.

Alien Races

Ogrons: Ogrons are now the butt of jokes throughout the human empire. They're lousy shots and make appalling butlers. They can be purchased by auction on Ghelluris. They developed massive frames to compensate against their home planet's immense gravity.

Alien Planets

• *Braah:* The Ogron homeworld, it's a massive gray ball some light years from the central spaceways.

Braah's climate also went through a series of rapid changes that confused the evolutionary paths of the Ogrons, giving them a mixture of primate and carnivore instincts.

• *Uva Beta Uva System:* Located near the center of the Milky Way, it has a star with a torroidal elliptic and 14 planets.

Places to Go

• *The Rock of Judgement:* Court and punishment asteroid in the Uva Beta Uva system, located between Planet Two and Planet Three. It opened circa 2340. Eighty percent of those sent to the Rock are convicted, and 95 percent of those are executed in the particle reverser chamber.

• *The Kathok Empire:* A fictional creation of scrap merchants in the Fourth Quadrant who pawned rare "Kathok" spaceships to stupid people.

Stuff You Need

Helicon: A metal found on satellites or small planets. It has low conductivity and low strength. Most people deem it almost worthless, save for making sculptures or mixing with Ball's Ore to line pipes.

History

In 2230, humans came to the Uva Beta Uva system, terraformed the fifth planet and named it New Earth. When Planet Three was discovered to be a solid giant composed of the precious belzite, New Earth's legal rights were rescinded under the Intergalactic Mineral Exploitation Act of 2217. The system was overrun with miners, but 150 years later, the belzite was gone and Planet Three was ripped apart. Planet Five remained successful until the galactic recession hit.

At the End of the Day

Hilarious and very clean. Roberts expertly copies the TV fourth Doctor as a wide-eyed, hyperactive Bohemian who fights monsters and psychotic villains by the seat of his pants, with loads of comedy. The beauty of *The Romance of Crime* lies more in the character interaction than the plot, turning the whole book into a colorful, memorable moment with choice stabs at bureaucracy ("Romana, do you realize we're surrounded by doped civil servants?"). To not like it is almost to not like air.

The English Way of Death

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin Missing Adventure #20. Release Date: March 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor, Romana and K9.

Travel Log

Aldwych, London, summer, 1930.

Chronology

Immediately after *The Romance of Crime*.

Summary

On a wayward visit to London, 1930, the Doctor merely wants to return some library books before they're overdue, but responsible Romana follows a chronon trail from an unshielded time corridor. She thus locates a Circle of time travelers, led by the eccentric Percival Closed, living out their retirement in peaceful, clean 1930. But unknown to them, control of their time corridor has been usurped by Zodaal, an alien scientist who once bonded with radmium and became a gaseous entity.

The evil Zodaal, with an insatiable hunger for organic matter, especially brains, sets about possessing people, creating a zombie army from bits of his essence. Zodaal plans to destroy Earth with a sonic stimulator, then escape in a shuttle and fully stabilize himself as a corporeal being.

The Doctor sends Romana and K9 to shut down Percival's time corridor, even as he monitors the effects of Zodaal's seismic tests. But Romana and K9 are attacked by a zombie and escape into the time corridor. They arrive on Zodaal's spaceship, where Zodaal has imprisoned his gaseous "good half," the essence of Zodaal's inhibitions and humor that he felt were holding him back. Romana's group escapes to Earth and unites Zodaal, hoping the restoration of his conscience and humor will make him less of a delusional maniac. It does. Zodaal becomes a delusional maniac with a sense of humor.

In a desperate struggle between Zodaal's zombies and the Circle, the

Doctor jury-rigs a kinetograph and with it, Romana delivers an electric charge into Zodaal's primary body. Zodaal struggles to right himself as the Doctor finds Zodaal's intended final host, the Contessa Julia di Straglione. Unable to save Julia, who's directly hard-wired into Zodaal's escape ship, the Doctor accedes to her request and places a pistol in her hands. As Zodaal fires the take-off sequence, Julia shoots herself. Without an organic being to control, the gaseous Zodaal is left traveling, imprisoned and helpless.

On Earth, the Doctor reverses the polarity of Zodaal's seismic machine and stops it. As Percival's Circle rejoices in their survival, the Doctor, Romana and K9 take their leave when nobody's looking.

Memorable Moments

As Romana comes out in her elegant jacket, waistcoat and baggy trousers, K9 wolf whistles. K9 is displeased crawling into his basket. The wide-eyed, Bohemian Doctor is constantly mistaken for a painter.

Sex and Spirits

There are a frightful number of double entendres. The Doctor to Percy: "The danger comes from using somebody else's old equipment." And the Doctor on Zodaal's escape capsule: "You're going to climb in there and shoot off, then…"

Ass-Whuppings

K9 blasts an automobile and chars the Zodaal zombie inside. In a top grisly moment, a skeleton, its eye sockets pulsing faintly green, clamps onto a young firefighter and bursts his head, like a cabbage being sliced in half, then proceeds to eat his brains.

An earthquake's shockwave roars into the Doctor, knocking him into a wall head first. Zodaal's toxic core assaults the Doctor.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* On June 5, 1930, the Doctor checked out the books *Febrile Diseases* and *Swine Judging for Beginners* from the public library on Shoe Lane, and not even he's sure why. K9 calculates that of the Doctor's attempts to take a holiday on Earth, 97 percent involve mortal peril and 98 percent violent action. He carries a transmission locator that detects

chronon particles. He can build a seismic monitoring system and play bridge. He claims to occasionally be a philosopher. The Doctor can detect the concentration of immuno-agents in blood by the smell. He can go for a week without a meal.

The Doctor hasn't heard of Zodaal. He's been to Wapping, but not to the planet Phryxus. He's defeated enemies named the Hypnotron, the Aquamen and the Steel Octopus.

• *K9 Mark II:* K9's favorite hobby is absorbing information from the TARDIS data bank. He can trace cross-temporal signals, but can't jump. He has a cartographic record of the United Kingdom. It would take him three-and-a-half weeks to roll 62 miles from Central London to Nutchurch, not counting recharging time.

K9's laser lance can burn out a car engine, but can only delay Zodaal's zombies. He can pick electronic locks. His data patent was registered on October 3, 4998. His brain possesses alternator interfaces for use by visiting intelligences, and he has a poetry section. K9 can reconfigure his linguistic bank to match different eras. He can send a transceiver signal and absorb energy through his antennae. The Doctor checks K9's systems with crossword clues.

• *Zodaal:* As a scientist who specialized in control mechanisms that enslaved the minds of lesser anthropomorphs, Zodaal was imprisoned by the elders of Phryxus for unethical conduct. He escaped in a prototype time capsule but was trapped in a primitive time corridor. To escape, Zodaal adapted his capsule's technology to bond with radmium and became a gaseous being. He used a special filter to remove his inhibitions and humor and left them on the ship, while the raw core of his evil being escaped into the corridor to consume living hosts. Electricity disabled Zodaal.

• *Percival Closed:* About 47 years old, Bureau agent Percival Closed arrived on Earth and, badly seeking to fit in, named himself after "P. Closed," from a "Position Closed" sign at a bank. He married writer Felicia Chater.

• *The TARDIS:* In the last 17 years, the TARDIS has only obtained a lousy, mean efficiency rating of 39 percent.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Compared to humans, the arrangement of a Time Lord's brain lobes are totally at odds, but the cerebellum and links to the nervous system are "tidier."

• *Phryxians:* Bipedal humanoids, wolf-like in nature. Phryxians have enlarged craniums. Their self-renewing cell structure allows them to live for millennia.

• *Zodaal's zombies:* As a gaseous being, Zodaal could spread bits of himself into dead human bodies and animate them. Such zombies smelled like rotten fruit, didn't require moisture and radiated a light green mist. Only Zodaal's core had enough energy to directly kill.

Alien Planets

Phryxus: Located in the region called NGC4258.

Stuff You Need

Radmium: Foreign to our galaxy, found only in the core of double-spiraled stars.

Organizations

The Bureau and the Circle: The futuristic Bureau that employs Percival Closed stumbled upon an old time corridor and used it as a way for retired people to gain peace in the past during their twilight years. Percy was their agent for 12 years. Percy's Circle in 1930 London has 14 members and is forbidden to keep futuristic technology or in-breed. Percy distributes allowances from his investments. Circle members protect themselves with high levels of immuno-agents.

Ships

Zodaal's ship: Powered by the core of a double-spiraled black star.

Time Travel

The Equation of Rassilon allows for travel through a time corridor. "It is and isn't" a scientific formula.

History

• The Doctor has been to Okushiri, 1720, and Peru, 1910. He knew architect Sir Thomas Cubitt, Hannibal, and played bridge with Cleopatra.

• Felicia Chater created fictional detective Inspector Phillip Cawston of Scotland Yard. Her many mystery books included *Along Came a Spider,*

And Frightened Miss Muffet Away and *Have You Any Wool*.

• The collapse of a star, 40 times the size of Sol, devastated four developing civilizations in 365,509. Millions of years later, the neighboring Phryxians thought to harness the resulting anomaly for travel, using radmium as a bonding agent. But the imprisoned Zodaal escaped and stole the prototype travel capsule. The time corridor subsequently went unused by the Phryxians, and what became of the race is unknown.

At the End of the Day

A hysterical, engaging masterwork that will make you laugh like few other "Who" novels. Roberts' subsequent *The Well-Mannered War* is probably his most polished work, but *The English Way of Death* is his funniest, with the Doctor and Percy bumbling through everything. Although there's much death and drama, it plays like "A Midsummer Night's Dream," with the Lord of Misrule separating everyone from their true lover until the book's end. Overall, a book with an appropriate sense of self-importance with hardly a page out of place, and with something for "Who" newcomers and veterans alike.

The Well-Mannered War

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin Missing Adventure #33. Release Date: April 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The fourth Doctor, Romana and K9.

Travel Log

Barclow, end of the Humanian era, circa ten billion A.D.

Chronology

Between "Shada" and "The Leisure Hive."

Summary

The TARDIS nearly shoots out of the Time Spiral and makes an emergency landing on Barclow, a planetoid near the end of the universe. For 129 years, a faction of Chelonians and human colonists from Metralubit have disputed Barclow's ownership and await a committee's ruling. In the meantime, the human and Chelonian factions have become quite friendly and sociable, in a well-mannered war where no shots are fired.

On Metralubit, Romana re-meets artist Menlove Stokes, who spent millions of years in cryo-sleep to gain attention for his artwork by being "dead." Meanwhile, intelligent insects possess human and Chelonian officers, sparking a real war. The Doctor and Romana find evidence that Earth flies have evolved into a gestalt named the Hive, a force that routinely prompts wars on Metralubit to generate bodies to feed on.

As the Hive besieges Barclow, the Doctor makes a fake broadcast that fools the Hive into thinking the Metralubit transmat is important. As the Hive comes in range, the transmat converts the gestalt into an intangible state. The Doctor, Romana and K9 retreat to the TARDIS, intending to tow the Hive into a black hole. But as the Doctor dematerializes, he discovers Stokes, an agent of the cosmic Black Guardian, has programmed the TARDIS to take him to a promised professorship on the planet Dellah, 26th century.

The Black Guardian, angered because the Doctor previously bested him

for the Key to Time, appears and admits that he manipulated the Chelonians, Stokes and more – all to bring the Doctor to this point. If the Doctor materializes the TARDIS, the Hive will consume Dellah and the Doctor will forever be an agent of chaos.

With a wave, the Guardian dismisses Stokes to his professorship. The Doctor and Romana, with no choice, foil the Guardian by activating the TARDIS' emergency unit and remove themselves, the TARDIS and the Hive, possibly forever, out of the Universe and into a realm of fiction.

Memorable Moments

A tea lady serving soldiers in a well-mannered battlefield totally evokes the wackiness of "Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy." Admiral Dolne keeps telling a dead and possessed Viddeas to take a bath, as he reeks like cheese. The final bit with the Doctor and Romana leaving the Universe and certainly the Virgin license is one of the most symbolic book moments.

Sex and Spirits

K9 innocently comments on his repair schedule: "Only the Doctor Master and Mistress Romana are qualified to poke this unit." Stokes wonders if Romana would like to turn in with him (Her terse response: "No."). The Doctor quickly kisses Romana on the cheek as they depart the Universe.

Ass-Whuppings

K9 shoots down three Femdroids. His ray tears apart the dead Admiral Dolne, who's animated by the Hive.

K9's laser, sensors and back-up systems are damaged in a rockfall. The Doctor gets a dislocated shoulder in the Chelonians' web of death.

Continuity

The Doctor previously used the TARDIS' emergency removal unit in "The Mind Robber." The Doctor and Romana foiled the Black Guardian's plans for the Key to Time in "The Armageddon Factor." Communication crystals used by the Black Guardian ("Mawdryn Undead") are made from the same substance as the Key to Time, a material that borders on magic. The Black Guardian can only contact lower primates when their brains are knocked into an altered state ("Mawdryn Undead").

Elegant Romana dresses in one of the third Doctor's outfits.

The Doctor, Romana and K9 met Menlove Stokes in *The Romance of Crime*. Afterward, police agent Spiggot wrote an account of their adventures and made himself a hero. Stokes sued for being written out but lost. At the Black Guardian's request, Stokes entered cryosleep and was revived in the far-flung future. Stokes becomes a professor at St. Oscar's University and a supporting character in the Benny New Adventures line.

The Black Guardian observed many of the Doctor's adventures, including those in *The Sorcerer's Apprentice*, *Twilight of the Gods*, *Goth Opera* and *Timewyrm: Revelation*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor can put an open cup of tea in his pocket, then take it out again. He also carries *So You're Caught in a Rocket Attack* and gold dust. Some of his best friends are blobs of gas held together in exoskeletal shells.

• *Romana:* Her knowledge of intergalactic history surpasses the Doctor's. Her hearts beat 60 times per minute. She can resist conditioning by reciting her 2337 times table.

• *The Doctor and Romana:* Romana thinks but would never admit that the Doctor's an incredibly resourceful and intelligent person.

• *K9 Mark II:* K9 can amplify his voice, has ethical programming and can broadcast radio waves. His fluff defenses are fully functional. K9 attempted to save a Metralubit premier candidate from a bombing attack, thus becoming eligible to run himself.

• *Menlove Ereward Stokes:* Born circa 2542, Menlove Stokes became a St. Oscar's professor in 2593. In an ironic twist that mirrors the cancellation of Virgin's "Doctor Who" license, he never thinks about the Doctor, Romana or the Black Guardian again.

• *The Hive:* A group consciousness of super-evolved Earth flies that with effort motivate dead bodies by stimulating the brain's pre-frontal lobes. The Hive's core is called the Onememory. They coat dead bodies with black goo to preserve them for incubation. When combined, the Hive was asteroid-sized. The Doctor, in the past or future, burnt the Hive's feeding grounds in the Zirbollis sector. It is said the Hive fled before "the Time Fleets" and grew stronger in deep space.

• *The Black Guardian:* Don't pretend to understand the Black Guardian's ways, but he influenced Stokes to enter cryosleep, leading to his arrival on Metralubit. The Guardian made the Femdroids invent the concept of

constitutional privilege. He influenced the Chelonian 70th column, led by General Jafrid, to pretend to want Barclow in exchange for a future retirement on Metralubit. All of this and more led to the Doctor's final dilemma with the Hive.

• *The TARDIS:* The 14th TARDIS bathroom has been dripping non-stop for 300 years, and the Doctor, unable to find his washers, put a temporal containment field around it. Ninety-three percent of TARDIS landings made without the Randomizer have gotten the crew into trouble. The TARDIS can tow objects in an interstitial state, such as the Hive. The Doctor can suspend the TARDIS in the Time Vortex indefinitely, but cannot alter coordinates once the Ship has dematerialized.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Study of the later Humanian era is forbidden by the Academy as being outside the Gallifreyan sphere of influence (this was partly suggested in "Frontios").

• *Chelonians:* Curried whango, a Chelonian drink, can kill humans. Chelonians don't daydream. The Chelonian 70th column, led by General Jafrid, was stationed on Barclow. They must be long-lived, as Jafrid regards 129 years as a reasonable time to make good on his deal with the Black Guardian.

• *Femdroids:* Robot servitors on Metralubit, designed from Menlove Stokes' memories of K9.

Alien Planets

Metralubit: According to Finnickan's Planets, Metralubit's a remote Tellurian colony in the Fostrix galaxy, settled in the 58th segment of time. The people there recovered the cryo-pod of Menlove Stokes and probed his brain, advancing their technology from his choppy knowledge. Metralubit normally holds two million people, but the Femdroids transmatted most of them to Regus V, two systems over. Metron is Metralubit's capital city. The law stipulates that anyone who tries to save a candidate's life must stand for office in their place.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Cannot work on psionic wavelengths.

• *The Web of Death:* Chelonian torture device with multiple strands that

tighten slowly and wrench you apart.

History

• The Chelonian expansionist period ended millennia ago. At some point, hatcheries were formed from the Great Arm of Auique to the crystal quasars of Menolot. A splinter Chelonian group, ancestors of Jafrid's men, abandoned the empire before it fell.

• Artist Menlove Stokes led the forefront of the essentialist movement of the late 26th century.

• Every 2,000 years, the Hive built up Metralubit societies that included the Helduce and Yelphaj civilizations, which engineered wars to feed on the cadavers.

At the End of the Day

We toast with red wine and close Virgin's MA series, spending a final moment with old friends. Roberts again blesses *The Well-Mannered War* with an episodic feel, wryly satirizing the election process and piecing together a very behind-the-scenes story that's possibly the cleverest "Who" book. It has the same comedic/dramatic elements that made *The Romance of Crime* and *The English Way of Death* great, only even more refined. The final ironic twist, with the Doctor and Romana leaving for a realm of fiction (Romana: "We'd just be characters, not real people") seals the deal and makes this one of the best "Who" novels.

Fifth Doctor Stories

Cold Fusion

Author: Lance Parkin. Virgin Missing Adventure #29. Release Date: December 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor, Adric, Tegan and Nyssa; the seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

An unnamed colony, during Earth's Empire.

Chronology

For the fifth Doctor, a few days after "Castrovalva." For the seventh, between *Return of the Living Dad* and *The Death of Art*.

Summary

Mere days after the Doctor's regeneration, a mysterious energy surge in the Time Vortex grounds the TARDIS on a frosty Earth colony. The Doctor investigates the planet's ruling Scientifica and discovers a capsule with an emaciated female corpse. The subject, who's clearly met the Doctor before, regenerates and gets nicknamed "Patience."

Two threats emerge. Patience's wounded prototype TARDIS, called "the Machine," damaged the Time Vortex with its arrival. Unless repaired, the Vortex breach could give the Universe the equivalent of a heart attack.

At the same time, the seventh Doctor and his companions are investigating the Ferutu, magic-using Time Lords from an alternate reality where Gallifrey was destroyed. The Ferutu storm the colony, and Adjudicator Provost-General Medford, a member of the Earth-protecting Unitatus, believes Gallifrey's Time Lords are the real invasion force and stockpiles the Machine with fusion bombs. The fifth Doctor, mistakenly thinking the fusion bombs are deactivated, agrees to send the Machine back to Gallifrey. With Patience's help, the Machine begins its journey to

Gallifrey, thus repairing the Vortex damage.

However, Medford decides the two Time Lords are still liabilities. He shoots Patience through the head and as the Doctor holds her broken body, as she fades away.

With impeccable timing, the seventh Doctor arrives to aid his younger self. If the Machine and its bombs destroy Gallifrey, the Ferutu's timeline will live. If Gallifrey survives, the Ferutu are doomed. Thus, the Doctors imprison a Ferutu group with a rune, and asks them to hold the Machine immobile in the Vortex, thus balancing possibilities and allowing both the Gallifrey and Ferutu timestreams to live. The Ferutu foolishly agree.

As the machinistic seventh Doctor secretly planned, the Machine travels back on its previous time track and collides with itself. The older Machine vaporizes, and the younger Machine performs its original crash to the colony. With Gallifrey saved, the Ferutu and their timeline vanish, save for the few protected by the Doctors' rune. The fifth Doctor promises to free them, but knows he's already broken his promise, horrified by the violent actions of his future self. The Ferutu, knowing that they can never be freed, lest they cease to exist, predict the Doctor will meet Patience again.

Later, the fifth Doctor prepares to retrieve his companions and realizes his older self must have known what was going to happen. At a prearranged signal, Roz knocks the blond Doctor out and the seventh Doctor's party departs.

Memorable Moments

The Doctors find they *each* reversed the polarity of the neutron flow on the fusion bombs, and the damn things are active.

The fifth Doctor has a premonition with blood on his hands, foreshadowing the seventh Doctor's defeat of the Ferutu, and also symbolizing the death of Patience. The fifth Doctor finally realizes the elder Doctor used the fifth Doctor's own memories to destroy the Ferutu. Roz, on the little Doctor's signal, knocks the fifth Doctor out.

Sex and Spirits

A blustering Nyssa catches Chris coming out of the shower ("I'm the maid. My friend says you aren't Australian!"). Nyssa innocently asks Chris up to her room to apologize and ends up slapping him. They later pretend to be newlyweds and lip-mash. Chris tries to have his way with Tegan, but she douses him with champagne. Chris later shows Tegan his operation scars:

"pink and hairless." And there's the Doctor and Patience, a unique mix of sexuality without words or actions.

The seventh Doctor orders a Dexheimer Spatlese Radecke, a synthetic wine.

Ass-Whuppings

The Ferutu snatch an instant and eliminate the 20,000 people in the Third Fleet, plus Skybase One. The *Ark Royal*'s crew of 2,000 each has their throats personally slit. In a top grisly moment, Roz accidentally beheads a technician. Roz knocks out the fifth Doctor twice, and also knees him in the groin. An Adjudicator shoots and wounds Chris.

Continuity

Between "The Deadly Assassin" and "The Keeper of Traken," the Master nearly devastated the constellation of Mandusus with a Key to Time segment. He also entered into a pact with the Embodiment of Gris ("The Daleks' Master Plan"). Tegan has seen "Blake's Seven." The seventh Doctor's sad eyes reflect Adric's young death in "Earthshock."

The Infinity Doctors – sorry to blow it for you – reveals Patience to be the wife of Omega ("The Three Doctors") – and the Doctor. Suggestions about the Doctor and Susan's origins are answered in *Lungbarrow*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor (general):* The Doctor has more than one stomach and a body temperature of 15 degrees. His blood's primary agent isn't hemoglobin, but carries oxygen better. He was born at Otherstide through the Loom of the House of Lungbarrow in Southern Gallifrey, and has 45 cousins. Someone named "Satthralope" smacked him so hard he could hardly walk.

Much of the Doctor's memory was lost in his second regeneration. He remembers being old, when there weren't old people any more, and walking through the cloister with a knobbled stick as Capitol burned. A strange woman begged him to save her grandchild because the Doctor wore her husband's ring (these images are clarified in *Lungbarrow*).

It's again established that the young blond cricketer is the fifth Doctor, while the little man with the umbrella is the seventh. Zodin ("The Five Doctors") supposedly erased the Doctor's mind with mind rubbers, but it

apparently didn't take.

• *The Fifth Doctor:* Says the TARDIS has "never" locked him out.

• *The Seventh Doctor:* A Doctor-device can pick up the telemetry of military transponder signals. Chocolate Hob Nobs are his favorite kind of biscuit. He acts like a grandfather around Adric.

• *The Fifth and Seventh Doctors:* The seventh Doctor says his younger self is "prone to suicidal acts of selfless heroism," and asks Roz to knock him out at a pre-arranged tap of his nose.

• *Adric:* Has little experience rock-climbing. He wears Adjudicator armor for part of this story.

• *Tegan:* She has a "lovely" pair of moles, just above her left –

• *Roz Forrester:* Her stun gun is keyed to her thumbprint. She distrusts the fifth Doctor because he's too trustworthy.

• *Chris Cwej:* Chris' eyes are blue and he knows Adric's fate.

• *Patience:* When the Doctor and Adric first find Patience, she's skeletal, 5' 6", brown-haired with green eyes. Freckles speckle her shoulderblades and a birthmark highlights her ankle. Patience's regenerated body has blonde hair, blue eyes and full red lips. In human terms, she looks early 30s.

She suffered some memory loss, and has been alive for a mind-bogglingly long time. She was born of Blyledge, one of the Senior Houses of Glorious Gallifrey. At one time, she had 13 children, the firstborn being a son. Patience remembers her husband and her eldest son, plus her name and that of the Doctor. The term TARDIS was coined after her time.

• *The Doctor and Patience:* Despite the regeneration – her first – Patience has only one heart, plus many organs, blood, hormones and pheromones that are vastly different from the Doctor's. Also, her DNA was about as far from his as a human's from a chimp. The Ferutu promise the Doctor he'll see her again.

• *Patience's Children:* The Doctor scans Patience's memory and views that in a walled quadrangle, "our youngest children play in the courtyard," says the Doctor, correcting it with "their." Patience's firstborn was a male Cardinal. His father and grandfather sat on the Supreme Council. Soldiers exterminated Patience's natural-spawned, unborn grandchild and perhaps her children as well.

• *Patience's Husband(s):* He changed bodies at least once, with his latter one longer and hairier body with curly blond hair and a beard. He was one of the first Gallifreyans to enter the Time Vortex, hailing from a family of

explorers. Patience says her husband only recently returned from an expedition and married her the same day. The Doctor says the Time Lords honor her husband, but don't even know his real name.

• *The Doctor's TARDIS:* The Cloisters are among the oldest parts of the TARDIS – everything else grew around them. The Ship can lock down its controls to stop travel through a wounded Time Vortex.

• *TARDISes:* Two Time Lords can mentally fly a wounded TARDIS via remote control. TARDISes are grown in space, away from Gallifrey, to prevent time pollution. Stattenheim signals broadcast along Eye of Harmony time contours, so TARDIS remote control works even from across the Universe.

• *The Machine*: Enormous. It fills an entire cavern. It uses a language with 10 million individual letters, and belonged to Patience's husband. Sadly, it's smaller on the inside than out. The control sphere morphs into a small tree.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* After the Pythia's curse of sterility (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*) and the formation of Gallifreyan Looms, the Time Lords exterminated any natural born Gallifreyans in favor of the Loom-born. Common ivy doesn't affect Time Lords. Their minds and bodies can't stand the "stresses" of regeneration more than 12 times. They frequently spend their last years in meditation, contemplating the state of timelessness that lies ahead. Yet, the Doctor implies he "has a choice" on when to croak, because even the lowliest acolyte can keep himself alive by sheer will.

A lobe at the back of the head, either the lindal gland or the hippocampus, regulates short-term memory. Time Lords excelled at entrelacement, thoughts and conversations expressed in million-letter alphabets. The presence of other Time Lords may trigger a wounded Time Lord's regeneration.

• *Trakenites* ("The Keeper of Traken"): Don't need as much sleep as humans.

• *Ferutu:* Powerful telekinetics and time-weavers. Working in concert, entire populations can restructure matter on a galactic scale. Alone, they're petty conjurers. Their timestream was erased, but the surviving, immortal Ferutu will remain trapped on the unnamed planet by the Doctors' rune, eventually drifting helplessly once the planet's sun goes supernova.

• *Shlimans:* A shark-looking race to whom medallions are important in

various funeral customs.

Alien Planets

• *Gallifrey:* Isn't listed in the Imperial Datanet.

• *Unnamed Earth Colony:* This world, 107.9 million miles from its star, has 98 percent Earth gravity, a slightly thinner atmosphere, slightly higher radiation count, a 413-day year and a local day of 16.9 hours. The unnamed colony was first discovered when the hyperdrive on a science ship misjumped. It thrived until the minerals palladium and jabolite ran out. The poles are frozen elements and nitrogen. The rather acidic planet has a low atmosphere, little soil and poor drainage.

• *Serenity:* A Trakenite colony survived here. It's regarded as a "verdant garden world" where people live in peace and relative isolation.

Stuff You Need

• *Fusion Bombs:* Each can kill 50 million people. Eight such bombs will shatter every solid planet in a solar system and ignite the gas giants. Set off in chain reaction, the bombs' blast area increases logarithmically. To disarm, reverse the polarity of the neutron flow – *once*.

• *Transmats:* Injuries cannot be properly replicated; so if you're hurt, don't go if you want to live.

Organizations

• *UNIT and the Unitatus:* Unitatus developed from UNIT as an organization using military personnel and scientists to defend Earth from alien attacks, acting even over national and governmental loyalties. The late Admiral Januscek Dattani was a member, as is Provost-General Medford. Unitatus maintains its own fleet of spaceships. By the 30th century, Unitatus had lost most of its support and been reduced to charity events.

• *Adjudicators:* Adjudicator Provost-Generals command several thousand men, the equivalent to a planetary garrison. The Defense of the Realm Act lets them declare martial law. A mnemonic tucks access codes into Adjudicators' minds. "Bluerose bloom" is a code that, when spoken, immobilizes stolen Adjudicator armor. Adjudicators are banned from all forms of torture when questioning a subject – offenders get 10 years. Adjudicator helmets have holographic eyecons.

Time Travel

Wounded TARDISes can tear the space-time Vortex to shreds, possibly causing alternate timelines to seep through. A further disruption might break down the causal nexus, giving the Universe the equivalent of a heart attack. Manheim radiation and Vendermann Flux are a side effect of time spillage. Temporal fusion can be accomplished by sending a TARDIS back along its original flight path, thus undoing the damage. Memories of meeting your other selves can be erased by Blinovitch Conservation (as when the Doctors met Omega) or misphased TARDIS Relativity Displacers.

History (Alternate)

In a billion years' time, the Ferutu evolve, their lives governed by magic. This allows them to become immortal, control matter and time, and travel anywhere. They became Time Lords, beating back the forces of evil, while a great catastrophe happened in a starless gulf called Rassilon's Rift. Poverty, greed and want in this universe have been eliminated. A benevolent mutant insect species lives in Earth's galaxy.

History

Nyssa says Traken outgrew machines 11,000 years ago (it's unclear if she's referring by her personal time or the current era).

At the End of the Day

Breathtaking. The magic of *Cold Fusion* lies in its ambition, deftly juggling two Doctors, five companions, the introduction of Patience and hints of the Doctor's past. It's a story about loss – both Patience and the fifth Doctor's conscience – as the most innocent Doctor squares off against his most manipulative incarnation and loses. That the fifth Doctor doesn't look stupid against the seventh tremendously helps. The book's title also works: It's "Cold" because no sex happens, but there's still "Fusion" because the Doctor and Patience are implicitly bonded. So unless you're violently opposed to the idea that the Doctor might have been married, this is a book to be treasured.

The Sands of Time

Author: Justin Richards. Virgin Missing Adventure #22. Release Date: May 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor, Tegan and Nyssa.

Travel Log

An impressive 14 trips, the record for a "Who" novel. Nephthys' pyramid in Egypt, four thousand years ago, September 1896 and 1996; Cranleigh Hall, Oxfordshire, 1926 (two times); Egyptian Room of the British Museum, 1896 and twice in 1996; King's Chamber, Great Pyramid, 1996, James Norris' house, 1996; Kenilworth House, November, 1896 and twice in 1996.

Chronology

Between "Arc of Infinity" and "Snakedance."

Summary

Derailed from the Time Vortex, the TARDIS materializes in the Egyptian wing of the British Museum. Within minutes, Nyssa is kidnapped by worshippers of Nephthys, a near-all-powerful Osirian goddess and wife of the late and evil Sutekh. The Doctor and Tegan, unable to find Nyssa, are approached by Atkins, a manservant who has met their future selves. The pair are invited to an unwrapping of a mummy at Lord Kenilworth's house, and meet more people who "know" them. But nothing prepares them for the revelation that the mummy being unveiled is Nyssa, who's been taken through time and lain comatose for 4,000 years.

Instigating Nyssa's slow and controlled revival, which will happen 100 years hence, the Doctor and Tegan first time-travel back a few months in 1896 and arrange for Nyssa's sarcophagus to be recovered from her tomb in Giza and transported to England for the unwrapping.

In 1996, Nyssa's awakening begins, but the Doctor's transcriptions reveal Nephthys' agents kidnapped Nyssa for her purity, and embedded within her mind with the Nephthys' intelligence. The other half of Nephthys' mind – her

instinct – resides in a Nephthys clone named Vanessa Prior. If the two are reunited, Nephthys will live again. But when Nyssa wakes up, she appears horribly aged and the Doctor announces that she actually woke up in 1926; Nephthys can only reunite herself by time-traveling there. But in 1926, Nephthys-Vanessa finds Nyssa still asleep. Totally confused without her other half, Nephthys-Vanessa slingshots infinitely between 1926 and 1996, finally aging to death. The Doctor reveals he substituted Nyssa's look-alike, Ann Talbot (from "Black Orchid") for the "aged" Nyssa to fool Nephthys. He then removes Nephthys' intelligence from Nyssa's mind, seals it in a generator loop and buries it in Nephthys' pyramid, which is covered by the Egyptian sand. Nyssa recovers, only a little bit tired.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor drains Tegan's brandy before checking for Nyssa's pulse. A lonely Tegan speaks with a comatose Nyssa and pleads: "Please, Doctor, [Nyssa's] all I have left." When the Doctor blinks, she adds: "Apart from you."

Sex and Spirits

None for the TARDIS crew, though an expedition member nearly has it off with an animated corpse.

Continuity

This novel's the direct sequel to "Pyramids of Mars." Lord Kenilworth knows Professor Marcus Scarman (also "Pyramids"), newest member of the Royal Society. Lord Cranleigh married Ann Talbot in 1926, and both the Doctor and Smutty Thomas attended the wedding ("Black Orchid").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The fifth Doctor seems dismayed at the thought of dancing. He mysteriously unlocks Nyssa's coma by touch (A manipulation of molecules, perhaps?). He reads volumes about Egyptian hieroglyphics in a night at lightning speed.

• *Nyssa:* Spends almost the entire book wrapped in mummy dressings and comatose for 4,000 years.

• *Tegan Jovanka:* Tegan seems to have lost her father at an early age and struggles to remember what he looked like (some explanation of this will be

provided in the upcoming *Divided Loyalties*). She found it easier to cope with Adric's death since she didn't see him die, and says she can talk *to* Nyssa rather than *at* her.

• *Nephthys:* Only individuals of rare purity, such as Nyssa, can serve as hosts for Nephthys' mind.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS navigational systems still require an exact date for calibration. Type 40 TARDISes and Osirian sarcophagi evidently operate with the same energy.

Alien Races

• *Osirians:* Osirian technology relies on exact measurements and magnetic monopoles to redirect and concentrate stellar energy. They can move objects through time by absorbing the time spillage and aging the number of years traversed.

• *Martians:* Might have helped the Osirians build Horus' pyramid on Mars.

Time Travel

The Doctor experiences a closed time loop – Kenilworth tells the Doctor where Nyssa's tomb is located, but the Doctor in turn time-travels and tells Kenilworth. Who the hell told them in the first place?

The Doctor has seen time altered, but at great initial cost, and generally speaking, time gets back to the original track as soon as possible.

History

• Thousands of years ago, Osirian leader Osiris was tricked into a psi-powered capsule and launched into space by his brother Sutekh and sister Nephthys. Osiris perished but transferred some of his consciousness into the pilot of an expedition sent to rescue him. That pilot became his son, Horus. Sutekh was imprisoned and died in "Pyramids of Mars." Nephthys' intelligence was sealed in a canopic jar while her instinct was trapped in a human and buried in a black pyramid south of Saqqara. Tomb robbers accidentally cracked the canopic jar in 2000 B.C., allowing Nephthys' intelligence to influence people.

• On Earth, the pyramids were built as Osirian energy transference points, based on star positions in the constellation of Orion. The main power collector was the Sphinx, carved from living rock about 8,000 to 10,000

years ago. Sand periodically covered the Sphinx, which mentally influenced persons such as Napoleon Bonaparte and the Egyptian Thutmose to dig it out for improved power reception. Orion's alignment shifted over time and by 1996, the main power node was located over London.

At the End of the Day

A dazzling, triumphant story about the Doctor and Tegan caring for Nyssa. The simple premise of bumping into future selves could've been used a long time ago and here happens precise implementation. The whole thing has a unique clarity of vision, foregoing space-eating sub-plots and characters, and unfolds as the fifth Doctor's own "Remembrance of the Daleks," as he pulls the well-prepared rabbit out of the hat and saves everybody. Highly recommended.

Zeta Major

Author: Simon Messingham. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #13. Release Date: July 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor, Tegan and Nyssa.

Travel Log

Energy Tower of Morestran Empire and Zeta Minor, circa 39,166.

Chronology

Between "Arc of Infinity" and "Snakedance."

Summary

Overwhelmed by crushing dreams of a black tsunami, the Doctor subconsciously pilots the TARDIS to a desolate location in the Morestran Empire. There, the Morestrans have spent 2,000 years building an Energy Tower, intended to grant them unlimited energy by harnessing the kinetic force of planetary movement. But to his horror, the Doctor finds the Tower is stuffed with illicit anti-matter and the workers, infected by its radiation, have been turned into deadly and ruthless anti-men.

The Doctor and his companions escape and go before officials of the ruling Morestran Imperium, the faction warring with the powerful Morestran Church. The Time Lord gains some recognition as the mythical being who 2,000 years ago advised Professor Sorenson to build the Tower (in TV's "Planet of Evil"). The conflict between the Church and the Imperium accelerates when Kristyan Fall, a ruthless Church assassin, hypnotizes Tegan into assassinating the Imperial leader Hippolito, although the Doctor foils the plot.

The Doctor sends Nyssa to investigate the strange "suicide" of one Brother Robeson, a student at the Sorenson Academy. Nyssa finds that Robeson was murdered because he knew the Energy Tower, as designed, cannot possibly work. The Church, faced with a useless Energy Tower and an impending deadline for its activation, created the Zeta Project, located on the satellite of Zeta Major, to harness the power of illicit anti-matter. Pure

anti-matter is so tied to its home universe that it cannot be taken without offering a substitute, so pseudo anti-matter was seeded and grown within 8,000 humans, then exchanged for pure anti-matter.

As the truth about the Zeta Project is revealed, an Imperial task force destroys it and heads for Zeta Minor, the junction point with the anti-matter universe. There, the Zeta Project's 8,000 victims awaken as anti-men and storm the Imperials. With Nyssa's help, the Doctor opens a dimensional gate to the anti-matter universe, and the creatures there – who planted the call for help in the Doctor's mind – suck the Energy Tower and anti-men dry of anti-matter, killing them. The TARDIS crew departs and the Morestran Empire, decimated by the civil war between the Imperium and the Church, is forced to rebuild society yet again.

Memorable Moments

One of Kristyan Fall's murders is ruled a suicide, notable because of its innovative use of a wooden spoon. The Doctor's final, calm-but-outraged confrontation of Kristyan Fall, the Zeta Project head, in which the killer admits the Project consumed 8,000 lives.

Sex and Spirits

There's some attraction between Tegan and Imperial agent Ferdiand.

Ass-Whuppings

Kristyan Fall, partly anti-matter, is torn in half as the anti-matter universe and a vacuum tug him in different directions. Cobalt missiles rip Zeta Major in half. Imperial agent Ferdinand blows himself and a group of Anti-Men up. Nyssa is transformed into an anti-woman, but is cleansed by the Anti-Matter Creatures.

Continuity

Because time does not flow normally in the anti-matter universe, the fifth Doctor views the fourth Doctor floating in Zeta Minor's black pool, and recalls seeing his future self. The insane Salamar is now regarded as a prophet and Vishinsky as a betrayer – a dramatic reversal of the truth. The black pool the Doctor previously visited has grown into a large lake. All of this, plus the fourth Doctor's off-handed suggestion to Sorenson about planetary movement, relates to "Planet of Evil." By coincidence, the Energy

Tower is located in the Omega System ("The Three Doctors").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* After "Planet of Evil," the Morestrans named the Doctor *il Dottore*, venerating him as the savior of the Morestran race. Scripture says the Doctor descended into darkness with Sorenson and battled the Dark Gods for 40 days and nights, then gave commands to harness planetary movements. Sarah Jane Smith, the Doctor's companion, is called "Sair-Ah," his handmaiden. Because of the Doctor's previous trip, the Anti-Matter Creatures call him the "One-Who-Had-Crossed." The Doctor's never too sure about events that happened to his previous incarnations. He doesn't reveal how, if it's possible, you can derive energy from the kinetic force of planetary movement. (Bastard.)

• *The Doctor and the Anti-Matter Creatures:* Time does not flow normally in the anti-matter universe, so the Anti-Matter Creatures foresaw that the Morestrans would attempt to cultivate anti-matter a second time. They planted a timed warning in the Doctor's mind, along with co-ordinates for the TARDIS. The Doctor interpreted the warning as dreams of a black tsunami. Anti-matter intensified the message and could have driven the Doctor mad.

• *Nyssa:* Although everyone and everything from Nyssa's childhood is dead, Adric's passing has left the biggest gap in her life. Her Trakenite body gives her enhanced, but not total, protection from anti-matter radiation. Her genotype differs from Morestran physiology in three element mixes.

• *Adric:* His sudden death showed the TARDIS crew that none of them were immortal and that the Doctor offered no absolute protection.

• *Kristyan Fall (a.k.a. "The Zero Man"):* Head of the Zeta Project and Church assassin, authorized to use illegal technology.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor can flood the console room with dangerous zero particles that help stabilize anti-matter – but even the Doctor is sure how this stabilization works. If the Doctor requests a random landing, the TARDIS knows *when* to arrive.

Alien Races

Anti-Men: Bullets and energy weapons have no effect on Anti-Men, but crude weapons somewhat work. One anti-man was hacked to pieces by an axe

Places to Go

• *The Energy Tower:* In theory, the Energy Tower would open dimensional rifts, then funnel the rifts' power into storage batteries.

• *Sorenson Academy:* Founded by Professor Sorenson, this is the only official source of Morestran technological development.

• *Leyenda Negra*: A sacred Morestran text, and the gateway to Hell, where the Dark Gods wait.

Stuff You Need

Anti-Matter: This isn't anti-matter as the Time Lords understand it. It's more properly called "ante-matter," and is like a "nothingness." Out of its stable environment, anti-matter's anti-atoms start to vibrate, causing a sudden energy release. The Anti-Matter Creatures can contain anti-matter explosions at will, but at some cost to their own universe.

Organizations

• *The Morestran Empire (political allegiance):* The Morestran Empire, led by the Imperial Hippolito and his brother Antonio, spans a diameter of 80 million light years, containing 1,427 inhabited solar systems. The outer 892 systems are beyond the technological reach of the Empire. None of these have space travel abilities, and 90 percent claim Church fealty.

The remaining inner systems are 71 percent Church controlled. Twenty-five percent favor the Imperials, and four percent are undergoing civil war. The Imperium, however, controls the Central Morestran Systems, including the homeworld of Morestra/Alpha Major.

• *The Morestran Empire (religion):* The Church forbids the use of anti-matter, considered to be the blasphemous crystals of the Dark Gods (the Scripture's version of the Anti-Matter Creatures).

• *The Morestran Empire (sexual equality):* The Morestrans believe women, a lower caste than men, should stay home and raise children. Women shroud themselves in hoods and yashmaks if they go out. On pain of death, females aren't allowed in the Energy Tower.

• *The Morestran Empire (technology):* Energy Tower research drained the Empire's resources and caused a state of decay. The bureaucracy-obsessed Morestrans now use data-recording Scribes act as information carriers, though many are later killed to silence them.

• *Cult of Science:* The opposite of the Church, dedicated to investigating

mysterious reports about the Tower. Disaffected Morestran nobles formed this group more than 500 years ago in response to the Science Law which sparked the Second Great Technology War of 1609.

History

• Professor Sorenson convinced the Morestran Empire to devote their entire resources and build the Energy Tower, called "Torre del Oro," the Tower of Gold. During the subsequent energy crisis, the Empire was almost entirely cut off from its Earth origins and underwent decay. Two thousand years later, a Morestran Empire decimated by civil war was left to pick up the pieces.

• Traken wasted 100 years on similar flawed concepts, but didn't commit all of its resources.

At the End of the Day

A delicious parlor of dread hangs over *Zeta Minor*, the sort that makes you wrap up in delight with comfy blankets and steaming cocoa as your lover feeds the fire. It's more terrifying than "Planet of Evil" because the humans outdo any alien for sheer horrific intent, and the fifth Doctor – the most non-aggressive Doctor – confronts the possibility that a few misspoken words on his part caused millions to suffer. It's a largely a Tegan and Nyssa story, with everyone's favorite Australian topping her resourcefulness in the TV series, and Nyssa, the series' indomitable recipient of bad luck, defiantly screaming "Go on, then, kill me!" when all seems lost.

Goth Opera

Author: Paul Cornell. Virgin Missing Adventure #1. Release Date: July 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor, Tegan and Nyssa.

Travel Log

Manchester, Leek and Tasmania, 1993.

Chronology

Between "Snakedance" and "Mawdryn Undead."

Summary

Time Lady Ruath arrives on Earth, intent on fulfilling Gallifreyan prophesies regarding the birth of a vampire nation. After locating vampire allies, Ruath frees Yarven, a vampire from E-Space who traveled to Earth aboard the Doctor's TARDIS many decades ago and was buried by villagers in Croatia. To empower Yarven with the symbiotic nuclei of a Time Lord, Ruath sends a vampire baby after the vacationing Doctor, but the child mistakenly bites Nyssa instead. Ruath therefore gives Yarven her blood, regenerates and is converted by him into a vampire.

As Nyssa also transforms into a vampire, she's drawn to Yarven's castle, where his vampire ranks are swelling. Meanwhile, Yarven and Ruath plot to conquer Earth by two means. Ruath has developed a genetically engineered mist that instantly turns people into vampires, killing those protected by garlic or faith. She has also developed a Time Freeze, a miniature Time Loop that will hold Earth's rotation on a repetitive cycle and make it permanently night, allowing the vampires to rule.

Nyssa sends the Doctor a message and helps him locate Yarven's castle – which is actually Ruath's TARDIS – but the Doctor and Tegan are captured. Because the brain of a Time Lord is needed to indefinitely regulate Ruath's time-device, she intends that Yarven, with his newfound Time Lord blood, sacrifice himself to this cause. Since Ruath and the Doctor went to the Prydonian Academy together, she offers to make him her consort, suggesting

that an army of Earth vampires could seize Gallifrey. But when Yarven learns of Ruath's betrayal, he decides to substitute the Doctor for himself in the Time Freeze device.

Trapped, the Doctor uses Ruath's command ring to make her TARDIS dematerialize. The Time Freeze is broken as the TARDIS appears on another planet, where the rising sun incinerates Yarven and his vampire legion. With the death of the vampire who bit her, Nyssa is cured. Ruath survives but is sucked into the Time Vortex when Nyssa opens the doors of the Doctor's TARDIS. The TARDIS crew then heads off to another adventure.

Memorable Moments

In a novel laden with black humor, vampires Jake and Madelaine discuss whether to have "Chinese or Indian" for dinner. A vampire boy hands Tegan his mother's head. Worse, vampire Bagley tears his own head off.

The Doctor/Tegan interplay gives many gems, as when Tegan speculates the Doctor's sign must be Cancer from a horoscope that calls Cancers stuffy. Later, the Doctor flips a coin to decide if the vampires should eat her. To shut Tegan up, the Doctor stuffs her mouth with his lapel celery. There are oodles more moments, with the Doctor passionately telling Ruath you can't find truth in history because: "History is a lie."

Sex and Spirits

Nothing happens between the youthful fifth Doctor and Ruath, but there are tons of sexual overtones. Tegan has strong faith in Aussie wine.

Ass-Whuppings

Ruath regenerates into her third body. The Doctor eliminates Yarven's vampires. Ruath's followers take out a pack of Christians. Nyssa turns into a vampire but recovers. Ruath bites the Doctor to convert him, but he's quickly cured.

Continuity

The Doctor graduated in the same class at Mortimus ("The Time Meddler") and the unseen Magnus.

Sabalom Glitz has reunited with his partner Dibber ("The Mysterious Planet") and obtained a Miniscope, complete with Drashigs ("Carnival of

Monsters"). And yes, this chronologically conflicts with Dibber's death in *Mission: Impractical*.

The Doctor authored *By Lord Cranleigh's Invitation, Seventy Years of Charity Elevens*, a piece he published in *Wisden* ("Black Orchid"). Ruath uses the Time Scoop ("The Five Doctors") to escape from Gallifrey, then destroys it.

Faith in anything remains the best way of repelling vampires. Ruath tells Yarven a future dominated by Haemovores is only a possible timeline ("The Curse of Fenric").

The Black Guardian gives some of his power to support Yarven's vampires and gain revenge on the Doctor. With their defeat, he makes further plots ("The Armageddon Factor," "Mawdryn Undead").

This is the first mention of Ian and Barbara's son John, who becomes the singer Johnny Chess (a.k.a. Johnny Chester) whom Ace is smitten with starting in *Timewyrm: Revelation*.

Lord Yarven came to Earth in the seventh Doctor's TARDIS. The entity named Agonal is here revealed as Yarven's father (*Blood Harvest*). The Gallifreyan conspirators from that story – Elar, Morin and Rath – are here ordered vaporized. Romana first encountered Ruath at *Blood Harvest*'s conclusion. Vampires Jake Hedges and Madelaine Worth here depart the solar system aboard Voyager Two, but are revealed as the parents of Europa's vampires in *Managra*.

Going against the fact in *Lungbarrow* that Time Lords are Loomed fully grown, Romana here reads to a group of Time Tots.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's body can erect non-porous barriers around his nose, ears and eyeballs.

• *The Doctor and Ruathadvorophrenaltid ("Ruath"):* Ruath was in the Prydonian Academy class of '92, a year above the Doctor. She and the Doctor staged pranks together – they introduced cats into the Gallifreyan ecosystem, altered gravity and made a Panopticon graduation take place in mid-air and electrified Borusa's perigosto stick. The Doctor speculates she was the first to lead him astray. Ruath wanted to leave Gallifrey with the first Doctor, but he believed her too dedicated to the Time Lords and left her behind.

With the Time Scoop, Ruath stares at the Doctor's final incarnation, and gasps: "So that's what you become." She fears confronting the machinistic

seventh Doctor.

• *Nyssa and Adric:* Nyssa wore a gold bracelet to remember Adric, but gave it to a homeless boy.

• *Tegan Jovanka:* Strong-willed Tegan can't be hypnotized by vampires. She lacks religious faith, but believes in Qantas, the Australian republic, James Reyne and especially the words of Holocaust writer Primo Levi. This is her first visit to Tasmania. Tegan's late Serbian grandfather told her stories about vampires.

• *Ian Chesterton and Barbara Wright Chesterton:* We're told for the first time that Ian and Barbara married after returning to Earth and had a son named John. Barbara became a housewife and makes an excellent upside-down cake.

• *Romana:* President Flavia offers Romana a seat on the High Council.

• *Rassilon and the Great Vampire ("State of Decay"):* The Gallifreyan cult of Rassilon the Vampire believes the Great Vampire bit Rassilon.

• *Sabalom Glitz:* Like the third Doctor, Glitz knows Venusian Aikido.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor can lock or unlock TARDIS rooms from the main console.

• *TARDISes:* Type 90 TARDISes are in service. A capsule in the TARDIS can knit Gallifreyan flesh in minutes. Travel through the Time Vortex erases any graffiti on the Ship' exterior. A TARDIS' null-time field can hold a vampire's bioplasmic field intact.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Time Lord technology can retrieve ancestral memories from the blood of virgins. Time Lords can communicate telepathically across the Time Vortex. The poisons in tea can't harm them.

• *Vampires:* Between 300 and 400 vampires exist in Britain. Vampires inject a calming sedative into their prey. Vampire DNA can infect plants. Vampires are bigger on the inside than the out, rather like a TARDIS.

• *Time Lords and Vampires:* Time Lords and vampires share 98 percent of the same genes. Both have bioplasmic fields diffused throughout their entire bodies, centered at the top of the spine. If you decapitate a vampire, the bio-field collapses. Time Lord vampires must be staked through both hearts and could still regenerate.

Alien Planets

Traken: Traken had ale, plus tales of vampire myths.

Stuff You Need

• *The Sigil Ring of the Great Vampire:* Undead from across the cosmos recognize this ring, which can activate Rassilon's technology. It was last seen in Ruath's possession.

• *The Doctor's Cricket Ball:* The Doctor puts thread from an ancient prayer mat into the seam, creating a weapon against vampires.

Time Travel

The rule about not communicating with a Time Lord's incarnations out of order is mostly to prevent embarrassment.

Phenomena

Vampirism is generated by the quantum world, though the phenomena is largely unexplained. Garlic or faith interferes with the quantum realm, making vampires vulnerable. You can recover from being a vampire if the vamp that bites you dies before the next full moon. Vampires obey physical laws laid down in the first few seconds of the universe.

History

• Yarven arrived on Earth in 1929, when Count Dracula's progeny had died out. Yarven therefore became progenitor of Earth's vampires, but was imprisoned in a pit in Croatia until 1993.

• Records from Gallifrey's Dark Time predict a vampire will be entombed on Ravalox (a name for Earth, "The Mysterious Planet") and rise to lead his people as the Vampire Messiah. The Doctor points out this tale might be written by Rassilon's enemies or crafted from half-truths.

• Ruath says Gallifrey's civilization is in the far past of the current time continuum and that by 1993, there are no signs of an active Gallifreyan society. TARDISes are prevented from entering what the Minyans ("Underworld") call the Constellation of Kasterborous, which includes Gallifrey, after a certain date. Aside from renegades like the Doctor, the fate of the Time Lords is unknown.

• The Doctor jokes that he helped Moses amend the Ten Commandments.

At the End of the Day

Criticized by some fans as being self-indulgent, *Goth Opera* is a fluid and highly innovative story that sweetly melds Gallifreyan and vampire lore and religiously nails the TV cast's characterization, even down to Romana's taking milk but not sugar in her tea. Cornell tinkers with the Doctor's beginnings – Ruath being a forsaken companion and possible love interest – but a needed sense of restraint stops the whole thing from going over the top. In any case, the plot is more about Nyssa, who's rarely been written with more tenacity, and the personal nature of her turmoil and the Doctor's puts this among the best "Who" novels.

The Crystal Bucephalus

Author: Craig Hinton. Virgin Missing Adventure #4. Release Date: November 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor, Tegan, Turlough and Kamelion.

Travel Log

Aix-en-Provence, Earth, 1791; The Crystal Bucephalus, New Alexandria, 10,764. The Doctor also travels to Pella Satyrnis, 63rd century.

Chronology

Between "The King's Demons" and "The Five Doctors."

Summary

While trying to enjoy a meal in a high-society restaurant, the Doctor and his companions are swept up by a time beam from The Crystal Bucephalus, a time-active restaurant that projects patrons onto different locales in different time zones. To everyone's surprise, the Doctor produces a document that proves he owns the Bucephalus, having invested in it on a whim.

Scientist Alexhendri Lassiter constructed the Bucephalus, but his ex-lover, Professor Ladygay Matisse, has built the rival Exemplar to tap the Bucephalus' circuits for time travel. Maximillian Arrestis, head of the criminal Elective, hopes to use the Exemplar's abilities to his own profit, but Matisse, desiring the time-travel secrets of the Time Lords, sneaks into the TARDIS.

Unfortunately, she pilots it badly and arrives in the Time Vortex between the Exemplar and the Bucephalus. This upsets the balance between the two and generates a massive amount of time spillage, the waste material of time-travel activity. The TARDIS absorbs much of the spillage, damaging the Ship and risking an explosion that could rupture the space-time stability of the galaxy.

The Doctor reaches the unstable Exemplar and disconnects it from the Bucephalus. This in turn causes a backlash that destroys the Exemplar,

although the Doctor escapes via an Exemplar time tunnel. Back at the Bucephalus, Lassiter admits he used the Bucephalus to fulfill the Lazarus Intent, a religious mandate to discover time travel and rescue the messiah "Lazarus" from the moment of his death on the planet Sontara. Lassiter did so, only to discover Lazarus was actually the black-hearted Maximillian Arrestis, and the entire Lazarus religion was, in fact, created by Arrestis as insurance should he meet an unnatural death.

With time spillage still wracking the Bucephalus, Arrestis tries to transport to his criminal base but is sent through time to Sontara, to the *exact moment* that Lassiter rescued him from. Arrestis dies as he was meant to die – killed by Sontarans in a business deal gone bad.

The Doctor alters the damaged Bucephalus' circuits and is able to knock the TARDIS out of the Vortex, harmlessly releasing the time spillage. With the Bucephalus closed down and Arrestis dead, the TARDIS crew departs for their planned vacation on the Eye of Orion.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor realizes his money paid for the Bucephalus and funded Lassiter's illicit time experiments – the Time Lords will not be pleased. We see the vastness of the TARDIS' memories through Professor Ladygay Matisse, who telepathically experiences the TARDIS' innermost hopes, fears and experiences.

Ass-Whuppings

Kamelion, controlled by Arrestis, blows the Maitre D's head off. Professor Ladygay Matisse is lost in a TARDIS breach. Arrestis dies his final death on Sontara.

A Legion attack momentarily stops the Doctor's left heart. A bit of Legion treachery also results in the Doctor falling through a portal to the planet Pella Satyrnis, where he suffers hypothermia.

Continuity

There technically isn't a gap between "The King's Demons" and "The Five Doctors," but the TARDIS crew stops for a meal before going to the Eye of Orion. The central console, blasted by time spillage, is here destroyed and rebuilt as the modern version we see in "The Five Doctors."

Kamelion doesn't know why his masters left Xeraphas ("Time Flight")

and was dormant until the Master found him. Kamelion, having been mentally dominated by Arrestis, retires to his room until he's certain he's not a threat. He appears again (mentally dominated, of course) in "Planet of Fire."

The Meddling Monk ("The Time Meddler") helped establish the time-barrier around the Legions' home planet. The Eternals of "Enlightenment" are said to be cousins of the Chronovores in "The Time Monster." Hyperspace ("The Stones of Blood") is a subset of the Time Vortex. Time spillage was first mentioned in "The Mark of the Rani."

The Doctor recommends Earl Grey tea to all of his friends, suggesting he's met Captain Jean-Luc Picard from "Star Trek: The Next Generation." The planet Risa (also "Next Generation") is a Bucephalus locale. There's an Academia Scholastica on Vulcan, either the planet from "Star Trek" or "Power of the Daleks," take your pick. Turlough also mentions Q'onoS, the Klingon homeworld.

Legions were first encountered in *Lucifer Rising*. Tegan's experiences in *Goth Opera* have made her realize that faith is a tangible, measurable thing, and she takes up praying. At the sixth Doctor's suggestion, the New Alexandrans construct a famed library in *Decalog 3:* "Fegovy."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's balance at First Galactic Bank gets so large, he sometimes shovels huge amounts into laughable business ventures, hoping to lose a bit. In so doing, he bought the Crystal Bucephalus. He also invested heavily in the British film industry. He has a central bank account on Iapetus. He hasn't smoked since his first incarnation and knows how to artificially resuscitate the extra-dimensional Legions.

The Doctor, stranded and dying on the planet Pella Satyrnis in the 63rd century, is found and cared for by the furry Hroth creatures Pfifl and Laklis, who become his foster parents. He spends five happy years founding the restaurant Tempus Fugit, making it an attraction worthy of being a Bucephalus locale so he could return. He has dined at the galaxy's best eateries and has been taught to cook by the greatest chefs in existence. A Kolpashan tailor replaces his old cricketer's outfit.

The Doctor hasn't researched Lazarus' death. He says "Ben" (presumably Ben Jackson) taught him to not discuss religion or politics in a pub. The Doctor met a Legion on Earth in the 25th century, just before the Second Dalek War.

The fifth Doctor knows some hypnotism. Thinking Tegan and Turlough dead, he buries the fact away and refuses to deal with it. The Doctor was born near the Capricorn Tract. The hermit on the hill ("The Time Monster") and the Mind monks of Darron taught him mental defenses.

• *Turlough:* At Brendan, Tosser Armstrong taught Turlough the word "git."

• *Ace:* In 1985, a young Ace, working at a London McDonald's, kicked out a penniless Tegan.

• *Kamelion:* Kamelion exists as a set of mathematical equations that can rework their shape through Block Transfer Computation ("Logopolis"). It can therefore mathematically rework its structure and become a variety of shapes, including a large rubber ball or a hulking piece of battle-armor with workable guns. He can also grow to 50 feet and gain super-strength. He can withstand "the heart of a star" (yet couldn't resist the tissue-compression eliminator in "Planet of Fire," since it disrupts Block Transfer Computation). He can mimic a creature's bioelectric field.

Kamelion's creators could dominate his mind at a range of 8.4 light years. He has some ability piloting the TARDIS.

• *Professor Maximillian James Antonius Arrestis:* Head of the criminal Elective, centered on Hexdane, and an expert geneticist who perfected cloning. Arrestis is currently in his fifth cloned body.

• *The TARDIS:* Normal TARDISes can survive time spillage of seven on the Bocca scale ("The Two Doctors"). The Doctor's TARDIS, more sophisticated than her peers, can resist at least 8.1.

During a crisis, the Ship directs passengers to its most stable point. The TARDIS can stall in the Time Vortex like a ship in a storm. The TARDIS telepathically communicates with the ape-ish Byson.

The entirety of the TARDIS, when laid out, looks like a city with huge Corinthian columns, hundreds of feet in diameter, that thrust upward from between thousands of massive white, featureless domes, interlinked by snaking white corridors. The columns vanish thousands of feet above in a boiling mass of gray and black clouds. Though devastated, the TARDIS can repair itself.

If the real-time envelope is denatured, the Doctor can telepathically command the TARDIS' outer walls to open for him.

In the TARDIS Library, books dematerialize and rearrange themselves, making little TARDIS noises. Books include *The Symbiotic Nucleus: Rassilon's Triumph*, *The Triple Helix: The Inheritance of Rassilon*, *Build*

Your Own TARDIS and *A Basic Primer in Block Transfer Computation* by Lady Jennikatrakaleyna.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Time Lords use 208 language tenses, most of which don't translate well.

• *Rutans:* Rutan prawns with garlic mayonnaise are a delicacy.

• *Draconians and Silurians:* Are capable of having sex and possibly reproducing.

• *Legions* (*Lucifer Rising*)*:* Translucent, multi-tendriled pear-shaped aliens who are innately time active. Many Legions now perform service, including to the Crystal Bucephalus, to atone for past time abuses. They hate the Time Lords for time-looping them. Legions send out signals into the Time Vortex, then receive them and navigate like bats. Antiphases can cancel a Legion's navigation signal. Legions can see parts of the past, present and future simultaneously.

Alien Planets

• *New Alexandria:* Home of the Crystal Bucephalus, located on the edge of the Capricorn Tract. The Doctor and Kamelion hint the planet is actually the ruins of Gallifrey.

• *Diadem:* Renowned as the most relaxing planet in the galaxy, but raped for its deposits of jethryk ("The Ribos Operation") and trisilicate ("The Curse of Peladon").

Places to Go

• *The Crystal Bucephalus:* The Bucephalus featured 1,000 dining Cubiculi and 1,037,841 locations to choose from. It became important in its sector as a place to negotiate political deals. The Emerald Syphax, a luxurious hotel, surrounded it. The computer system Webwork regulated the Bucephalus.

The Bucephalus was secretly capable of real time travel, but typically generated pocket dimensions that linked it with target time zones rather than directly risking the Time Vortex. The Bucephalus tapped a black hole for power. The Crystal Bucephalus was also the name of a 50-foot-tall statue of Alexander the Great's warhorse. The statue, made from adulterated dichronomide pentafluorate, absorbed time spillage.

• *The Tempus Fugit:* The Doctor deeded his famed restaurant to his assistant, Raphael.

• *The Exemplar:* Built on the inhospitable moon of Tanthane, which has pools of liquid nitrogen. It could be jury-rigged as a makeshift TARDIS.

• *Montaplure:* An outer planet in Turlough's home star system ("Planet of Fire"), where civilization devoted itself to the art of eating.

Stuff You Need

• *Pyletheric Acid:* It's rarely fatal to human beings, but it kills genetically accelerated clones.

• *Jablecta* ("Warriors' Gate")*:* A sacred weapon of Tharil ("Warriors' Gate") Antonine Killers that dissolves internal organs.

Organizations

Lazarus Intent: Religion founded around a messiah, Lazarus, who allegedly gave his life to the Sontarans so that the galaxy could know peace. The Intent's Codex said that as soon as time travel was developed, Lazarus should be retrieved just before the moment of his death. It was based on Clavidence, and counts Silurians and Martians among its members.

Time Travel

• Blinovitch states that there is a 20-minute window in which alterations to the timestream can be erased. After that window, temporal embolism and permanent rewriting occurs.

Famed time-travel scientists include Blinovitch, Findecker, Lassiter and his lover Helenica Monroe, plus Ethra and Teelis, two rather-drunken Silurians, circa 9978, who had theories about temporal embolisms and paradox waveforms.

The Blinovitch Limitation Effect stresses that when a link is established between two time zones, time moves at a relative rate in each zone. If you time travel and spend a day investigating in one zone, you must return an equal day forward when you return (this is reiterated in *The Sands of Time*). Shuntspace, a region used by spaceships for travel, relies on the Time Vortex.

• *Reality Quotients:* Objects under normal conditions – say, you, the reader – have a reality quotient of one and may thus cause permanent interaction in the timestream. If your reality quotient is artificially reduced

to 0.5, you can make whatever timeline alterations you want – even kill historical figures – because your alterations become null and void as you return to a reality quotient of one. However, weapons can kill quotient-altered people if their reality quotients match.

• *Adulterated Dichronomide Pentafluorate (ADP):* Developed by Professor Ladygay Matisse, this substance converts time spillage into radiation that's harmless. ADP constantly requires a minimum of time spillage or it denatures and becomes useless.

History

• The Gubbage Cones (the original name for the Fungoids in "The Chase"), located on Pluvikerr, were briefly lords of the galaxy 70,000 years ago and employed many mercenaries.

• David Jarvis, commander of the warship *Dauntless*, disregarded orders during the battle for Cassius and fired the decisive volley that ended the Dalek blockade of the Solar System ("The Dalek Invasion of Earth").

• The insect-like Wine Lords, of the planet Caspar in the Galactic Rift, were the galaxy's best wine exporters until circa 3,700, when they were found guilty for selling a '56 and claiming it was '37.

• Legions abused their time-travel abilities in the 2700s and the Time Lords sentenced them to 150,000 years of time looping. In 10,756, the Time Lords later broke 5,000 years of galactic silence and announced the Legions would be given early parole.

• The Federation Scientific Executive cloning research was conducted in 6198 at Tersurus ("The Deadly Assassin"). The Sontarans, desperate to protect their cloning secrets, ruined the Tersurus Institute's data on Io and destroyed Tersurus in 6211 with an earthshock bomb ("Earthshock"). The Union banned cloning.

• Through unknown events, the Sontaran Empire became a radioactive wasteland.

• When the Civil War of the Federation ("The Curse of Peladon," "The Monster of Peladon") broke out, the planet Mirabilis ("The Ribos Operation") sided against the Emperor, so the Imperial Fleet devastated 90 percent of Mirabilis' population. The Union was formed from the Federation's remains.

• The Doctor influenced President Tornqvist to build a Concordance of fellowship and harmony. For a time, things got better, but in 100 years, the Union collapsed and was replaced by the Junta, a military dictatorship

formed from the Elective's remains. Nonetheless, the galaxy entered 1,000 years of barbarism until the formation of the Confederation.

• In 6198, Maximillian Arrestis and his team of consultants formed the Lazarus Intent and it flourished for at least 5,000 years, dominating from the galactic center to distant clusters in the Perseus Rift. Arrestis was killed on Sontara circa 6211.

• The excess time spillage of this story ripples back through time and causes the Sontaran phenomenon known as "the Sign of the Lights."

At the End of the Day

A well-thought out labor of love with a sweet complexity, even if it's chiseled in parts and gets a bit forced. You can sense Craig Hinton, who reviewed oodles of works for *Doctor Who Magazine*, sweating blood and working like a mad dog to keep us amused, and the effort, although not perfect, pays off. The story, in fact, keeps a lot of irons in the fire and can't really be done justice in a 350-word summary. It begins simply with a restaurant, then turns into a Greek tragedy in parts, especially when Lassiter asks, "Who's ultimate responsibility is the Crystal Bucephalus, anyway?"

Deep Blue

Author: Mark Morris. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #20. Release Date: March 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor, Tegan, Turlough and UNIT.

TARDIS Travel Log

Tayborough Sands pleasure beach and Morok battle cruiser, 1970s.

Chronology

For the TARDIS crew, between "Warriors of the Deep" and "The Awakening." For UNIT, six months have passed since "The Green Death."

Summary

As UNIT investigates reports of a lighthouse keeper who saw a mysterious light near Tayborough Sands pleasure beach, the TARDIS arrives there for a holiday. But when the Doctor gets mental impressions from an alien mind, he investigates. He finds a stabbing victim undergoing some sort of metamorphosis, and concludes the seawater and local fish are contaminated with an alien infection. That's bad news for the UNIT team, many of whom enjoyed a fish dinner.

Tegan, in the meantime, enjoys a date with Police Sergeant Andy Weathers. The Doctor encounters the alien Xaranti aboard a hijacked battle cruiser. The nomadic Xaranti convert other races into Xaranti by infecting them with a colorless ooze. As more humans transform into Xaranti, the Doctor tries to negotiate with them telepathically, but is wounded by a Xaranti stinger in his shoulder. Because the Xaranti seek the Doctor's Time Lord knowledge, Captain Mike Yates, the only uninfected UNIT member, takes the comatose Doctor and flees. Tegan begs Mike to check on Andy, but he's already transformed into a Xaranti and Yates kills him. Tegan, also infected and linked to the Xaranti mind, estimates they have a week before the country is conquered.

The Doctor awakens, infected by the stinger wound, and his research reveals that the Xaranti ooze encodes a telepathic signal. As a result, people transform because their bodies *believe* they should transform. By simply

believing he's found a cure and drinking tap water, the Doctor's system is cleansed. He douses the Xaranti Queen with the water, causing a telepathic backlash in the creature. The Queen agrees to release the infected humans, then summons those already transformed into Xaranti and departs from Earth. The UNIT crew and Tegan recover with no memories of the event, meaning only Captain Yates remembers the departing fifth Doctor's group.

Memorable Moments

A prickly, diseased fish launches itself at a fisherman, a la the deadly rabbit in "Monty Python and the Holy Grail." Turlough points out that the Doctor is working on a cure, and Tegan points out that no, he's eating chocolate bourbons. And she's right.

Sex and Spirits

A drunk Tegan clutches Police Sergeant Andy Weathers for support and they later have a date. She thinks he looks hot in tight blue trunks.

Ass-Whuppings

Yates kills two Xaranti and the Brigadier shoots another. One of Yates' kills was Tegan's date. The Doctor, Brigadier, Tegan and Benton endure the first stages of the Xaranti transformation. The Doctor takes a Xaranti stinger in the shoulder. Benton pounds a mind-warped Brigadier into submission. Controlled UNIT soldiers half-drown Turlough.

Continuity

Moroks first appeared in "The Space Museum." Tegan promised to visit her grandfather when she returned from Amsterdam. Oops ("Arc of Infinity," "The Awakening"). There's tons of meaningless references to "The Green Death," "Warriors of the Deep" and "The Awakening."

The Xaranti are first mentioned in Morris' *The Bodysnatchers*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Carries his UNIT pass, with his third incarnation's picture, in his hat. He uses shiny, alien purple shells as currency and has a square, gray device that runs medical diagnostics.

• *Tegan Jovanka:* Spent a weekend in Brighton with Aunt Vanessa and went sailing off the south coast with her grandfather. She ponders life on

Earth if she stayed with Andy. She can also swim.

• *The Doctor and Tegan:* The Doctor checks Tegan's handbag to see if she's carrying anything anachronistic. This goes over real well.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* The Xaranti transformation churns the Brigadier's emotions and he cries when the Doctor looks dead.

• *Captain Mike Yates:* Understands the fundamentals of Time Lord regeneration.

• *Xaranti Queen (a.k.a. Xaranti Prime):* An entity of infinite form; a combination of Xaranti oozes that contain the memories and skills of races converted by the Xaranti. The Queen manifests as a free-flowing liquid that takes on many shapes, including humanoid.

• *The TARDIS:* There's cobwebs in the TARDIS, though Turlough hasn't seen any spiders.

Alien Races

Xaranti: Intergalactic scavengers who lack a technological or cultural identity of their own. They hijack other species' vessels, turning crews and populations into Xaranti through the infectious Xaranti ooze. Xaranti can sense disease in other beings and cull old or weak specimens. The transformation breeds some aggression as it progresses, and the duration varies on the individual. Hunter-gatherers answer to a Xaranti Queen (*see Xaranti Queen*). As semi-telepathic creatures, the Xaranti can also mentally sense other Xaranti.

Fully-transformed Xaranti are bull-sized and muscular, covered in black quills with eight jointed, crab-like legs. They seem to prefer darkness, and can kill with a scorpion-like tail.

Stuff You Need

Xaranti ooze: Transforms infected beings into Xaranti. It carries a powerful telepathic message on the molecular level that convinces the host body that it's metamorphosizing. Beings self-aware of this, such as the Doctor, can mentally counter act its effects.

The knowledge gained from other species is chemically encoded in colorless Xaranti ooze. These various secretions all combine to form the Xaranti queen, a communal mind that assesses information and directs the Xaranti hunter-gatherers.

Ships

Morok Battle Cruiser: Its reflective melganite shielding can withstand a nuclear warhead.

History

Centuries ago, the Xaranti/Zygon war destroyed the Xaranti and Zygon homeworlds. Both races became nomadic.

At the End of the Day

A deep six. Apart from the insideously boring Xaranti aliens, pointless continuity references drag *Deep Blue* under like a lead weight. The Doctor, Tegan and Turlough trio does not gel, and the UNIT characters are total window-dressing. The whole thing's rounded out by a horribly long escape scene.

Lords of the Storm

Author: David A. McIntee. Virgin Missing Adventure #17. Release Date: December 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor and Turlough.

Travel Log

Alpha Serpens Caput, Unukalhai system; Raghi, sixth moon of Unukalhai IV, Indra system, 2371.

Chronology

Between "Resurrection of the Daleks" and "Planet of Fire."

Summary

The Doctor and Turlough set down to quietly effect TARDIS repairs on Raghi, a human colony that's afflicted by a plague. Curious, the Doctor investigates and discovers that the war-like Sontarans have spread a virus on the planet as a plot to crush their ages-old enemy, the Rutans.

The Sontaran virus, spread by their brainwashed Raghi agent Jahangir, will genetically mark the human colonists as Sontarans. The Rutans will detect this and be lured into the system to attack their "foes." However, the real Sontarans plan to trigger the graviton nacelle of a captured Tzun Stormblade warship, thus turning Raghi's sun supernova and destroying the Rutan fleet. If successful, the Sontarans will plunder the system's powerful artifacts, leftovers from the Tzun Empire, without fear of their enemies.

However, Jahangir breaks his conditioning and rams the Tzun Stormblade with his own ship, destroying both. The Doctor, fearing a Sontaran victory over the Rutans will make them unstoppable, gives the Rutans data on the Sontarans' battle plans, in exchange for a promise to leave Raghi alone. The Rutan agree, and stage a surprise attack on the Sontarans at Antares.

During the battle, the Sontaran Major Karne, actually a Rutan spy, and hacks into the Sontaran mainframe. As the Sontaran and Rutan forces mutually annihilate each other, Karne finds that the Sontarans have discovered a crucial secret about the Rutan homeworld and flees in an

escape pod to warn his people. However, his vehicle is damaged in the escape and he limps through space, sparking a chase that leads to the novel *Shakedown*. The Doctor and Turlough, their work done in protecting Raghi, depart in the TARDIS.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor conks a Sontaran unconscious with a throw of his cricket ball to the probic vent.

Ass-Whuppings

In a top grisly moment, a Sontaran's bile, blood and elementary lung tissue spews through his probic vent, forced out by a difference in atmospheric pressure.

A gun ricochet catches the Doctor in the calf.

Continuity

The Linx-class cruiser was perhaps named after the Sontaran warrior Linx. Or, more likely, he was named after it ("The Time Warrior"). Turlough still carries the TARDIS homing beacon from "Mawdryn Undead." It would take the Doctor weeks to build a psionic relay powerful enough to reach Kamelion ("The King's Demons") in the TARDIS. The Doctor has memorized the formula for coronic acid, a substance that kills Sontarans ("The Two Doctors").

The Rutan spy named Karne escapes and tries to warn his Rutan fellows of a Sontaran attack, a plot that continues in the seventh Doctor's *Shakedown*. The Tzun first appeared in McIntee's *First Frontier*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor cannot directly translate Hindi. He can jury-rig a starship-cloaking device. He knows how to pirate transponder codes. The fourth Doctor and Leela encountered the Tzun on Mimosa II.

• *The TARDIS:* Sontaran enemy recognition manuals likely list the TARDIS.

Alien Races

• *Sontarans:* Sontarans are armed with rheon carbines. They come from

the southern spiral arm of the Galaxy.

Green armor denotes the Sontaran medical and environmental division, whose purpose is to mostly watch embryos developing in cloning vats, as Sontarans prefer death in battle and don't require medical skills. Most Sontaran clans are tainted with a latent enzyme to inhibit higher brain functions, thus curbing the threat of revolution. Officers are cloned from uncontaminated racepools.

A full Sontaran company numbers about 100. Their acute hearing compensates for their helmets. Alcohol poured down a Sontaran's probic vent will destabilize enzyme productions and force the Sontaran to recharge itself.

• *Airavata:* Jellyfish-like creatures that live in the clouds of Indra, whose DNA naturally decontaminates radiation.

Alien Planets

• *Trion* ("Planet of Fire"): Turlough's homeworld isn't an Earth colony. Meridian Place, a location there, has the scent of exotic flowers and is tinted with fresh air.

• *Unukalhai IV:* A frigid globe of liquid gases.

• *Raghi:* The sixth moon of Unukalhai IV is independent of any undue corporate influence, although the planet sells Airavata animals (also seen in *Dreamstone Moon*) to the Spinward Corporation (*Deceit*). Governing officials are selected by random by a computer program, to better insure democracy and to curb power-seekers. Fusion satellites power the planet. A caste system governs society.

Raghi took 40 million people a quarter of a century to terraform. It lacks indigenous pathogens and is in a sector rich in tellurian.

• *Agni:* Moon that serves as Raghi's central power facility. Collection aerials there were built by an unknown race.

• *Antares:* A world held by the Rutan, subject to methane monsoons.

• *Indra:* A gas giant that's slightly more massive than Jupiter, coming in at 1/400th of solar mass. The Indra system is home to 100 million people.

• *Alpha Serpens Caput:* A planet in Tzun space.

Stuff You Need

• *Mawaki-kachori*: A fruit and nut pastry with honey.

Organizations

• *Sontaran Grand Strategic Council:* Ruling body that mandates officers report information on the Time Lords immediately.

• *The Alliance:* Military organization formed after the Dalek Invasion, consisting of Earth, Alpha Centauri, Cyrennhics and more.

Ships

• *Sontaran War Wheels:* Shaped rather like a tank's rollers, these double-disked ships are armed with photonic missiles. Thick air inside replicates a high-gravity atmosphere.

• *Rutan Corvettes:* Basically a large glass nest with crystal spires. They're webbed together with elegant loops, shining with light.

• *Tzun Stormblades:* A Stormblade's main graviton drive nacelle is designed to travel along the wavefronts of gravity waves. This works by grabbing a destination point with a hypothetical sheet and pulling an extension of it back to the ship. When the tension in the beam is released, the ship snaps forward. The ship itself is five miles long to focus the graviton beam. It can cause a supernova at a range of 1,000 miles by compressing a sun long enough for nucleosynthesis to begin.

Time Travel

Some faster-than-light journeys make you arrive slightly before you leave, but the difference is negligible.

History

• The Tzun Confederacy initially beat back a Sontaran advance, though the Veltrochni wiped out the Tzun in the 2170s. With the Confederacy gone, the Rutan set about exploring the Antares sector. The Tzun-Veltrochni war reduced most Tzun ships to slag, although Sontarans used a derelict Stormblade, found in the Reticuli system, to destroy a Rutan dry-dock on the moon of Betelgeuse V.

• Earth's Colonial Office terraformed Raghi circa 2247. After this story, the Sontarans and Rutan each believe the other is too strong in the Unukalhai region and abandon it. The Sontarans plunder it again in 13,000 years.

At the End of the Day

McIntee warns us in his introduction to expect an action-based space opera – and indeed, it is so. Problem is, it's tough to pull off decent space battles in books, making *Lords of the Storm* a thick, cliched shoot-'em-up with few surprises and a frightful amount of technobabble.

The Ultimate Treasure

Author: Christopher Bulis. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #3. Release Date: August 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The fifth Doctor and Peri.

Travel Log

Astroville Seven and the planet Gelsandor, 35th century.

Chronology

A few days after "Planet of Fire," before "The Caves of Androzani."

Summary

The Doctor and Peri go shopping on Astroville Seven, but watch as criminals murder a shopkeeper. Before he dies, the vendor gives the Doctor co-ordinates to the famed treasure of Rovan, a long-lost Emperor of Centros who abandoned his post and took the Royal Treasury with him. Acting on the dead man's information, the Doctor and Peri arrive on Gelsandor, a world inhabited by powerful telepaths. They inform the Doctor, Peri and other treasure-seekers that they must overcome a number of challenges before obtaining Rovan's riches.

A criminal group, led by the stooge Qwaid, kidnap the Doctor and Peri and use the Doctor's intelligence to defeat a number of puzzles. Peri finally escapes with the help of a giant unicorn she calls Red. As more traps are overcome, the competitors arrive at the quest's end, where the Gelsandorians offer them a choice of doors and a riddle. As a result of trying of solve the riddle, some travelers are condemned to death. Others are granted their fondest wish in the form of a mental illusion.

The mechanical criminal Mister Alpha tries to eliminate his competition and Red attacks him. Alpha is destroyed and a mortally wounded Red metamorphosizes into the Doctor's ex-companion Kamelion, resurrected as a mental impulse by the Gelsandorians to help defeat Alpha. Unfortunately, Kamelion's dying body is unstable and he returns to a state of nothing, having redeemed himself for past misdeeds (TV's "Planet of Fire").

The Doctor and Peri choose the door that takes them back to their ship, where a hologram of Rovan tells them the whole quest was a lesson in values and that the ultimate treasure is not his money, but the infinite possibilities offered by the universe. The Doctor and the now less materialistic Peri depart.

Sex and Spirits

Newscaster Dynes displays Peri's cleavage on a newscast (as if she needed help showing it off).

Ass-Whuppings

Kamelion's consciousness expires after killing Mister Alpha.

Continuity

The TARDIS has regenerated most of the mass it lost in "Castrovalva." Kamelion snuffed it in "Planet of Fire," but reappears for one last gasp. The Doctor says he's 850, which would seem to contradict his claim in "Revelation of the Daleks" that he's 900, since it's unlikely Peri traveled with him for 50 years.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Can forge temporal-relevant identity cards. He once visited a world of sentient flowers.

• *Mister Alpha:* Criminal who copied his brain patterns into a cybernetic body. He was therefore immune to the Gelsandorians' telepathy. *Kamelion:* The Doctor's late companion interfaced with the TARDIS shortly before "Planet of Fire." Kamelion drew mass from the fifth dimension via a pseudo-metabolic extension. Through this link, Kamelion's consciousness survived within the TARDIS' hyperdimensional fields. It was too confused to regenerate, but the Gelseandorians freed him, foreseeing its role in the defeat of Alpha. Kamelion didn't want to frighten Peri, so he appeared as the unicorn Red. Kamelion's new body was unstable, however, and it died a final death, at peace with itself.

• *Red (a.k.a. Kamelion):* A horse-like shape of Kamelion's, 26 hands high at the shoulder. As "Red," he befriended Peri and was covered in red hair and armored plates. He had a white horn like a unicorn and very big teeth. He also had broad, three-clawed paws and a tail with a group of

spikes.

Alien Races

Gelsandorians: Extremely powerful psionics who supposedly never lie. Led by Shalvis, the Speaker of Gelsandor, they can mentally pilot the TARDIS.

Alien Planets

Gelsandor: Located at galactic navigation coordinates 385.06 by 946.573 by 157.67. Large trees there have heart-shaped leaves.

Stuff You Need

• *The TARDIS Key:* The Doctor can touch the TARDIS key to his forehead and mentally make it usable by anyone.

• *Privacy of Sentient Beings Act (2830):* Investigative journalists can rescind this on a case-by-case basis for public figures.

Organizations

Cartovallian Stellar Empire: It once encompassed 50 systems and also 2.8x10 to 11th power subjects. The palace treasury Rovan took was worth 6.4x10 to the 12th power stellar credits.

Ships

The Falcon: Ship of the criminal Mr. Alpha.

Time Travel

It's unwise if you only need to travel spatially to slip back in time and give yourself a few days extra time. Crossing your own timeline, even when you're at different locations, can strain the fabric of time and space and prove lethal.

History

• Circa Earth year 1500 BC, Rovan Hathcorl Clemont Delermain Cartovall was born on the planet Centros, the capital of Cartovallian Stellar Empire. By Galactic Time Index (GTI), it was the year 608,432.93. At age 33 GTI, Rovan, the first son of Emperor Dorrian III and Empress Kalia of

Cartovall, became Emperor himself. Rovan felt bored and trapped in the Imperial Court and disappeared four GIT years later, taking with him the palace treasury. Rovan's younger brother, Athren, took the throne in 608,472.63 GIT, when the Cartovallian Empire began to disintegrate. Rovan's yacht was later found adrift, with a lifeboat missing, by the Ymerl. There was no sign of the treasure. Factions on Rovan's homeworld now vie for power.

• The Doctor told Shakespeare to revise *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, but the Queen was in a hurry to see it performed.

At the End of the Day

Dear heavens, is this for real? *The* woeful *Ultimate Treasure* tries to be clever, but is full of tedious and child-like traps. Peri's reduced to a materialistic, unlikable little wench and the Doctor's a wimp who knuckles to everybody. And the villains are so dim-witted, Inspector Clouseau's grandmother could beat them. Gads, it even repeats the "death switch" riddle from "Pyramids of Mars." And just when you think it can't get any worse, Kamelion's brief return butchers his dramatic departure in "Planet of Fire."

Sixth Doctor Stories

Burning Heart

Author: Dave Stone. Virgin Missing Adventure #30. Release Date: January 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Peri.

Travel Log

Sector Three, Dramos Port Habitat, Nov. 5, 3174.

Chronology

A month after "Vengeance on Varos," before "The Mark of the Rani."

Summary

On Dramos, a satellite of Titania and a colony world abandoned by Earth to its fate, Adjudicators struggle to keep control, with an artificial intelligence named OBERON coordinating their efforts. It's the crime-filled Crazy Season, when the Node of Titania, similar to the Red Spot of Jupiter, waxes high above Dramos. And into this powder-keg wades the Doctor, curious because the TARDIS data banks don't mention this three-month period of Dramos' history.

The hardline Adjudicators attack a rally for Human First, a fanatical civil group for human rights, and spray the demonstration with pepper gas. This particular substance is lethal to Time Lords, so the Doctor's body goes utterly comatose and in many senses "dies" to save him. He recovers and is thrown in with a group of non-humans, part of xenophobic sacrifices made on behalf of the Church of Adjudication to OBERON.

Meanwhile, a mysterious rogue named Kane rescues Peri from a mob and she joins White Fire, the inner circle of Human First. Kane, an Adjudicator working undercover, shows Peri White Fire's anti-alien prejudices and they escape. Meanwhile, White Fire forces cause civil unrest, thus causing a long and bloody battle with the Adjudicators.

Leaders from the two groups converge in the Adjudication Temple as the Adjudicator leader Garon prepares to make his sacrifice. The Doctor convinces the soldiers that their minds are being influenced by a third party – a glowing mass near OBERON. Garon and Avron Jelks, the leader of Human First, attempt to make supplication to the glowing mass, but electricity from the being fries them. With their leaders dead, the Adjudicators and Human First momentarily suspend hostilities.

The Doctor speaks with the glowing mass, a burning woman that represents the unique intelligence of Titania's Node, an area much like Jupiter's Red Spot. Formerly wrapped in its own world, the Node was drained of energy by Dramos' settlers and suffered from their pollution. In trying to communicate with them, the Node influenced the colonists with its pain and inadvertently caused the Crazy Seasons.

As the Doctor speaks with the Node, Kane blasts it and hits the inhibitors that keep OBERON from achieving true sentience – OBERON becomes self-aware microseconds later. It opens its self-contained universe to the Node, and the two merge. The Node physically restores the hundreds that were sacrificed to OBERON, and the new gestalt being falls inert. The Doctor and Peri leave, as the Adjudicators enter a new era of relations with non-humans.

Memorable Moments

Craator takes a single look at the TARDIS exterior, finds it unbelievable as a travel craft, and locks the Doctor up. A friend claims to a group of aliens that the Doctor's never hurt their races – the Doctor crosses his fingers, hoping they believe him. The sometimes-harsh Doctor, in a moment of kindness, tells Peri: "The simple fact is that a universe with your brightness in it is infinitely preferable to a universe without."

Ass-Whuppings

It's said the Doctor's body "dies" from a pepper gas attack, which is likely a euphemism for his ability to go comatose.

The Piglet people of Glomi IV, who religiously confused stories of animals in Jesus' manger and Guy Fawkes' Gunpowder Plot, launch and explode various animals. Once upon a time, they tried this trick with elephants and several dirty cobalt bombs.

Historically, an entire race of quasi-arachnids from Praxis XIV obliterated themselves arguing over episode 2487 of the 20th century

Australian soap opera, *Bondi Blues*. In another disaster, a faulty life support system on the satellite Puerto Lumina pumped out oestrogen and killed 100,000 refugees from Rensec IX.

Kane snaps the neck of a Hand of God, one of those serving in the Adjudication Temple.

Pepper-gas burns Peri's throat and eyes and she collapses from overall psychological shock. The Doctor's blasted by the Node's eyebeams.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The sixth Doctor is emotionally repressed due to regeneration trauma – the pain of his last death lingers. This makes him callous at times. The Node also influences him and brings forth negative feelings.

The Doctor possesses inhuman strength. His body processes are too complex for OBERON to monitor. His physiognomy disposes of foreign matter quickly.

The Doctor's pockets have hundreds of objects, literally several large polymer bags worth.

• *Perpugilliam Brown:* Boston University student Peri learned to use scent in identifying biological matter. At Boston U, she had a five-foot friend named Sara who intimidated a bunch of jocks. Peri went to Madagascar a year before she met the Doctor. She watched Mimsey Incorporation characters as a child. At age 17, away from home for the first time, she bought a 9 mm piece for protection, but never used it. White Fire trains Peri in shooting and knife combat. This story's the farthest she's been into her future or past.

• *The Doctor and Peri:* Peri stays with the Doctor because she knows the fifth Doctor's honesty and complete trustworthiness must lie still in the Time Lord somewhere. The Doctor tells Peri he doesn't regret giving his last life to save hers, and she retorts: "You didn't have any choice." (He insists that he did.) Peri sometimes hates the Doctor, yet regards him as the best friend she's ever had.

• *Kane:* An undercover Adjudicator agent. The Doctor figures crucially into Kane's family-clan legends, suggesting he's a descendent or relative of Jason Kane and Benny. Kane's never met the Doctor, but strangely expected the Time Lord to know him. We don't know Kane's first name, but it's unisex, suitable for a man or a woman (duh – Benny, perhaps?). Kane loved Nadia Chong, one of the Curia, but she died in the White Fire/Adjudicator

battle.

• *OBERON:* Habitat's communications and life support also route through the artificial intelligence OBERON. It's so invulnerable, a direct matter/anti-matter hit might not damage it. The communications system METATRON is slaved to it.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Regeneration draws redundant raw materials from other beings – the Doctor's companions may have lost mass as he regenerated. A Time Lord's brain acts like an alien computer and may dump several billion gigabytes of corrupted information after a brain injury.

A Time Lord's oxygenation system uses every available oxygen atom, so they breathe out only harmful gasses. Their adenine/guanine, thymine/cytosine links aren't based on a biblical structure. Extra subdural and subcutaneous layers give Time Lords resistance to damage. They've got multiple organs of virtually everything.

Acetylsalicylic acid – common aspirin – causes massive allergic pulmonary and cerebral embolism in a Time Lord. Regeneration isn't an option, but this may be survived by a temporary body shutdown.

• *Silurians:* It's illegal to traffic Silurian pituitary-analogue extract. Their beam-projecting third eye packs enough power to make heads explode.

• *Sontarans:* An experiment gave some Sontarans too much individuality, but they were exiled from the Sontaran Horde.

Alien Planets

• *Titania:* A gas giant in a state of energy-matter flux, "hot" enough to nearly be a small sun. Geostationary, automated energy-mining rigs above it siphon power for Dramos Port. Titania's sun is designated K7A-00741-417b-16, and is between the secondary and tertiary spiral arms of the Galaxy.

• *Dramos:* Titania's satellite, a hunk of rock in space. It has no atmosphere, water or anything worth mentioning other than the Port Habitat.

Organizations

• *Adjudicators:* As with the judges of "Judge Dredd," this breed of Adjudicators use voice-controlled Micro-Antipersonnel Vehicles. Their Multi-Function Guns fire a number of projectiles, including time-delayed

microgrenades. The Curia serve as their control/dispatch arm and electronically-watching eyes.

They wear black uniforms and helmets, lack name badges and use shock batons. Minimum Necessary Force is a euphemism for "Extreme Prejudice." Under Commander-In-Chief Craator's leadership, the Adjudicators opened membership to non-humans. Assaulting an Adjudicator gets you a mandatory 2,000 lashes and 15 years in the Church's holding complex – if you live.

• *High Church of Adjudication:* Initially formed from Masonic elements in the police forces of the 20th century. It later evolved into a monastic Order, then reverted in time to a police organization.

• *High Churchmen:* The top-ranking Adjudicators, who live in monastic seclusion and are served by hand-picked Adjudicators called the Hands of God. The High Churchmen, exclusively males, wear black robes and shave their heads. Command-Adjudicators rank just below High Churchmen.

• *Human First:* Advocates the mass extermination of anything non-human. The group has 2.5 million sympathizers.

• *Mimsey Incorporation:* Twentieth-century Earth conglomerate, featuring the cartoon creations of Ralph Waldo Mimsey, including Mickey Monkey and Percival the Penguin. Ralph Mimsey himself was cryogenically frozen at his death, although his head was revived. It was used by the Techno-Magi of 2476 as an Oracle, but later became a data processor for White Fire.

Places to Go

• *Dramos Port Habitat:* A pressurized, geodesic canopy that contains 15 million lifeforms, including five million humans. The Habitat covers a third of Dramos' surface.

• *Temple of the Church of Adjudication:* The largest freestanding structure in the Habitat, 50 stories tall. The topmost floors contain OBERON and stained glass that depicts the Adjudicators' history. The lower sections contain prisoner vast holding cells.

Stuff You Need

• *Kout:* An Adjudicator two-handed whip, some 18-feet long, with metal hooks on one end.

• *"Slugs":* Bio-engineered gastropods fired as projectiles. The slugs have accelerated digestive processes so fast, they stab through living tissue

like bullets.

History

• With the destruction of the Overcities, a mass psychosis hit Earth and resulted in catastrophic civil unrest, mass starvation and cannibalism. The Adjudicators saw their blanket jurisdiction vanish and retreated to a stronghold on Uranus' satellite of Oberon. A Neo-Reformation then pushed the Adjudicators out of the Sol system and they scattered throughout the Galaxy. As the Old Earth Empire fell apart, countless colonies such as Dramos were left to their fate.

• A number of humans converted to alien religions, such as Ice Warrior *Sklacki* rituals, Oolonian toe-worship, and the Rite of Exterminating Everything That Isn't a Dalek.

At the End of the Day

More lukewarm than burning, dogged by out-of-control violence and an insane body count. The Doctor during this period is a real bastard. It's almost a compliment that *Burning Heart* inappropriately reads like a seventh Doctor and Benny story – the Doctor spends the book locked up, armed only with his voice, while a kick-ass Peri insists she'll shoot anything that harms the Doctor. Stone's amazing talent for analogies and whimsical scenes somewhat redeems the final product – but even that gets tiring.

Players

Author: Terrance Dicks. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #21. Release Date: April 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Peri, with the second Doctor.

Travel Log

Rigel Seven, time unknown; South Africa, 1889; Green Park, 1936. The second Doctor travels via a Time Ring to November 18, 1915.

Chronology

For the sixth Doctor and Peri, between "The Mark of the Rani" and "The Two Doctors." For the second Doctor's flashback, between "The War Games" and "Spearhead From Space."

Summary

The Doctor and Peri arrive in South Africa, 1889, during the Boer War, and stop a mysterious assassin from killing a young Winston Churchill. With the Doctor's help, war correspondent Churchill escapes from a P.O.W. camp and returns home a hero.

Back in the TARDIS, the Doctor shows Peri via the thought machine how he first met Churchill in 1915. The Doctor's second incarnation found a Count and Countess trying to deliver Churchill to the Kaiser in Berlin. The Doctor again helped Churchill escape, and a disturbing pattern of historical interference starts to take shape.

The sixth Doctor takes Peri to 1936, partly to fulfill his promise of showing her high society, partly to look for more signs of time manipulation. The two of them consort with the British aristocracy and re-meet a 61-year-old Churchill. Peri encounters the Count and Countess, who haven't aged a day. The Count and Countess kidnap Peri to stop the Doctor's investigations, but the Time Lord and Tom Dekker, his hired muscle, foil the plan.

King Edward VIII, dissatisfied with the British government, intends to dissolve it and consolidate the power of his German sympathizers. With the

Doctor's aid, Churchill learns of the scheme, blocks the King's broadcast and surrounds the King's agents with his own. The Doctor and Churchill, armed with the broadcast tape, strong-arm Edward into abdicating the throne.

The Count and Countess admit to being ageless, time-traveling Players, engaged in a Game of historical alterations. They openly move against the Doctor and during a struggle, the Countess accidentally shoots the Count. Defeated, the Countess retreats. In their shadow dimension, the Players look forward to battling the Doctor again.

Memorable Moments

The sixth Doctor vehemently denies that he'd ever be running a speakeasy in Chicago during Prohibition (which he does in *Blood Harvest*).

Sex and Spirits

Peri, using her two best assets, flirts with a guard to ferret out the TARDIS' location. Champagne is the drink of the day, usually around breakfast time.

Ass-Whuppings

Dekker shoots a Player and a thug. A shell blasts the Doctor and Peri with debris. An SS man taps Peri's ear, knocking her out.

Continuity

The Doctor uses the thought scanner, left alone since "Evil of the Daleks." In a continuity goof, Peri sees an adventure of the second Doctor, yet does not recognize him in "The Two Doctors."

In another goof, the TARDIS parks itself outside space-time, suggesting the Doctor has a means of retrieving it, likely by a Stattenheim remote control. Yet he longs for such a device in "The Two Doctors."

Lieutenant Carstairs and Lady Jennifer debuted in "The War Games."

The second Doctor's period spent working for the Time Lords was hypothesized in *The Discontinuity Guide* (the so-named "Season 6B," set between "The War Games" and "Spearhead From Space"). This is the first novel to confirm this period. The Time Lords initially sent the second Doctor to double-check that soldiers from "The War Games" had returned home safely. On this mission, he first used a Time Ring ("Genesis of the

Daleks," "Revenge of the Cybermen"). If the Time Lords wish, Time Rings cannot be removed.

Joachim von Ribbentrop, the German ambassador, here approaches Hitler with an offer of aid from a Consortium (actually the War Lords from *Timewyrm: Exodus*). Dekker worked for the seventh Doctor in *Blood Harvest* and bagged Ace.

Character Development

• *The sixth Doctor:* The Doctor can drive a Boer War engine. The Doctor rents an elegant little townhouse in Hill Street for this adventure. He recognizes a Thompson sub-machine gun with point-45 caliber shells in a 50-round drum.

• *The second Doctor:* Can speak Hungarian.

• *Perpugilliam Brown:* Peri read the comic book *Swamp Thing* as a child. She used to live in Pasadena, California.

• *Tom Dekker:* Dekker now works for the Pinkerton Detective Agency. His one-man Chicago agency (*Blood Harvest*) petered out after Prohibition was repealed. Dekker doesn't make the connection between the sixth Doctor and seventh Doctors. Jimmy the Op works for Dekker as an informant.

• *The Doctor and Dekker:* The Doctor gives Dekker power of attorney over his Cholmondeley's bank account, trusting Dekker to take only his fees.

• *Colonel Jeremy Carstairs* ("The War Games")*:* Served as an aide to General Sir John French at his Headquarters at St. Omer. After the escape from the chateau in 1915, Carstairs joined Churchill's staff. He remained in the army after World War I, transferring to Military Intelligence. He unofficially keeps Churchill informed about England's state of defense.

• *Colonel Jeremy Carstairs and Lady Jennifer (a.k.a. Jennifer Buckingham Carstairs*): The Time Lords' memory-wipe was successful and they meet the second Doctor for the "first" time in 1915. Jennifer stopped using her "Lady" title when she and Carstairs got married.

• *Winston Churchill:* When the sixth Doctor first meets him, Churchill is without scruple. The second Doctor in 1915 finds Major Churchill humbled by his failure to attack Turkey via the Dardanelles.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor warns Peri not to drop coke on the TARDIS circuits. The Doctor's study is a cozy oak-paneled book-lined room with a perpetually burning coal fire. He has a mahogany desk with a variety of documents.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Despite the second Doctor's request, the Time Lords don't examine the Players' activities.

• *Rigellans:* Inhabitants of Rigel Seven, who mainly live on fruit and beans and thus crucially need flush sanitation. Rigellans near-worship mud and regard it as the sacred birthplace of all life.

Places to Go

Cholmondeley's: One of the oldest and most prestigious banks, founded in 1816. The Doctor left an account there under the name Doctor John Smith.

Organizations

The Players: A mysterious group of beings, capable of time travel and making alterations to history in an attempt to outwit each other. The Players are rich, don't age and are bored. Truth to tell, we don't know their exact purpose, origin or goals.

Players must abide by certain Rules. An Adjudicator (no relation to the Order of Adjudicators) makes rulings. The Players often switch allegiances to one another. The Rules don't cover a Player killing another Player.

The Players are humanoid and pretend to be from different cultures on Earth. The Players can make certain resources, such as a fully supplied chateau, mysteriously appear. The Doctor was offered the chance to become a Player, but declined.

History

• The Doctor helped King Adelebert of Rigel Seven defeat a palace revolution led by the King's son. The Doctor became a national hero and helped design the planet's sewer system. Adelebert finally died and his vengeful son succeeded him.

• The Doctor persuaded the President of Santa Esmerelda to liberalize his political program, lest revolutionaries shoot him. The President made the Doctor an Honorary Consul to Great Britain for life.

• In 1816, the Doctor congratulated the Duke of Wellington after Waterloo and they enjoyed a night on the town, when the Doctor won at faro. At the Prince Regent's suggestion, the Doctor invested in Cholmondeley's, a fledgling bank.

• General Custer ignored the Doctor's advice about taking his Seventh Calvary over the ridge.

• The sixth Doctor interceded in South Africa, 1889, and helped 24-year-old war correspondent Winston Churchill escape from a prisoner of war camp. In 1915, the second Doctor helped Major Winston Churchill, Lieutenant Carstairs and Lady Jennifer escape from German agents intent on sending Churchill to the Kaiser in Berlin.

• The Doctor suggests to Churchill the historical phrase "the broad sunlit uplands of prosperity."

At the End of the Day

Mostly fun, although there's lots of self-plagiarism by Dicks and too many unanswered questions (such as, who the hell are the Players and what do they want?) The Doctor thankfully acts concerned about Peri, showing a compassion Season 22 should have had all the way through. He also ditches his multi-colored coat for a bit, symbolically reflecting a tamer character and a downplay of violence. It's a playful little story, worth your time, but you'd better be a continuity hound or a lot of *Players* will escape you.

State of Change

Author: Christopher Bulis. Virgin Missing Adventures #5. Release Date: December 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Peri.

Travel Log

Egypt, 41 B.C.; alternate Rome, planet Terra Nova, 10 B.C.

Chronology

Between "Revelation of the Daleks" and "The Mysterious Planet."

Summary

After witnessing Cleopatra's prepatory cruise for her meeting with Mark Anthony, the Doctor and Peri find themselves in a Rome of 10 B.C. that they do not recognize. This is a Rome of electric lights, gunpowder and radio aerials, where Octavian lost the Battle of Actium because Anthony's forces were powered by steam engines. It is also a Rome that for some reason interferes with the TARDIS crew's morphic fields, a TARDIS projection that stabilizes their body patterns during flight. Thus, the Doctor momentarily reverts through his former incarnations until he builds a stabilizing device and returns to his sixth self. At the same time, Peri sprouts feathers as she did on the planet Varos.

Learning that the "Oracle" is the source of Rome's new technological wisdom, the Doctor is stunned to discover the Oracle is a complete copy of his TARDIS console. Moments later, he interrupted in the Oracle's chambers by Alexander Helios, the Dictator of Rome. Alexander's troops try to capture the Doctor, but the Time Lord demonstrates enough courage and fighting skill to be named Alexander's champion.

Meanwhile, a winged Peri has saved Ptolemy Caesar, son of Cleopatra and Julius Caesar, from Alexander's assassins. With Peri's encouragement – and as Alexander feared might happen – Ptolemy finds the courage to rally the people around him against the dictator. In prison, the Doctor is visited by Cleopatra Selene, ruler of Egypt and the villainous Rani in disguise. The

Rani tells how she met a Vortex creature capable of duplicating items, and in attempting to copy the Doctor's TARDIS console, the creature replicated the entire space-time region the Doctor was traveling through. Thus, this Rome, the land and all of its inhabitants are facsimiles.

The Rani, finished with her bragging, sets her champion on the Doctor in the arena. The Doctor wins and declares himself Ptolemy's champion, thus boosting Ptolemy's support. While Ptolemy's forces engage the Rani's, the Doctor meets with the lonely Vortex creature – named Iam – and persuades it to duplicate the entire Earth and plunk it into the real Universe. With her troops routed, the Rani flees in her TARDIS. And the Doctor and Peri, returned to normal in the real Universe, enjoy the new planet Terra Nova on which Iam will always have company.

Memorable Moments

Peri pretends to be Cleopatra's spirit, complete with feathers and glow-in-the-dark putty. In the tradition of the first Doctor, the sixth Doctor fights against guards with dust, ash, curtains, tassels cord and whatever the hell else is handy. A flying Peri brings down a small plane by cutting control wires with her molecular cutter. She bursts through the airship window like Batman.

Sex and Spirits

Peri declines Ptolemy Caesar's marriage proposal.

Ass-Whuppings

The Rani turns one unfortunate man into a shrub.

Continuity

When the Doctor's morphic field destabilizes, he slips through all his past incarnations. The Doctor still has a supply of the Thal anti-radiation drug ("The Daleks"). The Rani's fate after "The Mark of the Rani" is revealed (*see Character Development*). Peri has gained inner strength from her ordeal on Varos. The TARDIS has a new swimming pool that replaced the one the Doctor jettisoned ("Vengeance on Varos").

Lucifer Rising introduced the concept of morphic fields.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor can build a morphic resonator that stabilizes morphic fields. By adjusting this resonator, the Doctor can access the abilities of former Doctors, such as the third Doctor's sword skill. The Doctor studied martial arts in the East, particularly good footwork and a novel backswing. He knows a nerve pinch that instantly immobilizes opponents. He fights with a staff that's a pair of knucklebows with grips set one third in from each end. One end holds an iron ball; the other has a heavy saw-toothed blade.

The Doctor carries a powerful molecular cutter and bonder. A medallion around his neck has a miniature camera that transmits images to the TARDIS. Using a pea-sized earpiece and a throat microphone, he can sub-vocalize to the TARDIS and secretly communicate with Peri.

• *Perpugilliam Brown:* In her avian state, Peri's body is covered with feathers, except for her face. She flies on wings that span 16 feet. She also has strong talons. The Doctor suspected she might have subconsciously tapped Terra Nova's trace energy field for kinetic energy to fly. Or perhaps, in her unstable condition, she developed telekinesis which aided with flight. As Terra Nova stabilized, Peri lost her powers.

• *The Rani:* A large ruby ring on the Rani's hand enhances her hypnotism.

• *The Rani and Iam:* After "The Mark of the Rani," the Master tricked the Rani into leaving the control room, then sealed it off. He ejected the sub-section she was in, and she cobbled together a control board to achieve a stable orbit around her TARDIS' core. She was lucky enough to find a bubble of negative vortex energy – a stable micro-universe – with a single occupant. The creature she met was pure energy, with vast abilities within its own universe.

The creature, named Iam, was childish, creatively stupid and lonely. The Rani taught it to make tunneling effects into normal space. She realized the creature could replicate objects but create nothing original. Also, it could only copy something once. She hoped to copy her own TARDIS, but found the Doctor's instead. The creature underestimated its power and copied the entire local time-space sector the Doctor was moving through – a large slice of Earth in 32 B.C.

• *The Oracle:* The duplicate TARDIS console found off the coast of Alexandria. Its memory bank and telepathic induction circuits remained intact to answer questions. Among other things, it supplied the Romans with the Tragellan method, helping them to separate isotopes, develop isotope 235 and build an atomic bomb (the Ultimus).

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS pool has an adjustable gravity control. The ceiling has a pastoral fresco painted by Michaelangelo. Either the Doctor or the TARDIS noted Peri's pool usage and created a new doorway to it. The TARDIS can materialize under falling persons and drop them into the pool area.

The TARDIS' transducer cells absorb energy over a wide spectrum and transmit it to the TARDIS via a hyperspatial loop. The cells can absorb solar energy or uranium-powered radioactivity.

The Ship can materialize and hover in mid-air. The central console has a scratch where Peri dropped a coffee mug.

After Varos, the Doctor installed a stand-by mass-converter that transforms spare shell material into energy. However, it requires a certain power input to reach a self-sustaining level.

One TARDIS roundel contains a plethora of lamps, including a dozen fist-sized blobs of bioluminescent jelly – children's toys circa 2114.

• *The Rani's TARDIS:* The exterior appears as a mirror. The Rani's TARDIS can use the morphic field of an imprisoned being and convey it on the Rani for disguise purposes.

Alien Planets

Terra Nova: A copied Earth, made by the entity Iam. It lies in an unspecified location. The duplication was similar to making a mirror reflection solid and reversing it. Australia was therefore upside-down and there were other similar errors. Terra Nova's original sun was a yellow dwarf star, that was located closer than Earth's sun. Its moon was also smaller, before Iam duplicated the entire planet and a full-sized sun.

Because Terra Nova was only a copy of the known world, it originally ended in sheer space. The borders were highly flawed and radioactive, killing the natives and spawning mutations such as the mythical Hydra.

Stuff You Need

• *The Eye of Harmony:* Under normal circumstances, the Gallifreyan Eye of Harmony's beam is available to TARDISes anywhere in time and space. The beam also supplies a fixed reference point, physically and temporally.

• *Ultimus:* An atomic bomb, hidden in Cleopatra's coffin for transport to Egypt, where it was intended to destroy Cleopatra Selene.

Time Travel

Travelling in a dematerialized state can expose you to various types of hyperspatial stress or radiation that destabilize physical forms. TARDISes therefore project morphic fields to stabilize its own pattern and that of passengers. Isolated from morphic fields, destabilized bodies seek new points of stability. For Time Lords, this means previous incarnations. For non-Time Lords, this means that subconscious images might become reality, such as Peri's bird form from Varos.

The Time Vortex the TARDIS travels through is described as an "interdimensional energy flux tube."

History (Terra Nova)

On Terra Nova, the discovery of the Oracle yielded such secrets as the steam-driven engine and blasting powder. Octavian and Agrippa lost the battle of Actium because their opponents had steam-powered ships. Julius Caesar was named dictator for life in 44 B.C. Mark Anthony was elected permanent Consul of Rome, then Praetor and then Dictator – but he never became Emperor.

Mark Anthony and Cleopatra had two children: Cleopatra Selene and Alexander Helios. Ptolemy Caesar, son of Julius Caesar and Cleopatra, became *tribunus laticlavius* of the Fifth Legion of the Romano-Egyptian Dominion.

The Dominion was established and divided between Cleopatra, Alexander Helios and Ptolemy, with Ptolemy mostly a figurehead. The calendar was renumbered. After Cleopatra was buried in Rome, Cleopatra Selene succeeded her mother as Queen of the Eastern Realm. Alexander became Dictator of Rome after Mark Anthony's death.

The Dominion consolidated its power, then expanded into the Northern lands and Africa and Persia. Ptolemy also went East.

History

The Doctor and Peri witness Cleopatra's prepatory cruise before her journey to Tarsus and meeting with Mark Anthony.

At the End of the Day

The sixth Doctor's both capable and compassionate, while Peri becomes tenacious and full of useful ideas (such as her inspired portrayal of

Cleopatra's "ghost"). The whole novel's rounded out by strong-willed characters, superb Doctor/Rani interaction and an unfolding mystery that borrows from *Conundrum* (an unreal land that ends in a void) but doesn't rely on it. Overall, highly recommended, though there are two regrets: Bulis' fascination with childish powerful entities (*Shadowmind* comes to mind) and that the Rani stupidly drives almost everyone against her.

The Nightmare Fair

Author: Graham Williams. Virgin Missing Episode #1. Release Date: July 1989.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Peri.

Travel Log

Blackpool Tower, circa 1980s.

Chronology

Between "Revelation of the Daleks" and *The Ultimate Evil*.

Summary

A mysterious force yanks the TARDIS halfway across the Milky Way to a fun fair in Blackpool, where the Doctor's old enemy, the nigh all-powerful Celestial Toymaker, prepares to gain revenge for his past defeat. The Toymaker's fun fair agents capture the Doctor and Peri, then imprison them with a group of aliens. The immortal Toymaker, as is his habit, intends to defeat all of them at various games, thus making them his slaves for eternity.

While the Doctor plays one of the Toymaker's deadly video games, he re-examines what he knows of the Toymaker and deduces much of the Toymaker's origin (*see Character Development*). The Mechanic, a captured alien who specializes in engineering, rigs up a mental broadcast transmitter on the Toymaker's telepathic wavelength and has Peri scream into the device. The Toymaker's mental senses are overwhelmed and he falls unconscious for a moment.

The Doctor frantically finds the Toymaker's tele-mechanical relay, a device through which the Toymaker channels his power for mundane tasks. The Doctor redirects the relay and erects a force field around the Toymaker that's fueled by his own mental power. So long as the Toymaker's brain functions, the force field will imprison him forever. The Doctor tows the Toymaker's force field with the TARDIS' transdimensional stabilizer to a desolate location.

Memorable Moments

The Toymaker says how his games pale before those of Earth, recalling how soldiers in wartime often play football with heads. The moment where the Doctor works out the Toymaker's origin is one of the series' most dramatic turnabouts, with the reader feeling overwhelming sympathy for the fiend.

Ass-Whuppings

The Toymaker's first assistant, Stefan, dies when Peri's scream cuts him off from the Toymaker's power.

Continuity

The first Doctor, Steven and Dodo outwitted the Toymaker and destroyed his realm in "The Celestial Toymaker." Peri splurges on a five-pound note that belonged to Jamie.

The fifth Doctor, Tegan, Adric and Nyssa will encounter the Toymaker in the upcoming BBC Past Doctor Adventure *Divided Loyalties* by Gary Russell. The Doctor now carries the signet ring of Rassilon, formerly held by Ruath in *Goth Opera*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The culturally naïve Doctor tries candy floss for the first time. He can tap "Three Blind Mice" with base two as its starting point. During the Globus Wars of Independence, he coined an advertising jingle for Oombrean Snagfree twine ("Fine twine for thee and thine"). His stellar video game skills reflect countless hours spent playing in some intergalactic dive.

• *The Celestial Toymaker:* At some point, an unnamed catastrophe destroyed the Toymaker's native universe and hurled him, the only survivor, into ours. He carries some matter (but clearly not anti-matter) from his own universe with him and can therefore ignore many Universal laws of physics. As the Toymaker's native universe recedes in time, it drains away his personal time as it goes, granting him immortality. The Time Lords attempted to track his history but failed.

The Toymaker in many ways epitomizes the powers and abilities of the Space-Time Vortex and is immeasurably telepathic and telekinetic. He can survive in a supernova with no difficulties.

The Toymaker's primary weakness is he tires of focusing on everything and uses an electro-mechanical device to on draw his power and perform routine tasks, such as maintaining force fields on prisoners.

A man named Stefan was the Toymaker's first assistant, having lost a game of dice to the Toymaker in Constantinople during the Third Crusade.

Alien Races

Ventusans: Half spider, half crab, with antennae, five thin legs and a sixth leg with an armored claw. The Ventusans, expert mechanics, keep half the spacefleets in the galaxy running.

Phenomena

Psionics: The Doctor says you don't suddenly become psychic.

History

• After the Toymaker was flung into our Universe, he spent thousands of years using his newfound abilities to help many races colonize new worlds. In time, he became bored with his immense power and destroyed the civilizations he'd helped build, but even that didn't fulfill him. He found distraction in the world of games. He spent a number of millennia on Earth causing who-knows-what chaos.

• The Doctor made a Han-Sen original tapestry while the British Fleet shelled the city during the Opium Wars.

At the End of the Day

Macabre and twisted, playing off the video-game craze of the mid-80s. The bit where we view the Toymaker as a solitary, tragic figure will freeze your blood with its implications, and the Doctor's pity for him speaks volumes. The Toymaker in many ways represents the crushing boredom of the years that could have made the Doctor corrupt. Of all the "Missing Episode" stories, it's a damn shame this didn't get made, especially if Michael Gough, twenty years later, could have played the Toymaker again.

The Ultimate Evil

Author: Wally K Daly. Virgin "Missing Episode" #2. Release Date: August 1989. [Note on the 2014 ebook: The entry for *The Ultimate Evil* was, rather shamefully, left out of *I, Who* and included after-the-fact in *I, Who 2*. While recognizing the benefits of leaving this ebook to represent *I, Who* as it originally appeared in print, this was too glaring a mistake to ignore.]

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Peri.

Travel Log

The Tranquela seaside, Ravlos' laboratory, Ameliera and Mordant's planetoid, time unknown.

Chronology

Between *The Nightmare Fair* and *Mission to Magnus*.

Summary

When the Doctor finds a long-forgotten "holiday ball" he received from an evil salesman named Dwarf Mordant, the sphere links up with a similar ball on Mordant's ship and allows the menacing midget to spy on the TARDIS. To Mordant's horror, the ball automatically recommends the Doctor vacation on the peaceful isle of Tranquela, where Mordant is plotting to create a war so he can act as an arms merchant.

For 50 years, Tranquela has maintained peace with its neighboring nation of Ameliera, but Mordant, from his mobile planetoid, beings periodically beaming a hate-inducing ray onto Tranquela and spurring the population to violence.

Mordant discovers that scientists Ravlos and Kareelya, old friends of the Doctor, have found a way to block his hate transmissions. So when the Doctor arrives in Ravlos' laboratory, Mordant uses his hate ray to turn the Doctor into a homicidal maniac. Fortunately, Ravlos and Kareelya quickly cobble together a helmet that shields the Doctor from Mordant's beam.

Meanwhile, Peri befriends a young Tranquelan named Locas, who shares

his race's ability to teleport. When Peri asks Locas to home in on the Doctor's holiday ball, Locas locks on to Mordant's holiday balls and teleports there instead. Peri and Locas escape to warn the Doctor of their discovery, convincing the Doctor to materialize the TARDIS on Mordant's planetoid.

By threatening to inform the Time Lords of Mordant's holiday balls, which could potentially spy on Gallifrey, the Doctor makes Mordant fear the Time Lords will retroactively tinker with his timeline and remove him as a threat. Accordingly, Mordant bathes Tranquela and Ameliera in a happiness beam, averting the war. While the two nations return to peace, Mordant departs for space.

Memorable Moments

A scene where a hate-induced Doctor uses two glass shards as daggers and chases his friends Ravlos and Kareelya about is memorable – memorable, that is, as proof of God's mercy for canning this overly violent script.

Ass-Whuppings

A hate-triggered mob throws rocks that stun Peri. Amelieron interrogators repeatedly zap the Doctor with electricity.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* By decreasing the TARDIS' gravity by five percent, the Doctor doesn't feel so fat. He has gray eyes.

• *The Doctor and Perpugilliam Brown:* The hypocritical Doctor makes jabs about Peri's weight.

• *Dwarf Mordant:* The best salesman of the Salakan race, with a mobile planetoid ship, a hypno-gun and a hatred/happiness ray.

• *Ravlos and Kareelya:* The Doctor's friends from Tranquela haven't seen him for years, but recognize his new incarnation. Ravlos is in his mid-50s.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS:* Every piece of the TARDIS is now functioning perfectly and the Doctor, without anything to fix, grows restless and a bit distraught.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Can go back in time and engage in gene manipulation, thus retroactively creating less dangerous versions of their enemies.

• *Tranquelans:* The humanoid Tranquelans can innately teleport themselves by thinking of a place or object. They can carry passengers through such a process. Empty spheroids called "thought balloons" sometimes help them focus. The Tranquelan First Family rules an entire Family hierarchy. It's said that Family members cannot lie – but that's clearly untrue.

• *Amelierons:* Helmet-wearing humanoids covered in armor from top to toe, linked by Interceptors to a "Central Computer" that decides morality for them.

• *Salakans:* Mordant's race is among the galaxy's top arms dealers and salesmen. If a planet has no need of their war-time services, the Salakans stealthily create one. Salakans are scaly and toothless, with three webbed fingers and three eyes, two of them on flexible stalks.

Stuff You Need

The Salakans routinely give *Salakan Holiday Balls* to Time Lords to track their movements and avoid them. Each holiday ball keys itself to its user's brain wave patterns.

Places to Go

Breaking the no-contact rule between the nations of *Tranquela and Ameliera* earns you the death penalty. Each nation keeps a high-security, well-stocked armory.

At the End of the Day

Spare us. If you didn't think the Colin Baker era had enough violence, or that the Doctor wasn't enough of a raving, homicidal jackass, you'll love *The Ultimate Evil* – an undramatic and sometimes childish work that doesn't even live up to its title. Mordant's hate beam makes the Doctor into a killing maniac so much, you'd think you're watching the strangulation scene from "The Twin Dilemma" for the whole episode. Thank Heavens this didn't get filmed.

Mission to Magnus

Author: Philip Martin. Virgin Missing Episode #3. Release Date: July 1990.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Peri.

Travel Log

Deep space and Magnus, mid-23rd century.

Chronology

Between *The Ultimate Evil* and "The Mysterious Planet".

Summary

A time beam pulls the TARDIS into the future, where the Doctor re-meets Anzor, a Time Lord bully from his class in the fourth millennium. Anzor's TARDIS is trapped by an unnamed warship, and he berates the Doctor into activating the trans-replicator feature that swaps their Ships.

The Doctor's TARDIS manages to break free and lands on the female-dominated world of Magnus Epsilon. There, the leader of the seven sisterhoods, named Rana, has requested the Time Lords' help in eliminating her people's enemies on the neighboring planet of Salvak. However, when Anzor refuses to give Rana time technology, she tries to wrest it from him and the captured Doctor. Anzor tries to flee in his TARDIS, but the Doctor has preprogrammed it to slowly travel to the beginning of time, trapping the bully Anzor and preventing the Magnusans from gaining his time technology.

Peri helps the Doctor escape, but in the caves of Magnus, they discover Ice Warriors from Mars, the crewmen of the warship that intercepted Anzor's TARDIS. The destitute Ice Warriors seek to turn Magnus into a frosty breeding ground, and detonate a series of neutrino-boosted nuclear bombs that push Magnus away from its sun into perpetual winter. As Rana's people and a scouting party from Salvak unite against the Ice Warriors, the Doctor detonates a second bomb network, planted by the Ice Warriors in case the first attempt failed. This throws Magnus back into its original orbit, and the planet's new warmth kills the Ice Warriors. The Doctor and Peri

depart as Rana and Ishka, the leader of a Salvak continent, discuss a peace treaty and marriage.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor turns a sonic burner on one pack of Ice Warriors, and his repair to Magnus' orbit warms the planet and kills the rest.

Continuity

After "Vengeance on Varos," the Mentor named Sil fell out of favor with Lord Kiv. Sil and Kiv next appear in "Mindwarp."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Can block Magnus mind-probes and uses it in reverse to scan his interrogators. He has never given away Gallifreyan time-travel secrets. He has blue eyes.

• *Anzor:* Anzor is the son of a former council leader on Gallifrey and a childhood bully of the Doctor, whom he hasn't seen for eons. Anzor once sealed classmate Cheevah in a block of crystal and dropped them from a great height. Anzor's intelligence and technical expertise were limited.

• *The Doctor and Anzor:* The Doctor maintains a child-like fear of his former tormentor Anzor.

• *Sil:* The loathsome Sil allied himself with the Ice Warriors to profit from Magnus' sudden cold snap, but the Ice Warriors welched on the deal. Sil then considered the potential for profit in the new peace arrangement between Magnus and Salvak.

• *The Doctor's TARDIS:* The time safety jump feature moves the TARDIS into the future as far as the Ship determines is necessary.

• *TARDISes:* Trans-replicator mode allows two TARDISes to trade locations. Gallifreyan Council Ships are equipped with an emergency compulsion facility that attracts other TARDISes. The Doctor and Anzor's TARDISes have very different locks, although the Magnusans successfully break into the Doctor's TARDIS.

Alien Races

Ice Warriors: Are immune to Magnusan force sticks.

Alien Planets

• *Magnus Epsilon:* A temperate Earth colony. Rana Zandusia leads the seven sisterhoods of Magnus, while Vion leads the religious, male-populated Magnii. A virus in Magnus' atmosphere, when combined with sunlight, used to kill males but was destroyed by Magnus' sudden temperature shifts.

Females, some of them telepathic, dominate. Only docile males, used in the reproduction laboratories, are let live past age 20. Female Magnusans wear rings that project paralyzing beams.

• *Salvak:* Compared to Magnus, Salvak is much more arid. Ishka rules Avata, a Salvak continent.

At the End of the Day

Setting aside that the physics here are just ludicrous (moving planets around with explosions is comedy best left to "Red Dwarf"), the plot's very schizophrenic, with Anzor being taken care of just as the Ice Warriors walk on stage. It's another example of the shallowness of some sixth Doctor stories, and a Philip Martin tale that pales before his subsequent "Mindwarp."

Time of Your Life

Author: Steve Lyons. Virgin Missing Adventure #8. Release Date: March 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Grant Markham.

Travel Log

The planet Torrok and an abandoned spaceship of the Terran Security Force, 2191.

Chronology

Between "The Ultimate Foe" and "Time and the Rani".

Summary

The Doctor tries to avoid becoming his evil future self, the Valeyard, by becoming a hermit and fishing on Torrok – a planet where citizens by law must watch horrible TV shows all day. After a near-fatal brush with the planet's Peace Keepers, the Doctor accepts a young, self-actualized girl named Angela as his new travelling companion.

The Time Lords navigate the TARDIS to the source of Torrok's broadcasts, the space station headquarters of the Meson Broadcasting Service, so the Doctor can complete a mission for them. A furious Doctor, angered to be a pawn of the Time Lords, thinks it safer if Angela remains aboard an abandoned spaceship and sets out. Sadly, a strange mechanical being kills Angela.

On the satellite, the Doctor sees first-hand the tripe that Meson telecasts. He becomes an unwilling player in "Death-Hunt 3000," where contestants try to kill each other in trans-dimensional Marston Spheres. Simultaneously, "Time of Your Life," a show of time-travelling terror, debuts and transports the city of New Tokyo into a Marston Sphere. A giant robot dinosaur terrorizes the city until computer programmer Grant Markham interferes with the dinosaur's programming and wrecks it.

The Doctor comes under attack from Krllxk, an information-eating datavore that goes insane from absorbing too much TV. Krllxk rallies the

station's mechanics to kill all the humans as Krllxk's interference plunges the Meson station toward the sun.

The Doctor transmats Neo Tokyo back to New Earth, leaving Grant without a way back home. He then negotiates with Krllxk for the station's survivors and takes them aboard the TARDIS – but Krllxk sneaks aboard in a game-show android named Nik Calvin. The station vaporizes.

To keep the datavore away from the TARDIS systems, the Doctor beats the powerful android to death with the TARDIS hatstand. On Torrok, the television-deprived people rebel and finally crush the Peace Keepers. As the rebuilding begins, the Doctor accepts Grant as a new travelling companion.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor, to avoid doing the Time Lords' bidding, thinks he might have to sweat out a few years in the TARDIS and recommends Angela suspend her bodily functions – as if she can. Later, enraged over Angela's death, he punches his fist through a monitor screen.

The Doctor frees Angela's body from the techno wall spike on which it hangs and closes her eyes. Though a lot of readers didn't like it, it's hard to forget the Doctor battering an android to death with the TARDIS hatstand.

Ass-Whuppings

The death of the Doctor's companion Angela.

The Doctor is shot three times: twice by energy weapons and once when Bloodsoak Bunny grazes the Doctor's left shoulder with a bullet (and the Doctor knocks himself out dodging it). A wolven H'arthi takes a piece of the Doctor's flesh. Krllxk attacks the Doctor mentally, killing three audience members wired into his senses.

Continuity

Many of the Doctor's memories of his trial were wiped because it's dangerous to know too much of the future ("The Trial of a Time Lord"). The Doctor is still uncertain as to Peri's fate ("Mindwarp"). He hasn't seen a purple horse with yellow spots since the last Intergalactic Peace Conference ("The Curse of Peladon").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor claims he wears his multi-colored coat because a) He's got great sartorial taste; and B) For secrecy, so people don't notice his face. His new waistcoat has diagonal greens and oranges.

The Doctor knows a type of nerve pinch that renders people unconscious. He admits that, for once, the Time Lords were right to summon his assistance – and that lives might have been saved if he'd realized this sooner.

• *Grant Markham:* A resident of Neo Tokyo, New Earth, the red-haired Grant works as a computer programmer and has programmed in MANOP-27 using a direct brain interface. He was up for a promotion before he met the Doctor.

Grant's family hasn't lived on Earth in three generations. Grant himself was born on the agricultural world of Agora. Because of Agoran upbringing and warnings about machinery, Grant is afraid of robots.

• *Angela Jennings:* Was a diamond-in-the-rough on the oppressed planet of Torrok, where the natives are expected to watch abominable TV all day. Twenty-year-old Angela, however, discovered a crack in her home and, after a false start, went outside to see the suns. It was a gutsy thing – her father had been slain by "outside perils" and her sister Ruth taken away by the Peace Keepers.

Angela had black hair and green eyes. Her ID number was 9/12/44. Aboard an abandoned spaceship, the weakened datavore Krllxk killed her body. The last bits of Angela's consciousness, absorbed by Krllxk, died as the Meson station vaporized.

• *Krllxk:* A techno-organic, data-consuming entity capable of extending its own being into computer systems. It replaced systems with its own substance, puffing up like a bloodsucking leech. It may have been an artificial learning system, or a tool for industrial espionage.

• *The TARDIS:* The Time Lords can deactivate the TARDIS, insuring the Doctor will not leave before completing his mission.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Time Lord physiology protects the Doctor from death by a Peace Keeper's blast. Time Lords can reorder their neural pathways into an analog of a virus-busting program.

• *H'arthi:* A wolf-like creature, augmented mechanically, that hunts people if it tastes their blood.

Alien Planets

• *Meson Primus:* Roughly has a 24-hour day, if you adjust the clocks every fortnight.

• *Helio IV:* The Galatian Bank tried to establish an outpost on this moon, which has a 16-hour day, only five of which are in darkness. Such a cycle threw off the reconnaissance party's Circadian rhythms until a third injured themselves in pointless skirmishes.

Places to Go

Neo Tokyo: Because New London was built first, Neo Tokyo is oddly located on the River Thames.

Stuff You Need

The Marston Sphere: Trans-dimensional space used by Meson Broadcasting Service for various games, TV shows and competitions.

Organizations

Meson Broadcasting Service (a.k.a. "the Network"): Broadcast service operating from a spherical station midway between Torrok and Meson Primus. Programs are encoded with electronic hypnotism.

At the End of the Day

It's been said that *Time of Your Life* features the same kind of violence that made Season 22 so unpopular, goes on too many tangents and is overall too long – all of that's true. But there's a lot of pointed TV satire here, turning *ToYL* into "Vengeance on Varos" done *well*. Both Grant and the doomed, Katarina-like Angela come through as stellar companions, though Grant's used better in *Killing Ground*. It's tangled overall, but interesting if viewed as a demonstration of TV becoming real.

Killing Ground

Author: Steve Lyons. Virgin Missing Adventure #23. Release Date: June 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Grant Markham.

Travel Log

Planet Agora and a Selachian warcraft, 2191. Also, the ArcHives, time unknown.

Chronology

After *Time of Your Life*

Summary

Grant Markham has little interest in returning to his home planet of Agora, but the Doctor suspects the presence of his old foes, the Cybermen, and heads there. Little does the Doctor know that the Cybermen conquered Agora decades ago, and return every three years to harvest the strongest 500 Agoran males for Cyber-conversion.

Agora's temporal detectors register the TARDIS's arrival and the planet's Overseers, pawns of the Cybermen, swiftly capture the Doctor. For a time, Agoran rebels protect Grant, but he's apprehended also. Overseer Ben Taggart, secretly Grant's father, who sent him away from Agora years ago, releases his son and is captured for his treachery. Taggart is sent to the arriving Cybership, come for the three-year tribute, to undergo Cyber-conversion.

Meanwhile, the Doctor escapes, even as Agoran scientist Maxine Cartern, using stolen Cyber-technology, converts volunteers into the cybernetic Bronze Knights to defend the planet. The Bronze Knights wipe out the Cybermen, but the Doctor warns the rebels about the likelihood Cyber-reinforcements.

Aboard the Cybership, Grant finds Ben Taggart and realizes he's Taggart's son. Unfortunately, the Cyber-conversion process is not always successful, and Taggart dies. The Cybermen reinforcements arrive and

deliver a bloody response, blasting an Agoran village from their stolen Selachian spaceship. The reactivated Cyber converter turns the incubating Agorans into Cybermen. Grant wishes to lessen the pain of his father's death and volunteers to become a mechanical Bronze Knight, but Carter convinces Grant it's better to remain human. The Cybermen storm the Bronze Knights and butcher the rebels until Grant lowers the base's temperature and thus activates the Cybermen's hibernation circuits, deactivating them. The Cybermen that continue to struggle are wiped out when the base's pipes burst with liquid freon.

The Doctor concludes that years of bitter wars have exhausted the Cybermen's parts supply and they're more organic than ever. He sabotages the Selachian warship's main cannon and the radiation backlash wipes the Cybermen out. The radiation nearly kills the Doctor too, but he reaches the TARDIS and heals.

Agora begins rebuilding and the mechanical Bronze Knights, having lost some humanity and unable to reacclimatize to Agoran society, depart with Carter to hunt the Cybermen in a Cyber scout ship. The Doctor and Grant leave in the TARDIS.

Memorable Moments

Grant watches his father die – a rare emotional moment for a companion. Emotionally distraught, he wrestles with becoming a Bronze Knight. In a gory moment for Grant, our new companion, a decapitated Cybermen's head lands in Grant's hands, spewing liquid all over him.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor pushes two wounded Cybermen over a railing to their deaths. More, he triggers a radiation release that destroys the Cybermen's main ship. Most ruthlessly, he blasts the Cyberleader four times in the back.

The Doctor is tortured in prison for three weeks, given a swollen right eye and Heaven knows what other ailments. A Cyberman's head weapon blasts him twice in the torso. A blast from a dying Cyberman stops Grant's heart for a bit.

Continuity

The fourth Doctor encountered this particular breed of Cybermen on Nerva Beacon ("Revenge of the Cybermen").

The ArcHivist Hegelia's research appears in the reference work *Cybermen* by David Banks. The Doctor gripes because Grant promised to make tea in *Time of Your Life* and still hasn't made any. The Cybermen here use a stolen Selachian warship, and the actual Selachians first appear in *The Murder Game*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Emptying the Doctor's pockets takes an hour. He can lockpick a Cyberman Artificial Intelligence device with a hairpin.

The Doctor fears becoming the Valeyard and desperately tries to keep his aggressive nature in check. Dangling from a rope, the Doctor wonders if it might not be simpler to just let go, to prevent him from hurting people like his dead companion Angela (*Time of Your Life*). Eventually, the Doctor triumphs and becomes self-actualized, saving thousands of lives.

• *Grant Markham:* At age four, Grant witnessed his mother's death. Grant's father, Benjamin Michael Taggart, sent him as a four-year-old child to New Earth to protect him – Grant didn't understand much of what was happening. Grant volunteers to become a Bronze Knight, but decides it's better to be human. Skilled with computers, Grant knows a program that can override Cyber locks by anticipating the next combination. He hopes to visit mid-21st century Earth, the zenith of the Technological Age.

• *Benjamin Michael Taggart and Jean Markham:* Grant's parents. In the invasion of Agora, Grant's mother Jean was killed by two Cybermen, who blasted her as she went to watch the fighting. Ben Taggart, born in 2152, sold out to the Cybermen in 2175 and became an Overseer. Three years later, an ArcHive timeship was recovered and Ben used it to send Grant and three other children away from Agora to New Earth. Grant was Ben's last child.

• *Hegelia:* ArcHivist from Arc University. She was the foremost authority on Cybermen in her time, driven to experience Cyber-conversion and learn if bits of the original personality survived conversion.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor ponders if, without the TARDIS key, he could enter the Ship by lock-picking it and using his telepathic link.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Radiation-damaged Time Lords, without their TARDISes, might keep dying until every regeneration is used up.

• *The Bronze Knights:* Created by scientist Maxine Carter, the Bronze Knights underwent a process similar to Cyber-conversion. The brain hemispheres of each volunteer were separated to improve reaction time and awareness. Unfortunately, they had trouble communicating, since the hemispheres work in tandem to collect data and express it.

Because personality loss happened after conversion, the Knights named themselves by numbers. Rebel Arthur Lakesmith was the first Bronze Knight.

• *The Cybermen:* Research conducted by the ArcHivist Hegelia indicates no elements of a person's personality survive Cyber-conversion. Yet, immediately after Hegelia's own conversion, a small spark of her personality remained to warn her pupil Jolarr from danger. That said, assume fully-converted Cybermen are dominated by the Cyber-personality.

Cyber-conversion involves being wrapped in a silver web. Your torso is ripped apart and you're split open like an overripe cantaloupe. Several organs, including the heart, are removed and life support activates. A Cyber mind, most likely a manufactured personality, becomes dominant and a computer link provides data on Cyber history. Your legs are replaced and your eye sockets filled with ruby ocular crystals.

Cyberlocks have a six-figure combination that randomizes each second. The Cybermen open them by communing with the device's Artificial Intelligence circuits. Cyberleaders can broadcast a signal that neutralizes all Cyber-technology in the area.

For lack of mechanical parts, the Cybermen are using more organic components and are vulnerable to radiation.

• *Agorans:* Because men screw like bunnies to keep the conception rates high, children take their mother's name.

Alien Planets

Agora: Agora is the most remote of Earth's initial colonies, located in the Centraxis system and numbered Colony World #A7. Gold doesn't occur there naturally.

Places to Go

ArcHives: Data repository that's recorded many of the Doctor's adventures, including the sixth Doctor's period with Melanie and Grant.

Ships

• *New Hope:* Colony ship used to found Agora.

• *Lifeline:* Carried Grant Markham and other children to Agora.

• *Selachian warcraft:* Its plasma beam can cut through a planet.

History

• Many of the original Mondans, the ancestors of the Cybermen, didn't wish for conversion.

• The farming world of Agora was founded in 2100. The Cybermen invaded Agora in the 2150s, and a splinter faction of Agorans left in the original colony ship and established New Earth.

• While most of the Cybermen hibernated on Telos, cyberNomads left their base on Planet 14 ("The Invasion") and sparked a war with Voga – which the Cybermen lost sometime before 2191. The CyberWars were fought shortly after. Another group of cyberNomads may have reopened the Telosian tombs and forged a new race, the Neomorphs, which proliferated in the 26th century.

At the End of the Day

It's a bit hard to penetrate, but nonetheless, *Killing Ground* unfolds as a moving rite of passage where almost everyone suffers. In short, the story *matters*. The Doctor undergoes physical torture and a self-crisis, Grant takes emotional shelling and the Bronze Knights lose their humanity. The Doctor passionately defends his record of interference with history, and argues, with difficulty, that the Bronze Knights are abominations – even if they kicked the Cybermen's asses. All of this and more ties into a tapestry that's sometimes underappreciated by fans.

Mission: Impractical

Author: David A. McIntee. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #12. Release Date: June 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Frobisher.

Travel Log

Los Angeles, 1977; Gamma Delphinus system, time unknown.

Chronology

For the Doctor, between "The Trial of a Time Lord" and "Time and the Rani." For Frobisher, between the "Doctor Who Magazine" comic strips *War Game* and *Fun House*.

Summary

Two professional assassins, a S'Raph Tzun and a Veltrochni, materialize in the TARDIS to murder the Doctor. However, because the killers aren't fully in phase with the TARDIS' inner dimensions, the Doctor dematerializes his ship around the assassins and expels them back from whence they came. Puzzled by who would want him dead, the Doctor follows the duo's time trail to Vandor Prime in the Gamma Delphinus system.

Together with his companion Frobisher, a metamorph Whifferdill who prefers the form of an Emperor Penguin, the Doctor re-meets the rogues Sabalom Glitz and Dibber. Niccolo Mandell, the head of Vandori Prime security, catches Glitz snitching navigation crystals and gives him a choice – complete a mission for Mandell or spend 15 years in prison.

Ten years ago, Glitz sold Mandell a cylindrical relic stolen from the reptilian Veltrochni, which Mandell turned over to a department of the Vandorian government for research. But the main body of the Vandorian government doesn't know about the theft, and the Veltrochni are now demanding the relic's return – or they'll go to war with Vandor. Mandell impounds the TARDIS to gain the Doctor's aid, but agrees to learn who contracted the two assassins.

The Doctor's group, including Frobisher, Glitz and Dibber, penetrates security at Vandor Prime's Thor Orbital Facility, which holds the Veltrochni relic. The Doctor de-phases a protective time dam and secures the relic, the last remaining data core from the Tzun Empire. It contains blueprints for Tzun technology, including how to build Tzun Stormblades. The backstabbing Mandell actually intends to steal the data core from the Doctor and profit from it.

The Doctor's would-be assassins, under the employ of the mysterious Mr. Zimmerman, capture the data core and another Whifferdill in Mandell's employ tries to steal it back. In the chaos-driven crossfire, Dibber is shot and killed. The Doctor touches a live wire, electrocuting the enemy Whifferdill and shocking a time-dam circuit in his own pocket. It suspends the Doctor in time for a few minutes. The assassins tell Zimmerman – actually the Doctor's evil future self, the Valeyard – of the Doctor's "death" and depart, their contract completed.

When he revives, the Doctor returns the data core to the Veltrochni, but purges it of the more dangerous Tzun information. Mandell is arrested by Vandor Prime authorities for stealing the data core and other crimes. Glitz returns to the *Nosferatu*, while the Doctor and Frobisher continue their travels.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor and company cause a ruckus in a restaurant – the Doctor builds a model from cutlery and food while Glitz and Dibber eat other peoples' dinners. Ogrons drag Frobisher to a party and shove raw meat into his hands. An Ogron gives orders to blast anyone who's alone, then takes seven shots from his men.

Sex and Spirits

Frobisher attends a party where Ogrons get drunk on acidic ale.

Ass-Whuppings

Glitz's assistant Dibber dies. The Master killed a few technicians escaping from Gallifrey (after "The Ultimate Foe").

An ultrasonic disrupter downs Frobisher. The Doctor gets blasted by a power surge, but a time stasis field saves him.

Continuity

Ogrons debuted in "Day of the Daleks." The Doctor takes a circuit from a time dam, similar to the set-up in "The Pirate Planet." After Glitz and the Master were imprisoned in the Gallifreyan Matrix ("The Ultimate Foe") the Master killed the Gallifreyan technicians who freed them and fled in his TARDIS. The Time Lords returned Glitz to his rightful time. Glitz and Dibber here "acquire" the *Nosferatu*, Glitz's ship from "Dragonfire."

The Tzun first appeared in *First Frontier*. The Veltrochni were mentioned there and appeared in *The Dark Path*. Pack-Mother Brokhal is a descendent of Brokhyth, who sired Brythal (*The Dark Path*). Sha'ol and Karthakh are considered assassins second only to the great Ernie McCartney (*Tragedy Day*). The Valeyard returns in *Millennial Rites* and *Matrix*.

Dronid, the home planet of Chronodyne Industries, is where the Doctor is said to have died ("Shada," *Alien Bodies*).

The Doctor watches "Star Wars" and speculates that he met the granddaughter of Peter Cushing, the actor who portrayed Grand Moff Tarkin. Cushing also played the Doctor himself in the two Dalek cinema films, so you can guess who the granddaughter is.

Frobisher first appeared as a sixth Doctor companion in the comic strips run by *Doctor Who Monthly*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor says he's 900 years old, but that he'll be 1,000 soon. He's been tried by humans multiple times. Aside from the TV show's most famous trials (for presidential assassination, interference with history, genocide), he's been tried for civil war and piracy as well. The Droge of Gabrielides once offered a whole star system for his head.

The Doctor lacks the power and equipment to create a time bridge that penetrates time dams, but he can shift time fields back to normal time. It's likely members of the High Council and Celestial Intervention Agency regard the Doctor – because of his second trial – as something of an embarrassment.

• *Frobisher:* For those of you who need a rehash, Frobisher's real name is Avan Tarklu, a private investigator and native of the planet Xenon. Frobisher, a shapeshifting Whifferdill, has a native form of a short humanoid in a trenchcoat and fedora, with a perfectly smooth head save for glasses over his two round eyes. Most of the time, he remains a penguin, a form he finds mellow and soothing. Frobisher is licensed to investigate in Rassm City, but he's been traveling with the Doctor for a year.

Frobisher collects newspapers from various locales. He used to be a King Penguin, but is now an Emperor penguin. His TARDIS room has curved walls and a pool.

• *Sabalom Glitz:* After "The Trial of a Time Lord," Glitz spent six months on a rehabilitation colony for his first attempt to steal navigation crystals. He's armed with multi-blasters and Ensen rifles. The acrobat and thief Chat fancied Glitz and traveled with him for a bit in the *Nosferatu*.

• *The Valeyard (a.k.a. Mr. Zimmerman):* As Mr. Zimmerman, the Valeyard, the evil future self of the Doctor, posed as the director of Chronodyne Industries. He indulged in illegal sales of Time Lord technology. The secret of the illegal drug vraxoin ("Nightmare of Eden"), was lost for centuries, but the Valeyard trafficked in it, perhaps in collusion with members of the Celestial Intervention Agency. He contracted the assassins Sha'ol and Karthakh to eliminate the Doctor, lest his other self uncover his plans, but the killers failed.

• *The TARDIS:* Nothing short of an Osirian, Guardian or beings with Time Rings can penetrate the TARDIS' force field. Unlike "Attack of the Cybermen," temporal grace is now working. The Doctor can dematerialize the TARDIS around intruders, especially those not in phase with the interior dimensions, thus expelling them from the Ship.

The TARDIS' outer shell bubbles under attack from a plasmic lance, activating the Hostile Action Displacement System ("The Krotons") and moving it to a safer location. The TARDIS has marigolds. The navigational system isn't reliable enough to accurately reach Veltroch.

Alien Races

• *Ogrons:* Never developed space travel for themselves, so they learned from other races such as the Daleks. They regard the Daleks as Metal Gods.

On the Ogron home planet of Braah, food is scarce and some offspring inevitably starve to death. Ogron children survive by eating some of their dead siblings. Butchering a live Ogron is considered an offense. They sing rather fatalistic songs of being born, dying and lying in rock and stone.

• *Whifferdills:* If Frobisher's anything to go by, Whifferdills lack stable DNA and have total control over their physical shape. They're often hungry and are driven by quick metabolic rates. Frobisher demonstrates the ability to become, among other things, a fully-grown Kastrian ("The Hand of Fear"), a duck, and a soup bowl complete with soup and bread. He can perfectly replicate any humanoid.

Whifferdills can morph individual limbs or form holes in their bodies. Frobisher even becomes a color pattern on the Doctor's coat. Whifferdills can be killed by electricity, which turns them into sludge. However, they can withstand ultrasonic disrupters.

• *Veltrochni:* Young Veltrochni have white quills, older Veltrochni have dark quills. Different highlights denote different clans – Pack Zanchyth uses blue and red, Pack Hysoth uses faint ochre.

Veltrochni may carry ceremonial axes or rifles that fire kinetic energy missiles (KEM) or polycarbide bolts. They have sensitive noses. The Veltrochni desire the Tzun data core to remind them of act of genocide against the Tzun. Pack-Mother Brokhal of Pack Zanchyth serves as Veltrochni Ambassador to the Delphinus group of star systems.

• *Tzun:* The second precept of Tzun law, passed by the Tzun R'Shal, says don't enter a situation blind.

• *Rutans* ("Horror of Fang Rock")*:* Must return to their natural state between shapeshifts.

Alien Planets

• *Veltroch:* The atmosphere contains a high level of carbon dioxide.

• *Braah:* The Ogron home planet contains more atmospheric hydrogen than Earth.

• *Vandor System:* Private investigators are illegal here, unless approved by the Vandor Prime Security and Intelligence Division.

• *Vandor Prime:* The fourth planet out from the star Gamma Delphinus. The planet's capital is Neo Delphi, located on the southern continent, also called the Jewelled City because of its metal construction. Vandor Prime space traffic uses the shipyard at Teal Alpha. The planet was mined for jethryk ("The Ribos Operation").

Places to Go

Thor Orbital Facility: The only Vandor Prime location to allow temporal research. The Thor Facility if five miles wide, and stays hidden by moving over uninhabited regions of Vandor Prime. It's sensor proof, but visible to the naked eye. A protective time dam put the entire facility an hour in the future, while a time dam around the Tzun data core put it a day in the past.

Stuff You Need

Kerlanogen: A contact poison capable of killing humans in ten days. It can't affect beings with unstable DNA, such as Whifferdills. Time Lords are also immune.

Ships

• *Zathakh:* Veltrochni Dragon, the home to Pack-Mother Brokhal, Ambassador to the Delphinus group of star systems.

• *Veltrochni Dragons:* Their sophisticated drives out-perform Vandorian ships. Veltrochni Dragons are made from siligtone and resist Ogron weapons. Veltrochni Mage-Dragons are an advanced class of this warship.

• *Tzun Stormblades:* Are powered by graviton generators and have camouflage fields. Their weapons have a range of 400 units.

Time Travel

There exist various champions of reality who despise time-travelers and believe they pollute very essence of causality. Professor Hoffman from the Academia Solaris is an expert on temporal mechanics.

Phenomena

The 700 Wonders of the Universe: Include the walking mountains of Haskor, the great Sphinx on Mars and seeing "Star Wars" properly on the big screen.

History

The Daleks first discovered the Ogrons. After the Daleks' defeat, the humans viewed the Ogrons as mere pawns and spared them.

At the End of the Day

Nice, but no. McIntee blatantly states in *Mission: Impractical*'s introduction that the work's shallow – that's not a good sign, and pretty accurate. There's some fun watching Frobisher take a bunch of unusual shapes, but the book's laden with filler, fails to engage you, and has Ogrons that don't fit into the plot at all. To top it off, Dibber, a decent character from "The Mysterious Planet," dies a hackneyed death.

Business Unusual

Author: Gary Russell. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #4. Release Date: September 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor, Mel and Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart.

Travel Log

The Lanes behind Nessie Burger bar, corner of North and West streets, Brighton, July 24, 1989.

Chronology

Between "The Ultimate Foe" and "Time and the Rani."

Summary

The Doctor stops the Master and his Usurian partners from gutting America's economy, but proves overqualified to purge their modern-day, "primitive" computer programming. A native computer expert is required.

On the streets of Brighton, a young man named Trey Korte suffers a sudden telepathic attack and the Doctor takes the boy home. To his horror, the Time Lord finds Korte is staying with the family of Melanie Bush – the future companion he's been avoiding, fearing that the timeline where he becomes the evil Valeyard comes true. The strong personalities of the Doctor and Mel, a computer expert, make tempers flare, but she helps eradicate the Master's programs.

Meanwhile, the Brigadier has been captured while infiltrating SenéNet, a front for UNIT's old adversary, the Nestene Consciousness. Through lethal computer game consoles, marketed through Nessie Burger Restaurants, SenéNet tests the potential for killing England's children, thus causing chaos and paving the way for an Auton invasion.

SenéNet's Managing Director is actually Martyn Townsend, the cybernetically augmented human who ran C-19's illicit Glasshouse. The Doctor, informed of the Brigadier's disappearance, tracks his friend, even as SenéNet captures Mel, who's been spying on the company. Townsend, dying without cybernetic parts to repair his body, plans to use Korte's

newfound telepathy to funnel his brain into an Auton body. Townsend captures the Doctor, but the Time Lord makes a break for freedom, and in the scuffle, an Auton's blast ignites Townsend's alien technology. SenéNet blows up, crushing Townsend with falling rubble.

Before the Doctor can leave in the TARDIS, the inquisitive Mel darts inside. The Doctor realizes Mel's aboard as a stowaway, but dematerializes, setting aside fears of his possible future and graciously accepting her as a traveling companion.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor pales when he realizes he's in Melanie Bush's house and the future is coming true. The Brigadier points out that Private Erskine, wounded in a UNIT battle, keeps his shattered face to fuel his hatred.

Ass-Whuppings

Autons suffocate seven children. The pseudo-Auton Cellian blows Townsend's rogue Stalker dog to bits. Townsend cuts his converted Auton drones loose from control and they kick it. Private Erskine reforms and kills the assassin Jones; Erskine's in turn killed by Townsend. Rubble from an explosion squashes Townsend flat.

Melanie's scalp is grazed by a bullet.

Continuity

Townsend's killer dog, affectionately called a Stalker, is a Dobermann modified to fierce proportions by Stahlman's Gas ("Inferno"). UNIT Private Bryan Erskine first appeared in "The Claws of Axos." Townsend recovered Bok's head ("The Daemons"). Detective Inspector Robert Lines can summon the Doctor with a space-time telegraph ("Revenge of the Cybermen").

After "Trial of a Time Lord," the Doctor reunited Mel, taken out of time by the Time Lords, with "her" Doctor on Oxyveguramosa. Several people know the Doctor in multiple bodies (*see Character Development: The Doctor*). Andromedan Grotzits are acceptable currency anywhere in the Galaxy ("The Trial of a Time Lord").

There's a ton of additions to UNIT history. Major-General Scobie now lives in a retirement home ("Spearhead from Space"). RSM Benton has returned to active service. Mike Yates and Tom Osgood ("The Daemons")

set up tearooms outside Reading. Carol Bell ("The Mind of Evil," "The Claws of Axos") left UNIT shortly after the Brigadier left to teach at public school. She also married and had a child. Colonel Crichton's first name is Charlie ("The Five Doctors").

Townsend, the assassin Jones and the pseudo-Autons Ciara and Cellian first appeared in *The Scales of Injustice*. The Doctor is still desperately trying to avoid his first meeting with Melanie Bush, a plotline begun in *Time of Your Life*. Alan Bush gives the Doctor a cellular phone, presumably the one he uses in *Millennial Rites*. The framework of Mel's origin was given in that story.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* ALGOL programming is so primitive, it's beneath the Doctor's computer skills.

His dress is considered *haute couture* in the Acteon galaxy. He patented the design on Kolpasha to stop cheap imitations. The Doctor loves crosswords, especially from *The Times*. He can cook light and lavish breakfasts. After going vegetarian in "The Two Doctors," the Doctor now eats meat.

He says Sir John Sudbury is a dreadful bridge partner. He can momentarily restore shattered items to their original form by applying mathematical solidity and centrifugal forces.

The following people know the Doctor in multiple incarnations: Harry in his Shoreditch tea shop ("Remembrance of the Daleks"), Wilkins at St. Cedds ("Shada") and the Welsh beekeeper Goronwy ("Delta and the Bannermen"). Also, there's a fish and chips seller in Bolton; two old, gossip-monger ladies in Seattle; a safari driver in Africa; and a mad Austrian who lives halfway up a snow-covered mountain.

• *Melanie Jane Bush:* Mel, age 25, is an only child.

Health-conscientious Mel believes hunting is a horror. She fears the dark ever since seeing "Babies in the Dark." She doesn't like bats since one got tangled in her hair at a Durham cathedral.

Mel left school with five A-levels, ten O-levels and an IQ of 162. Afterward, she spent a summer picking apples in France and explored Europe for eight months. She was hired to run a Scottish nature reserve office after an owl attacked her head.

Mel joined London University at age 22. She later turned down a job with Ashley Chapel Logistics and now has a summer job with Brighton

Information Technologies.

Mel believed in extraterrestrials even before meeting the Doctor. The Brigadier explains regeneration to her. When the assassin Jones is killed, she confronts death for the first time.

Mel can create vicious computer viruses. She can recognize the sounds of phone recording devices. She's taken dance lessons. Her birthday is July 22.

• *The Doctor and Mel:* Mel can't immediately decide if she appreciates the Doctor or if he's a madman – probably both.

• *Alan and Christine Bush:* Mel's parents. Christine is a well-liked member of the Weald community. She works with the Women's Institute, the Girl Guides, the Crawley and the Area Dog Training (Obedience) Society, of which she is Honorary President. (That's strange, as the Bushes don't actually own dogs.) Christine Bush hoped Mel and Trey would strike up a romance. Alan, an accountant, is very affluent and hates coffee. His birthday is July 24.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* The Brigadier has no contact with his daughter, Kate. He knows little about video games. The Brigadier wasn't married to Doris in 1989. Doris' father had assets, and her place near Pyecombe was a gift from a maiden aunt.

The Brigadier's encounter with Erskine forces him to consider the lingering wounds borne by UNIT survivors. His imprisonment motivates him to look up Doris again.

• *The Brigadier and Sir John Sudbury:* Are old school chums. They have an in-depth knowledge of movie actors, politicians and pop stars.

• *Detective Inspector Robert Lines:* Lines has been a friend of several Doctors for 15 years, ever since he was police sergeant. He also knows Alan Bush and signed the Official Secrets Act for the Brigadier.

• *UNIT Private Bryan Erskine:* After the Axos conflict, Erskine, married and with a daughter, was recovered by C19 crews from a pile of corpses. His face was scorched off. Bitter and vengeful, Erskine worked for SenéNet but renounced his actions, Townsend killed him with a cyber-powered punch.

• *Martyn Townsend (a.k.a. The Managing Director):* Martyn's Cyberman-based body wore down without replacement parts, so he worked on a prosthetic replacement.

• *Jones:* Professional assassin, wanted in Europe and the United States,

but not in Japan. Jones' current employer seemed to be a lowly undersecretary, but in reality bleed off vast amounts of resources and technologies. Jones was killed by a knife throw from Erskine, who rebelled against Townsend.

• *Ciara and Cellian:* Irish twins caught stealing drugs in a Northumbria hospital. In exchange for silence about the affair, their boss, Dr. Krafchin, converted them into pseudo-Autons. Ciara and Cellian became Townsend's contract killers, but later recanted their crimes.

• *The Master and the Usurian Company:* In a plotline suggested in *Millennial Rites*, the Master and the Usurian Company teamed up to defraud the Dow-Jones of $68 million and reduce Fort Knox to dust. The Doctor somehow learned of this and foiled the Master's plans – with the villain none the wiser.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS' telepathic circuits can awaken psi abilities in latent telepaths.

Alien Races

• *The Great Old Ones:* The Nestene Consciousness ("Spearhead from Space") not only survived from the previous universe, but universes before that one. Perhaps other Great Old Ones did as well.

• *Nestenes:* Can absorb psi energy.

Organizations

SenéNet: Anglo-French company based in Ashdown Forest. SenéNet specialized in computer game consoles, but in fact was a front for deadly Auton toys marketed through Nessie Burger Restaurants. SenéNet's U.K. headquarters was called Garrett Manor.

At the End of the Day

A pleasant change from the sixth Doctor's often-venomous adventures, giving us a colorful Time Lord full of energy and silliness. The whole package bravely gives us fun reading, but it's continuity-heavy, and too many villains have shallow motives (Townsend is bored, wants power) or turn repentant (Erskine, Ciara, Cellian) for it to be truly dramatic.

Millennial Rites

Author: Craig Hinton. Virgin Missing Adventure #15. Release Date: October 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The sixth Doctor and Mel.

Travel Log

London, Dec. 31, 1999.

Chronology

Between "The Ultimate Foe" and "Time and the Rani."

Summary

"If we shadows have offended, think but this, and all is mended." It's the end of 1999, and the Doctor meets with Dame Anne Travers, an old ally against the powerful, alien force called the Great Intelligence. Anne is convinced electronics mogul Ashley Chapel plans to summon the Intelligence and Anne therefore studies arcane knowledge to use against Chapel.

Meanwhile, an inquisitive Mel has both hacked and debugged Chapel's secret computer program, the Millennium Codex, and the Doctor finds it is written in the language of the Great Old Ones – powerful beings that pre-date our Universe, of which the Intelligence is a member. But Chapel actually swears loyalty to Saraquazel, an alien entity from the universe after the one we know.

The Codex summons Saraquazel. In the same instant, Anne tries to banish the Great Intelligence but instead summons it. As the new century dawns, the two beasts merge and London is transformed into a mystical realm, its physical laws rewritten to conform to the more "magical" universes that spawned the Intelligence and Saraquazel.

Mel becomes the energy-wielding Technomancer Melaphyre while Anne transforms into the Hierophant Anastasia. Ashley Chapel becomes the Archimage Ashmael. And the more the Doctor uses his newfound magical abilities, the more he becomes his evil future incarnation – the dreaded

Valeyard.

The quantum mnemonic that holds the new world stable deteriorates and the Valeyard twice seizes control of the Doctor, allying with Chapel to stabilize the mnemonic. But the Doctor regains dominance and traps Chapel in the TARDIS. As Melaphyre and Anastasia's armies engage Chapel's army of auriks, Melaphyre prepares a spell that will return London to normal – at the cost of her life. The Doctor realizes that by manipulating Mel into sacrificing herself, he's made his first move toward truly becoming the Valeyard. But Anne knocks Mel out and sacrifices herself. The Intelligence is banished to the outer edges of the end of Universe.

Saraquazel honors Anne' noble death and peacefully leaves for home, taking Chapel as a traveling companion. As the Doctor prepares to depart, haunted by the Valeyard's image, he vows never to become a Time Lord who puts his companions at risk.

Memorable Moments

As the TARDIS refuses to let the Doctor in and dematerializes, he screams, "No! You can't leave me!" We watch with rapt attention as the Doctor-turned-Valeyard tries (but fails) to sacrifice the child Cassie.

And there's the book's final moment, as the Doctor vows that he will never become a grandmaster of chess with his companions as sacrificial pawns.

Sex and Spirits

The Doctor and Anne toast to decadence. She declines his innocent invitation to stay in the TARDIS.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor throws a cybrid off him, accidentally breaking the creature's back. He magically destroys three Yeti. An aurik explodes in contact with the Doctor's defense shield. Melaphyre torches three thaumaturgs. The cybrid, aurik and thaumaturg armies rip into each other, but Anne Travers restores all but 15 of the casualties.

Continuity

Anne Travers and her father, Professor Travers, appeared in "The Abominable Snowman" and "The Web of Fear." Anne uses the Yeti sphere

the Doctor gave her in "Web" to cast her incantation.

The giant spider that enthralled Vortis was named Lloigor ("The Web Planet"). The sixth Doctor and Mel have fought Quarks ("The Dominators"). Ashley Chapel served for five years as Tobias Vaughn's personal assistant, and later won International Electromatics' rights for the micro-monolithic circuit ("The Invasion"). Shub-Niggurath conquered and colonized the planet Polymos with her offspring, the Nestene Consciousness ("Spearhead from Space," "Terror of the Autons").

The Doctor knows something of the previous universe's language from his time in the Matrix ("The Invasion of Time"). The TARDIS' Temporal Grace is working (It was off in "Attack of the Cybermen"). The Valeyard first appeared in "Trial of a Time Lord" – Mel here has not yet had that adventure. Anne Travers replaced Rachel Jensen as scientific advisor to the Cabinet ("Remembrance of the Daleks").

I2 offered Mel a computer programming job after Ashley Chapel bought its hardware and software patents (*System Shock*). Anne Travers' husband died four years ago during the third Yeti conflict, when the Intelligence was again banished from Earth (*Downtime*). The Library of St. John the Beheaded in Holborn first appeared in *All-Consuming Fire*.

Angela is credited as the Doctor's first companion after "The Trial of a Time Lord" (*Time of Your Life*). We learn the Doctor and Grant Markham shared a number of adventures together (*Time of Your Life, Killing Ground*), and that the Doctor had companions after him.

In the Doctor's subconscious, the Valeyard says there is a violent storm coming and Time will need a champion with great conviction, powerful enough to make decisions and carry them out – the Doctor has heard galactic rumors to confirm this. The late sixth Doctor makes mention of this while accusing the seventh Doctor of terminating him (*Head Games*).

We learn here how Mel became a companion, an event expanded on in *Business Unusual*. The seventh Doctor confronts the real Valeyard in *Matrix*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor constantly tries to maintain control and prevent the creation of the Valeyard. Until Saraquazel, the Doctor never encountered a being that leapt back from the Big Crunch. On the Earth transformed by the Codex (Millennium Codex Earth), the Doctor could project a defensive shield that destroyed attacking creatures and could allow him to teleport.

It's argued that the Doctor becomes a manipulator by allowing Melaphyre to discover how Earth can be restored, knowing the act would kill her (he'd planned on being there to prevent her death, but Travers sacrificed herself first).

• *The Valeyard:* On Millennium Codex Earth, the Valeyard was called "The Dark One" and "He Whose Name Dare Not Be Mentioned."*The Doctor and the Valeyard:* After the Millennium Codex transforms London, the Doctor becomes the Valeyard when he uses his "magical" powers. The Great Kingdom's different physics and the Doctor's regenerative abilities allowed the Valeyard to manifest.

The Valeyard suggests that the Doctor's sixth incarnation is the one most likely to succumb to evil due to his arrogance. The TARDIS telepathic circuits help the Doctor regain control over the Valeyard. The Doctor can bring elements of the Valeyard's personality forth when needed.

• *The Doctor and Mel:* The Doctor once landed on Earth and encountered the Master, who tried, with the Usurians, to up-end Earth's stock markets. Mel helped the Doctor thwart the Master, then stowed herself away aboard the TARDIS.

• *Melanie Bush (a.k.a. the Technomancer Melaphyre):* Melanie is highly moralistic and dislikes affairs. She graduated from the University of West London and was offered a job by IBM. She's the only person to turn down employment from Ashley Chapel Logistics. She has an IQ of 162. A large part of her degree included mathematics. She's near-brilliant at computer programming. The Doctor has given her lessons on how to pilot the TARDIS. She became a vegetarian at age 13 and doesn't drink tea or coffee. Bertrand Russell is one of her favorite authors.

• *Anne Travers (a.k.a. the Hierophant Anastasia):* Dame Anne Travers OBE served as scientific advisor to the Cabinet from 1981 to 1999. She secured a great deal of funding for UNIT. With her husband dead, Anne is lonely and horny. She has some skill with Block Transfer Computation, gained from reading in the Library of St. John the Beheaded. The Leader of the Opposition (assumed to be Margaret Thatcher) and Prince William attended her birthday party.

• *Professor Travers:* Professor Travers ran out of government funding for his research. Ashley Chapel helped sabotage his reputation. Travers studied texts at the Library of St. John the Beheaded, and spent his last few remaining years in Tibet (*see Downtime*).

• *Yog-Sothoth (a.k.a. The Great Intelligence):* In the previous universe,

Yog-Sothoth was a Time Lord military strategist, and now experiments with new strategies and tactics against inhabited worlds. Count Alexei Mussomov wrote of Yog-Sothoth in *The Many Eyes, Lies and Lives of Yog-Sothoth*. The monster is described as a shapeless mass with hundreds of eyes and mouths.

• *Saraquazel:* A being that arrived in our Universe via a Charged Vacuum Emboitment, with roughly the power of 20 billion nuclear bombs. Saraquazel manifested as a gold humanoid with an antelope's head.

• *The TARDIS:* The Library materializes a book Mel is looking for. To companions, the TARDIS has a steady hum, but the Doctor hears a unique melody of harmonies. The TARDIS cannot travel into the universe that follows this one. The Ship's laboratory is a cross between an alchemist's hive and a torn-up electronics factory.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS:* On Millennium Codex Earth, as the Doctor became the Valeyard, the TARDIS did not recognize him and fled.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Cholesterol doesn't affect them.

• *The Great Old Ones:* In the universe that preceded our own, the heavens were green and the stars looked like giant doughnuts. Counterparts to the Time Lords in that universe shunted themselves into a parallel dimension seconds before their universe died. They then emerged in our Universe, gaining immeasurable powers and became collectively known as "The Great Old Ones."

Alien Planets

Millennium Codex Earth: In the Earth transformed by the Millennium Codex, the Great Kingdom was divided between the Archimage (Ashley Chapel), the Technomancer Melaphyre (Mel), and the Hierophant (Anne Travers). Melaphyre commanded demon-like, magic-conducting cybrids, Anne thaumaturgs and the Archimage auriks. Melaphyre could manipulate energy; the Archimage used artron energy. They were watched over by three gods of the past, present and future (respectively Yog-Sothoth, the TARDIS and Saraquazel).

Places to Go

• *The Library of Saint John the Beheaded:* Anthony Chapel now owns

the Library, having purchased it from the Pontiff. Rival gangs of Yardies and crack dealers now protect the Library. Jeraboam Atoz serves as head librarian.

• *The Millennium Hall:* The polished aluminum Millennium Hall, built on the site of the Battersea Power Station, didn't survive the transition back into "our" world.

Stuff You Need

The Millennium Codex: Ashley Chapel's master program, written in the language of the previous universe of the Great Old Ones, including Yog-Sothoth. Parts of this language were found in ancient Atlantis (It's not made clear which one). It alters the laws of physics.

Organizations

UNIT is now run by the European Community.

Phenomena

Quantum mnemonics: A dark science of earlier Time Lords, a reality-altering power that makes Block Transfer Computation, as used on *Logopolis*, look cheap. With quantum mnemonics, you can grasp the basic nature of reality and probability. You can transform the history of a planet or an individual. You can recreate reality by folding space. You can even warp time (the entire Great Kingdom adventure only takes 10 minutes).

History

Demeter Glauss, a famed mathematician, was born in 2025 and later wrote *Cybercrime: An Analysis of Hacking*. The Doctor taught her to break the Paradigm operating system.

At the End of the Day

If we'd had a Doctor of this strong character – and stories of this caliber – in 1985, the infamous TV hiatus would never have happened. The energy-charged *Millennial Rites* goes down like a juicy orange, producing a Mel who's the top of her computer field and an Anne Travers who turns years of pain into good deeds. And it's good to deal some with the Valeyard, a villain without much explanation. Nicely dark without the bleak carnage of other novels, it's the best sixth Doctor book to date.

Seventh Doctor Stories

The Hollow Men

Authors: Keith Topping and Martin Day. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #10. Release Date: April 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Hexen Bridge and Liverpool, early years of the 21st century.

Chronology

Between "The Curse of Fenric" and "Survival."

Summary

Hexen Bridge, the early part of the 21st century. For decades and through several incarnations, the Doctor has faithfully served on the school board of governors here. But now, as he and Ace return for a school reunion, the Doctor becomes more and more concerned because the village's population never fluctuates more than a few people, which is totally unnatural. In fact, the few villagers who do move away become sterile.

The Doctor blunders upon criminal Kenny Shanks and the Minister of Defense, Matthew Hatch, two gunrunning school alumni. Shanks wants to blunt the investigations of another alumni, Liverpool Chief Constable Ian Denman, and trumps Denman's daughter Nicola up on drug charges. Nicola hangs herself rather than endure the humiliation, turning the Doctor and Denman's wrath against Shanks.

Meanwhile, Ace and the Hexen Bridge villagers come under attack from animated scarecrows, said to be animated by "Jack i' the Green," a legendary spirit who has haunted the village for centuries. Jack manifests as a tentacled alien and the scarecrows feed the villagers to him. The Doctor confirms that Jack is actually Jerak, a crashed, sentient Hakolian battle vehicle that feeds on psionic energy. Jerak has manipulated Hexen Bridge's

development for years, and any villagers who strayed from Jerak's psionic field became sterile. Shanks and Hatch, influenced by Jerak, have tainted Liverpool's water supply with genetic material that will boost psionic powers and fuel Jerak. But in a struggle, Denman kills Shanks.

The Doctor, searching for Jerak, enters a mirror gateway into Jerak's psychic realm. The Time Lord appeals to the minds corrupted by Jerak and the village's willpower attacks the monster. The Doctor escapes, even as Ace smashes the mirror with a rock, trapping Jerak on the psychic plane. The Doctor minimizes the amount of taint in the Liverpool water supply and he and Ace leave the survivors in peace.

Memorable Moments

In a very, very sick moment, villager Bob Matson posts excrement through the letterbox as a racist message. Denman's howl of pain over his hung daughter mirrors our own. The Doctor confronts the criminal Shanks, whom he knew as a boy ("Are you satisfied? You're important now. You can end a man's life simply by giving orders. I hope you're pleased with yourself.")

Sex and Spirits

When Ace was 13, on holiday to an Outdoor Pursuits center in Dawlish, she'd go boozing with two girls.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor is thrown from a moving van onto concrete and tries to stay conscious. The Doctor gets whiplash in a crashing car. His fingers are squashed.

Continuity

The third Doctor first visited Hexen Bridge in 1971 while exploring after "The Daemons." The fifth Doctor, Tegan and Turlough defeated the Hakolian probe that Jerak was supposed to merge with in "The Awakening."

After "The Awakening," the fifth Doctor, Tegan and Turlough stayed in Little Hodcombe for a few weeks. Teacher Jane Hampden helped place the Doctor on the Hexen Bridge board of governors. Jane also taught at Hexen Bridge for a term, but felt despised as an outsider.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor is something of a lepidopterist ("The Two Doctors") and a pharmacologist. He's practiced law ("The Keys of Marinus," "The Stones of Blood") and acquired a degree in philosophy in Vienna. He learned medicinal skills in Glasgow ("The Moonbase").

Britain's west countryside is one of his favorite places on Earth. He knew Kenny Shanks and Thomas Denman as children in 1971. He always thought he'd make a good teacher. He's had the card to this school reunion for decades.

His "To Do List" includes leaving settee in Perivale and checking on Planet 14's provisional government ("The Invasion"). He and Nyssa visited the Hexen Bridge school. The Doctor's mother told him to say nothing if he couldn't say nice things about someone.

• *Ace:* Ace suffers from hay fever and hates the countryside. She despises fascists and dislikes teachers.

She carries a small lump of putty and a tiny, flat metal disc (about watch battery-sized) that combine to make an explosive and timer. Ace lets out a scream for the first time since she was 10 when a scarecrow crashes through the front door. She hasn't done in anyone's knees in months.

• *Jack i' the Green (a.k.a. Jerak, Hakolian Battle Creature):* A Hakol battle vehicle, Jerak fed on psionic energy and existed as a psionic being, linked to Earth by a mirror that led to its psychic domain. On Earth, it spoke though a human host, British Defense Minister Matthew Hatch, who died when Jerak was defeated. Jerak also perfected a chemical drug that boosted psionic abilities.

Alien Races

• *Hakolians:* A nasty race that typically invades a planet in three stages. First, a reconnaissance probe checks for available psychic energy. If there's enough, a battle vehicle is dispatches and helps the probe enslave the population. When the planet's secure, the Hakolians arrive in person. Their reliance on telepathic fear and terror limits them as to which planets they can invade.

• *Scarecrows:* Jerak's foot soldiers, telekinetically animated and created from the Hexen Bridge villagers' legends of wicker men and pagan sacrifices.

Places to Go

Hexen Bridge's population, between 1894 and 1937, only fluctuated between 499 and 513 people.

Organizations

UNIT supplied the cover-up operations for the devastated Hexen Bridge.

History

• In 1685, forty years after the Hakolian probe landed in Little Hodcombe ("The Awakening") the Hakolian battle vehicle Jerak missed its target by a few miles and hit Hexen Bridge instead. When Judge Jeffreys and his black-shirts rode into Hexen Bridge and killed every man over the age of 14, Jerak feasted on the psionic energy produced. But because the probe had malfunctioned, Jerak never joined with it and went dormant. The Hakolians likely assumed one or both were destroyed and scrapped their invasion plans of Earth.

• The Terileptils rallied against the Hakolians, aghast at their butchery.

• Joseph Turner, a friend of the Doctor, had a dreadful cold when he painted *Hambledon versus All England (1796)*. The Time Lord also had an afternoon at Lord's with Francis Thompson long, long ago.

• The Doctor witnessed Michael Forster stabbing himself to death in front of a Glastonbury crowd.

At the End of the Day

A rapturously dirty book. A stellar story of lost innocence. Ace for once takes a sideline role, which is fine, because the Doctor and the supporting cast make up for it. *The Hollow Men* sends out varying degrees of supernatural and humanistic chills, and is a tale for those who love "X-Files" or Stephen King's "It" – a sequestered village full of menace with a monster that feasts on purity. A scene where the Doctor visits the "dead" criminal Kenny Shanks as a child slams home the sense of loss. (Kenny: "When I grow up, I wanna be someone important." The Doctor: "Kenny, I'm sorry.")

Sidebar: Songs from The Hollow Men

As with *The Devil Goblins of Neptune*, the Interlude and Chapter titles in *The Hollow Men* came mostly from song titles. Again, authors Martin Day and Keith Topping show us how it was done:

"The Bloody Assizes" – song by Julian Cope ("Fried," 1984).

"Little England" – lyrics from "Little Britain" by Dreadzone ("Second Light," 1995).

"The Butterfly Collector" – lyric by The Jam from their single "Strange Town" (1979).

"The Village Green Preservation Society" – song by The Kinks, from an LP of the same name (1968).

"I Betray My Friends" – by Orchestral Manoeuvres in the Dark (taken from "Red Frame/White Light" single, 1980).

"Promised Land" – song by Julian Cope ("Peggy Suicide," 1991).

"City Sickness" – song by Tindersticks ("This Way Up," 1993).

"Down in the Police Station at Midnight" – song by the Jam ("All Mod Cons," 1978).

"The Sound of Someone You Love Who's Going Away and it Doesn't Matter" – song by the Penguin Café Orchestra ("Music from the Penguin Café," 1976).

"Happy Jack" – a 1966 single by The Who, 1966.

"Twisted Firestarter" – lyric from "Firestarter" by Prodigy ("The Fat of the Land," 1997).

"The St. Anthony's Estate Chinese Takeaway Massacre" – Neither a song nor a lyric; one of the few titles Topping and Day blatantly made up.

"Hatful of Hollow" – album by The Smiths, 1984.

"Unfinished Sympathy" – song by Massive Attack featuring Shara Nelson ("Blue Lines," 1991).

"Mad Jack's Eyes" – lyric from "Mad Jack" by the Chameleons ("Strange Times," 1987).

"Sacrificial Bonfire" – song by XTC ("Skylarking," 1986).

"Ceremony in a Lonely Place" – from "Ceremony" and "In a Lonely Place," from the a-side and b-side of a single by Factory, 1981.

“Wilder” – album by The Teardrop Explodes, 1981.

“English Settlement” – album by XTC, 1982.

“The Angels Keep Turning the Wheels of the Universe” – song “The Angels Keep Turning (The Wheels of the Universe)” by Orchestral Manoeuvres in the Dark (a seven-inch record free with initial copies of the album “Junk Culture,” 1984)

Illegal Alien

Authors: Mike Tucker and Robert Perry. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #5. Release Date: October 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

London, a patch behind Southwark Power Station, November 13, 1940.

Chronology

After "Survival." Ace's lack of response to Captain Hartmann's Nazi speech suggests this is sometime before *Timewyrm: Exodus*.

Summary

It's the height of the Blitz, and private detective Cody McBride only wants to pump the whisky bottle as London burns around him. But when McBride finds a large metallic sphere – a Cyberman transport device – he falls unconscious. Later, the Doctor and Ace approach McBride, curious about an article on McBride's encounter that literally ran in "tomorrow's" newspaper.

London at this time is terrorized by a serial killer named the "Limehouse Lurker," a terror who squishes his victims like tomatoes. McBride gathers information from his underworld contacts, including George Limb, formerly of military intelligence.

The Doctor suspects the Lurker is a time-traveling Cyberman, bombed by the Luftwaffe and seeking blood plasma to heal its damaged organic components. McBride and the Doctor and they investigate the factory of Dr. Peddler, a murdered businessman, where they discover a covert operation to improve the effectiveness of British foot soldiers – using captured Cyber technology. Ace fends off a Cybermat attack and takes shelter at Limb's house. Unfortunately, Limb has been sheltering the Lurker and it attacks her. Captain Hartmann, a Nazi officer, destroys the murdering fiend, but he also kidnaps Ace and takes her to his Nazi base in Jersey.

George Limb is revealed as the Cyber-operation's mastermind, having

given Cyber technology to the Allies and Nazis to kick-start a technology race. The Doctor recovers the Lurker's Cyber-command unit, a mobile battle computer that directs the Cybermen. With it, the Doctor seizes control of the Cybermen and sets them against Limb and his Nazi allies. When a Nazi captain damages the command unit, all hell breaks loose. Limb flees using the Cybermen's time travel machine, but the primitive device can't cope. The time capsule slows time, and only the Doctor, a Time Lord, resists the effect, pulls Ace free and escapes. The Cyber-control unit explodes and destroys the factory as Limb is shredded through time and space. The Doctor and Ace continue their travels, not knowing that McBride has found hundreds of Cybermen cocoons in an abandoned pumphouse.

Memorable Moments

Ace and McBride play a bizarre game of musical chairs with a Cyberman; McBride repeatedly scorching it with an oxyacetylene torch; Ace wheeling the gas cylinders like a rabbit on speed. The Doctor wonders if some designer of the Cybermen, knowing they would lose emotion, put teardrop-shaped eyes in the helmets.

Ass-Whuppings

Cybermats kill maybe 20 at the bar Mama's Place, though Ace and Mama blast a few of the critters with a shotgun. Captain Hartmann fries Ace with his homemade cattle prod. She also nearly drowns.

Continuity

Neo-Nazis torched Manisha's flat ("Ghost Light"). Darth Vader's flat was in Stepney ("Survival"). The Doctor here re-encounters a breed of Cybermen seen in "The Moonbase." The seventh Doctor and Ace first encountered the Cybermen in "Silver Nemesis."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Not only is the Doctor a good hypnotist, he can concoct a powder/crystal formula that changes colors and also mesmerizes people. He can set up a jamming field that hides biorhythms from the Cybermen's scanners. He loses a chess game to George Limb, though that might have been to not aggravate the Nazi supporter and cause further bloodshed. His eyes are blue-gray, and he's said to be grizzled. He can reprogram the Cyber-control unit to respond to his voice like a big puppy, but not even the

Doctor could have gotten the Cybermen's time capsule working properly.

• *Ace:* The Doctor is the only adult Ace has ever felt comfortable with. She hates cream soda, has never used a shotgun before, and has never been to Belsize Park. Her room has a towel that says "Welcome to Iceworld" ("Dragonfire").

• *The Doctor and Ace:* The Doctor wonders if seeing the Blitz devastation will curb Ace's appetite for explosives. She still has his homemade ghetto blaster ("Silver Nemesis"), but he plans to build her a lightweight version.

• *George Limb:* Also known as "The Professor," Limb was a permanent secretary, first at the Admiralty, then at the Foreign Office. He saw the "potential" of the national Socialists in 1923, and tried to get the British government, through his chess partner Churchill, to take Hitler seriously.

• *The Limehouse Lurker:* Assigned the task of finding a secure place for sleeping Cybermen, the Lurker was part of a time-travel experiment in the 30th century that went awry. The Luftwaffe half-killed this Cyberman with a bomb, destroying its memory banks and severing it from the main Cyberforce. It at first had some method to its killings, snapping aortas above the heart, but later resorted to tearing its victims down the middle or crushing them.

Alien Races

• *Cybermen:* If a Cyberman's casing is cracked, the natural atmosphere besieges the sterile fluid interface between organic and non-organic components. A substitute fluid, such as blood plasma, can counter airborne viruses. Camera-flashes at close range can overload a Cyberman's infra-red sensors. Tiny silver mites, about the size of pinheads, repair battle wounds. Their brains form part of an integrated network, with a Cyber command unit at its center. They suck at time travel.

• *Cybermats:* Once, they were squirrels and other small furry animals. Now, these Cyber-converted devices can kill you with their big, sharp pointy teeth.

• *Cyber Attack Unit:* A nasty piece of work, with powerful arms and a Cybermat tail where the legs should be. In some ways, it had the mind of a baby.

• *Cyber Command Unit:* A waist-high device, with a flat, circular surface, a round underside and a pair of short, flexible legs on broad feet. It typically generates a plasma explosion, protected by a force field. More

important, it serves as the Cybermen's command-relay unit and portable battle computer. It's ideal for advanced reconnaissance.

At the End of the Day

Well worth your time. *Illegal Alien* hails from a more innocent age when Ace trusts the Doctor completely, in which the Doctor overwhelms his enemies but doesn't target them from the start. For showing us that horror comes in many forms (the flesh-squishing Limehouse Lurker, Cybermats that rip through a bar) and for sending Ace through a total gauntlet, this book has topped a fan poll or two in its day – and rightly so. It's a seventh Doctor/Cybermen/Nazi story unlike "Silver Nemesis" because it *works*.

Matrix

Authors: Robert Perry and Mike Tucker. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #16. Release Date: October 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Seaside location, unknown; Totter's Lane, London, alternate Earth, November 12, 1963; London, 1888.

Chronology

After *Illegal Alien*. "Survival" took place several months ago.

Summary

While relaxing by the sea, the Doctor finds the TARDIS invaded by a familiar intelligence. A haunting voice challenges him and the TARDIS again lands at Shoreditch, 1963.

The Doctor, fearing a lethal confrontation, tries to leave Ace with his first incarnation, but lands in an alternate version of the city – one torn by strife. The Doctor's ex-companions Ian and Barbara relate how "Jack the Ripper" and his mysterious, spectral servant have terrorized London from the 1880s to the present. The Doctor and Ace pursue the lead and depart for the time of the Ripper. A short time later, wraiths kill Ian and Barbara.

Almost immediately after leaving the TARDIS, the Doctor's foe mentally corrupts the Time Lord and the now-evil Doctor attacks Ace with a glass shard. The Doctor fights the impulse and tells Ace to run. A destitute Ace wanders between poverty and odd jobs until the Doctor's adversary captures her.

The Doctor, his memory deliberately suppressed to protect himself, wanders London's streets the amnesiac Johnny, a player of card tricks. In time, he regains his identity and is strangely drawn to a dark tomb, he finds Ace on a sacrificial altar. The Doctor confronts the fiend known as Jack the Ripper – the Valeyard, the corrupt side of the Doctor's nature, set between his 12th and final incarnation.

In the tomb that is actually the Ripper's TARDIS, the Ripper keeps the Dark Matrix, a gestalt entity of dark thoughts of minds in the Gallifreyan Matrix. The Ripper's murders, designed to create fear and panic, have been empowering the Dark Matrix with psionic energy. But the Doctor convinces the Dark Matrix that the Ripper doesn't care for it and the Dark Matrix fights against its restraints. The Doctor and the Ripper clash on a church rooftop, where the Ripper attempts to skewer the Doctor with a giant clock hand. Lightning strikes the metal, charring the Ripper. He holds out his arms to his former self, but the Doctor doesn't move. The Ripper plunges off the church roof and dies shortly after.

The Ripper's TARDIS, weakened beyond hope by the Dark Matrix's escape attempt, dies and collapses in on itself, crushing the Dark Matrix to death. As the Doctor watches, time returns to normal. Where the Ripper's body lay, the Doctor's TARDIS now stands. With the past restored, the Doctor and Ace depart, traumatized by these dark events.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor finds dozens of Matrix-generated corpses wearing Ace's face. The corrupted Doctor slowly cuts Ace's throat with a glass shard as she pulls the pin from a Nitro-9 can. Most dramatic of all, the electrocuted Ripper holds out his hands, as if to plead with his former self. The Doctor, immobile, lets the Ripper fall off the roof. The dying Ripper says the Doctor couldn't reason with him or convince him he was wrong, because the Ripper had no goodness. The Doctor tells the dying Ripper: "Goodbye... Doctor."

Sex and Spirits

In alternate-history, Ian and Barbara live together. In "our" history, a pre-TARDIS Ian asks Barbara out for a drink.

Ass-Whuppings

There are some important deaths here, if you subscribe to the notion that the Valeyard was the Doctor. The Valeyard's TARDIS, that is to say, the Doctor's TARDIS, implodes inward and dies. The Dark Matrix, the manifestation of dark thoughts of the Matrix minds, dies in the TARDIS implosion. The Valeyard himself is zapped by lightning and falls from a church rooftop. Twelve golems that represent dark incarnations of the Doctor are also crushed.

In the alternate history, the Dark Matrix, as Jack's slave, killed Ian Chesterton and Barbara Wright.

Ace strikes Spinster Jane Treddle in self-defense and kills her. Ace collapses part of a warehouse on her head by lobbing Nitro-9 at it.

Continuity

The Doctor first ventured into the Gallifreyan Matrix in "The Deadly Assassin." The fifth Doctor, for a split second, thought about keeping the Spectrox for himself ("The Caves of Androzani"), but gave it to Peri and sacrificed his life. The Valeyard prosecuted the Doctor at his second trial in "Trial of a Time Lord," and usurped the position of Keeper of the Matrix at the end of that story. Ace re-wears her dress from "Ghost Light." She encountered the Cheetah People in "Survival."

A fantasy-created version of the Valeyard fought the Doctor in *Millennial Rites*. The Valeyard also symbolically appeared in *Head Games* and other Virgin novels.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* As a boy, the Doctor visited the sea and thought that was where the dead went. He has a key to the gate at Totter's Lane. For the first time in centuries, he weeps at his loss of identity. He sometimes sleeps for days.

The Doctor says he tired of Gallifrey's ancestor worship and stupid rituals, which is why he left. The Valeyard says the Doctor's first body was all to eager to kill and maim anything, just to get away in a stolen TARDIS.

The Doctor can download himself mentally into one of the TARDIS' telepathic circuits.

• *Ace:* Uses the alias of "Dorothy Gale." The Ripper's mental corruption turns her into a quasi-cheetah person that feasts on raw meat and blood at a local farm. She also confronts a Ripper-projected cheetah version of herself.

• *The Ripper (a.k.a. The Valeyard):* The Valeyard has observed the Doctor's adventures since his trial. He gained access to the Dark Matrix through his role as Keeper of the Matrix.

Evidence the Valeyard is the Doctor: He's again referred to as the Doctor's darkest part, between his 12th and final incarnation. The Doctor also says the Valeyard is "every dark thought that I have ever had," and

concedes the Valeyard is his other self.

• *The Dark Matrix:* A gestalt being, formed from forbidden thoughts of the dead Time Lords, whose minds are preserved in the Gallifreyan Matrix. When the Matrix was young, it began to break down as thousands of Time Lord minds resented their deaths. The Time Lords cleaned the Matrix by isolating the dark part – the Dark Matrix. It was caged and forgotten about beneath the Citadel, sealed with a great key held by the Keeper of the Matrix.

• *The "Doctor" golems:* Numbered 12, one for each of the Doctor's incarnations, minus the Valeyard. Each golem was an artificial being, modeled on a corrupted Doctor.

• *The TARDIS:* Contains a wide area with lush vegetation, broken columns and an ornamental pond of dark water. The Doctor visits the TARDIS' central nexus point for the first time in centuries. The TARDIS' telepathic circuit is a humble, sleek Perspex cylinder, located in the panel under the main console. It's about an inch in diameter, three inches in length and conveys images through touch.

• *The Ripper's TARDIS:* Inwardly resembles a tomb, with marble floors and a chant that keeps time with the Doctor's hearts. The engines literally resemble a graveyard.

Time Travel

The Doctor suggests that perhaps Time used him to kill the Ripper's five victims, simply because that's the way it happened.

Alternate History

The killings by Jack the Ripper began in 1880. The public grew restless and citizen militia groups sprang up. The police cracked down and London was soon awash with blood. Jack mutilated bodies again during World War I. Inhuman wraiths (actually the Dark Matrix) appeared. When the Americans bested Hitler in World War II, they stayed in London and quarantined it to fight Jack. President Kennedy made Britain the 51st state, but he died on Nov. 12, 1963, diced to death in Westminster by dozens of inhuman creatures.

At the End of the Day

A breathtaking format that – for once – makes the Doctor disappear for

the length of "War and Peace," yet still delivers a tremendous punch. *Matrix* will make some fans cringe because the Valeyard's a thorny topic and his origins still elude us. On the plus side, it's good and proper that the McCoy Doctor – the one willing to destroy Skaro to win – locks horns with his own corruption and bests the Valeyard. Ace's adventures in Gothic London – admittedly atypical "Who" fare – also carry the day. Overall, a package as dark as the Valeyard's hearts, and worth a second look.

Storm Harvest

Authors: Robert Perry and Mike Tucker. BBC Past Doctor Adventure #23. Release Date: June 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

TARDIS Log

Coralee, time unknown, though London hasn't existed for 5,000 years.

Chronology

After *Matrix*.

Summary

Increasing news of attacks at sea interrupt a TARDIS holiday on the colony of Coralee, so the Doctor investigates and hopes Ace will stay out of harm's way. He correlates the sea wreckage with myths of the Krill, predators said to have wiped out native life on the planet, and fears they are awakening from a long hibernation. The Doctor finds an ancient Coralee weapon in an abandoned temple, but a colony engineer named Garrett strangely confiscates the device.

A small pack of active Krill attacks a police submarine and detonate its generator. Hundreds of dormant Krill eggs, empowered by the radiation, hatch and overrun the colony. Garrett, who is actually a Cythosi spy sent to secure Krill eggs for his people, becomes psychotic after years of maintaining human form. He activates the ancient weapon, designed as a fail-safe device against the Krill, and turns all active Krill on the planet into sludge.

A Cythosi ship arrives to "help" the damaged colony, but actually begins transporting Krill eggs aboard to use against the Cythosi's enemies. When the Doctor learns the colony's nuclear reactor has been damaged in the Krill attack, he fears the radiation of an explosion would make the Krill stronger than ever. In desperation, the Doctor transmats the remaining Krill eggs and himself up to the Cythosi ship, but the teleportation energy makes the Krill hatch and besiege the ship. A deranged Garrett, now convinced he's a

messiah of the religious Dreekans, refuses to again use the Coralee weapon on the Krill, whom he insanely believes are his instruments of messianic wrath. The Doctor orders an evacuation of the Cythosi ship, then pilots it into an asteroid field. The ship explodes, as the Doctor covers himself in Krill egg secretions and forms a protective shell. As such, the Doctor survives the plunge to Coralee's surface and is reunited with Ace, leaving the surviving Krill eggs dormant in the asteroid field and the ancient weapon floating in space.

Memorable Moments

With the colony under attack, the Doctor decides to drop the storm shutters to slow the Krill down. Asked about the people who will be trapped in the corridors, he sadly remarks: "It will be quick."

Sex and Spirits

It's said that Ace and colonist Rajiid wind up in bed together, although it's not made clear if they engage in hot nookie (one presumes they did, although this would clash with Ace's sexual conquest list in *Happy Endings*).

The Doctor proves manhood (or Time Lordship) by downing Cythosian drink, though his eyes tear.

Ass-Whuppings

In an eye-popping moment, the Krill savage a pool of dolphins. Ace plugs one Krill with a harpoon gun.

The Doctor half-drowns escaping a holy temple. He goes comatose transmating himself into a vat of Krill preserving fluid.

Continuity

The Doctor builds an elaborate sandcastle based on the City of the Exxilons ("Death to the Daleks"). The Doctor stole his metallic scarab beetle, a currency device. He now has his seventh persona's photo on his UNIT pass, but removes it ("Battlefield").

A scar on Ace's neck remains from *Matrix*. The Doctor sets up a model train set in his hotel bathroom (*Short Trips*: "Model Train Set").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The seventh Doctor keeps at least six question-mark pullovers. His eyes are silver-blue. He likes kwanga juice. With some risk to comatose people, he can mentally revive them. The Doctor's different incarnations each have distinctive handwriting. His Gladstone bag seems bigger on the inside than out.

• *The Doctor and Ace:* Ace has now been traveling with the Doctor for three years.

Alien Races

• *Krill:* Aquatic, genetically identical humanoids with bluish-gray skin and rows of razor-sharp teeth. The Krill have almost no specialized body functions, meaning they have few vulnerable points. You have to practically turn one to putty or sever its central spine before it stops. Damaged Krill secrete hard healing cocoons and hatch when they're restored. Cocooned Krill can survive the cold of space or the heat of planetary re-entry. En masse, they can penetrate 14 layers of force-field reinforced dryanthrite.

• *Cythosi:* Harsh slave keepers, massive and more than seven-feet tall, hailing from a high-gravity planet. Cythosi have bulky, rhino-skinned frames. They have personal shapechanging generators, but these may cause schizophrenia after prolonged use. They are foes of the alien Zithra and eat races they conqueror.

• *Cetaceans:* Dolphin-like creatures who use spider-legged walkers on land. They can smoke cigars through their blowholes.

Alien Planets

Coralee: A world free of predators, but for the Krill. Coralee has two suns and used to be a moon. The planet exports salt to other frontier worlds. Brenda Mulholland serves as colony co-ordinator.

Places to Go

New Oslo: A city in the North Atlantic on Earth.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Diary:* Has notes from more than 1,000 planets.

• *Krill Destructor:* An ancient weapon that's a vertical-standing transparent cylinder with a ring of dull green rods. It's Krill-killing biogenic pulse could possibly be attuned to other species.

History

The natives of Coralee spread war and violence to neighboring planets until their own creations, the Krill, turned on them. The Coraleeans had prepared the ancient Krill destructor as a fail-safe, but tried to use it too late. The natives died out overnight. Humans arrived on a docile Coralee four years ago.

At the End of the Day

As some reviewers point out, *Storm Harvest* has the distinctive feel of McCoy's last season, almost as if it was meant for the unbroadcast Season 27. Not only is that true, it's a strength rather than a weakness. Given how far the Virgin line took the Doctor and Ace, it's actually nice to have a story that sharply returns to their TV roots. It's a moving book of terror at sea that's to be applauded, and much, much more engaging than the action-paced story summary might suggest.

Timewyrm: Genesys

Author: John Peel. Virgin New Adventure #1. Release Date: July 1991. "The Timewyrm Series" Part 1 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Mesopotamia, 2700 B.C; London, 1939.

Summary

Fresh from recent adventures, the Doctor finds a message from himself lodged in the TARDIS' telepathic circuits. It warns against an apocalyptic creature called the Timewyrm, and based on the co-ordinates included in the warning, the Doctor and Ace depart for ancient Mesopotamia. There, they meet the historical leader named Gilgamesh and save him from an attack by rival Kishite warriors with some well-thrown Nitro-9. The grateful Gilgamesh believes them to be gods.

In the city of Kish, the Doctor finds that a stranded, cybernetic space traveler has assumed the role of Ishtar, goddess of sex. Some of Kish's people, enthralled by Ishtar's cybernetic implants, are building a giant, city-sized copper transmitter. When complete, the transmitter will let Ishtar broadcast her hypnotic signals and mesmerize the entire planet.

The Doctor gains allies, especially the mythological Utnapishtim, a rebel leader from pretend Ishtar's home planet. Together, they storm Ishtar's temple. But Ishtar has a small insurance policy – a thermonuclear device that will detonate if she dies. For this reason, the Doctor is horrified to see Utnapishtim unleash a computer virus into Ishtar's internal systems that threatens her life.

The Doctor convinces the bomb's programming that Ishtar is still alive using the TARDIS' telepathic circuits, but this creates a two-way link that allows Ishtar's consciousness to invade the TARDIS' systems via the bomb. In a last-ditch effort, the Doctor ejects the TARDIS systems infected by Ishtar's mind into the Time Vortex, hoping the forces there will destroy her. Instead, Ishtar's consciousness merges with the virus and the dumped

TARDIS systems, creating a new entity with power over time and space: the Timewyrm! Having just created the creature they were supposed to be guarding against, the Doctor and Ace track the Timewyrm to her next destination.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor explains to Gilgamesh's council that the gods cannot destroy the false Ishtar because mortals wouldn't learn anything from that. This battle must be fought by men.

Sex and Spirits

Ace overdresses to protect herself from Gilgamesh's wandering hands. Ace drinks beer with Gilgamesh that tastes not unlike pig vomit.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace's Nitro-9 can brings the roof down on some soldiers, likely killing some. Ace writhes in agony as Ishtar tries to absorb her, but the anti-virus protects her.

Continuity

Ace actress Sophie Aldred supplies this book's introduction.

The Chronovores ("The Time Monster") name the newly-reborn Ishtar the Timewyrm. When the fourth Doctor was in the Matrix ("The Invasion of Time"), he gained knowledge about the Timewyrm and left a time-delayed telepathic message in the TARDIS. The TARDIS communicates through warnings shouted by the Doctor's ex-companions Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart, Victoria Waterfield, Jamie McCrimmon and Katarina. The third Doctor calls his seventh self a scarecrow ("The Five Doctors").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor dresses as he did in "Survival" and still carries his question mark-handled umbrella. He has enhanced night vision.

The Doctor's skills don't all carry through his incarnations: The third Doctor is an expert with the telepathic circuits, the seventh is not. (For more about former personas, *see Character Development – Time Lords*.)

• *Ace:* Some of her mother's boyfriends took care of her – which usually

meant the boyfriend would booze and give Ace a fizzy drink. One such Irishman was full of folk songs and local Guinness. He fell, drunk, under the wheels of a bus – Ace cried as a result.

Ace has perfect pitch and can sing "The Wild Rover." In Perivale, she hated prejudice and says she only hated those who hated other people. She recognizes the Doctor as having no prejudices.

• *Timewyrm (a.k.a. Ishtar, Qataka):* As part of the prophecies from ancient Gallifrey, the Timewyrm heralds the end of the universe. On the planet Anu, Queen Qataka feared dying, and stories of the Time Lords motivated her to develop cybernetics that could steal life energy from other beings. When Anu's people sentenced her to death, she linked her mind to a computer brain via radio receivers, allowing her to dominate the minds of others.

Qataka's cybernetic form was a giant snake with platinum alloy skin. She ruled Anu until the people rebelled and she devastated the planet with a cobalt device. Utnapishtim's computer virus disrupted Qataka's slave control and her ship crashed on Earth.

By merging with Utnapishtim's virus and the TARDIS circuits, Qataka gained the ability to travel anywhere in time and space, though she was vulnerable to a Time Ram.

Qataka hadn't met a Time Lord before the Doctor. Implanted transponders allowed her to control up to a dozen people, granting them enhanced strength, but dousing their fire and creativity. A city-wide transmitter would allow her to expand links over the earth. She could also turn intangible.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor can edit out and store his more useless memories in the TARDIS telepathic circuits. If the field strength is too high, bystanders' memories could be sucked out also. The TARDIS has an intelligence on a different order from those who travel in it, and hence cannot communicate directly. The time-path indicator can be removed and register any activity in the Vortex heading for Earth or the TARDIS. You can penetrate the TARDIS' force field if you're moving at precisely the right frequency. Using Ishtar's implant, the TARDIS can track her.

Using the TARDIS telepathic circuits, the Doctor can make prominent former personalities – presumably other Time Lords can also.

Alien Races

Time Lords: Time Lords' extended lifespans sometimes necessitate editing out their more useless memories, storing them electronically or

erasing them.

The Doctor says the personalities of a Time Lord are linked, like a multi-faceted cube. Current personalities can be submerged and former ones made dominant, but the effort is exhausting since the former personality clashes with the body it's in.

Alien Planets

Anu, thousands of light years from Earth, seemed like a paradise of pleasant cities, good science and a simple life – before Qutaka took over. The peoples' average lifespan was 1,000 years.

Stuff You Need

The Gallifreyan Matrix wipes memories of users who look at classified information.

Ships

Utnapishtim's Ark was built after Qataka threatened to devastate Anu and punish its rebellious people, Utnapishtim's ark contained buildings and plantlife similar to that of Anu. Almost 17,000 lived in the city, but the genetic banks held materials for almost a million more. Ishtar's thermonuclear bomb gave it the power to leave Earth.

Time Travel

Ace likely alters (or rather, fulfills) history by telling Utnapishtim his descendants don't inherit the Earth.

History

• Fleeing from the destroyed planet Anu, a weakened Qataka crashed on Earth and encountered Gilgamesh. She failed to consume him, but insinuated herself into the Temple of Ishtar in the city of Kish. Ace damaged the temple with canisters of Nitro-9.

• Utnapishtim pursued Qataka to Earth in his space ark and was thereby incorporated into Gilgamesh's mythology. Utnapishtim's eight-foot tall guardian robots, fitted with needle guns and arms that ended in claws, inspired Man-Scorpion myths, and the mythical Urshanabi was derived from his rowman. The TARDIS data banks located an uninhabited world for Utnapishtim's people to settle on. An 23rd century expedition found their

colony alive.

At the End of the Day

One can concede a lot of birthing pains to this, the first original "Doctor Who" novel after TV's "Survival." At the time, oodles of questions needed to be answered. Just for a start, how should previous Doctors be treated? How much sex is appropriate? Unfortunately, one has to slog through *Timewyrm: Genesys*' stiff dialogue, wooden characterization and wafer-thin plot to get answers and make such nice concessions. A brave, if woefully unsuccessful, attempt from the author John Peel, who gave us astounding novelizations of "The Chase" and "The Daleks' Master Plan."

Timewyrm: Exodus

Author: Terrance Dicks. Virgin New Adventure #2. Release Date: August 1991. "The Timewyrm Series" Part 2 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

London, 1951 (alternate, Nazi-controlled timeline); Munich, November 9, 1923; Berlin, 1939; Felsennest (Hitler's secret base), May 1940.

Summary

Tracking the Timewyrm to London, 1951, the Doctor and Ace are thrust into a Britain they don't recognize. The Nazi party has enslaved the British people, systematically acting out a scheme to replace them with pureblood Aryans.

Pretending to be a *Reichsinspektor-General*, the Doctor discovers that the Miracle of Dunkirk, the strategic retreat that saved thousands of British soldiers, never happened. Without it, Britain fell soon after. The Doctor's instincts tell this intricate level of time interference really isn't the Timewyrm's style and there is likely a third party at work.

To gain influence and make change in the Nazi Party, the Doctor travels back to Munich, 1923, to casually slip himself into the personal timestream of a younger Adolf Hitler. As a low-level madman who leads a riot on the War Office, Hitler is injured and treated by the Doctor, who gains the madman's trust. The TARDIS then journeys to 1939, where the travelers are welcomed as old friends by Hitler, now the head of the infamous Third Reich.

When Ace is captured by the so-called mystical "Black Coven," the Doctor encounters a splinter group of the time-traveling War Lord aliens, his former enemies. The War Lords are furthering the Nazi agenda with their advanced technology, and among their number is the War Chief, a renegade Time Lord the Doctor believed dead. Though the War Chief tries to appease the Nazis by sacrificing Ace, the Doctor exposes the War Lords' plan to eventually conquer Earth. The Nazis view them as traitors and the forces of

Reichsmarshal Goering kill them all.

The Doctor realizes that Hitler, a host for the Timewyrm, has long had his intellect and willpower augmented by the creature. In 1940, the Doctor again meets Hitler and uses the TARDIS force field to expel the Timewyrm. Hitler, now a broken man, allows the British army to escape from Dunkirk and the alternate timeline created by the interference of the War Lords ceases to be.

Memorable Moments

Ace dreams about being chased down endless metal corridors by a huge black swastika-wearing Dalek, its sucker arm thrust stiffly upwards and chanting "Heil Doktor! Heil Doktor!" in a harsh metallic voice. Another Dalek then appears, carrying a breakfast-tray, and Ace wakes up. Alternately, the Doctor empties his mind by arguing with President Borusa and Lady Flavia about the best shade of pink for the Capitol curtains.

Sex and Spirits

Joseph Goebbels, Minister of Propaganda, hits on Ace and we learn that she's not a virgin. When the War Chief speaks of his interest in the Doctor's body, the Doctor jokes, "Please, ladies present." The Doctor explains to the Nazis that he isn't shagging Ace ("The girl is not unattractive, but for myself I like them big, blonde and bouncy. Rubenesque! Wagnerian, even!")

Ass-Whuppings

Ace collapses a wall with a grenade, squashing General Strasser and his two men. She later shoots down a Nazi guard and blows away a pack of Nazis about to kill the Doctor. The Nazis, led by Reichsfuehrer Himmler, wipe out the treacherous War Lords. The War Chief perishes along when the Doctor destroys Drachensberg Tower.

Continuity

K'Anpo ("Planet of the Spiders") taught the Doctor mind-protection techniques. The Doctor has Castellan Spandrell's Gallifreyan Army Knife ("The Deadly Assassin"). This story serves as the sequel to "The War Games." (*See Character Development – The War Chief and The War Lords*.)

Lieutenant Anthony Hemmings of the Freikorps enters the TARDIS and

becomes the Timewyrm's pawn, re-appearing in *Timewyrm: Revelation*. Snippets of the War Chief's influence over Hitler are seen in *Players*, also by Dicks.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* As if the Doctor never had an opinion, he thinks the Skylon is an experiment in frivolity and comments, "I never trusted those Windsors!" He believes King Edward was a "vain and silly man, and a German sympathizer from his early youth."

The Doctor hadn't met Hitler before this story. One of the Doctor's Venusian nerve-pinches causes short-term amnesia and his pocket watch produces a high-frequency sonic pulse that jams surveillance devices. The Doctor has gray eyes.

• *Ace:* Nitro-9-a offers half Nitro-9's whammy for half the weight and is marginally more stable. Ace skived off most of her German lessons.

• *The War Chief:* The War Chief's Time Lord constitution saved him from being shot on the War Planet in "The War Games," but the fleeing War Lords took him away for further study. The War Chief started to regenerate, but his severe injuries hampered his regeneration. He looked like two bodies clumsily joined together – even regeneration therapy on Gallifrey wouldn't help.

The War Chief claims Cardinal Borusa saw him as a rival and manufactured a charge of treason via the Celestial Intervention Agency – the Chief then became a renegade. His body and brain are compatible with the Doctor's, and his devices can manipulate dead bodies.

Working with the fledgling Socialist Party, the Chief first encountered the seventh Doctor and Ace in Munich, 1923, as Doktor Felix Kriegslieter of the Aryan Research Bureau. His mind-amplifier granted Hitler and perhaps others exceptional charisma. The War Chief died, apparently engulfed by flame, when the Doctor blew up the atomic reactor in Himmler's Drachensberg Tower.

• *The War Lords:* The War Lord was succeeded by a son, who was killed by a Nazi attack. With the War Chief's help, they pierced the Time Lord barrier around their planet and embarked on another plan for conquest, nurturing the growing Nazi Powers in a bid to force war between Russia and America and take over Earth. The War Lords have crude transmat technology.

• *The Timewyrm:* The psychic-energy charged Timewyrm can produce

storms of telekinetic energy. The TARDIS and Timewyrm, having similar circuits, are linked. Boosting the TARDIS force field expelled the Timewyrm from Hitler.

• *Adolf Hitler:* With the Timewyrm, Hitler had unusual psychic powers, vast surges of energy and superhuman strength. Without it, he was a wayward little pissant.

• *The TARDIS:* As in "The Two Doctors," the Doctor can make the TARDIS fade away and park itself in the space-time continuum. When he re-summons it, the Ship materializes three feet too high. His whistle is symbolic – it focuses the Doctor's mind while a thought-pulse is sent to the TARDIS telepathic circuits. The TARDIS repels and rejects any paint applied to it.

Alien Races

The Time Lords: The bullet-clips of two machine pistols, emptied into a Time Lord's body at close range, would shatter both his hearts and permanently kill him. (Sounds like a no-brainer, but you never know.) Some injuries are so severe as to abort a regeneration, leading to a Time Lord mutant fused from his old and new bodies.

Stuff You Need

Dr. Solon's Special Morbius Lotion: The Doctor keeps a nearly-empty jar of this healing Sisterhood Salve in the TARDIS. Sadly, the production rate's very slow – one pot's produced every hundred years ("The Brain of Morbius").

History (Nazi Earth)

• The miracle of Dunkirk never happened, causing the Luftwaffe to win the Battle of Britain. Also, the Nazis cleverly bombed airfields and radar installations rather than London itself. The British government fled to Canada, while Hitler mulled over whether to rebuild London in Neo-Nazi Classical or level the city. The British Museum was stripped dry.

• King Edward VIII was restored to the throne, accompanied by Queen Wallis, and formally established Great Britain as a protectorate of the German Empire. Sir Oswald Mosley, founder of the British Union of Fascists, became prime minister. Males between the ages of 15 and 45 worked on coastal fortifications and on the European Continent. The British Free Corps, or Britischer Frei Korps, kept order. The Racial Affairs Bureau

strove for purity.

History

• During an ill-planned march by the National Socialist German Workers Party, in Munich, September 1923, the Doctor set Hitler's injured shoulder to gain the future Fuehrer's confidence, boosting him with a pep talk – accidentally giving him the confidence to control the Timewyrm.

• Hell-bent on destruction, the Timewyrm burrowed into Adolf Hitler's mind, but the force of Hitler's brain was too strong and the Timewyrm was trapped. The Timewyrm-boosted Hitler seemed ideal for the War Lords' purpose, and the War Chief outfitted him with a psionic amplifier, boosting the charisma of his speeches. The Doctor's exorcism of the Timewyrm in 1940 caused Hitler to lose his edge.

• The War Lords inevitably forced the pace of Earth's technological development by supporting the Nazis, although the Doctor's destruction of Himmler's Drachensberg Tower wiped out the War Lords' base and prevented any anachronisms.

At the End of the Day

With a razor-edge pace that begins on page one, *Timewyrm: Exodus* seamlessly weaves the Doctor and the War Lords into an in-depth study of the menagerie that was the Nazi commanders. The Doctor is full of gall and wit, outfoxing the Nazis under the premise that in an authoritative society, people respect someone with an authoritative voice. Plus, this was the first time a secondary character – the War Chief – from the TV show was developed. All in all, a *tour de force* in "Doctor Who meets Nazism," and a book with a good reputation that deserves even more praise.

Timewyrm: Apocalypse

Author: Nigel Robinson. Virgin New Adventure #3. Release Date: October 1991. "The Timewyrm Series" Part 3 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Kirith, so far into the future, it blows the mind.

Summary

The Doctor and Ace track the Timewyrm to Kirith, a utopian planet in the far future, located near the edge of the universe. Kirith's people are tall, strong and near-perfect, but they depend on the gift-giving Panjistri to survive. For this service, the Panjistri select some of the Kirithon's most accomplished citizens to leave their families and join the "Brotherhood of Panjistri."

But Ace and a Kirithon named Raphael discover the Panjistri are also breeding a monstrous Homunculus, a creature of naked aggression and violence. The Brotherhood members are being used as raw material for the creature.

The Panjistri hope to combine the Kirithons' purity and the Homunculus' rage to create Omega Point – a creature filled with the experiences and skills of every race in creation. They hope that such a creature can prevent the end of the Universe. Unfortunately, the Homunculus gets loose and wrecks havoc, but Raphael kills it to save Ace.

The Panjistri kidnap the Doctor, but their long-lived Grand Matriarch rules him unsuitable to help reach Omega Point. Meanwhile, Ace makes the Kirithons realize how they've been duped and sows the seeds of rebellion, but the Panjistri capture her also. Aboard the satellite Kandasi, the Doctor realizes that the Timewyrm took him as a momentary host when he was weak and recovering from his first regeneration. At that time, he met the Grand Matriarch as a young girl named Lilith, and the Timewyrm left the Doctor's body and infected her.

The Grand Matriarch decides Ace's aggression can replace that of the

Homunculus in the culmination of her work, the God Machine. But before this can happen, Raphael merges with the God Machine and seizes control of it. Raphael banishes the Timewyrm, and the Grand Matriarch, deprived of the Timewyrm's power, reverts to her natural age and dies. Raphael leaves to explore the Universe as the Panjistri sue for peace with the Kirithons. Without the Grand Matriarch, the Panjistri abandon their plans for Omega Point. An enraged Ace realizes the Doctor knew Raphael would sacrifice himself to the Machine, and they again pursue the Timewyrm.

Sex and Spirits

Ace's response to a Kirithon pick-up line: "No thanks. Why don't you just start without me?"

Continuity

The TARDIS needed mercury shortly after leaving Vulcan, a planet with swamps of it ("Power of the Daleks"). The Grand Matriarch, echoing Lady Peinforte's words in "Silver Nemesis," cites the Doctor as being "not only a Time Lord."

Character Development

• *The seventh Doctor:* One of his devices performs rudimentary carbon-14 tests.

• *The second Doctor:* Foreshadowing *Timewyrm: Genesys*, the second Doctor tried sending a message to his seventh self through TARDIS' telepathic circuits. He appears as a "figment of the Doctor's imagination" and warns about the Timewyrm. The second Doctor says his future self is afraid of losing Ace if he tells her everything. He's also convinced Jamie and Zoe will remember more than their first adventure with him.

• *Ace:* At this point, Ace says the Doctor is her best friend and only family. Miss Sydenham, her Computer Studies teacher, always said Ace had untapped skills. Ace therefore knows enough about wiping programs to corrupt the Panjistri systems.

• *Ace and Polly:* The seventh Doctor implies that Ace will meet his ex-companion Polly, and that Polly speaks highly of her.

• *Grand Matriarch:* Head of the Panjistri who left the doomed homeworld with 84 colleagues, leaving a lover behind. She sat in Kandasi for more than 3,000 years, and lived for more than 5,000 years due to the

Timewyrm's influence, always working to achieve Omega Point.

• *The Homunculus:* Gross! Vile! Filth! A monstrously overgrown fetus with a bulbous head, the Panjistri-engineered Homunculus was electro-shocked to produce a creature of raw aggression and violence. It had eight limbs, an underdeveloped torso, twin hearts, several oversized eyes protruding from its skull, no ears and a small and ineffectual lipless mouth. Basically, it wore organs like you put on Gap overshirts.

• *The TARDIS:* Linked as they are, the Timewyrm knows what the TARDIS knows.

Alien Races

• *Panjistri:* Probably due to the Grand Matriarch's influence, the Panjistri believed that when the universe was old and contracting, the Doctor would come. The Panjistri were once powerful telepaths, but still enjoy telekinesis, super-strength and control of their conditioned minds. They're greatly advanced in genetics and cloning. They have six-fingered hands and pyrokinetic abilities. They also harnessed artron energy for matter transportation. Their homeworld was likely destroyed by solar flares.

• *Kirithons:* The Kirithons, genetically engineered by the Panjistri, were the most physically perfect people the Doctor has met – tall, strong and athletic. The blue-skinned beings resembled hominids in Africa. Their quick-paced tissue regeneration resembles that of the Alzarians ("Full Circle") and doesn't leave a scar. Kirithons typically live 500 years.

• *Companions:* Panjistri-made weasel-like servant creatures, covered in thick, matted brown fur.

Alien Planets

• *Kandasi:* Moon-sized satellite composed of living, quasi-organic metal. Its gravitational pull made the climate on Kirith downright manic. The independent-thinking Kandasi could rearrange its molecular structure to defend itself, but Panjistri telepaths could override commands at great effort. It exploded when the Panjistri Matriarch died.

• *Kirith:* The only planet circling a red giant in the galaxy known as QSO 0046, at the very edge of the explored Universe. Kirith's gravity is Earth-normal, with a slightly higher oxygen and nitrogen content. A day lasts 16 and 1/4 hours. Kirith is so rich in artron energy, 1990s Earth astronomers mistook it for a quasar.

• *Alpha Centauri:* Holds the Pan-Galactic Games.

• *Darkfell:* Region of Kirith inhabited by the Unlike, the Panjistri's rejected genetic experiments.

Stuff You Need

Artron energy: Several advanced species besides Time Lords use this in varying degrees.

History

• Several billion years after events in "Logopolis," the CVE in Cassiopeia glimmers, blinks and closes. The Time Lords, like most of the universe's guardians, are extinct. The Doctor says the universe has 10 billion years left after this story before entropy takes over completely.

• The Doctor lent his reader's ticket for the British Museum to Marx, advised Pope Clement on the contents of the Vatican Library and saved two plays by Aristophanes from the burning of the library in Alexandria.

At the End of the Day

Sadly dull, especially in the middle. There's too little plot and relevance, especially since a civilization topples, but none of this seems to affect the Doctor and Ace up until Raphael's conversion at the end. The on-planet politics detract from the apocalyptic setting. On a side note, this is the first sign in the novels that Ace is majorly pissed with the Doctor.

Timewyrm: Revelation

Author: Paul Cornell. Virgin New Adventure #4. Release Date: December 1991. "The Timewyrm Series" Part 4 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Norfolk village of Cheldon Bonniface, the moon and the mind of the Doctor himself, Sunday before Christmas, 1992.

Summary

After the Doctor and Ace land in the familiar Norfolk village of Cheldon Bonniface, they intuitively realize the town is populated with imposters of the villagers, sense a trap and run for their lives. Much to her surprise, Ace reaches the town's parameters and plunges onto the moon's surface, dying from oxygen starvation. (*Big* whoops!)

While Ace takes the dirt nap, the Doctor boldly confronts the Timewyrm and her creation, the hooded "Death." He impishly waltzes with Death, but her touch kills him as well. And as the bodies of the Doctor and Ace reside in St. Christopher's Church, their minds wander about in a surreal, astral planet.

There, they encounter the Doctor's former selves. They also meet dozens of dead Time Lords, UNIT soldiers, Daleks and others – everyone the Doctor has watched die. The Doctor is particularly tormented by dead companions such as Adric.

By rescuing the third Doctor, imprisoned and driven near-mad by demons of his own making, Ace finally sees the Doctor as an inwardly-tortured being. The conflict escalates until a further face-off with the Timewyrm reveals the truth – they are in the mind of the Doctor.

As the Doctor is battered by the Timewyrm's mental assault, Ace makes her way into the Pit at the center of the Doctor's mind and finds the innocent fifth Doctor, mentally imprisoned by the current Doctor for arguing against his schemes to help the universe. By freeing the fifth Doctor, the epitome of the Doctor's conscience, Ace renews the Doctor's strength and confidence

and he mentally overpowers the Timewyrm. The creature's memories and powers are erased, leaving only the essence of her being, which is deposited into a mindless baby taken from a genetics laboratory. With the Timewyrm's power broken, Cheldon Bonniface is restored on Earth and the Timewyrm baby left in the care of friends Peter and Emily Hutchings. The Doctor and Ace acclimate to their traumatic adventure, reaffirm their friendship and leave happily.

Memorable Moments

There's an utterly horrifying moment as dead Time Lords, UNIT soldiers, Daleks and more stride through the Doctor's mind, foreshadowing the arrival of his dead companions – the freezing Katarina, the aged Sara Kingdom and the roasting Adric. Adric's pleas to have his life back and the Doctor's abandonment scorch your soul.

The seventh Doctor saves the self-imprisoned third Doctor, whose eyes scream with pain. And the fifth Doctor, loosed from his chains, plucks the Sarlain flower and restores the Doctor's conscience.

Sex and Spirits

Martha the innkeeper slyly asks if the Doctor and Ace will need one room or two – they take two. At age 13, Ace got her first kiss outside a youth club one freezing night.

Ass-Whuppings

In an alternate history, the bully Chad Boyle splits Ace's head open. Through the Doctor's memories, we view dozens of people that he's seen die, including Katarina, Sara Kingdom and Adric. The Daleks sent a time-traveling task force against the Timewyrm, but she ate 'em. The Doctor explodes two mock villagers by making a screeching sound. The mock village of Cheldon Bonniface returns to the dust. Boyle kills Lieutenant Rupert Hemmings of the Britischer Freikorps for letting the Doctor escape.

Ace blunders onto the moon's surface and her lungs explode. The Doctor is near electrified by interference with the TARDIS. He waltzes with Death and is put into a death-like state. In the Doctor's mind, fascists torture the third Doctor, the fifth Doctor is shackled to a rock and starved and Boyle thrusts a sword through the seventh Doctor's side. The Timewyrm also fire-blasts the seventh Doctor.

Continuity

The conclusion of the four-part Timewyrm saga. The power-mad dictator on the "Inferno" parallel world was actually a counterpart of the Doctor. He wore one of the faces the Doctor was offered during his trial in "The War Games." Blinovitch penned *Temporal Mechanics* ("Day of the Daleks," "Mawdryn Undead"). Manisha Purkayastha was possibly injured in the fire that burnt down her flat ("Ghost Light"). Adric's exploding starship only contributed to the extinction of the dinosaurs – the arrival of the moon in Earth's orbit finished the job ("Earthshock," "The Silurians").

A 14-year-old Ace idolized singer Johnny Chess, who turned scared and patronizing when she approached him at a concert. She left the convention in tears, vowing never to like anyone without getting to know them first. She still carries Chess' signed photo. Chess (a.k.a. Johnny Chester) is actually the son of Ian Chesterton and Barbara Wright. Their marriage is revealed in *Goth Opera*.

Ace's friend Tricia went out (sort of) with a football captain named Martin Day. Curiously, Martin Day is himself a "Who" novelist and a good friend of Paul Cornell. The Other was first mentioned in the "Remembrance of the Daleks" novelization, as was the term "Ka Faraq Gatri," used to describe the Doctor because he destroyed Skaro. When the Doctor awakened the third Doctor's personality (*Timewyrm: Genesys*), the Timewyrm planted a seed of herself in him. Ace gained one of Melanie's memories from the Doctor's mindwipe (also *Genesys*). The Timewyrm snatched Lieutenant Rupert Hemmings from an alternate Nazi Earth in *Timewyrm: Exodus*. Death re-encounters the Doctor in *Love and War*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor's mind (geography):* The Doctor's mind is divided into seven main regions, one for each Doctor past and present, with many smaller divisions. Rivers filled with living things separate the seven zones – a barrier to prevent the occupants meeting.

In the Doctor's mind, Ace discovers a polygonal room with thirteen sides – one for each allocated incarnation. Each side has a sort of alcove, pulsing with life. Seven of the cabinets contain strange, organic masses of biological circuitry and the other six contain half-formed male figures, stark white, with blank faces and basic costumes. Some rot has mottled the figures with a gray decay. Organic circuitry grows around them.

At the mind's core, in darkness, lies a Pit and the omphalos, the world

tree, the very center of the Doctor's group mind. Three women – maiden, mother, crone – represent the Doctor's female self, but he's long lost sight of them. The Doctor's mind includes a huge library, with clowns lurking behind the bookcases. The mind's walls are lined with pictures from the Academy, ancient Gallifreyan glyphs and the UNIT Christmas party of 1973. Plus a plaque inscribed, "This bureau is hereby licensed as a legitimate purveyor of endless suffering."

• *The Doctor (generally speaking):* Guilt over his companions' deaths (Katarina, Sara Kingdom, Adric) torments the Doctor. At some point, the Doctor stole a portable temporal link from the Prydonian Academy's black collection while he was president of the Time Lords, and left it in Saul's church. The Doctor has visited Cheldon Bonniface several times.

• *The first Doctor:* He now exists in the Doctor's mind as a librarian and keeper of the gardens. He smells of roses, and claims he's there for the sin of pride. He offers his hand to the seventh Doctor, but gets a glare and lowers it. He's still looking for the daisy, but insists it's a rose – what Gallifreyans call a Sarlain (the exact nature of this flower is unknown). The fifth Doctor finally gave him one, and he agreed to attend the younger Doctor's cricket game.

• *The third Doctor:* The realization that the power-mad ruler of the alternate Earth ("Inferno") was the Doctor's counterpart rattled him with guilt, so much that mental demons dragged him off and tortured him. The seventh Doctor sometimes terrifies him.

• *The fourth Doctor:* Exists in the Doctor's mind as a ferryman. His study is full of information, and he kept the Timewyrm out of his sector.

• *The fifth Doctor:* As the only Doctor to oppose the seventh Doctor's plans, the youngest Doctor was mentally enchained in the Pit. He wanted to play cricket, but the seventh Doctor wanted to go to war against the evils of the Universe. The fifth Doctor isn't angry because the seventh Doctor mentally imprisoned him. Finally freed by Ace, the fifth Doctor goes to prepare the cricketing ground and get his old bat out of storage.

• *The seventh Doctor:* He is called the Ka Faraq Gatri, "Bringer of Darkness/Destroyer of Worlds," for devastating the Daleks' home of Skaro. He doesn't need to shave, and dreams there's an afterlife more real than the Gallifreyan Matrix. The unconscious Doctor's irises change from blue to green, later returning to blue. He can communicate in chaos equations. The innkeeper George has beaten him at chess.

The Doctor's oldest companion is the TARDIS. Strangely, he has never

visited his own pineal gland.

• *Ace:* Ace shared a desk with a classmate named Tricia in third form – they became best friends.

Ace is now in her early twenties (that doesn't quite match with the time passed since "Dragonfire," but what the hell), and needs the hum of traffic or the TARDIS to sleep. Miss Marshall was an encouraging teacher, but Mr. Watkins saw Ace as a teaching obstruction. When her gang danced in front of a big Hoover factory, police breathalized Manisha. After all that's happened, Ace still trusts the Doctor.

• *The Timewyrm:* The Timewyrm, snug in the Doctor's mind, intended to focus the mental energy released from his death as a huge explosive pulse through Saul. Such a burst would disrupt the moon's orbit and send it crashing to Earth – an act that would disrupt billions of timestreams and give her permanent physical form.

The Timewyrm will always exist as a basic universal principle, remaining unconscious until the Time of Darkness. The Doctor has fought her more than the four times she believes.

The Timewyrm's also known as Hel, the Addanc (the wyrm that circles the cosmos), and the Dalek-named Golyan Ak Tana, the twister of paths. She tried to read the Green and Black Books of Gallifrey, but fierce temporal baffles stopped her.

• *Reverend Ernest Trelaw:* Current vicar of St. Christopher's.

• *Peter and Emily Hutchings:* Peter's a Cambridge professor of mathematics on leave. Emily's a mildly telepathic, and possibly precognitive, old friend of the Doctor. They lost one child and can't have any more, so they adopt the Timewyrm baby. The Doctor suggests they name her Ishtar. Emily decides to become a novelist.

• *Chad Boyle:* Ace's childhood bully at St. Benedict's School, Perivale. Even at age eight, a venom-filled Boyle had followers. His family moved up to Barnet before he reached Seniors, allowing Boyle to get his act together and become editor of a local paper.

• *Saul:* The Saul intelligence inhabits St. Christopher's church the same way you inhabit your body. He's best described as a gestalt intelligence formed from the focus of many dutiful minds in the church. He'd spent centuries at the Cheldon Bonniface site, where the Celts called him a local spirit, the Saxons a god. Christian missionaries tried to exorcise him and, failing, built a Church on him and declared him an angel of sorts. The first Doctor and the first Reverend Trelaw were the only persons present when

Saul baptized himself with his own font.

Saul communicated with the Trelaw reverends silently, though cleaning ladies heard him humming hymns and dubbed him the ghost of old Saul Bredon, who died asleep in the pews sometime in the first century.

Saul can bathe the church in low-power alpha waves in the psionic range.

• *The Gallifreyan Hermit (possibly K'Anpo):* Now ancient and bearded with one eye blazing out from under a hood, the long-talked-about hermit refers to the Doctor as his child, elder and contemporary. When the Doctor defeats the Timewyrm and saves Ace, the Hermit is pleased.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor can pilot the TARDIS inside his own mind. It has an Ace-customized gym, and doesn't fully compensate for jetlag. It can extend an atmospheric sphere around itself.

Alien Races

Time Lords: When a Time Lord regenerates, his or her memory space retains a copy of the old personality, prior to the final transfer into the Gallifreyan Matrix. In most Time Lords, previous personalities are dormant – the individualistic Doctor is an exception. A Gallifreyan hand gesture called "The Horns of Rassilon" wards against supreme evil.

Prophecies from Gallifrey's Dark Time say the Timewyrm will devour the first and the last of the Time Lords. Her coming will precipitate the Universe's final inrush, the Blue Shift, before she crushes Rassilon.

Alien Planets

Gallifrey: Gallifrey's highest peak, Mount Cadon, extends to the fringes of the planet's atmosphere and holds the Prydonian Academy far up its slopes. Acolytes there endlessly recant protocols and procedures. In high towers, special pupils learn dark arts.

History

King Wen gave the Doctor the *I, Ching* for services rendered.

At the End of the Day

A roller coaster of terror – you'll never view the Doctor the same *ever* again. When it was first released, *Timewyrm: Revelation* caused a complete and total paradigm shift, laying waste the horror of multiple personalities and the eternal pain that lies in immortality. It blasted readers with the

notion that the Doctor was at war with himself – a character change more blatant than any regeneration. It burst 26 years of stories and battles as the Doctor faced his dead companions. For longtime TV readers, this remains an eye-popping, ideal place to start with the book line – if you have the nerve. Overall, one of the blackest, most invasive "Doctor Who" novels – and one of the best.

Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible

Author: Marc Platt. Virgin New Adventure #5. Release Date: February 1992. "Cat's Cradle Series" Part 1 of 3.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

London, 1991; The City, location and time unknown.

Summary

In London, the TARDIS is invaded by an information-munching datavore in the form of a slimy monopod mollusk.

Meanwhile, in the past during Gallifrey's so-called "Dark Time," two factions compete for power. Rassilon and his band of neo-technologists compose one side, the Pythia and her mystical order form the other. Whichever group wins will determine whether Gallifrey will follow the path of science or mysticism. And when Rassilon launches a Time Scaphe, one of his earliest time-travel experiments, Scaphe crewman Vael – an agent of the Pythia – sabotages the flight. The erratic Time Scaphe jumps to the future and time-rams the Doctor's TARDIS, annihilating both ships.

Ace awakens in an alien City in a strange limbo, where the TARDIS datavore slug has grown to 100 times its previous size and calls itself "the Process." She sees a black-robed "ghost" that looks like the Doctor, but finds the real Time Lord seated in a rocking chair, holding a silver cat.

Both the Doctor's "ghost" and the cat are manifestations of the TARDIS' Banshee Circuits, a fail-safe device that keeps the Ship alive in the event of catastrophe. The collision not only activated the Banshee Circuits, but disrupted the TARDIS so badly that it reconfigured itself as an entire alien City.

The Doctor communicates with the Pythia across the millennia and learns that she's grooming Vael, a Scaphe crewman, to succeed her, based on predictions that the next ruler of Gallifrey will be a man. But the Doctor tells her that the predicted ruler will indeed be a man – named Rassilon. The Pythia, incensed, refuses to listen.

Two incarnations of the Process from different time zones find themselves at odds with each other, and the elder Process returns to its beginning to alter time and change its younger self – it lays a big egg. Vael tries to kill the Doctor with pyrokenesis, but torches the egg instead. Destroyed before it was born, the Process retroactively ceases to exist.

Vael cracks under the stress of the Pythia's plans for him, rejects her and commits suicide. Defeated, the Pythia flings herself into a deadly abyss, but not before cursing Gallifrey to suffer eternal sterility. Faced with a population crisis, Rassilon eventually creates the life-giving Gallifreyan Looms and crafts regeneration technology.

The Time Scaphe's crew returns home and the Doctor reaches the heart of the TARDIS and restores it with his personal control devices. Meanwhile, the silver cat that represents the TARDIS circuits bathes itself in a mound of TARDIS bric-a-brac.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor stops complaining about what Ace wears since he doesn't change his clothes for weeks. The Doctor also gets upset for losing his coat – what will he do without his pockets?

Ass-Whuppings

Ace kills one Process; Vael kills another. The Process bites Ace's leg.

Continuity

The Sisterhood of Karn ("The Brain of Morbius") and Lady Peinforte ("Silver Nemesis") are both remnants of the Pythia's power. Despite Peinforte's claims, the Doctor doesn't know much about the Dark Time. The Doctor hasn't seen the secondary console room for some time, and wonders if it was deleted ("Masque of Mandragora" and on).

The "Cat's Cradle" trilogy is essentially a marketing ploy, as the three books aren't connected at all beyond the presence of the silver cat. A datavore also plagues the sixth Doctor in *Time of Your Life*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor is one of 45 cousins from the Loom of the House of Lungbarrow in the Southern mountains of Gallifrey. He once saw a Book of the Old Time and ponders that reincarnation existed before

regeneration. He has never broken the rule about visiting Gallifrey's past. Yet, he sees Ace's future and knows he must sever the time-line before she can "discover her cruel fate." Hanging upside-down makes the Doctor dizzy.

The Brigadier gave him a UNIT pass that has his seventh face on it and wasn't date stamped. The Doctor allegedly tutored the Young Hero Shonnzi. He keeps a collection of quill pens.

For whatever reason, the Doctor hasn't been to Alaska (too bad – he doesn't know what he's missing). He owns a portrait by the Flemmish artist Jan van Eyck, "The Arnolfini Marriage," though only part of it survives.

• *Ace:* At this point, Ace hopes her time with the Doctor will never, ever end. As a kid, Ace asked God to prove he was real by showing her what life was like on another planet. A "Blue Peter" badge on her jacket denotes heroic achievement. Ace's Swiss Army knife belongs to Ian Chesterton.

• *Ace's Mum:* A short woman, wearing clothes 10 years too young for her. Ace's mom bunched her hair over her head and held it together by a mauve scarf. She overdoes the makeup, and still wears her wedding ring from Ace's dad. She never bothered about Ace's school, and Ace "lost" many letters about parent-teacher meetings.

• *The Pythia:* The ancient prophetess Pythia guarded the Pythian Book of Future Legends. The 389th Pythia gave the Legendary Hero Ao a jeweled periapt with a tongue of blue ice, but the 508th Pythia lost it before being exiled by Rassilon.

• *Rassilon:* The founder of Gallifreyan time-travel lost a daughter to the Pythia's curse. The West Wing of the Academia Library contains his office. Part of the inspiration for trans-dimensional engineering came from an onion doll, the kind which contains bigger onion dolls inside it. The Council offered Rassilon three crowns. Dowtroyal served as one of Rassilon's advisors. Quennesander Olyesti Pekkary, captain of the Time Scaphe and first son of the House of Fordfarding, was Rassilon's nephew.

• *Borusa:* Cardinal Borusa wrote a history called "Rassilon the God."

• *Harclav Agusti Prydonius:* Gallifreyan Hero who quested through the blood-red mists of distant Thule, overthrew the reign of the Sphinx and brought its head back to Gallifrey. The Prydonian Chapter is undoubtedly named after him.

• *The Process:* A datavore that became a massive worm-type leech, arching up from the single broad mollusk foot of its tail to a flattened cylinder head with a contorted mouth like a lamprey. (In short, it's vile.)

Rippling clawed fins run the length of its aged and cracked body. There's another slavering mouth in its foot.

• *The TARDIS:* Ace becomes the first human to see the TARDIS' grayprints, the multi-dimensional plans of the Ship, since the TARDIS was in neural construction dock on Gallifrey. Banshee Circuits, installed in every TARDIS since Type 1, use whatever resources are available – including people, places, dreams or memories – to insure the TARDIS survives when all other systems fail.

Ace suspects the TARDIS compensates for jet-lag. Invaders can alter the Ship's defense systems and constantly move the door away from you, creating a "tomorrow conundrum." A Basic Reality Check inspects the TARDIS systems. Ship Status Report color-codes a TARDIS schematic to denote danger spots. A Jibert Cathocode Troisieme timepiece in the console room records how much personal time has passed. The TARDIS can change the Doctor and Ace's perception of reality to warn them of danger.

• *The City:* After time-ramming the prototype Time Scaphe, the TARDIS restructured itself as the City. A chimper flower with an egg-shaped jewel at the center gives the Doctor voice control. Three versions of the City – new, aging and decayed, existed side-by-side, separated by mercury streams. The City has 37 dimensions.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* New Time Lords are created in devices called Looms, and owe affiliation to various Houses. Early Gallifreyans possessed some form of telekinesis/pyrokenesis. Before the Intuitive Revolution, they were *cursed* with powerful telepathy – they could keep no secrets, you see. Loom-spun Time Lords believe children to be unnatural creatures. The Court of Principals runs Gallifrey's day-to-day affairs.

• *Menti Celesti:* Gallifrey's all-seeing, capricious gods. They typically do nothing and aren't gods of Reason.

Alien Planets

Gallifrey had a copper moon called Pazithi Gallifreya. Gallifrey itself has brown lakes and dust-gray clouds, with red deserts and smoky cities. Imperial merchant ships carry slaves from other worlds.

Organizations

• *The Young Heroes:* Gallifrey's earliest explorers and Chronauts.

• *Individuals:* Typically Gallifreyans who can screen their minds – red-gold hair is a sure sign of this. Individuals often have the strength of character to become Young Heroes.

Time Travel

Rassilon decreed no Time Lord shall travel into Gallifrey's past.

Ships

Time Scaphes: The earliest Gallifreyan time-traveling vehicles, fueled by mental power. The crew simply thinks, "We travel," to direct its course.

History

• Rassilon lived millennia before the Doctor's time, in an era where Gallifrey's merchant port trafficked wares from every corner of the Gallifreyan Empire. Two opposing factions – one magical, led by the Pythia; one technological, led by Rassilon – competed to shape Gallifrey's future path.

• In the first phase of Gallifrey's time program, Heroes made single orbits of Gallifrey, strapped to single tin canisters. Rassilon defeated trumped-up charges of misappropriating Academia funds. Omega's vainglorious sacrifice created the Eye of Harmony to power time travel, but marked the point where Rassilon's Intuitive Revelation went astray.

• The Gallifreyan Hero named Prydonius returned triumphantly in his ship, *The Apollaten*, with the Sphinx's head. He publicly denounced the Pythia to the Council of Principals, who sent him to Funderell on the asteroid archipelago. Prydonius acted as independent observer in a "minor territorial dispute" between Ruta III and the Sontara Warburg.

• The 508th Pythia, armed with a prophecy that Gallifrey's next ruler would be a man, groomed a Young Hero named Vael Voryunsti Sheverell for the task. Vael finally rejected the Pythia. Knowing Rassilon had won, the Pythia cast herself into an abyss and cursed Gallifrey with sterility. As recorded by Scribe Quartinian, babies died in their mother's wombs. It's said that no Gallifreyan child has been natural-born since that terrible moment (*Cold Fusion* and *The Infinity Doctors* reveal this isn't strictly true).

• The missing Chronoscaphe's return was heralded as a good omen, but

Rassilon suspended the Time program to deal with the extinction problem. He created the Looms to generate new Gallifreyans and eventually discovered regeneration technology. The Looms were organized according to various Houses. The Gallifreyan Empire nonetheless crumbled.

• After this adventure, Time Scaphe Captain Pekkary tells Rassilon about the Doctor's TARDIS and artron energy, giving Rassilon advance knowledge that the time experiments will work. Rassilon and his confederates sealed off the future to the Pythia.

• Geoffrey Chaucer patterned *The Doctour of Science's Tale* after the Doctor.

At the End of the Day

A complete and bloody train wreck, but deceptively important to chronology. *Time's Crucible* chisels much of Gallifrey's Dark Time story, laying timber for Doctor-origin novels such as *Lungbarrow* and *The Infinity Doctors*. Unfortunately, when you tangle all of the book's ideas together with multiple time tracks and the Process, one of the damn most annoying "Who" villains ever, you've got a mess as snarled as the "Cat's Cradle" title suggests.

Cat's Cradle: Warhead

Author: Andrew Cartmel. Virgin New Adventure #6. Release Date: April 1992. "Cat's Cradle Series" Part 2 of 3; "The War Trilogy" Part 1 of 3.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

The Doctor's house in Kent, circa 2009.

Summary

It's Earth, circa 2009. Pollution has reached the point where humanity is slowly dying. Ace's friend Shreela, who's now an acclaimed science writer, is terminally ill. Hours before Shreela dies, the Doctor asks her to publish an environmental article subscribing to telekinesis. The Doctor hopes it will smoke out a particular type of person – Shreela agrees.

Meanwhile, a covert operation within the business conglomerate Butler Institute, led by project director Mathew O'Hara, prepares to "save" humanity from the pollution by transferring the humanity's minds into artificial bodies. The Doctor views this as a perversion and prepares to devastate the Institute.

He sends Ace to Turkey to recover a mysterious barrel. Ace succeeds with help from a pack of Kurdish rebels and returns to the Doctor's house in Kent. The Time Lord unpacks the barrel and reveals, hidden inside, a young boy named Vincent – a budding empath, able to turn a person's inner rage and fears into reality by a simple touch.

A young woman named Justine, full of personal rage and a fierce love for Earth's ecology, answers Shreela's article and draws the Doctor's attention. Justine is the battery, Vincent is the firing mechanism. Together, they form a psychic warhead with the power to level Butler. But Vincent and Justine, drawn together by their lives of pain, become lovers.

On the Doctor's orders, Justine arranges for the Butler Institute to capture Vincent. The Doctor sneaks with Ace and Justine into O'Hara's headquarters. Unfortunately, Justine's love for Vincent has quelled her inner rage, making her useless as a weapon. Director O'Hara, thinking he's won

the day, touches Vincent and literally unleashes O'Hara's own inner coldness. A blast of ice devastates Butler's operation and as O'Hara combusts and becomes a cinder. Earth's corporations reluctantly begin a clean-up program while Vincent and Justine leave to begin a new life together.

Memorable Moments

A dying Shreela sometimes thinks the Doctor is the enemy. When she asks the silent Doctor how long she's got left, she realizes she's got hours at most and works on his request.

The Doctor and the killer Bobby Prescott think about what happens when books "die." There's a delicious argument between Ace and Justine, in which Justine fractures Ace's belief in the Doctor as a science-based alien being. Vincent feels Justine's loneliness like a 20-year headache

Sex and Spirits

Ace gets goo-covered in the Doctor's cryogenic gel while in a swimsuit. A half-comatose Vincent grabs Ace's breast, so she hits him. Justine and a half-conscious Vincent boff as Ace bolts from the room.

Ass-Whuppings

Vincent's power kills four people in flashback.

Continuity

Midge's sister died when her immune system coped out. She and Shreela were both introduced in "Survival."

Vincent, Justine and the drug-designing Mrs. Woodcott all appear in *Warlock* and *Warchild*. The "late" James McIlveen's brother, Creed McIlveen, plays an important role in those works. A small silver cat, a projection of the TARDIS' Banshee Circuits, reappears (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*). This is the first appearance of the Doctor's house in Kent, which appears next in *Transit*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor concocts a poor man's cryogenics, using a life-suspending gel instead of low temperatures. He can fake diplomatic seals, but cannot fly a helicopter. His mistake with Vincent and Justine – failing to

predict they might fall in love – shows he doesn't fully understand human nature.

• *Ace:* Ace's grenades are labeled, "Detonate Near Enemy." She denies the existence of black magic. The Doctor lets Ace drive a 50-year-old Austin A35, gleaming as if it was new.

• *Vincent Wheaton:* Vincent's mutant power was first triggered at age 10 when his abusive father shook him – the old man was injured as a result and feared Vincent after that. The Doctor says Vincent possesses an odd hybrid of psi talent, a combination of telepathy and telekinesis. Vincent can manifest other people's emotions in physical form by touching them, but can't psionically unleash his own feelings. Rebecca Cox was the first girl he kissed.

Vincent's friend Calvin feared the murderous Bobby Prescott and betrayed Vincent to him. Vincent was put into cryogenic suspension and sent to Turkey until Ace rescued him. Among other things, Vincent's telekinetic power turned Calvin's bicycle into a monster that killed Prescott's three associates. When Vincent catalyzes Justine's rage, cars erupt into flames.

• *Justine:* A young girl full of anger and aggression, coupled with a belief in supernatural forces. No doubt about it – Justine was as stable as a jar of gelignite. When Justine was seven, her friend Cheyrl died crossing a dangerous road. As a result, a 17-year-old Justine's sledgehammers cars and blowing them up with petrol. She violently opposes toxic pollution.

• *Shreela Govindia:* After "Survival," Shreela established herself as an award-winning science journalist, publishing several books. Her last article, actually written by the Doctor, was entitled "A Doorway to Other Worlds."

• *James Haines McIlveen:* Police officer Mascuso's former partner, shot from a rooftop. His brain was downloaded into a computer.

Stuff You Need

Tetrodotoxin: A highly potent neurotoxin, found in puffer fish and Japanese fugu. Mrs. Woodcott designed from it a dangerous drug named Billy Whiz.

History

Earth's pollution is so out of control, the planet approaches the point of no return. After the destruction of the Butler Institute, Earth's corporations

begin a costly clean-up program.

At the End of the Day

Those who enjoy cyber-thriller novels will love this – the rest of us face a drawn-out, snarled mess. *Cat's Cradle: Warhead* is in fact brilliant, but only as the first part of a trilogy encompassing *Warlock* and *Warchild*. You'll need to give *Warhead* a good two readings before everything pulls together. The complaint from readers that Cartmel doesn't write enough of the Doctor is justified, though Vincent and Justine's colorful origins almost make up for this. Worst of all, the dialogue-naked scenes with Ace in Turkey drag something awful. Points for cleverness, a minus for readability.

Cat's Cradle: Witch Mark

Author: Andrew Hunt. Virgin New Adventure #7. Release Date: June 1992. "Cat's Cradle Series" Part 3 of 3.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Llanfer Ceiriog, Wales, and Tír na n-Óg, circa 1992.

Summary

The TARDIS' organic material decays, severing the Ship's power link to the Eye of Harmony. The time machine lands for a rest in the village of Llanfer Ceiriog, where a stone circle, actually a silicon gateway, accidentally transports the Doctor and Ace to the mystical world of Tír na n-Óg.

They find themselves in the city of Dinorben, where there is much concern because the hot daytime sun, Dagda's Wheel, has vanished and the smaller, red sun Arawn's Wheel is too cool to heat the planet for long. Also, fierce demons are slaughtering the inhabitants, further proof, the people say, that the god Goibhnie is displeased with them.

As a result, the humans of Tír na n-Óg are evacuating the planet, setting themselves up on Earth with new identities. And because the humans fear discovery, all centaurs, unicorns and other non-humans are banned from following. The Doctor and Ace are also forbidden from going home unless they discover why Goibhnie is so upset.

The pair travels and meets Herne, a dying, cross-temporal being who views effects before causes. With a cobbled radio signal, the Doctor is able to summon Goibhnie, who's actually a member of the Troifran race. As part of a sociological experiment, Goibhnie crafted Tír na n-Óg's creatures from shape-shifting protoplasm, basing his designs on Earth's imaginative mythology. The rampant demons were spawned from defective stock and freed themselves. With the experiment ending and the suns almost out of fuel, the Doctor convinces the sympathetic Goibhnie to extend the life of the experiment and thus save the planet as well.

Unfortunately, the demons assault Dinorben and Goibhnie is mortally wounded. With a dying Goibhnie's help, the Doctor transports the demons to Dagda's Wheel, giving the sun enough raw protoplasm to power it for 2,000 more years.

The Doctor and some survivors of the assault return to Earth and destroy the silicon gateway. The condition of the mutant Tîr na n-Ôg resident Herne worsens, and he dissolves inside the TARDIS into his base protoplasm. The Doctor has the TARDIS absorb Herne's matter, generating the organic substance necessary to reopen the Eye of Harmony link. They then continue their travels.

Memorable Moments

An extremely gross bit as demons slaughter a clan Clyr encampment, even plucking unborn babies from their mothers' wombs and strangling them with their umbilical cords (Ace pukes).

Sex and Spirits

Slurp! Ace dreams of her childhood crush, Simon Groom, kissing her gently on the forehead, then dragging his enormous, rough tongue across her cheek.

Continuity

The Doctor retains his fear of fire that he acquired in "Inferno."

TARDISes travel by using Block Transfer Computation, a technique that alters the structure of matter ("Logopolis"). Because such a technique degrades inorganic substances, TARDISes require morphologically unstable living matter to complete the process. The organic matter eventually atrophies, but more can be found on Gallifrey or Axos ("The Claws of Axos"). Even Nestene matter is acceptable ("Spearhead from Space," "Terror of the Autons").

The silver cat that represents the TARDIS' survival circuits and appeared in *Time's Crucible* and *Warhead* here returns to being a software formula in the TARDIS, a mathematical cat's cradle in the Block Transfer Matrix.

We learn in *Deceit* that a speck of demonic protoplasm infected the TARDIS in this story and slowly altered the Doctor's behavior over a series of novels. Also, the Doctor and Ace are duplicated in this story by shapeshifters that later appear in *Return of the Living Dad*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor sometimes stays with Llanfer Ceiriog innkeeper Hugh, retroactively leaving notes to ask him for lodging. He likes to go trout tickling and cooks a good breakfast.

The Doctor has read the entirety of Greek literature and even written some of it. He learned about knots from Erich Weiss. He visited Llanfer Ceiriog seven years ago.

• *Ace:* When Ace empathically links with the unicorn Bat, she can see the aura that surrounds other unicorns. Ace isn't the most religious of people.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* Has some affection for horses.

• *Lynx:* What the Doctor calls the TARDIS-generated silver cat.

• *Herne:* Created by Goibhnie on the planet Troifres, Herne underwent a severe mutation due to radiation exposure. He has a special relationship with time, moving through it in reverse. In short, he perceived effect before cause. Because of his contra-temporal existence, Herne could violate certain laws of physics, such as being able to fly. Unfortunately, Herne also released random emissions of chronons and antichronons that could affect short-lived species in strange ways. Herne suggested to Goibhnie that he base Tír na n-Óg on Earth's rich mythology.

• *The Doctor and Goibhnie:* Are unaffected by Herne's unstable state.

• *The TARDIS:* With some rest, the TARDIS can regenerate parts of herself. The TARDIS food machine can replicate food from a small sample.

Alien Races

• *Troifrans:* Well-renowned scientific geniuses who care little for the consequences of their work. A university complex covers over half of Troifres' surface area, but the people are vulgar and elitist. Troifran numerals are widely used in the galactic scientific community.

Troifrans are eight-foot tall and humanoid, with fluid limbs and plate-like feet. Their vision sees all wavelengths of the electromagnetic spectrum.

• *Tír na n-Óg (alien races):* Aside from humans, four alien races exist on Tír na n-Óg: The centaur Firbolg, the wolven Sidhe, the unicorn Ceffyl and the super-strong, stone-like Fomoir, who go inactive during the day. All are considered allies of man, and all bear the same tattoo with a half-moon, hexagon and a circular mark set in a triangle. Humans call this the "Witch Mark," actually a branding Troifran numeral.

• *Tír na n-Óg (humans):* Tuatha de Danaan is the ruling elite. Clan leaders must demonstrate their ability to control fire and compose poetry.

• *Ceffyl:* The telepathic Ceffyl take the form of unicorns and are not entirely bound to the present. They can telepathically show possible futures and project images of themselves. You can empathically link with a Ceffyl by touching its horn, a direct extension of its brain, to your forehead.

Alien Planets

• *Tír na n-Óg*: In mythology, "Tír na n-Óg" is the kingdom the Celts retired to when they died.

History

• The Doctor was at Queen Elizabeth's coronation dinner, where Essex started throwing drumsticks.

• The Troifrans once attempted to prove the universal gravity constant could vary, and built a massive gravimeter that stretched for many light-years. It played havoc with numerous solar systems.

• Long millennia ago, Goibhnie created a world for the Sidhe, but a third party despoiled the paradise. The Goibhnie-created Tír na n-Óg experiment ran for about 150 years before running out of power, when this story picks up.

• The Troifran committee ratified Galactic Constitutional Regulations regarding interference with Earth, one of the causal nexus points in the galaxy.

At the End of the Day

Definitely the work of a first-time novelist, bogged with near-worthless supporting characters, a lack of drama and a plot that goes basically nowhere. The other problem is that "Doctor Who" readers are not fantasy freaks by nature, and the planet's scientific explanation is so long-coming that we really don't care.

Nightshade

Author: Mark Gatiss. Virgin New Adventure #8. Release Date: August 1992.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Ace.

Travel Log

Town of Crook Marsham, north of England, nearly Christmas, 1968.

Summary

With the Doctor in a strangely withdrawn and snippy mood, the TARDIS arrives in the English village of Crook Marsham, 1968. Near the town's radio telescope, Ace finds a body turning into goo, and the Doctor uncovers another in the town. Several of the townsfolk are haunted by appearances of departed friends, lovers and relatives. In particular, retired actor Edmund Trevithick, former star of the science-mystery series "Nightshade," confronts what appears to be an alien character from the series.

As Ace pursues a cautious romance with an innkeeper's son, Robin Yeadon, the Doctor learns that the radio telescope was built on the remains of a "haunted" castle. But when a psychic barrier suddenly arises and prevents people from leaving or entering the village, all hell breaks loose. A group of energy beings appear as dead loved ones and rip apart a stranded group of elderly people. The "Nightshade" creatures besiege the radio telescope crew, Trevithick included. He dispatches one with an exploding fire extinguisher, but the advance continues.

The Doctor discovers the ground beneath the radio telescope houses a Sentience, a long-lived creature that lives on life energy. The Sentience disguises itself as loved ones to get close enough to consume its prey. The Doctor himself confronts the image of his granddaughter Susan, but exerts his willpower and escapes. The Sentience's images rip through the village, and Trevithick sacrifices himself so the Doctor's party can flee.

The Doctor ultimately convinces the Sentience that a supernova in Bellatrix offers a much more direct source of energy. The Sentience transmits itself to the supernova and greedily drinks. It then transmits itself

from star to star until it comes upon a collapsed star – a black hole. The Doctor and Ace observe from the in-flight TARDIS as the Sentience, bound by the black hole's gravitational pull, is forever trapped.

Ace decides to leave the TARDIS and stay with Robin. But the Doctor, unwilling to lose her as a companion, "returns" to Earth and "accidentally" lands on an alien world. Ace rushes back into the TARDIS, begging the Doctor to take her back to Robin, but finds the console room empty. In time, Ace continues her TARDIS traveling and Robin, after spending months waiting for her to return, moves to London.

Memorable Moments

Town resident Mrs. Holland tells about her husband's wartime death – you're supposed to get a telegram, but there was a screw-up and all she got was a brown-paper parcel. "His uniform. His boots. And his little pocket book. There was a bayonet hole through it. The pages were all stuck together, all... stiff with blood. I remember. I just stood on the step and cried."

Sex and Spirits

Ace sees Robin Yeadon and gets "disconcerting but very nice tinglings" through her body. Unable to calm a hysterical Robin, Ace simply kisses him.

Ass-Whuppings

Trevithick kills a "Nightshade" creature and later sacrifices his life to save the Doctor's group.

The Doctor hits the ground and painfully dislocates his shoulder (Ace pops it back in place).

Continuity

The Doctor has yet to back for Susan as he promised ("The Dalek Invasion of Earth"). Ace now wears the earring she acquired on Segonax in her left ear ("The Greatest Show in the Galaxy").

The Sentience originated as the Sou(ou)shi, the aliens banished from Venus by the first Doctor in *Venusian Lullaby*. Ace still has Nitro-9-A that she mixed up in Nazi Germany during *Timewyrm: Exodus*. *Set Piece* explains the Doctor's vulnerable shoulder spot. A much, much older Robin Yeadon marries Ace's mother in *Happy Endings*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Sulky and irritable, the Doctor thinks perhaps he should return to Gallifrey and stop meddling. He questions his right to act as self-appointed judge, jury and executioner. Ace believes the Doctor is trapped in the past, remembering happier times that weren't all that different from today.

The Doctor thinks of his granddaughter Susan almost every day. The Sentience exploits this, indicating that Susan's among the Doctor's most guilt-ridden memories.

Despite his Time Lord body, a dislocated shoulder causes the Doctor utter agony and makes him sob and utter oaths not heard since the Dark Time on Gallifrey. The Doctor tells himself that under normal circumstances, he'd let Ace leave him, but circumstances are not normal and he needs help for his various missions (as Time's Champion).

• *Ace:* Ace's parents met on the dance floor of a sweaty, swinging nightclub. Her mum in 1968 had high, lacquered hair, a garish mini-dress and a brother named Barry who drove a mint-green Hillman Minx. Ace's Auntie Rose bemoans the youth of today.

Ace hates singsongs. She remembers being five or six with her mom on beach holiday. She got spanked for peeing in the car, giving her a mixed picture of her mom that she hates. There's so much bile in this particular memory, the Sentience easily latches onto it.

• *Robin Yeadon:* Poor Robin's pub-owning parents are killed by the Sentience. After Ace leaves, Robin returns to the telescope every day for five months, hoping she'll return. He finally moves to York, then to London.

• *Edmund Trevithick:* He had no family. His daughter died in an automobile accident in Germany, while his granddaughter ran off to join a hippy cult. His wife Margaret died in 1956. He appeared in many films, and starred in "Nightshade" from 1953-1958.

• *The Sentience:* The ravenous intelligence called the Sentience absorbs almost every form of energy, including life energy and Ace's Nitro-9 bombs. Perhaps fortunately, it can't feed directly and therefore conjures up a victim's buried memories, distracting its victims and giving it time to feed. The victims' tissues break down so quickly, the corpse becomes dust in minutes. The Doctor believes the Sentience runs through space like a vein of mineral through rocks. It's of incalculable age, and not even the Sentience can explain its origins.

The Sentience can create a psychic barrier that causes nausea if you try to pass through it. Unconscious humans are vulnerable to it since sleeping minds believe its images quicker. Most of the Sentience slept while a small part terrorized the village and fed. The Sentience can travel through space and even time... at least, back through its own presence. It was finally trapped in a supernova in Andromeda, M31, the Great Spiral and couldn't survive.

• *The TARDIS:* Among the TARDIS rooms is a big red room filled entirely of hats and a patch of open countryside. You can enter a tertiary console room via a large, pearl gray door. The room has six crumbling stone walls, with roundels filled by a warm green light. At the center stands a massive granite console, carved like a Gothic altar. Ace thinks it's rather like being in church or at the bottom of a swimming pool.

Alien Races

"Nightshade" aliens: Almost seven-foot tall, with a shiny, black-carapaced body like a cockroach mounted on grasshopper legs.

History

• In 1644, Cromwell's force of 27,000 engaged Prince Rupert's 18,000. The battle commenced four miles to the east of Crook Marsham, which is dominated by its ruined Norman castle, built in 1156 by Sir Brian de Fillis. Cromwell sent Phillip Jackson and his party to pursue Prince Rupert, who had taken refuge at the Norman castle. At that point, the Sentience awakened, having time-traveled along itself to seek the period where the Bellatrix star first went supernova. Jackson arrived to see de Fillis' castle destroyed by pulses of energy.

• The official report on the deaths in Crook Marsham claimed poison gas. Trevithick was said to have died in his sleep.

• The Doctor remembers the Durham cathedral being finished.

At the End of the Day

One of the most emotive "Who" novels, *Nightshade* terrifies with memories of absent friends and lovers – striking a deep melodious chord with most readers. Trevithick comes forth as a human version of the Doctor, someone who's larger than life and makes people stronger by his presence. Ace's relationship with Robin is more innocent than her "sex now, damn you" days with Jan in the next novel. The ending breaks your heart – you

want to think the Doctor’s a bastard, but can’t.

Love and War

Author: Paul Cornell. Virgin New Adventure #9. Release Date: October 1992.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Perivale, 1992; planet of Heaven, city of Joycetown, Hoothi gas dirigible, circa 2570.

Chronology

Months after *Nightshade*.

Summary

On Heaven, a paradise world where humans and Draconians bury their dead, Ace meets Jan, a roaming Traveller and pyrokinetic – and ends up in his heart and bed. Ace hopes the Doctor will take Jan with them in the TARDIS – but it isn't meant to be.

Aided by an archaeologist named Bernice Summerfield, the Doctor concludes the Hoothi, a rancorous gestalt species capable of animating all varieties of dead flesh, have infected the planet. As the Hoothi gather their forces, the Doctor pretends the planet is lost, which motivates Jan to make an attack run on the Hoothi ship in orbit. En route, Jan and Ace become engaged. Jan's crew, however, has been infected with Hoothi filaments, and as a horrified Ace watches, her fiancé Jan dies – bursting into a mess of alien fungus.

As the Hoothi resurrect the millions of corpses found on Heaven, the Doctor plays his trump card. With Jan's consciousness and flesh now a part of the Hoothi, the Doctor cries out Jan's secret name – Aradrath – and gets the attention of the sliver of Jan's mind in the Hoothi gestalt. As Jan activates his fire-making power, a blast of flame rips through the Hoothi consciousness, killing it completely – and all that remains of Jan.

Ace realizes the Doctor planned from the start to sacrifice Jan, the planet's only pyrokinetic. The Doctor even allowed Jan to make his suicide

flight, knowing the Hoothi would stop it and absorb him. With a final, gut-ripping rebuke to the Doctor, Ace leaves with the Travellers. Bernice, however, sees both sides of the Doctor/Ace argument and becomes a TARDIS companion after the Doctor promises never to play games with her life.

Memorable Moments

Most memorable of all is when Ace tells the plotting Doctor she doesn't want to choose between him and Jan. And, touching her cheek, he whispers, "You won't have to choose." Also good is Benny's first appearance, when she wakes up laughing for no apparent reason. As the Doctor and Ace fight about Jan's death, she shouts, "I didn't have it off with a bloody Dalek!" The Doctor replies "Would it have made a difference?" and she slaps him.

The Doctor's command to whatever remains of Jan: "Aradrath! Make fire!" Ace's rebuke of the Doctor's killing of Jan, as she screams, "Get me away from him!" and spirals into shock. In their final confrontation, the Doctor fears Ace will attack him.

Sex and Spirits

Jan and Ace burn up the night with passion and get engaged. And then, he is no more. Benny's first love was a boy named Simon, who betrayed her to Spacefleet authorities. She's only had two lovers since then. She had a crush on a young research assistant named Ian but was crushed when regarded her as a sister. She toyed with snogging Jan, but isn't very good at fly-by-night relationships.

When Ace was 15, she fancied the homosexual Julian and kissed him once.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor sacrifices Jan in one of the series' most dramatic twists. Jan's mortally wounded associate Christopher lingers on as a cyberspace intelligence, but finally kicks it. Ace's friend Julian died of AIDS.

Continuity

Ace dreams of a meeting between the Eternal persona of Death and the Doctor, in which Death accuses the unborn seventh Doctor of seizing control of his sixth self and deliberately running into the Rani's tractor beam ("Time

and the Rani"). He deliberately terminated the sixth Doctor's regeneration "for wisdom," knowing Time needed a champion.

The Doctor's third self dying from radiation poisoning is one of his worst memories ("Planet of the Spiders"). He suffers a decade of this experience in the computer-based Puterspace.

A Time Lord read a mindscan of the Doctor, taken at the Doctor's second trial, and was absorbed by the Hoothi ("Trial of a Time Lord").

Ace, three years older, returns in *Deceit*. Chad Boyle has mailed everyone Christmas cards after years of silence (*Timewyrm: Revelation*). The Doctor finds a note to himself, reiterating words from that book "He is never cruel or cowardly..."

Death and the Doctor complete their life-swapping deal in *Human Nature*.

A member of Benny's expedition is *Scarlet Empress* author Paul Magrs, whom Benny names a door after. The Doctor says he keeps a model railway set (*Short Trips:* "Model Train Set").

Shreela did odd jobs and learned journalism at Chad Boyle's office ("Survival," *Timewyrm: Revelation*). Ace oddly ponders that Sabalom Glitz ("Dragonfire") never loved her, foreshadowing the revelation that she banged him (*Happy Endings*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: This is the first time the Doctor is called the Champion of Death's sister Time.

The Doctor carries vast supplies of wealth in various currencies. He can open doors by playing the Perigosto Stick game (*see Alien Races: Time Lords*).

He can blow fire by holding a simple oil lamp near his lips. He could have changed the TARDIS' exterior long ago, but likes the shape and the motto.

The Doctor believes his granddaughter Susan will call for him at the end of her incarnation. He can deliberately shadow his memory, believing Ace to be both Dodo and Susan. By looking at retinal patterns, he can determine who's been infected by the Hoothi. He doesn't believe in reincarnation.

• *The Doctor and Benny:* The Doctor scans Benny's memory because he doesn't want to be alone – and senses he soon will be.

• *Ace:* The Traveller Máire formally engages Ace to Jan in the Travellers'

method – they promise to keep each other warm and safe from pursuit.

Ace was named after Dorothy in "The Wizard of Oz," a film her grandmother loved. She addresses her mother as "Audrey." She now wonders if her Mum thinks she's dead. At some point, the Hoothi absorbed her friend Julian's memories.

Ace mistakes the age of the Doctor, her best friend, to be 783. She's starting to like her Christian name, Dorothy, but stays firm about not doing drugs.

In school, Ace was sometimes called Dotty, though her Mum called her Dorry. She smashed a boy's head across a desk for making a face at her. She set the main hall curtains on fire and put laxative in the head's tea. The school assigned her a social worker – because her mother wasn't there.

The Doctor and Ace: After Ace rebukes the Doctor and leaves with the Travellers, he keeps her jacket, knowing she will need it again. The Doctor offers Death his life for Ace, but Death refuses.

• *Ace's Mum:* Ace's mother couldn't tell Ace that she loved her, and asked Julian to do it.

• *Bernice:* Bernice Surprise Summerfield is 30, and was raised on Beta Carisis, an Earth Colony. Her father was a high-ranking officer in Spacefleet, her Catholic mother stayed home until Benny was seven. When the latest Dalek war broke out, her father was on the front. Benny's Mum pushed her into a shelter but was killed by the first burst of plasma beams – while trying to reach Benny's doll Rebecca. Benny's father never came back.

Benny went to the military academy as an orphan. She learned to shoot, but couldn't stand soldier business. Benny finally went AWOL, hiding out in the Academy woods and giving girls advice.

The Academy took Benny off frontline service and made her the youngest private in the corps. En route to Capella, she jumped ship in an escape pod, and found herself on a strange colony world. Benny started work with the archaeological unit and faked her qualifications.

The late 20th Century is Benny's favorite era. She agrees that the best Isley Brothers song is "This Old Heart of Mine." Benny says she's not very tactile and asks the Doctor not to touch her. Benny's left-handed and keeps a diary. She only has enough money for three days and a pass for a Draconian freighter.

• *Jan Rydd:* A military experiment during the Dalek war gave Jan pyrokinetic powers. His secret name is Aradrath – "the one big fire." As

one of the nomadic Travellers, Jan makes and sells clothes and plays a guitar-like instrument. The Trickster is his personal god. He also knows a Traveller's trick that mentally puts people to sleep.

Jan is thin and to most people a bit ugly, with elegant tattoos. His accent is halfway between Irish and colonial. Roisa was bound by contract to him on the Great Wheel – Jan was allowed other relationships, but had to return to her. He's a decent computer hacker and has excellent piloting skills. A snake tattoo runs down his chest.

• *The TARDIS:* Can't translate writing, since paper doesn't have a mind you can read. The TARDIS also has a zoo.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* A Time Lord Perigosto Stick game involves keeping a four-dimensional cube or sphere in motion – the loser lets it fall back into normal space. The Prydonians use spheres of pure platinum for this – the Doctor prefers rotten fruit. Castellan Lode, a female, was the greatest literary historian the Time Lords ever had. Time Lords are immune to the Hoothi infection.

• *Hoothi:* The Hoothi are fungoid creatures that live off decayed matter. They infect living beings with little, fuzzy, white filaments, that see through a victim's senses and transforms them into Hoothi fungoids by mental command. Death is instantaneous and unstoppable, but the infection isn't contagious. The filaments can also animate dead flesh. Hoothi fungoids can lose several limbs and organs in battle with no ill effects.

The Hoothi, a gestalt consciousness, have been active for millions of years and retain the memories of beings they've absorbed. Their cell structure almost transcends biology, similar to the symbiotic nuclei that lets Time Lords regenerate. They identify the Doctor as Time's Champion. The Doctor destroys the one sphere of the Hoothi – the Hoothi themselves suggest that more exist.

• *The Daleks:* The damn pepperpots are clumsy hackers, but their eyestalks fetch an nice bounty. Two blasts from a Dalek gun can destroy a Hoothi.

• *Silurians:* Earth Reptiles is the more politically correct name for "Silurians."

Alien Planets

• *Heaven*. On the edge of human space lies Heaven, a pastoral paradise with a 23-hour day. The indigenous population built a ten-story tall silver arch and the Terran Parchment Library, a site of forbidden texts. Bodies of indigenous Heavenites have never been recovered, since the Hoothi harvested them.

Organizations

• *The Travellers:* Originated from unhappy people and anarchists on Earth who, led by a man named Fox, stole a hyperspace flyer and went into space. They survived on anything they could beg or steal. Currently 30 members strong, the Travellers are mostly pagans who reject money but believe in barter, begging and stealing.

• *The Monks of Felsecar:* For a quarter of a million years, the Monks of Felsecar have preserved some of the universe's most dangerous objects. The Time Lords likely visited Felsecar before the rules of time were enforced.

• *Vacuum Church:* Tainted by Hoothi influences, this branch believed only death and suicide could relieve a life of pain. The Heavenite branch was destroyed by a meteor.

Stuff You Need

The Papers of Felsecar: A collection of random manuscripts, written in Draconian in felt tip. A future Doctor helped name the papers so the seventh Doctor could find them.

Ships

Hoothi Dirigibles: Moon-sized Hoothi dirigibles are .made from bone and skin, held together by the Hoothi's psychic will. They're immune to tracking systems. Noxious gases inflate the dirigibles, making them explosive and vulnerable.

Time Travel

The Doctor tells Ace the First Law of Time is a moral law as well as legal. He breaks it all the time.

History

• Millions of years ago, the Hoothi – their origins unknown – were the

master strategists of the galaxy. It's suspected they developed on a world where climactic changes wiped out all other life. The Hoothi kept entire populations as herd animals. Finally, they took sides in a war on Tranmetgura, a race the Time Lords has been negotiating with, and slaughtered two-thirds of Tranmetgura's population. The Hoothi's subsequent attack on Gallifrey failed. The Time Lords' counter attack devastated the Hoothi and they fled.

• The Travellers arrived on Arcturus before the Earth ambassadors.

• Heaven was settled after the Dragon Wars, once the humans and Draconians had united against the Daleks. Ishkavaar, the Great Peacemaker, Pride of a Thousand Eggs, proposed Heaven as a place for all races to bury their dead. However, the Hoothi had already harvested the indigenous population. After the devastating events in this book, the Draconians left Heaven, and Spacefleet advised Earth to do the same, blasting the planet from space. The name was also changed.

At the End of the Day

Every so often, a story causes a paradigm shift, cracking the "Doctor Who" mold wide open and birthing something both wonderful and strange. *Love and War* does it like no other, going beyond the groundbreaking *Timewyrm: Revelation* by giving us the most dramatic Doctor/companion split *ever*. It also lays a concrete foundation for the venerable Bernice Summerfield and seeds oodles of concepts such as the seventh Doctor's killing of his predecessor. Easily most ambitious novel at the time and for many months to come, it's another triumph for author Paul Cornell.

Transit

Author: Ben Aaronovitch. Virgin New Adventure #10. Release Date: December 1992.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Benny.

Travel Log

King's Cross Station, STS System, circa 2109.

Summary

In yet another cosmic coincidence, the Doctor and Benny arrive in the Solar Transit System (STS) – an interstitial subway network that links the planets of Earth's solar system. Unfortunately, they arrive during the first attempt to connect a Star Tunnel to another solar system – that of Arcturus. The botched attempt lets an intruder from another universe rip through the STS network.

While the intruder possesses Benny, the Doctor meets Lunarversity student Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart, a descendent of the Brigadier. Because Kadiatu has dreams about Gallifrey, the Doctor suspects she might be Earth's counter-response to his interference with history. The Doctor tries to return to the TARDIS, but Benny tries to kill him and the Time Lord pursues her to Mars. There, Kadiatu shoots "Benny" dead in a nest of dormant Ice Warriors, but the Doctor realizes he's been fooled – this Benny's a duplicate, created by the intruder.

The distraction allows the real Benny, who's still possessed, to hijack the Star Tunnel's controls and bring the remainder of the intruder's being into our Universe. At the same time, the Doctor realizes the intricate STS has over time evolved its own intelligence and the intruder affects it like a virus.

The intruder generates a horde of monsters to invade the tunnel system as the Doctor creates a relay that channels the TARDIS' artron energy through his own body. In this fashion, he blasts the creature back to its own universe. The Doctor chases the creature to its home dimension and engages it in a battle of mental wits. The contest ends with the Doctor separating the

intruder, Benny and the STS-intelligence. With the intruder defeated and banished to an unknown location, the STS-intelligence decides to stay in the invader's home dimension. The Doctor offers to take Kadiatu with him, but she declines. The genetically augmented Kadiatu, in fact, has completed her own time travel research and sets off into the universe to explore.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor tells himself that he will at some point time travel and retroactively put all manners of good things into his fridge. When he opens it and sees barren shelves, he realizes he will forget to do so.

In cyberspace, the Doctor's army of Aces tangles with an opposing force of defensive, fearsome Reds that become Daleks, yellow Cybermen and blue sinister clowns from the Minister for Primary Colors. The Aces heft their explosive silver deodorant cans and blow the enemy away, but get wiped out by system protocols.

Sex and Spirits

Kadiatu is descended from the Brigadier. The Doctor downs five bottles and gets drunk with Kadiatu celebrating the Universe's birthday. He used to like good vintage wine (his third life), then got a taste for beer (fourth), then gave it all up for cricket (fifth).

Ass-Whuppings

The ersatz Benny kills at least four people. Kadiatu shoots two false Bennys. In a flashback, Brigadier Yembe Lethbridge-Stewart terminates a room full of human fetus-based monsters in mechanical wombs.

Benny doesn't look when she leaves the TARDIS and falls down a deep shaft.

Continuity

The Doctor says he's been to all three Atlantises ("The Underwater Menace," "The Daemons," "The Time Monster"). The human race doesn't get time-travel until the botched zigma experiments in the 30th century ("The Talons of Weng-Chiang").

Kadiatu's great-grandmother of the same name wrote *The Zen Military – A History of UNIT* (2006) ("Remembrance of the Daleks" novelization). This novel begins the Lethbridge-Stewart mantra as Kadiatu says in her

dream: "My life, my life for the children." Kadiatu dreams of the Pythia. (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*)

Transit is the only "Who" novel to use the "f – " word – and a whopping nine times, at that. The Doctor's House first appeared *in Cat's Cradle: Warhead*. Kadiatu next appears in *Set Piece*. We first learn here that Mars has an atmosphere, a fact expanded on in *The Dying Days*.

The Pythia's curse of sterility caused shock waves in the space-time continuum as it eroded Gallifrey's procreative impulse. Kadiatu, theorized to be a universal counter-agent against the Doctor, could be one of the results (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* With effort, the Doctor can elevate his primary heart rate and his kidney action. He knows an 8th century dialect used by the Japanese royal family, has an excellent sense of spatial awareness and can cook pasta *a la Dottore*. His irises sometimes turn a solid black. He can detect fake Bennys by their eye color.

The Doctor keeps a weighted points system to tally how much hardware he destroys in any given adventure. Companions contribute half the scores.

He can generate a hex code by making a computer think he has 16 fingers. He can retrieve people's dreams by looking at them, and his acrobatic skill is far above normal. He can manipulate matter in the computer realm of cyberspace. He can also surfboard down the STS system.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Professor Summerfield calls for her dead mother when she's seriously hurt. She remembers the cologne her missing father kept in her grandmother's pewter bottle.

• *Brigadier Alistair Gordon Lethbridge-Stewart, Mariatu and Kadiatu:* In Rokoy village, Mariatu was the third daughter of Chief Yembe. At 16, she encountered a lost Lieutenant Alistair Gordon Lethbridge-Stewart and left with him, unable to fully acclimate to her native culture. At the time, Alistair lived in three rooms above a Lebanese trader on Wilberforce Street. Eight years later, Mariatu returned to the village with Alistair's green-eyed son, who in turn fathered a line of warriors.

• *Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart:* Brigadier Yembe Lethbridge-Stewart recovered Kadiatu when he raided Imogen's R & D center in Leipzig. The company was using the genetic code of the Ubersoldaten, crazy pro-humanity fighters on Mars, to create the perfect warrior. A three-month-old Kadiatu, violence and conditioning homespun into her DNA, recognized him

as an ancestor. He took her home to Makeni and raised her in a mud brick bungalow. She now attends Lunarversity.

The nature of Kadiatu's genetic augmentation is unknown, though she has increased intelligence and a quickened healing factor. She doesn't believe in pre destination. Her muscles resemble those of Time Lords from a bygone era.

• *Kadiatu and the Doctor:* Kadiatu heard stories about the Brigadier's adventures with the Doctor, who was called the "Shirl" (a term for medicine man). In the history archive under Stone Mountain, by the Cayley plains on Lunar, Kadiatu learned that every last story of the "Shirl" was true.

• *Brigadier Yembe Lethbridge-Stewart:* Kadiatu's adoptive father was a Commanding Officer of the United Nations Third Tactical Response Brigade and the Zen Brigade. He died three years ago and was buried with his wife in Mars' Achebe Gorge.

Alien Races

Martians: Martians often scratch virility symbols in walls to attract females, and sometimes have a dormant period.

Places to Go

• *Sol Transit System (STS):* Interplanetary transit system composed of trans-dimensional tunnels. The trick is to harmonize the gravimetric geometry at the other end. The sentient STS used a info-tainment construct called Yak Harris to converse with the Doctor. Sol's entire economy relied on the STS.

• *The Doctor's House (Adisham, Kent):* In 2109, the House's Victorian greenhouse has fallen in and the satellite dish is gone. The stables are mended, but the landscape rarely changes. Between the Doctor's visits, the House is inhabited (perhaps by future or past incarnations).

Ships

Fat Mama: STS repair ship used by Kadiatu's lover Blondie and his associates.

Time Travel

The Doctor doesn't know why Earth is a major space/time nexus.

History

• The Doctor celebrates the Universe's birthday, saying that it is 3,500,020,012 years old. He advises against a cake: "You'd never fit all the candles in."

• This is the first mention of the Earth/Mars war in 2086. Mistakenly called the Hundred Days War, it's later referred to as the Thousand Days War (*The Dying Days* and others).

At the End of the Day

Easily one of the most argued-about novels, *Transit* serves up an impish Doctor, playful scenes and the curious suggestion that Kadiatu's a sort of universal anti-body for everyone's favorite Time Lord. Parts of it seem damn clever – but only after back-breaking analysis. The problem is, *Transit*'s rapidly jumping focus, irrelevant side plots, thick narration and – dammit, Ben, you're better than this – downright confusion at times alienates waaaaay too many readers. Is a brilliant work in fact brilliant if it's accessible to only a few people? Alas, no. That leaves *Transit* at best a disappointment, and for too many readers, a tortuous experience.

The Highest Science

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin New Adventure #11. Release Date: February 1993.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Benny.

Travel Log

An unidentified spaceport, unknown time; Hogsumm, circa 2680; London, August, 1935.

Summary

The Doctor detects a Fortean flicker, a metaphysical phenomenon that randomly moves objects through time and space. Rather than leave such a hazard at large, he tracks it to the legendary Sakkrat, the missing world that produced the famed "Highest Science."

However, the Flicker has already transported to Sakkrat a) A group of innocent train-riders from Amersham, and b) A platoon of Chelonians, giant turtle-like creatures who believe humans are universal "parasites" that must be exterminated.

The Doctor tries to prevent the Chelonians from killing the humans, but gets captured by Sheldukher, the galaxy's most renowned criminal. Sheldukher and his crew have spent the last 100 years in cryo-suspension while the Cell, a super-intelligent device Sheldukher stole from Checkley's World, gathered enough data to plot a course to Sakkrat. In so doing, Sheldukher seeks "the Highest Science" for himself.

Chelonians wipe out Sheldukher's crew, even as Benny finds computer records that claim they are actually on the planet Hogsumm, not Sakkrat. The managers of Checkley's World, desperate to get the Cell back, made Hogsumm appear like Sakkrat to lure Sheldukher there and recover the Cell.

The Doctor finds two artificial Constructs from Checkley's World in a slow time-field. The Constructs attack to seize the Cell and capture Sheldukher, who refuses to surrender. He commits suicide, thereby triggering a Hercules devastator monitoring his lifesigns – a failsafe to stop people from attacking him.

The Constructs press onward and Benny, recognizing the Cell as a bio-engineered creature that lives in great pain and craves death, kills it. The Constructs are left without a reason to exist and crumble to dust, even as Sheldukher's devastator atomizes a 1,000-mile radius of the planet.

The Doctor then neutralizes the Fortean flicker, which was created by the faulty, slow time rift that preserved the Constructs. But he discovers too late that the Chelonians have released a biological weapon that will kill the humans. With no recourse, the Doctor freezes the humans and Chelonians in a stasis field. The Doctor and Benny depart, unable to release the field without killing the humans.

Memorable Moments

In a top comedy moment, Chelonian tanks fire at a fleeing Benny and miss. She yells, "Pathetic!" before running on.

The Cell tries to read the Doctor's mind and he confuses it by thinking of a cooking recipe ("Mix the eggs... into the flour... not too frothy now...") The Doctor escapes from the information-based Constructs by making them read a telephone book.

Sex and Spirits

Benny downs three glasses of kronka, a lively cocktail of cherry brandy, créme de bananas and pure M3 variant. She has to buy booze since there ain't much of it in the TARDIS.

Ass-Whuppings

Benny kills the Cell out of need and mercy. The Guardian's claw half-crushes her, then drops her 10 feet. Most horribly, she suffers from bubbleshake addiction.

Continuity

The Doctor uses his blue gemstone ring (the first Doctor era) to activate a teleport system.

The Chelonians next appear in *Zamper*. The Chelonians and humans that the Doctor here time-freezes are released by Romana in *Happy Endings*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Dawn is the Doctor's favorite time of day on any planet because it's so wonderfully optimistic. To a limited degree, he can mentally stimulate someone else's system and override the effects of bubbleshake. He claims he ran Taunton for two weeks in the 18th century and was utterly bored. He can create a molecular resonance device (a la "The Time Monster") that can detect Fortean flickers.

He can't easily distinguish types of alcohol, but enjoyed the cliched TV adventures of "Captain Millennium." The Doctor hopes the Chelonians won't cut off his legs because it will "take ages to grow a new pair" (probably referring to Gallifreyan Loom abilities). He has some gymnastic ability.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Archaeologist Benny remembers an expedition to the quagmire planet of Mordala, where a young biologist died, his brains blown out by the drug quarkdust. On another expedition, to Sensuron, she was nick-named "Snooty Cow." Benny learned some mechanical skill in school and knows some Aikido. To Benny, Heaven now seems like someone else's memory.

• *General Fakrid:* Chelonian honored for clearing more than 40 worlds of human "infestations" and for repeatedly giving birth on the battlefield. He was from the noble lineage of Nazmir, and was killed by Sheldukher's assistant Postine.

• *The Cell:* The Cell was a gene strain encoded as a pure, self-supporting intelligence. It developed an extra cranium or two, was telepathic, and was a master of gathering and processing information, rather like the computer Orac from "Blake's Seven." The Cell was officially labeled "Project FXX Q84." Because of the warped nature of its engineering, it was constantly in pain.

• *The TARDIS:* Force field prisms protect the TARDIS. The Ship sometimes dematerializes and wanders short distances when the Doctor isn't looking. It lacks booze, weapons and duvets.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Entering a stasis field is fatal even to Time Lords. They are surrounded by a "glittery nimbus," an aura that's visible in various time fields.

• *Chelonians:* Cybernetic. Giant. Turtles. No fooling. Your typical Chelonian is armed, armored, broody, hungry and bad-tempered. Chelonians are hermaphrodites and lay eggs. Brood cycles are stimulated with a dose of

fertizol. Without such medication, expectant Chelonians become crazed and enter a madness the Chelonians call "the Time of Blood." Electromagnetic interference caused by Fortean flickers may cause stillborns.

Red stripes indicate high command. Chelonians can release adrenal-amyl into their system, stimulating aggression. They're vulnerable to shell shock from vibrations. Chelonians frolic through the blackberry fields of Narazel. Chelonians are bound by tradition to not kill other Chelonians.

Strategy Z, a Chelonian offensive, turns warriors are into walking time bombs, loaded with heated mitrine. The Chelonian military sometimes uses Zarathion, a biological weapon, similar to slow-acting Napalm, to which Chelonians are immune.

Alien Planets

• *Checkley's World (a.k.a. "The Horror Planet"):* Settled in 2290, Checkley's World was founded by consortiums on Riftok, Masel and Arcturus. Earth was a major partner. It was designed as a scientific frontier base, but was released from state control in 2300. It created some of the most terrifying defense systems and weapons ever built. Checkley's World was finally destroyed in a misguided missile attack by unknown parties.

• *Hogsumm:* An old planet orbiting a fairly average star. It lies in the region beyond Lasty's Nebula, what the Doctor calls a "dreadful, boring place."

Stuff You Need

• *Bubbleshake*, an oral appetite suppressant containing Fabi weed extract, was designed by the unscrupulous Joseph-Robinson Corporation. Unfortunately, the addictive bubbleshake caused many side effects, including brain disintegration. Joseph-Robinson became rich. A massive course of decontaminants can restabilize anyone affected by bubbleshake or A, another addictive drug.

• *The Highest Science:* Allegedly developed on the "lost planet" of Sakkrat, the famed "Highest Science" is mentioned in mythology of Mars, Draconia, Mulkos and the Eternals, but is never defined.

Organizations

The Respect For Life Brigade, a Chelonian organization, believes the human "parasites" might have intelligence.

Time Travel

Slow time compression, theorized in 2386, creates a field that dramatically slows the passage of time for any objects inside, even if millions of years pass outside. A malfunctioning slow-time rift, particularly one with a faulty kronos element, may cause a Fortean flicker. Affixing a good kronos element to a dimensional rectifier solves the problem.

Phenomena

Fortean Flickers: Metaphysical phenomenons associated with random events, such as if you punch the wrong code into a communicator and connect with a friend you haven't seen in years. Flickers can transport objects and people through time and space. In the worst cases, they break the chain of causality and damage the Web of Time.

History

• Chelonian biologists learned humans kill one another and concluded that Nature had realized her error in creating humans and bred them for self-destruction. The Chelonians went to war against the human colonies, viewing reclamation of feeding lands as an evolutionary imperative. They slaughtered entire populations.

• The planet Vaagon was invaded by Chelonians, then saved when a Fortean flicker whisked the invaders away. The Shrine of Holy Deliverance subsequently became a tourist trap. Several generations later, the Chelonians re-invaded and the Vaagonians expected another miracle. They were wiped out.

• The Chelonians' crusade against other species finally demoralized them and caused in-fighting. They gave up pursuits of genocide and become productive members of interplanetary society, becoming renowned as great yet modest florists.

• Rosheen and Klift became infamous criminals when they lifted a sum so enormous and untraceable, millions of beings starved when the central markets collapsed. Entire worlds were ruined. Sheldukher blackmailed them into helping him find Sakkrat. On Hogsumm, Klift was crushed to death by falling rubble, Rosheen was killed by Chelonian firepower.

• Gustaf Urnst was considered one of the great writers of the 25th century, penning *The Collected Works of Gustaf Heinrich Urnst*, a book of total lies and fabrications about alien civilizations. He eventually became a laughing

stock. A Fortean flicker transported him to Earth, 1935.

At the End of the Day

A brilliant book of different hats, filled with high comedy, then returning to the dramatic. What Monty Python did for social commentary, Roberts does for the "Who," slyly scathing the boring people of the universe. *The Highest Science* not only spawns the Chelonians, one of the most important alien races in the novel line, but deals with some of the line's most unique secondary characters, from the frigid, world-wrecking Rosheen and Klift to Sheldukher, a ruthless SOB you want dead. One of the best stand-alone novels, and a hint of good things to come from Roberts.

The Pit

Author: Neil Penswick. Virgin New Adventure #12. Release Date: March 1993.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Benny.

Travel Log

Unnamed planet, Althosian planetary system, 2400. The Doctor and Blake travel via wormholes to London, 1888; and Stonehenge, circa 1997.

Summary

Benny wishes to learn how the Seven Planets were mysteriously destroyed in 2400, so the TARDIS arrives on an unnamed, forbidden planet in the Althosian system. But once there, the Doctor vanishes through a dimensional portal to a wasteland where he meets the poet William Blake, who has also fallen through a random portal. Meanwhile, Benny makes the acquaintance of an android named Spike, who's sent to recover the devastating nuclear weapon called Pandora's Box – a device stolen from Nicaea by Butler and Swarf, two shapechangers.

Using a series of dimensional gates, the Doctor and Blake find themselves in Jack the Ripper's London, then at a dig being investigated by UNIT. Stealing an alien corpse he believes to be extremely dangerous, the Doctor returns with Blake to the wasteland dimension and speaks of a mythological, extra-dimensional race named the Yssgaroth, who menaced ancient Gallifrey. Learning of a new Yssgaroth plot to invade the universe, the Doctor and Blake are rescued by Kopyion Liall a Mahajetsu, an Gallifreyan military leader who has guarded against the Yssgaroth's return for centuries. Kopyion says it was Rassilon's initial time-travel experiments that opened gateways to the Yssgaroth dimension, causing billions to die in our Universe. This is Rassilon's greatest shame and secret – an Kopyion is perhaps the only being alive to know the truth. The gateways the Doctor has been using are tears in the fabric of space-time that could herald a Yssgaroth invasion.

Spike, gravely injured by the shapeshifter Swarf, manages to wipe out

most of the Yssgaroth's servants on the unnamed planet, and Kopyion uses the opportunity to butcher the Yssgaroth ringleader. Unfortunately, Kopyion fears that by rescuing the Doctor and Blake, he has shown the Yssgaroth that he is compassionate, and may allow emotions to restrain himself if they invade our Universe. Solely to prove that he is willing to stop the Yssgaroth *no matter the cost*, Kopyion detonates Pandora's Box, obliterating the solar system and killing millions, yet annihilating the gateways grounded there. Benny, reunited with the resigned and saddened Doctor, struggles to understand his argument that history must be fulfilled and he is powerless to act. As Kopyion departs to continue his watchgod mission, the Doctor and Benny return Blake to his own time.

Memorable Moments

Bernice recognizes in herself a coldness that is in the Doctor, a man constantly seeking truth and justice and whom is often denied it. Most memorable of all, the Doctor kneels before Liall a Mahajetsu. It's an astonishing admission of respect from the Doctor, who bows to nobody.

Ass-Whuppings

Kopyion destroys the Seven Planets and wipes out millions.

Continuity

The Doctor was tied up in a bucket of water when Houdini taught him escape tricks ("Planet of the Spiders"). The Gallifreyan Symbol is an ancient sign for warding off evil ("The Deadly Assassin" and more). The Doctor hasn't had a jelly baby for ages (the Tom Baker era). There are at least three other hatstands in the TARDIS ("Frontios").

The Doctor whistles the theme to the TV show when he's lost in thought or to distract Benny during chess. The sound is a rough approximation of the TARDIS travelling through the Time Vortex.

Matrix gives a more detailed explanation of Jack the Ripper, here seen as a member of a Satanic fellowship.

Liall a Mahajetsu claims Omega's experiment ("The Three Doctors") was sabotaged to silence his knowledge of Rassilon's tragic mistake (*see History*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor now claims to be more than 1,000 years old (which is like untrue, given he turns 1,000 in *Set Piece*). He has made another sonic screwdriver. He is frightened by an overall lack of hope. The most holy person the Doctor ever met was a French Jesuit paleontologist in Africa, 1956. The Doctor says he left Gallifrey because he was bored and because of "something" that happened.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny is now 31. Her father used to read her Hans Christian Anderson books and fairy stories that scared her. He also took her fishing. Benny was given religious indoctrination, but hasn't prayed since she was a child. She isn't sure about life after death, but believes either way, we'd better make the most of our Earthbound experiences. Benny used to be frightened of thunderstorms. She's been caught talking to herself.

• *William Blake:* The legendary poet, age 54, fell through a portal while visiting Cambridge in 1811 and was lost for five days in another dimension until the Doctor showed up. He believes a small part of him will continue after death, though he doesn't seem to believe in God. Susan, the Doctor's granddaughter, loved Blake's work.

• *Kopyion Liall a Mahajetsu:* A Gallifreyan military leader in the war against the Yssgaroth. Kopyion's forces won, although all of his men died.

Kopyion, now incredibly old, has white hair, a small beard and a ponytail. He carries many battle scars: He has one arm, gold teeth and a large facial wound. He spent centuries watching for the Yssgaroth, and must have suspected their presence near Nicaea. He was one of the first settlers there and helped create the planet using Gallifreyan technology. He also created the Justice Police. He owned Mirage Enterprises, a company that builds androids. Because of Rassilon's secret (*see History*), he has no great love for the Time Lords. On Nicaea, he worked to eliminate the unpredictable, Satanic "Followers."

• *The Doctor and Kopyion:* Kopyion threatens to kill the Doctor if he interferes with his work. One suspects Kopyion is one of the few who stand a chance of succeeding.

• *The TARDIS:* Has no information on the destruction of the Seven Planets. The Planet's defenses can stop the TARDIS in mid-flight.

Alien Races

• *Yssgaroth:* The Yssgaroth, creatures of another dimension with different physical laws from our own, seem to be beings of infinite shape. Yssgaroth

skeletons aren't necessarily dead.

Yssgaroth can wage telepathic attacks. Their bones have been found on Earth. Kopyion predicts they'll be back, after this story, to wage full-scale war.

• *"Hunters":* Pack riders about whom little is known, although they're probably native to the Althosian system. Hunters are painted a dirty blue color and ride half naked. As a species, they're not very uniform, as some are missing limbs and others have had their faces rearranged. The Hunters speak Ancient Gallifreyan.

They can survive in space and raid outer colony worlds, hunting the inhabitants for food. Their presence prevents the Althosian system from becoming prime colony material.

• *"Hunter" Mounts.* Winged, demon-like creatures with bat-like wings, brown reptilian hides, savage teeth and skeletal bodies.

• *Khthons:* The original inhabitants of the Althosian system, native to the planet Trieste. Regardless of their age, they all look like old men. Human colonists enslaved the Khthons.

• *Shapeshifters:* A generically named species immune to Khthon telepathy. They're capable of near-infinite form and increasing mass. They prefer to be dwarves in their natural state, probably because it's easier to maintain.

Alien Planets

• *Gallifrey:* The word "Gallifrey" literally translates to "they that walk in shadows." To find the planet, go to the center of the Universe and veer left.

• *Althosian System:* Twin suns cause darkness to fall every seven days. The Archon ruled this system and the asteroids that lay in-between the Seven Planets.

• *Nicaea:* A bare world, with few towns, vegetation or greenery. The Academy, a body of philosophers, priests and military personnel, ruled Nicaea.

• *The Unnamed Planet:* Interplanetary law forbids sentient life from having contact with this nitrogen-rich world. The water is dilute acid. Kopyion lost his arm there.

Stuff You Need

• *Pandora's Box:* The most devastating nuclear weapon ever built in the

Althosian system, it's a doomsday device designed to stop Nicaea from being overrun by its motherworld.

• *Red Weed:* Poisonous plant that kills even shapeshifters. It's a result of contamination from the portal to the Yssgaroth universe.

• *Dream B:* An addictive, hallucinogenic drug that devastated many world. The Followers used the drug in rituals in Victorian London.

• *Dragonslayer:* A killing machine, shaped like a wasp, and the most technologically advanced device built by shapechangers' civilization. It could pacify any class 3 type planet.

Organizations

The Nicaean Federation: As the Federation annexed the other planets of the Althosian system too quickly, it became economically and morally bankrupt. The system was pushed to the brink of civil war.

History

• Before Rassilon's experiments with Omega, he discovered the secret of time travel and exploded a powerful device inside a black hole to use as a power source. But this experiment pierced the fabric of space-time and created holes throughout the cosmos – holes that led to another universe. From them, the Yssgaroth came. Star systems were destroyed and billions were killed in a Gallifrey-Yssgaroth war that lasted for a thousand years. The Gallifreyans finally won. A subsequent plague devastated Gallifrey and killed everyone who knew of Rassilon's mistake and the Dark Time.

• This adventure cannot help but have influenced Blake's allusions to devils and other fiends.

• In the early 25th century, Earth colony worlds fought for independence from Earth corporations but returned to the fold when the Dalek threat returned. Nicaea and its entire solar system were found destroyed during this period.

At the End of the Day

Considered by many to be the worst "Who" novel, *The Pit* ironically incorporates many themes used by later, more popular novels, such as the ethics of world destruction and the detailed suggestion that Rassilon unleashed more horrors on the Universe than he stopped. One suspects *The Pit* suffered as an early prototype. That said, it does have problems with

shallow characterization, digressions and the Yssgaroth, rather generic monsters whom we never see in action. Yes, *The Pit* needs a *lot* of help, but one suspects it has some good ideas and has become trendy to bash – rather like "Spock's Brain" from the classic "Star Trek."

Deceit

Author: Peter Darvill-Evans. Virgin New Adventure #13. Release Date: April 1993.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Town of Beaufort, province of Verdany, planet Arcadia, local calendar 379, Earth year circa 2573.

Summary

It's been three years since Ace left the TARDIS, and she's now trained as a Special Weapons soldier by Spacefleet. Hoping to kill Daleks on Arcadia, a colony world that Earth has lost contact with, Ace sneaks onboard the *Admiral Raistrick*. There, she finds a cryogenically frozen Dalek Killer named Abslom Daak – a man history says died destroying a Dalek Death Wheel.

Ace wishes to see the Doctor for the first time in months, and his tesseract physically links her room to the TARDIS. She finds the Doctor an amnesiac, attacked by a leftover alien virus from Tír na n-Ôg (*Witch Mark*), even as Benny, for her own safety, holes up in her room. Ace's presence restores his memories, allowing him to purge the virus from himself and the TARDIS. Curious about Ace's report, the Doctor agrees to meet her on Arcadia.

A giant Medusa head suddenly appears in space, crushing *the Admiral Raistrick* in its eel-like hair. Only Ace, a thawed-out Daak and two other crewmen survive in escape pods. Meanwhile, located on Arcadia is Pool, a gestalt entity composed of hundreds of donor brains that can alter matter with Block Transfer Computation, creating objects such as the giant Medusa creature. Centuries of sensory deprivation have driven Pool insane, and it plans to create a universe where it will exist only as pure thought.

Ace's party lands on Arcadia battles Pool's androids and Block Transfer-generated threats, fighting for every inch of ground. In trying to free herself from a force field, Ace's flechette accidentally kills Daak. As the telepathic

Pool taps Benny's memories, it learns how to worm into the TARDIS' vast data banks. But one memory, planted earlier in Benny's mind by the Doctor, lures Pool into a trap in the TARDIS' Zero Room. The Doctor bottles Pool in the room, then ejects it into the Time Vortex.

The Doctor prepares to depart, understanding that most of the colonists were used as genetic material for Pool and the survivors can be left to their own devices. Ace realizes the Doctor knew but didn't tell her that Abslom Daak was a clone, created by Spacefleet as a superweapon. Much to Benny's chagrin and the Doctor's concern about Ace's violent tendencies, she rejoins the TARDIS to keep the Doctor honest.

Memorable Moments

In a moment of nice horror, Ace, Daak and the *Admiral Raistrick* crew find an asteroid field sculpted by Pool like rows of tortured faces.

Sex and Spirits

Ace propositions Second Tracker Reynald Yesti in her first scene and bangs him. She offers a "little bit" of herself to a Spacefleet doctor, but he'd rather analyze her blood. As the *Admiral Raistrick* pitches, Daak's hand ends up between Ace's thighs. He also asks for a kiss. Ace later thinks of shagging him. To stop Daak from sacrificing himself, Ace says she loves him.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace accidentally blows a clone Daak's head off. The *Admiral Raistrick* is lost, with almost all hands.

The Doctor endures infection from Tír na n-Ôg protoplasm through his link with the TARDIS.

Continuity

International Mining Corporation (IMC) first appeared in "Colony In Space." The TARDIS has a new Zero Room, though it's jettisoned to imprison Pool ("Castrovalva").

The Doctor leveled the Butler Institute in *Cat's Cradle: Warhead* (*see History*). After that story, he looked ahead four centuries and less than 1,000 light years from Earth and couldn't detect any major time disruptions, though he hardly used an exact science.

The protoplasm the Doctor used to repair the TARDIS at Tír na n-Óg (*Cat's Cradle: Witch Mark*) had an impurity-perhaps from one of Goibhnie's experiments. The protoplasm infected the TARDIS and the Doctor's mind. He couldn't consciously move against it, so he deliberately set Ace against him and deliberately drove her from the TARDIS. He gave her a tesseract so at the right time, she could rejoin him, restore his memories and help him purge the protoplasm (*Love and War*).

The destruction of the Seven Planets haunts Benny (*The Pit*). She keeps some Heavenite porcelain (*Love and War*) and script discs from Sakkrat (*The Highest Science*).

This is the first mention of the Doctor's healing virus. *Blood Harvest* suggests it could be Gallifreyan in nature. In many later novels such as *SLEEPY*, the "virus" is referred to as healing nanites.

Abslom Daak died destroying the Dalek Death Wheel in "Nemesis of the Daleks" (*Doctor Who Magazine* #155).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Infinite-regression mathematics was never the Doctor's strong subject.

• *Ace:* Ace is on secondment from IMC. She was Spacefleet trained, especially in the Special Weapons division, and was attached to the First Infantry.

Ace is armed with a voice-activated dart gun strapped to her forearm. Her heat seeking darts can penetrate steel carbide armor. She also has a ready supply of hand-delivery bombs and grenades that are heat-seeking and programmable. She also carries an electrified baseball bat.

Ace is much more mature now and controls her body language better. Spacefleet taught her how to hack into a cryo capsule's systems. During her first TARDIS tenure, she learned some history, including Daak's death, from the Ship's data banks. She keeps nick-nacks from dozens of world.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny has a fondness for Europe in the Middle Ages. Multiple transmats make her nauseous. She has a collection of beer glasses.

• *The Doctor and Benny:* Benny has never beaten the Doctor at three-dimensional chess.

• *The Doctor, Benny and Ace:* For the first time in many months, Ace misses the Doctor. She's been gone from the TARDIS for about three years.

Benny's first reaction to being reunited with Ace is bewilderment, then resentment at Ace's hostile nature. Benny takes the Doctor's side against Ace.

• *Pool:* A gestalt entity, initially formed of six individuals, but ultimately incorporating hundreds of minds, even if only a few dozen were dominant. Literally, Pool was a collective hive of human neurons, i.e., a mass of brain tissue taken from the Arcadian colonists. Already split by multiple personalities, Pool went insane from its isolation.

Pool operated from a satellite above Arcadia. With its vast knowledge, Pool could also make accurate predictions about the future.

• *The Doctor and Pool:* The Doctor can shield his mind from Pool. Imprisoned in the Time Vortex, Pool hates the Time Lord.

• *Abslom Daak:* Spacefleet used at least one Daak clone. There may be more.

• *The TARDIS:* The Ship's Tertiary Console is jettisoned to remove the protoplasm infection. The TARDIS can, somewhat unreliably, predict the future based on estimates (*see Phenomena*). Benny's room door opens automatically when approached. She's convinced the TARDIS corridors keep changing. The TARDIS purifies itself of the Tír na n-Ôg virus, one room at a time. The Ship is too big and complex for Pool to analyze. It has a fleapit cinema.

Alien Races

Arcadians: Spinward Corporation genetically manipulated the Arcadians for use in Pool. Their life expectancy dropped to about 30 years. Without long life and literacy, little knowledge was transferred from generation to generation.

Alien Planets

Arcadia (a.k.a. The Paradise Planet): Arcadia had a lack of machinery, computers, cities and crowding. Oncoming starships were kept away by false plague threats. The Gallifreyan Matrix registers the planet.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Healing Virus:* Ace (and probably the Doctor's other companions) is infected with a virus that pervades every cell. It's benign and boosts her immune system to the point that she doesn't get sick.

• *The Doctor's Tesseract:* An innocent looking cube that, when activated, falls open. Each face then opens into a cube, which becomes another cube. The Tesseract expands in all directions, surrounding the room it's in and linking it to the TARDIS' Zero Room.

• *"My Dalek Lover is a Sex Machine":* A hummable tune.

Organizations

• *Dalek Killers:* Dalek Killers were traditionally criminals sentenced to exile on Dalek-controlled planets. They would transmat in and live for a few hours gutting Daleks. They became almost mythical. Abslom Daak is their most famous member.

• *The Humble Council:* Group that hordes Arcadia's wisdom. The telepathic Councilors, located at their retreat of Landfall, are roughly human, but have animalistic characteristics.

• *Spacefleet:* A wanna-be Starfleet (a la "Star Trek"), that seems to fight Daleks, but we're never told much about them.

Ships

The Admiral Raistrick, a Spacefleet battleship, is equipped with hologram projectors that made its battle drones look like duplicate *Raistrick*s.

Time Travel

The Doctor can't unmake Spinward Corporation's development, but he can leave himself helpful notes and alter some of the details.

Phenomena

The Universe acts like an NP-Complete puzzle – a conundrum with so many solutions, the number of possible routes to the answers increases exponentially. Think of the Universe in those terms. Although much of the past is fixed, you'd need a computer many times the size of the Universe to predict the future, and there are, in fact, certain predictions that can't be made.

History

In 2007, the Doctor's devastation of the Butler Institute (*Cat's Cradle:*

Warhead) prompted its merger with Eurogen Company, an expert on artificial intelligence. The resulting Spinward Corporation commissioned its first warpship in 2112, and cultivated technology that outclassed Spacefleet. Spinward Corporation settled Arcadia circa 2273. After *Deceit*, Spinward was left directionless.

At the End of the Day

Hardly worth reading, but for the debut of the adult Ace. Even then, her character is pretty choppy (Ace hates the Doctor's manipulation, but thinks sacrificing millions to stop Pool is a good idea?). The secondary cast ranges from the one-trick pony Abslom Daak ("I'm gonna kill every stinking Dalek…") to Arcadia natives Francis and Elaine, whom you forget are on stage for pages at a time. You get all this, about 100 pages of filler and the preposterous idea that the Doctor deliberately drove Ace out of the TARDIS in *Love and War* – an insult to that book's drama.

Lucifer Rising

Author: Andy Lane and Jim Mortimore. Virgin New Adventure #14. Release Date: May 1993.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

TARDIS Travel Log

Lucifer system, the moon of Belial, circa 2157.

Summary

At Ace's request, the TARDIS arrives in the Lucifer system, where a scientific expedition to harness energy from the planet's heavy metals has been shattered by the murder of expedition member Paula Engado. The curious Doctor begins investigating, and finds an ancient alien technology system connects Lucifer's two moons, Moloch and Belial, and the transporting bridge between them. However, an expedition member named Alex Bannen experiments with the Belial control system, which is unfortunately controlled by the emotional state of its operator. Bannen, upset by the death of his wife and son during a food riot on Earth, unbalances the system and destroys the bridge, killing many crewmen.

Meanwhile, Intergalactic Mining Corporation troops, intent on seizing the planet's minerals, massacre several expedition members on Moloch. Led by an alien called Legion, IMC troops seize control as Ace reveals she's actually working for IMC in the 26th century, instructed by IMC during her time in Spacefleet to use the Doctor – if possible – to investigate the future force barrier around Lucifer

Ace now turns against the Doctor's abusive ways and becomes an IMC sergeant. IMC begins to rape Lucifer while a confused Bannen further examines the alien device – constructed to use Lucifer, Moloch and Belial in tandem to alter morphic fields, unique signatures that maintain each species' biology. Bannen hopes to turn into a being that can save Earth from its energy depletion, but IMC, in burning the Belial forests, disrupts the control mechanism. Across the Universe, beings start transforming into various forms.

Ace finally turns against the oppressive IMC, but Legion seizes the moment to kill the Adjudicator Bishop, summoned to Lucifer to investigate Paula's death. Convinced that he has stained his soul by manipulating others and not taking an active hand, the Doctor finally shoots and kills Legion. Since only a truly emotional stable being can control the device, the machine helps the Doctor, Ace and Benny merge into a single being and they bring it under control. Bannen voluntarily transforms into a new forest on Belial, serving as a new control mechanism.

The Doctor realizes that expedition member Piper, duped into serving as a spy for IMC, infected the Lucifer base with a computer system for observation purposes, but it inadvertently disrupted Paula's equipment and killed her. As Piper returns to Earth, the Doctor sends with her a virus to spread – a virus that will protect resistance fighters during the Dalek Invasion of Earth. The TARDIS crew then departs as the sentient "Angels" of Lucifer, seeking to prevent future interference in their system, seal it off with a force field.

Memorable Moments

Annoyed that the Doctor won't tell her what's going on, Benny yanks him down and sits on his chest. Lucifer crewman Yukio explodes from decompression, unable to close his helmet over his W.G. Grace-style beard. Ace makes Benny shut up by pointing a gun at her head.

Sex and Spirits

Ace dreams of being naked while stabbing someone. (Be very, very concerned.) She regrets a party where she didn't grabs a guy named Dave and snog his brains out. Benny once made love to someone called Tim in vaulted egg chambers. Ace used to intimidate barmen who knew she was underage.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace shoots Adjudicator Bronwen ap Bryn, who was about to shoot Bishop. Legion teleports and bursts through Bishop's body. The Doctor shoots Legion.

Continuity

The seventh Doctor, knowing the Daleks will shortly bombard Earth with

a plague, has Piper go there and spread a healing virus that will confer protection on the freedom fighters who aided his first self ("The Dalek Invasion of Earth").

In the Rill political system, the uglier you are, the more power you're given ("Galaxy Four"). Delphonites consider the surgical removal of limbs to be sexually alluring ("Spearhead from Space"). The Adjudicators and Intergalactic Mining Corporation debuted in "Colony in Space."

Benny says that "Klokeda partha mennin klatch" ("The Curse of Peladon"), the Doctor's frequently sung Venusian lullaby, is one of the bawdiest rhymes in the Universe. "Ablark, araan, aroon" refers to the number of limbs the Venusians had.

The starship *Hydrax*, commissioned by InterSpace Incorporated, left Earth with a crew of 243 ("State of Decay"). Piper's husband was aboard. The respectful titles "Krau" and "Trau" are in use ("The Caves of Androzani"). An offshoot group of Adjudicators became the assassin guild named The Grand Knights of Oberon. On behalf of the late Orcini, the Doctor looked for the Grand Order, but never found it ("Revelation of the Daleks").

If you combine them, hymetusite ("Underworld") and zyton seven ("Vengeance on Varos") power cold fusion generators. IMC tripled the price of zyton seven.

This is the first appearance of the modernized Adjudicators that play a role in *Original Sin*, *Cold Fusion*, *Burning Heart* and many other books.

Benny was in the Vartaq Veil just before leaving for Heaven (*Love and War*). Ace wonders if she truly loved Jan or was just blinded by youth. Partly, she went with Jan out of rebellion against the Doctor (also *Love and War*).

A whole pack of Legions appears in *The Crystal Bucephalus*. Mark Bannen, the son of Lucifer engineer Alex Bannen, appears here as a hologram and in the flesh in *Parasite*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor incorrectly claims to be 943 (he's 953 in "Time and the Rani").

The Doctor's favorite key is E flat minor. Strawberry and oxtail drinks are his favorite drinks, but he likes Arcturan, Lapsang Souchong or Earl Grey tea. The Doctor can repair a MultiCray neural net. He collects pins. He can temporarily paralyze someone by holding his or her wrist. He can

sing Abba songs and a few bars of "The Chatanooga Choo-Choo." He can stand on his head, juggle with his feet and hum "The Star-Spangled Banner." He has enough knowledge of higher dimensions to retrieve his juggling ball from Legion, who'd hidden the sphere in another dimension. He can speak Tewa, a language dead on Earth for more than two centuries. His mentor, the Hermit, said the Doctor would forget a conversation of theirs until he meets others the Hermit has spoken with.

The Doctor kills Legion because he feels that in manipulating others to fight for him – rather than fighting himself – he's been careful not to stain his hands, but has stained his soul.

• *Ace:* Ace's father died from a stroke. She now regards the 25th century as "her time." She once immobilized a Special Weapons Dalek that begged her to kill it. The monster had just vaporized a Red Crescent Ship full of children, but she felt pity.

Ace did intelligence work for IMC during the Dalek wars, and served on the IMC-funded ship *Corporate Strategy*. IMC, curious why the Lucifer system was cut off by a force field, asked her to use the Doctor to investigate it.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny now wears dreadlocks. She carries a hip flask. She learns about the TARDIS translation abilities. She made her reputation excavating Ice Warrior citadels on Mars.

Benny once looked for her father on a ruined Dyson sphere in the Vartaq Veil. An alien Vart there tells Benny her father said he loved her just before he went away. Only Benny, not other people, suggested that her father was a coward, but she was only giving voice to fears and insecurities about herself.

The Vart also says Dalek cannons killed Benny's mother not because she was going back for Benny's doll but because she was stunned from a plasma cannon blast.

Benny was friends with the late Paula Engado, a member of the research team on Lucifer, although when this friendship could have been formed is unclear.

• *Benny and the Doctor:* Benny thinks the Doctor is the most trustworthy person she's ever met and is somewhat jealous of his long-standing connection with Ace. She suspects the Doctor hypnotizes people into accepting them when they land, but this is more a function of the Doctor's charisma.

• *Bishop:* An Adjudicator graced with a spotless record and the record

for the most deaths incurred in the course of duty. He investigated events on Lucifer, but was killed by Legion.

• *Piper O'Rourke:* A member of the Lucifer scientific expedition and a spy for IMC. Piper infected her base's systems with a software virus for espionage purposes. This accidentally sabotaged the base's environmental suits and killed crewman Paula Engado. Her husband died aboard the *Hydrax* ("State of Decay").

• *The TARDIS:* The concerned TARDIS can notify the Doctor of his companions' movements.

Alien Races

• *Legions:* Whereas linear races have to live in four dimensions, Legions can move through seven. They appear as translucent, multi-tendriled pear shapes: a three-dimensional cross-section of a seven-dimensional being. They can teleport by leaving this dimension, traveling though another one, then reappearing. They don't need to breathe. Their blood is pink.

• *Lucifer's Angels:* Race of beings on Lucifer who may have constructed the morphic field device in the Lucifer system, then used it to transform themselves. The heavy elements deep in Lucifer are the remains of the Angels. They can rewrite space and time, but worship singularities – outside of their power – as places where their god lives.

Alien Planets

• *The Lucifer System*: Many of the stellar bodies in the Lucifer system composed a giant device, built by an unknown race, that could change morphic fields. Lucifer's moon of Moloch held the actual mechanism, while "The Mushroom Farm," an alien forest on the moon of Belial – likely a transformed Angel – served as the control point. The Bridge between the moons served as a power source. As a safety feature, the Device was controlled by emotions, ensuring that only an emotionally stable being could use it.

After *Lucifer Rising*, an impenetrable force field, perhaps generated by the Angels, sprang up around the Lucifer system.

• *Lucifer:* A hot, hellish gaseous ball of energy. Deep within Lucifer's atmosphere, the heat and pressure are so great, hydrogen is a metallic liquid. You can't tell where the atmosphere ends and the planet begins. Lucifer has an ocean of liquid zelanite alloy as big as a normal planet.

• *Moloch and Belial:* Twin moons of Lucifer, held in geosynchronous orbit by the Bridge. IMC troopers burned down the forests on Moloch to facilitate exploration.

• *Epsilon Eridani:* Homeworld of the Legions.

• *Ponten VI:* Was ceded to the Guild of Adjudicators by a cautious but grateful Earth Central.

Places to Go

• *Vartaq Veil:* A Dyson sphere, constructed around a white dwarf, was destroyed here by stress and gravitational asymmetries, destroying the builders' civilization.

• *Axorc Sector:* It is considered the height of good manners there to literally serve yourself up for dinner on special occasions.

• *The Bridge:* A monofilament, woven in a tubular shape, that connects the Lucifer moons of Moloch and Belial. It has a "Moebius discontinuity," likely grounded in the fourth dimension, around its center of gravity. The Bridge collected the power and magnetic potential from particles thrown out from the Lucifer system's red giant star. Before its destruction, it was also a physical transport system between the moons.

Stuff You Need

The Doctor's Spray Cans: Each has a special, homemade paint with universally compatible software encoded on magnetically aligned molecules of paint. If you spray the paint on an object, the software therein hacks any hardware that isn't hermetically sealed. The paint is color coded for easy reference.

Organizations

• *Intergalactic Mining Corporation:* Markets an osmotic field to hold the vacuum of outer space at bay, and a dwarf star alloy derivative.

• *Guild of Adjudicators (a.k.a. "Ravens" in the 25th century):* As Earth went through its Empire and Federation stages and local justice became more important, the role of the Guild of Adjudicators diminished. IMC ruled the Guild to be an illegal organization. The late Bronwen ap Bryn held the post of Adjudicator in Extremis.

• *Project Eden:* Official name of Earth's scientific investigation of the Lucifer System, headed by Miles Engado.

Time Travel

The space-time continuum has 11 dimensions, four of which are inaccessible.

Phenomena

Morphic Fields: Fields that surround living beings and define their entire biology, just as an electric field defines an electron. In other words, each species has a unique morphic field, passed down by heredity. Morphic fields don't follow rules of time and space and may change across the universe. An Earth scientist named Sheldrake first proposed the concept in the 20th century.

History

• Gallifreyans evolved as the first humanoids in the Universe and created the morphic field for such a form.

• The Lucifer System was turned into a morphic field device by an unknown race anywhere from 500 million to one billion years ago.

• Mars invaded Earth circa 2090.

• The Adjudicator named Bishop killed the entire population of Frinelli Minor for being "energy-wasters and dysfunctionals."

• America's economy collapsed in 2146. Ten million people were without food and there was much rioting. The Earth government declared bankruptcy, with the Earth Alliance of Corporations serving as receiver.

• Islam now dominates Earth Central. It's suggested that North America has united. Hypnocourses are available on basic medicine and anatomy.

• The approaching Dalek fleet has devastated 15 colony worlds, including Azure, Qartopholos and Sifranos. It was only sighted near Epsilon Eridani, the Legion homeworld.

At the End of the Day

A passionate hit among some fans, and praised (rightly so) for being a blood-pumping, brink-of-disaster feast with conflicted loyalties among the TARDIS crew. There are many defining character moments, including a grown-up Ace using the Doctor rather than vice versa. That said, *Lucifer Rising* acts like a six-parter from the TV series: It's very padded and schizophrenic, suffering from a different enemy in the first half than the

second. You'll need to pay more attention than usual and deal with a number of plot holes, and yet still might drop off in the middle for a lack of focus. Still, it should be commended for ambition and for seeding into "Who" the Adjudicators, the relentless justice agents who gave rise to companions Roz and Chris.

White Darkness

Author: David A. McIntee. Virgin New Adventure #15. Release Date: May 1993.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Outside Port-au-Prince and Mait Lemaitre's villa, Haiti, 1915.

Summary

The TARDIS arrives in Haiti, 1915, at the dawn of General Bobo's civil rebellion against President Sam. Haitian soldiers immediately confiscate the TARDIS key and take the travelers before the iron-fisted General Etienne. The Doctor, curious about the high amount of telepathic pollution in the area, produces a document identifying him as an agent of the British government and Etienne allows him some freedom.

Dr. Howard Phillips, an American surgeon, warns the Doctor of a new and deadly breed of *zombis*. Such creatures are typically near-comatose slaves sapped of their will by tetrodotoxin, but this new and mysterious *zombi* variety can survive mortal wounds. The Doctor finds Haitian artifacts that suggest the involvement of the Great Old Ones, powerful and extra-dimensional beings who rely on human servants to manifest themselves in our universe.

German forces, working with a bocor named Mait Lemaitre, plan to use *zombi* chemicals to raise an immortal, undead army or directly *zombify* Europe. But the 171-year-old Lemaitre serves the Great Old Ones, hoping a *zombified* Europe will open a psionic pathway for his masters to arrive on Earth. At a special *Wete Mo Nan Dlo* ceremony, Lemaitre plans to gain enough psionic power to summon the Old One he serves from the Time Vortex.

As Bobo's rebels seize power and President Sam commits suicide, the United States secures the unstable region by invading Haiti. The Doctor convinces the Americans to disrupt Lemaitre's ceremony and prevent anyone from becoming *zombis*. As the Americans overpower the Germans

and destroy the stockpiled chemicals, the Doctor tunnels into Lemaitre's lair and plants a bomb. The explosion finishes Lemaitre and his telepathic enhancer, although the Great One survives. And Ace, having killed the savage German commander Richmann in the American/German battle, is left to rethink her violent ways.

Memorable Moments

Ace bluffs by putting a washing liquid sponge by a General's door and pretending it's a bomb. Benny wades through a cavern of rotting fish. Germans chain the Doctor between two boats, intending to tear him apart.

Lemaitre challenges the Doctor's authority and the Time Lord tells him to draw a card. Lemaitre picks the Death card and the Doctor says: "Recognize me now?"

Ace shoots Richmann in self-defense, but keeps shooting him out of anger for her wounded friend Petion. She keeps pulling the trigger once the chamber is empty. Worrying for her future, Ace throws her Browning into the water.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace wipes out a group of German soldiers. After killing the German leader Richmann, Ace worries that murder is the only thing she's good at. The Doctor lets Mait Lemaitre enter the cavern, knowing a motion sensor will detonate a bomb the Doctor has planted.

Continuity

The TARDIS HADS system can be manually overridden ("The Krotons"). The Doctor can read Eocene ("The Silurians"). He learned hypnotism from the Master.

In a goof, Ace can program the TARDIS via the Doctor's instructions, but doesn't know how in *Birthright*. Ace and Benny get along better than they did in *Lucifer Rising*. The planet Veltroch, mentioned here, is developed further in McIntee's *First Frontier* and *The Dark Path*.

In *All-Consuming Fire*, we better learn the origin of the Great Old Ones and which TV monsters belong to this group.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor has abandoned his brown-colored jacket for a

cream-colored suit and a battered white fedora, complete with paisley hatband. He has a glistening silk shirt and a green silk cravat.

The Doctor's eyes are blue, but turn gray when he uses hypnotism. He has visited Haiti in the future. He took a medical degree under Lister, circa 1875, and gained some type of degree in Glasgow. He has knowledge of the Haitian *Bizango*, a combined neighborhood watch and kangaroo court in which defendants often end up zombified. He knows many voodoo symbols.

• *Ace:* Ace doesn't know any Creole. Her body suit is woven kevler fibers that protect against shrapnel from grenades. Her 26th century gun can melt rock slowly and precisely.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny's hair is now cropped. She has seen a three-billion-year-old globe on Veltroch (her diary contains a sketch) and living rock millions of years old on Exo Three. Benny falsely claims her degree came from Heidelberg University. She took ballet lessons. She knows only bits of 20th century German.

• *Mait Lemaitre:* Born in 1744 to Efik tribesman in the Kingdom of Dahomey, Lemaitre was a slave who learned about the Great Old Ones from the head of the *Egbo-Obong*, a village Leopard Chief. Using a neuro-pattern enhancer, Lemaitre enjoyed an extended lifespan. He could telepathically control *zombis*. He could also funnel psionic energy away from humans and into the Great Old One he served.

• *The Doctor and Lemaitre:* Lemaitre telepathically looked into the Doctor's mind, but whatever secrets Lemaitre saw there died with him.

• *The TARDIS:* When travelling, the Ship adjusts for the speed of Earth and the galaxy's rotation. Minute changes in the calendar are also taken into account. The TARDIS key will only function for a member of the crew. It's suggested the TARDIS can't translate inclusive languages like Creole.

Alien Races

• *Zombis:* Under normal conditions, *zombis* are humans subjected to sphoeroides and bufus venom as found in tetrodotoxin, depriving their senses and making them extremely open to suggestion. Lemaitre, using his advanced knowledge, created a breed of *zombis* impervious to mortal wounds.

• *Great Old Ones:* Not even the Time Lords know much about the Great Old Ones, who fled their world in the face of some catastrophe (*see History*). All of their consciousness is now trapped in a non-Euclidean dimension. The tidal forces of stellar masses sometimes rip a hole through

the fabric of the space/time continuum and allow the Great Old Ones access to our Universe. They typically influence events through the minds of their followers rather than conquer physically. Because the Universe moves, the stars have changed position since the Great Ones' consciousness left our dimension. They therefore must rely on their followers' rituals to home in on the stars' new positions.

Alien Planets

Veltroch orbits the star Fomalhaut, some seven parsecs from Sol.

Stuff You Need

Ace's Stick Gun: Ace used cannibalized parts to build a weapon that's a cross between a Sten gun and a stick insect. It's fully automatic with Ace's special breed of Nitro-9 in the tips of the bullets.

History

• The Great Ones visited Earth at least 15 million years ago.

• On an unnamed planet, "the Star People" fought their genetically engineered servitors and fled into space. The Great Ones remained behind, either unable or unwilling to leave. Big-fanged predators stalked them, but the Great Ones held out for centuries until a series of natural disasters struck their planet. Retreat became the only option. The Great Ones used their multi-lobed brains to put themselves into suspended animation, then allowed their minds to travel until they sailed on the Time Winds and became extra-dimensional.

• In the 27th century, a Haitian first deciphered the Rihanssu language, thus ending an interstellar war with Earth and creating a peace treaty.

At the End of the Day

Solid, albeit a bit passionless and unimpressive, *White Darkness* misses out as a *zombi* story because it fails to shock the shit out of you. Additionally, later novels better define the blobby concept of the Great Old Ones. McIntee's historical knowledge serves him well enough, but the personal drama is just too surface level – Benny almost gets zombified, but the Doctor fixes that – and there's the filler, cliches and digressions that plague the first works of many novelists.

Shadowmind

Author: Christopher Bulis. Virgin New Adventure #15. Release Date: June 1993.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

New Byzantium, capital city of the planet Tairngire, 2673. The Doctor's crew travels via the starship *Broadsword* to Arden.

Summary

It's Ace's birthday, so she wants the TARDIS to go somewhere interesting (as if it never does). But their holiday on the planet Tairngire is interrupted when Ace is too late to save a mugging victim and discovers that both the dead man and his attackers are duplicates of human beings, controlled by small furry creatures in their chest cavities. When the Doctor convinces the Tairngire ruling council of his credentials as a mediator, he roots out a number of duplicates and discovers their source is an Edonian colony planet named Arden. And when the TARDIS is stolen and smuggled there, the situation becomes imperative to the time travelers.

En route to Arden, the starship *Broadsword* encounters heavy resistance by duplicate-manned ships and the TARDIS crew and several military personnel make a rough landing. A wounded Ace allies herself with one of the indigenous lifeforms, the Shenn, and learns the duplicates are the creations of a rogue Shenn intelligence, under the control of a unique telepathic entity known only as Umbra. The battle is joined when Umbra creates powerful shadowforms impervious to most forms of harm, and the shadow seeds planted by Umbra's lackeys on Tairngire sprout shadow-forms there as well. Unable to negotiate with the solar-powered Umbra, the Doctor is forced to open the *Broadsword*'s solar sail and eclipse the creature, killing it and the shadowforms. With the TARDIS recovered, the time travelers continue on their way.

Sex and Spirits

Ace has it off with Sergeant Santony, who's killed during the assault on Arden.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace shoots down an Umbra-possessed *Broadsword* command crew, including Captain Kausama, and considers it the worst thing she's ever done. The Doctor destroys Umbra.

Continuity

Destroying Skaro bothers the Doctor tremendously ("Remembrance of the Daleks"). As the TARDIS telepathic circuits malfunction, Benny and Ace mentally see the Doctor's previous incarnations, especially his first one.

Ace claims thoughts of Jan don't bother her, but they do (*Love and War*).

Despite a myriad of attempts by the Doctor to destroy records about himself (*Transit*), historical documents still record how he worked for UNIT and patched relations between Earth and Draconia ("Frontier in Space").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor has unlimited credit with the First Galactic Bank, and could make a feasible bid to buy the whole of New Byzantium. He has established a number of bona fide identities. He has the favor of the fifth Emperor of Draconia.

He claims to be suffering pre-millennial angst, a state of mind cured by cheerful distractions. Within certain limits, he can calculate time to the second without a watch. He can neutralize Ace's fatigue and headache by touching her forehead. With effort, he can resist Umbra's mental influence.

For a man of peace, the Doctor knows a lot about weapons. He understands the schematics of a Fleming Duo Mark 17, a "pea-shooter" compared to the weapons he has handled.

• *Ace:* It's Ace's birthday, though we aren't given a date. She keeps track of relative time on her watch. She's starting to look like her mother.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny remembers her father Isaac as being strong and resolute – a loving father and devoted husband. She remembers waving goodbye to his starship before he went missing. Benny claims to be a disillusioned romantic.

• *The Doctor, Ace and Benny:* The Doctor provides Ace, Benny and

himself with identification papers and credit cards. His companions get a credit limit of 100,000 units each.

• *Umbra:* For Umbra's origin, *see History*. Its full capabilities were unknown, although it relied on solar power. It was also fueled by carbon, which is why its slaves built large burning kilns on Arden to release it. As a unique, newborn intelligence, Umbra in many ways relied on instinct and had the mind of a child. Its full abilities were unknown, although it could to some degree directly control other minds.

• *The TARDIS:* The console room has Doric-style fluted columns, a Sheraton chair and a glowingly polished Chippendale. There's a hatstand, of course, and a strangely formed planet with feather-like fronds in a large Chinese pot. A massive, brassbound sea chest is beside it. On a carved stand is a bust of Napoleon and an ormolu clock.

The telepathic induction circuits, if linked to the entire ship, can amplify and broadcast the Doctor's thoughts for others to see. He may appear as his past incarnations.

Alien Races

• *Shenn:* As gestalt entities, the Shenn lack individual names. Their consciousness ranges over a variety of homegrown bodies. Communities of Shenn have been peacefully living in burrows under Arden for thousands of years.

• *Shenn duplicates:* Homespun humanoids, sculpted from captured beings. Inside each duplicate's chest is a controlling creature, part of the Shenn gestalt, that looks like a mixture of a monkey and a bipedal rat. The controlling creatures have a vestigial tail, five-fingered hands and well-developed heads. They are carbon-based, warm-blooded and oxygen breathing.

Shenn duplicates have their minds copied from the original subjects and as such believe they are the originals until the controlling creature re-asserts itself. Hypergems (*see Stuff You Need*) maintain the memory stream. The duplicate bodies are composed of clone material, organic plastic, plant sap, resin and various vegetable-like fibers. They can survive without oxygen and essentially don't tire.

Shenn duplicates don't vibrate the same as humans. Many were lined with self-destruct charges.

• *Umbra's shadowforms:* The soldiers of Umbra's army. Shadowforms are obsidian, nebulous creatures that sprout from Umbra's shadowseeds.

The shadowforms absorb carbon to become monster-sized. They were mostly impervious to harm, but became cohesive if sprayed with the Doctor's special-made molecular compound, a mixture that dissipates their stored charge.

Alien Planets

• *Arden:* A stage one colony, three years old, with no children and 5,000 people. The Edonians stationed soldiers there and claimed colonization rights.

• *Tairngire:* The city of New Byzantium was so-named because of its geographical similarity to Byzantium (a.k.a. Constantinople, Istanbul) on Earth. Cash money is not used here. Access to the city is free for those with ID.

Stuff You Need

• *Ace's Neo-Nitro:* An advanced form of Nitro-9, it is produced as white spheres that resemble boiled sweets. It's perfectly stable but activated by saliva, meaning you pop one in your mouth to prime it. Activated spheres turn red (curiously symbolic of blood). If you accidentally swallow it, gastric juices break the bombs into harmless components, though you'll get some heartburn.

• *Ace's Helmet:* Custom-made from the dome of a Black Dalek Supreme. It can augment sound and listen to radio transmissions. It also has thermal image sensors and a voice interface.

• *Ace's Suit:* Protective, but can't stop stun bolts.

• *The Doctor's Duplicate-Detecting Device:* It sends out subsonic frequencies on a low power force beam and reveals duplicates by their vibrations.

• *Hypergems:* Rare crystals, extracted from ore. Hypergems can be found in pairs. Each set can transmit low-energy, wide-band signals to each other via hyperspace. No external power source for transmission equipment is needed. Properly aligned, their range is near limitless.

Ships

CSS Broadsword: An assault ship, about 10 km across, made from microfoil and gossamer fibers. It has an emergency solar sail. The crew's brains were directly linked into the *Broadsword*'s computer for quicker

reaction time. The Arden trip was the *Broadsword*'s maiden voyage.

History

• The Doctor went over the Alps with Hannibal and saw Mao Se Tung's long march.

• Xaxil is the 24th Emperor of Draconia.

• Many years ago, a comet's gravity pulled an asteroid into a geostationary orbit around the Arden sun and deposited space carbon over the asteroid. Current flowed through the carbon, creating an analogue of a neural cell, which thus created an intelligence. The being, later called Umbra, discovered the planet Arden and found it could influence the Shenn mind groups there with thought waves. Umbra's plans for Tairngire and Arden remain unknown, though Umbra was likely engineering a takeover. It also stole the TARDIS, though we know not why.

At the End of the Day

Clearly the work of a first-time novelist, *Shadowmind* is filled with a lot of tedious spaceship battles and tries too hard to be hardcore science fiction. Characterization is nightmarish, as the Doctor sounds more like a stuffy academic than ever and Ace is watered down to everyman's high-flying companion with a bomb. On top of that, we're given a very klutzy enemy, composed of low-intelligence human duplicates and Umbra, a malevolent entity that even the Doctor calls "childish." This is a book you could remove from the novel line and hardly know it's gone.

Birthright

Author: Nigel Robinson. Virgin New Adventures #17. Release Date: August 1993.

TARDIS Crew

Ace and Benny, with the seventh Doctor loosely in tow. And, more than ever, the TARDIS herself becomes a player.

Travel Log

London, February 1909; and Ant´ykhon, circa 22,000. Half of the TARDIS explodes in Siberia, 1908.

Chronology

Concurrent with *Iceberg*.

Summary

The Doctor gives Benny a couple of pointers about operating the TARDIS, then retreats to his room, saying he needs a rest. But the TARDIS, for an unknown reason, blows itself into two bits. As the Doctor mysteriously disappears (to events in *Iceberg*), Benny finds herself in London 1909 with one TARDIS half – its exterior shell inert and inaccessible – while Ace finds herself on Ant´ykhon with the second half, similarly shut out.

At both locations are the insect-like Charrl, desperately trying to survive after the death of their homeworld. Using the unstable "Great Divide," a trans-dimensional link, the Charrl are voyaging from Ant´ykhon to Earth and implanting many human females with their eggs. Benny is scratched by a Charrl and thus implanted, even as the Charrl's agent on Earth, Jared Khan, tries to steal her TARDIS key or the Ship's Time Vector Generator, the device that joins the TARDIS exterior with its interior. If successful in reactivating the TARDIS, Khan will stabilize the Great Divide, which currently kills Charrl within minutes after use.

On Ant´ykhon, circa 22,000, Ace finds the remains of the Channel Tunnel, proving that Ant´ykhon is actually a future Earth. She finds some of the Charrl to be reasonable and agrees to voyage to London 1909 to seek aid

for them. She arrives as Benny, mentally controlled by the Charrl egg, uses the Time Vector Generator to rejoin the interior and exterior of her TARDIS half.

Khan, given psionic abilities by the Charrl, then invades the TARDIS systems with his mental being, seeking true immortality as a machine entity. The TARDIS resists, and when Khan tries to possess the TARDIS half left on Ant´ykhon, the Ship time rams itself and sends its half on Ant´ykhon plunging through the Time Vortex to explode in Siberia, 1908, causing the historical Siberian "meteor" strike.

With the Great Divide stabilized by the reintegration of Benny's TARDIS half, the Charrl take to Earth in scores. But the mystic Muldwych, a former ally of the Charrl who's desperate to escape his exile on Ant´ykhon, finds he cannot stomach the proposed conquest of humanity and bottles the Charrl in one of the TARDIS' interior dimensions. By sweeping the Great Divide over London, Muldwych also picks up any remaining Charrl and their seeds, curing Benny.

Muldwych then tries to leave in the Doctor's TARDIS, but the Ship expels him as an unauthorized user to his exile on Ant´ykhon. The Doctor returns, claiming to have been in his room the whole time, leaving Ace and Benny uncertain as to how much they trust the Time Lord.

Memorable Moments

Benny pockets a stamp to sell for profit – literally – in the future. Benny ponders the Doctor's dead friends and wonders how many funerals he's attended. The TARDIS' telepathic circuits visually depict, for Benny, the Doctor as a spider who's eating the flesh of dead companions such as Adric.

Sex and Spirits

Bellingham, a member of the secret Brotherhood named New Dawn, violates Benny by touching her breasts. Benny uses a Cockney accent when plastered. Ace used to drink Southern Comfort in the clubs up West.

Ass-Whuppings

A Charrl seed infects Benny. In unreality of the TARDIS telepathic circuits, Benny is guillotined, crushed half to death and lethally bitten by a snake. It's not her best day.

Continuity

Margaret Waterfield, the Doctor's housekeeper, is the sister of Edward Waterfield ("The Evil of the Daleks") and the aunt of Victoria Waterfield. The Charrl created more than 300 of the 700 wonders of the Universe ("Death to the Daleks"). Their ability to move through space seems similar to the Spiders of Metebelis Three ("Planet of the Spiders"). The TARDIS telepathic circuits visually display and symbolize the Doctor's compassion as a Dalek mutant because he once refused to destroy them ("Genesis of the Daleks").

This book runs concurrent with the Doctor's adventure in *Iceberg*.

Victoria Waterfield sold off most of her family's estate and gave the Doctor a house, but she used the rest of her inheritance to found New World University in *Downtime*.

It's suggested that Muldwych will encounter Ace when she settles in 19th century France ("The Curse of Fenric" novelization, *Set Piece*). The Charrl are freed from the TARDIS in *Happy Endings*.

The writings of Jared Khan, a.k.a. Count Alessandro di Cagliostro, are read in *Millennial Rites*. Liz Shaw watches the Siberian "meteor" strike in *The Wages of Sin*. Benny suggests dolphins are Earth's highest form of evolution ("The Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy" trilogy by Douglas Adams).

Author Paul Cornell privately confirms, as he further suggests in *Happy Endings*, that Muldwych is the "Merlin" incarnation of the Doctor as is spoken about in "Battlefield." This incarnation must be extremely long-lived, as the Muldwych is pictured with white hair on the *Happy Endings* cover, but it's said that "Merlin" had unruly red hair in the "Battlefield" novelization.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* In 1868, the Doctor set up a personal account at Coutts Bank under the name R.J. Smith Esq., with Victoria Waterfield, Susan Foreman, Sarah Jane Smith, Melanie Bush and Bernice Summerfield as co-signatories. He supplied a safety deposit box made of duronite, an alloy of machonite and duralinium, invented in 400 years' time. You'd need nuclear fission to shatter it.

The Doctor gave Detective Mikhail Popov lessons in English for five years.

• *The Doctor and the Wright Family:* The Doctor prevents Barbara Wright or Polly Wright's drunkard grandfather, Ernie Wright, from facing a false murder charge, saving him from the gallows.

• *Ace:* Ace has worked out some fundamentals of controlling the TARDIS by watching the Doctor. She has a perfect sense of direction. She carries rehydrating tablets for desert work. Her blaster can destroy a Dalek, slowly slice through concrete or stun people.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny can read Draconian and some ancient Mondasian, but not Cyrillic. Benny has honors in ancient Terran history and Martian archaeology, and wrote a thesis on Draconian culture.

Her widespread inoculations won't protect her from the flu. She still doesn't know how to operate the TARDIS. Including this story, Benny has only cried three times in the last five years.

• *The Doctor, Ace and Benny:* Ace declines the Doctor's offer of a TARDIS homing device, yet feels betrayed when he only gives Benny a TARDIS key.

• *Margaret Waterfield:* The sister of the late Edward Waterfield, Margaret was invited by the Doctor to look after his house. She believes her brother went off to Africa. Victoria, whom Margaret thinks has gone off to Argentina (but is traveling with the second Doctor), stops by from time to time to visit. The Doctor encouraged Margaret to take up tarot. She studied graphology in Vienna (perhaps with Victoria, "The Two Doctors"). Margaret was hypnotized by Jared Khan and became a New Dawn agent to seize Benny's Time Vector Generator. Khan's thugs murdered Margaret when she served no further purpose. The Doctor sent white lilies to Margaret's funeral.

• *The Waterfield Family:* Margaret and Victoria are the last of the Waterfields.

• *Muldwych:* A future incarnation of the Doctor, specifically, the "Merlin" incarnation mentioned in "Battlefield." Muldwych was stranded for 1,000 years on Mount Kukoeuk on Ant´ykhon. He said the survival of humanity and his race is closely linked. Overall, Muldwych is a roguish manipulator, but he did stop the Charrl from invading Earth.

• *The Doctor and Muldwych:* The Doctor would violate the Laws of Time if he helped Muldwych, his future self, leave Ant´ykhon.

• *Jared Khan (a.k.a. Count Alessandro di Cagliostro):* Allegedly born 700 years ago, Khan spent his days selling a fake Elixir of Life and looking for the real one. The Charrl Queen mentally contacted Khan in Ercildoune,

Scotland, 1270. She promised him eternal life and power in exchange for capturing the Doctor's Time Vector Generator, as proposed by Muldwych. He spent 700 years tracking the Time Lord (*see History*). Khan was a Scottish piper, an Italian count and a Jewish alchemist in Paris.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS' Time Vector Generator, a slim ebony bar that fits into the TARDIS console room, keeps the TARDIS' exterior shell joined to its interior dimensions. When removed, the TARDIS becomes inactive, the exterior paintwork peels and the woodwork warps. The TARDIS deliberately de-activates itself, to stop Jared Khan from dominating it. The Ship ejects many rooms to purge Jared Khan's infection. It can expel illegal operators into the Time Vortex (as in "The Enemy of the World").

Only members of the TARDIS crew can use TARDIS keys. In the unreality of the TARDIS telepathic circuits, you can be everywhere and nowhere at the same time.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS:* In the TARDIS' telepathic circuits, Benny sees the Ship rendering the Doctor as a giant spider – evidence of how the Ship views the Doctor's nature. For whatever reason, the Doctor doesn't let anyone into secret rooms at the heart of the TARDIS' core.

Alien Races

Charrl: An insect-like race, with multi-faceted eyes and immense psionic talents. The Charrl hive on Ant´ykhon held about 4,000 to 5,000 Charrl, plus their grubs.

The Charrl smell like ammonia and can spit burning acid. Under normal conditions, they respect life. The Charrl infect and control mammals with their seeds. The grubs are vulnerable to radiation, but hatch to a ready-made food supply. Charrl Chronomancers psychically project objects through space.

Alien Planets

New Skaro: Cited as the new home of the Daleks.

Places to Go

The Doctor's House (39 Dean Street): Victoria Waterfield gave it to him.

Organizations

Sacred Order of the New Dawn: A human brotherhood, rumored to be 700 years old, that believes man has become decadent and evil. New Dawn seeks to eradicate mankind's useless parts and help humanity achieve a greater destiny. Under the leadership of Jared Khan, they co-ordinated with the Charrl to bring about a new age.

New Dawn's base is hidden, speculated as London, Rome, China or Scotland and built some 700 years ago. Members include MP Edwin Rutherford.

History

• Charrl civilization started flourishing 11,000 years ago. Almost 3,000 years ago, solar flares and pollution devastated their homeworld of Alya and the Charrl migrated.

• Jared Khan served for years as an astrologer to Kublai Khan ("Marco Polo").

• The Doctor first met Queen Elizabeth at her coronation in 1559. In 1588, the Doctor let Francis Drake win a game of bowls so Drake's armada could leave early, thereby saving the British realm. Jared Khan, as a counselor named "Mr. Dee," served in the Queen Elizabeth's house for 20 years and left in 1603. The Doctor assured the Queen that the line of succession was guaranteed for at least 400 years.

• Half of the TARDIS impacted in the barren wastes of Tungasaku, in the land of Siberia, on the last day of June 1908. It hit at the basin of the Podkanemaia River, some miles to the north of Lake Baykal. The temporal distortion opened the Great Divide. Because the TARDIS segment disintegrated, no trace of a crater was found. Historians later attributed the phenomena to a meteor hit.

• When the Charrl arrived on Earth, about 20,000 years after Ace's time, the planet was desolate and renamed Ant´ykhon. Barbaric humans lived there, protected from the sun's ultraviolet rays by thick hair. With the Charrl gone, humanity likely reclaimed the planet.

At the End of the Day

A crisp and good little story, if a bit unpolished in parts. The Doctor's not the lead, but he's ever present, still pulling the strings and influencing the action. It's actually good that he's out of the way, because Ace and Benny prove that, unlike some companions, they can carry a book on their own. In terms of focusing on these two women, with only their wits and a dash of

Time Lord help to aid them, *Birthright* takes risks and wins. A work strong enough that Big Finish was wise to make it a Benny Audio production.

Iceberg

Author: David Banks. Virgin New Adventure #18. Release Date: September 1993

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, sans companions.

Travel Log

December 22, 2006, *SS Elysium*, in Antarctic Circle.

Chronology

Simultaneous with *Birthright*.

Summary

At Snowcap Tracking Station, military scientists under the command of General Pamela Cutler prepare for a natural, devastating reversal of the Earth's magnetic polarity. Through a project labeled FLIPback, they hope to nullify this shift and save Earth.

Meanwhile, journalist Ruby Duvall sets off to report on the *SS Elysium*'s tour of the Antarctic. In the *Elysium*'s engine room, Ruby meets the Doctor, who has journeyed in the TARDIS' Jade Pagoda to rest away from his companions. The Doctor realizes the *Elysium* is near the site of his first battle with the Cybermen, the adventure where he regenerated for the first time.

In their secret base nearby, a group of Cybermen hope the magnetic reversal will allow them to capture Earth in the confusion. To restock their numbers, they invade the *Elysium* and force the Doctor to take the ship's 2,000 passengers and crew in the Jade Pagoda to their base. By pretending to volunteer for Cyber-conversion, the Doctor eludes the Cybermen and saves Ruby.

The Cybermen plant a bomb to destroy FLIPback, but when Ruby activates FLIPback prematurely, the sudden polarity shift catches the Cybermen by surprise and incapacitates them. Ruby then destroys the Cybermen's base with their own bomb and the *Elysium* passengers are returned. The Doctor uses the Cybermen's hypnotic tranquilizer to make the

Elysium passengers forget being hijacked.

As time runs out before the limited Jade Pagoda must rejoin the TARDIS, the Doctor agrees to take Ruby with him as a travelling companion. But Ruby runs back for her special dictation machine and loses her chance – the Jade Pagoda, having exhausted the time it can remain independent of the TARDIS, dematerializes. Ruby wishes the Doctor well.

Memorable Moments

STS Colonel Dave Hillard describes removing his own appendix, using instructions given to him over the radio. After wresting a Cyberman into a piston, where he's crushed, Ruby finds the gold necklace that could have stopped the creature and gets near-hysterical. As the Jade Pagoda leaves her, Ruby wails her heart out.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor fools four Cybermen into plunging into the abyss.

The Doctor collapses from hypothermia.

Continuity

General Cutler was buried in Minnesota. His daughter Pamela is a general herself and succeeded her father as STS commander. Cutler's son Terry responded to the trauma of the Mondas invasion by becoming a born-again Christian. He formed the Freedom Foundation ("The Tenth Planet").

Ruby learned about the Cybermen from Isobel Watkins, who won a publishing contract but wasn't widely believed. Ruby, a witness to the Cybermen, knows how Isobel felt ("The Invasion").

The Doctor meets the Cyber Controller for the "first time" here ("Tomb of the Cybermen," "Attack of the Cybermen").

The Jade Pagoda reappears in *Sanctuary*. Ruby gets another chance to be a companion in *Happy Endings*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: He once landed during a Lord's cricket game one Earth summer in the 1950s, while on an adventure involving the Daleks. The Doctor cannot indefinitely survive unprotected against Antarctic temperatures. He's also susceptible to reversed polarities. He's approaching his second millennium. He studied psychology under Alfred

Adler.

• *Ruby Duvall:* A 22-year-old reporter for the *Sunday Seeker*. She uncovered a gun-running scam at the heart of a government organization. Ruby visited an abattoir and gave up eating meat.

Ruby was born in Islington. She has a 17-year-old cat named Granny. Mike Brack, a wayward motorcyclist, paralyzed Ruby's father. She never forgave her father for the burden this put on her mother, a budding novelist. Ruby's mother died from a plague.

• *Pamela Cutler:* General Cutler's daughter has a doctorate. She often didn't agree with dad. At age 45, she's the only female general in the armed forces.

• *Cyber Controller (a.k.a. Co-ordinator38):* The Cyber Controller lived as a full organic being 10,000 years ago on Mondas, when the planet was part of Earth's solar system. He was a member of Faction (*see Organizations*) and helped colonize Planet 14 ("The Invasion"). The Controller was initially developed as a Co-ordinator, but was augmented three times in 10,000 years.

Thirty years ago, following the Cybermen's first major setback of the Post Organic Era (in "The Invasion"), the Co-ordinator and his group crashed into a polar region on Earth and later witnessed the destruction of Mondas (in "The Tenth Planet").

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS center has softer light, plus mustier air with ammoniac sharpness. There are parts the Doctor hasn't visited for hundreds of years, if ever. He doesn't always take continental drift into account during materialization.

• *The Jade Pagoda:* A splinter of the main TARDIS, with a triple-roofed central column. You enter the Pagoda through a TARDIS door bearing a hand design, curled in a loose fist. If you go through, for some strange reason, your memory is temporarily erased and you'll end up in the Jade Pagoda.

The Pagoda's outside looks like an ornate booth of pastel green, made of lightweight stone or a plastic imitation. A yellow Chinese light tops it. It looks similar to kitsch phone boxes in London's Chinatown.

The Pagoda's outer plasmic shell is actually a third-generation copy. Without a time vector generator (TVG), the Jade Pagoda becomes unstable and slowly reverts to a blue police box shape, then merges with the main TARDIS part.

The Pagoda is big enough to hold 2,000 *Elysium* crew members. Its

design was generated from Doctor's subconscious.

Alien Races

The Cybermen in *Iceberg* were vulnerable to laser attack, but not to gold. They keep a supply of organic spare parts frozen on ice. They use hypnotic gas grenades. Reversed polarities scramble their logic circuits.

Alien Planets

Thysanura provides peroxidase to catalyze the manufacture of Cybermen parts.

Places to Go

Snowcap Tracking Station (STS): The first Antarctic research station to be excavated out of solid ice, built circa 1976. It's also the only one powered by a nuclear fission generator. STS doubled as a nuclear watchdog and would monitor the firing of any nuclear missile throughout the southern hemisphere. It could pinpoint a nuclear test explosion anywhere in the world.

Stuff You Need

• *Ruby Duvall's Nanocom:* A miniature dictating machine, designed by ElysiuMatics.

• *Cybermen Anti-Freeze:* A substance that superheats organic material, allowing it to survive cryosleep.

Organizations

Faction, a Mondan sect that embraced the logic of cybernetics, took Planet 14 ("The Invasion") as its adopted home.

History

• Cassius was identified as the 10th planet in Earth's solar system in 1994.

• A reversal of Earth's magnetic field threatened to disrupt magnetic machines, the ozone layer and the overall climate. But for the Doctor and Ruby's intervention, it could have exterminated humanity.

At the End of the Day

Sails like the *Titanic*. The book's first half features neither the Doctor nor his companions, and we're flayed with the pointless characterization of Antarctic base members. There's too much rehashing of irrelevant Cyberhistory, and exactly what the hell the Cybermen want is never clear. Only in the tenacity and spirit of Ruby Duvall – she could have made a fine companion – does *Iceberg* redeem itself, but this alone can't save this tedious and unnecessarily crude work.

Blood Heat

Author: Jim Mortimore. Virgin New Adventure #19. Release Date: October 1993. "Alternate Universe Saga" Part 1 of 5

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

London, Silurian Earth, 1993 (alternate history).

Summary

A mysterious force breaches the TARDIS' exterior, hurling Benny into the Time Vortex and forcing an emergency landing on a parallel Earth. Unfortunately, the planet's overrun by dinosaur life and an enraged edmontonia knocks the TARDIS into a tar pit, where it sinks.

Encountering a parallel Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart, Liz Shaw and their band of desperate rebels, the Doctor pieces together that on this Earth, the Silurians killed his third self and their plague decimated humanity. While the Doctor attempts to reason with the Silurians and locates Benny, Ace retrieves the TARDIS key from the parallel Doctor's corpse and reactivates his TARDIS. Simultaneously, the Brigadier's troops construct a wildlife-controlling device and storm the Silurian capitol with an army of dinosaurs. This is purely a suicide run, however, setting up the submarine HMS *Revenge* to launch its nuclear missiles. Benny tries to stop them, but eats a bullet for her trouble.

With the Doctor's computations, Ace materializes the alternate TARDIS around the entire planet, and the Doctor uses the Architectural Configuration control, which normally deletes TARDIS rooms, to erase the *Revenge*'s inbound missiles. With the Silurian capitol in shambles from the battle, a peace is struck with the surviving humans. The Doctor tells Ace and Benny that if this parallel universe survives, the real Universe will lose too much energy and die billions of years early. The Doctor therefore time rams his old TARDIS, causing a chain reaction that will destroy the parallel world many years hence. As Ace and Benny swallow that the Doctor has again signed a death warrant for millions, they continue traveling in the alternate

Doctor's TARDIS, unable to reach the Doctor's real TARDIS, wherever it might be.

Memorable Moments

Benny, trying to stop the *Revenge*'s nuclear strike against the Silurians, takes a bullet. As she sprawls across the fire-control computers, coughing blood, she hammers weakly against the button, trying to detonate the bomb aboard ship and kill them all.

The Brigadier, desperate to get information from a comatose Jo Grant, is warned that if he injects her with a stimulant, she'll die. Obstinate, he injects her anyway and kills her. The Brig later comes across Liz, cradling the body of a small child, and repeats his mantra of "I only did it for the children." And the most memorable of all, the dying rebel Alan asks Ace to make it quick for him. As she pulls the trigger, she screams the name of the galactic chess player she blames for their misery: the Doctor.

Sex and Spirits

Ace fancies the rebel Alan but doesn't shag him because he's going out with Julia. She trusts Alan a lot – he's the first guy she kisses with her eyes closed.

Ass-Whuppings

The Silurian Morka killed an alternate third Doctor. In the chaos of battle, Liz either shoots a Silurian or a UNIT trooper. Ace mercy-kills Alan after a Silurian does a microwave shake-'n-bake on his insides. She later blasts a Silurian with the sonic screwdriver, and discovers a hospital room with the corpses of 50 suicide victims. The alternate Sergeant Benton kills three Silurians and dies himself in an exploding airship. The HMS *Revenge* explodes. The Doctor dissipates the Silurian universe, eventually killing millions.

The Doctor symbiotically suffers as the Vortex punctures the TARDIS. Benny takes a bullet in the shoulder on the HMS *Revenge*. Two Silurians mentally stab at Ace. Other Silurians amplify sunlight and heat-blast her until she reaches the TARDIS. A plasma burn from a Special Weapons Dalek remains on Ace's stomach.

Continuity

The Silurians fought humanity in "The Silurians" and "Warriors of the Deep." The Sea Devils debuted in "The Sea Devils." The angry young Silurian in "The Silurians" was named Morka, the old Silurian was Okdel. Manisha, mentioned in "Ghost Light," breathed in flame when her house burned and died from respiratory complications.

Blood Heat instigates the five-part "Alternate Universe" saga. Here, an unknown foe deliberately creates Silurian Earth and insures Morka could kill the alternate Doctor.

Vive le TARDIS! We don't see the Doctor's original TARDIS for 30 novels until *Happy Endings*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* A Doctor-built telepathic emission dampener blocks Silurian brain transmissions, easing the human race memory malaise ("The Silurians"). He can catch his twirling umbrella, point first, still spinning, on the end of his right index finger. A rhamphorhynchus recognizes his "chck chck chck" call as friendly. The Doctor has two more ribs than humans. He promised himself to give up manipulating events, but hasn't.

• *The alternate third Doctor:* The Silurian Morka fatally injured the Time Lord, though a time meddler blocked the Doctor's regeneration and he died. The alternate Doctor's skeleton collapsed to dust.

• *Ace:* Ace's marble-sized Nitro-9 smart bombs can fly, respond to voice commands and penetrate matter without exploding. Ace adores Silurian Earth's wild nature. She meets an alternate Manisha ("Ghost Light") in a City Farm.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* The Silurian Morka injects 32-year-old Benny with a virus that cures the Silurian race memory fear ("The Silurians").

• *The alternate Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* At 63, the Brigadier's a widower.

• *The alternate Liz Shaw:* Two years after Liz married a man named James Lester, he struck his head on a tree looking for food and died. She subsequently took her own name back.

• *The alternate Jo Grant:* The alternate Jo aborted a baby and was driven insane by her abuse on Silurian Earth. "Our" Jo was General Hobson's niece.

• *The alternate TARDIS:* When the parallel Doctor died, the TARDIS shutdown internally, closing its dimensional gateway. The TARDIS key

became owner-neutral, ready for its next user. This TARDIS can materialize around the alternate Earth, creating a state of temporal grace. The entire planet could likely have been deleted through the Architectural Configuration program.

Alien Races

Silurians (a.k.a. Earth Reptiles, psionosauropodomorpha) can use their third eyes to telepathically link with other Silurians and animals. They're vulnerable to impulses from the Doctor's sonic screwdriver. Silurians tap geothermal power for energy and use huge airships. They prefer mental communication and probably don't have literature. Their technology can enhance the greenhouse effect to lethal levels on a focused area, like little boys zapping ants with a magnifying glass. Sea Devils ride aquatic dinosaurs. Silurians lay eggs and cannot cry.

Alien Planets

Silurian Earth harbored different eras, including upper Jurassic and Creyaceous, running a gamut of 50 million years. Dinosaurs like Tyrannosaurus Rex and Dilophosaurus live high on the hog. Ophidian, the Silurian Capital of Earth, sits in east Africa. The surviving humans teach ten-year-old children weapons training. Moscow has likely fallen.

Places to Go

UNIT HQ was part of the War Office in Whitehall.

Time Travel

Few beings have the knowledge, power and inclination to effect a timeline such as Silurian Earth – the Doctor cites the Guardians (the "Key to Time" season), Rassilon, the Master and himself as possible suspects.

At the End of the Day

Magnificent. Fans still stand up and cheer about it. Mind you, *Blood Heat* has the advantage of familiar characters and long-running conflicts. It gets a little long-winded, but is full of testosterone and demonstrates how hate breeds atrocities and vice-versa with great panache. It's a story about fertility – the heroes have lost their mates, Ace shoots Alan and there's constant fighting for the sake of children and eggs. The whole thing's

rounded out by stellar interaction between Liz, the Doctor and the Brigadier, with a core "Who" argument: the civilian approach vs. the military way of thinking – finishing the job. Switching TARDISes hurt some readers at the time, but in retrospect seems kinda cool.

The Dimension Riders

Author: Daniel Blythe. Virgin New Adventure #20. Release Date: November 1993. "Alternate Universe Saga" Part 2 of 5.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Oxford, November 18, 1993. Deep space, late 24th century.

Summary

The late 24th century spaceship *Icarus* arrives at Space Station Q4, a survey outpost where the crew have been reduced to 300-year-old skeletons. So swift was the attack, two corpses are frozen playing chess.

Meanwhile, the TARDIS has arrived at Oxford, 1993, and Benny indulges in a little vacation. But the Doctor discovers the TARDIS' previous co-ordinates are not as he remembers. The curious Doctor and Ace backtrack the TARDIS and arrive at Station Q4 as Time Soldiers armed with super-aging rays attack the *Icarus* rescue team. The crossfire of temporal energy forms a time warp that carries the Doctor and *Icarus* Captain Terrin back one week to when Q4's crew was still alive.

The Time Soldiers are commanded by the Garvond, a powerful life-eating carnivore created from the minds in the Gallifreyan Matrix, including the Doctor's. The creature collaborates with "The President," a renegade Time Lord and President of St. Matthew's College, to gain power. The President plans to assassinate a key government minister, causing a violation of history that charges the time-stream with chronal energy. The President, using his position at Oxford, has arranged for the simultaneous presence of Oxford student Tom Cheynor and his descendent, *Icarus* officer Darius Cheynor, in their various time zones. Together, ancestor and descendent will form a Time Focus through with the Garvond will absorb the chronal energy.

The President hopes to use the Garvond's power to conquer Gallifrey, but the monster throws off the President's aid and kills the Time Lord in his own assassination trap. A temporal paradox is set up when the Garvond

possesses Tom Cheynor and launches an attack on Station Q4 – the same attack to which the *Icarus* responded. The greedy Garvond tries to seize control of the TARDIS, but the Doctor traps the creature in a pocket dimension of his trans-dimensional book, *The Ancient and Worshipful Law of Gallifrey* (from "Shada"). The Doctor concludes the Garvond could not have existed without help and the time-tampering enemy that dogged them on Silurian Earth is still waiting.

Memorable Moments

The Time Soldiers blast a pregnant crewwoman with a time-aging beam, and, in a moment of extreme grossness, her newborn grows and bursts out of her womb. The Doctor, no stranger to death, finds a time-aged corpse and begins trembling.

Sex and Spirits

Ace grows some affection for *Icarus* Lieutenant Albion Strakk, but leaves him behind. (A glancing time-beam accelerates Strakk's metabolism and gives him 10 years to live.) Benny has real ale for the first time, at the pub where C.S. Lewis and J.R.R. Tolkien gathered with their mates.

Ass-Whuppings

Time Soldiers kill the Station Q4 crew to a man, but the time paradox created allows the Doctor to undo that event. He can't prevent the Time Soldiers butchering hundreds aboard the *Icarus*. The Time Soldiers all perish as the Garvond is imprisoned.

The President's trap gasses Bernice unconscious. The Garvond's telepathic assault rolls over Ace.

Continuity

Professor Travers took Professor Rafferty, as a postgraduate student, into confidence about a Yeti orb ("The Abominable Snowman"). The Doctor first saw the Garvond's creation and destruction in *The Worshipful and Ancient Law of Gallifrey*, which he didn't return to the Time Lords ("Shada"). The Doctor gives Benny a TARDIS homing device ("Mawdryn Undead"). Late in his fourth incarnation, the Doctor thought about retiring from travel and taking up fishing on Florana ("Death to the Daleks"). Prydonian Chancellor Parjtesa-Kalayethzor Rodan wrote a book called

Communications Networks and Temporal Rectification ("The Invasion of Time"). The Doctor erased his biodata print from the Panotropic Net in the Matrix (after "Arc of Infinity"). After Manisha's fiery death, Ace feared smoke for months ("Ghost Light").

Darius Cheynor returns in *Infinite Requiem*. The TARDIS library has a book called *200 Poems on the Transit System* (*Transit*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Even by Time Lord standards, the Doctor's current body is aging rapidly. He doesn't remember his age. Because a copy of his brain resides in the Garvond, the Doctor can travel through the Garvond's dimensional gateways unscathed. He likes almond slices and used to play with a Rubik's Cube. The Garvond says the Doctor's greatest fear is leaving enigmas unsolved.

• *The Doctor and Ace:* The Garvond feeds off Ace's continued mistrust of the Doctor.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny left her collection of archaeological finds on the Doctor's original TARDIS. She prefers danger over cigars, mints and small talk. She loathes terms of endearment like "dear." She has some small indecision about remaining with the TARDIS crew.

• *The Doctor and Bernice:* The Doctor gave Benny *A Brief History of Time* for her birthday. She bought him paisley cravats in a January sale in London.

• *Professor Rafferty:* An old friend of the Doctor, 57 years old, who's Professor of Extra-Terrestrial Studies at Oxford. He also knows Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart and Ian Chesterton.

• *Garvond (a.k.a. Garavond, Garivont):* A being composed of mental energy, rumored to be a gestalt entity. The Garvond looks like Marvel Comics' "Ghost Rider": a fiery skeleton sitting on a massive throne. The Garvond feeds on black emotions – fear, suspicion, hate and more. Warp power or the energy released by time paradoxes also fuels it. The Garvond wants to sail the Time Vortex and consume all life. It has several thousand names, all corruptions of the High Gallifreyan term for "of darkest thought."

The Garvond was imprisoned for a time in the Gallifreyan Matrix, where it assimilated copies of Time Lord minds, including the Doctor. The creature's exact origins are unknown.

• *President of St. Matthew's College, Oxford (a.k.a. Epsilon Delta, Dr. Styles):* A Time Lord who hails from the Ancient Time, where he was

known at the Academy as Epsilon Delta, a mere attendant to Gold Usher Time Lords. He achieved a double beta in cybernetics. He took his cue from Time Lords with monikers such as the Rani, the Master and the Doctor and named himself "The President." He then stole a TARDIS. The President's second incarnation was not very good looking.

• *The alternate TARDIS:* By and large, it has most of the components of the Doctor's original TARDIS. Nothing's been lost, just changed. The TARDIS has an artron meter and a vector gauge. The base measures roughly 154 square centimeters. The time rotor glows red and vermilion. When the TARDIS senses time intruders, it may activate the Defense Indefinite Timeloop Option and fling itself a defensive millisecond into the future.

• *The Doctor, Ace and the alternate TARDIS:* Plucked from a world where its owner died, the TARDIS does not completely trust the Doctor. When in trouble, it sends a Cloister Bell warning specifically to Ace. The Doctor doesn't know how many effective dimensions the Ship has. The Architectural Configuration circuits reorganized the library long ago, knowing the Doctor would have bungled the job.

• *The President's Type 102 TARDIS:* This Ship disguises itself as a cabinet, a drinks machine and a two-seater Porsche Turbo. Its interior color scheme is burgundy-red and the time rotor glows red. The console is an upturned cone, flat-topped, with a spiraling central column and smooth touch-sensitive controls. The roundels are more compact than the Doctor's TARDIS. This Ship has a number of spare dimensions and can trap people in stasis fields. It even plays chess.

Alien Races

Time Soldiers are beings salvaged from the timestream – Gallifreyans, Tharils, even Earth people – all enslaved to the Garvond's cause. The Time Soldiers oscillate through our dimension and have some degree of intangibility. As they move through Time, their overloaded sensors make them blind. Their own time blasts destroy them.

Stuff You Need

Hylerium, a common substance, reflects time energy.

Ships

The Icarus is an Earth spaceship commanded by Captain Romulus Terrin. Darius Cheynor serves as second in command.

Time Travel

Some Time Lords such as the President can rehearse various events without altering the true timeline. Though not stated, such exercises likely use reality quotients (*The Crystal Bucephalus*).

Time Soldiers bombard victims with catalytic particles, possibly a form of tachyonic energy, which warps DNA and causes severe aging.

If the path of time is already disrupted, the Doctor can act to save people who would have died.

Any large time alteration releases a vast amount of energy through the substrata of crystallized Time. An alternate universe is created, releasing even more energy. The real Universe can reassert itself with some sort of Time Focus (a mostly undefined phenomenon), say, an ancestor and their descendent co-existing in both time zones. "Immutable" Time is rare and possesses a certain inertia.

Phenomena

Alien possession makes people who are possessed have voracious appetites to replace lost salt and protein.

History

By the 24th century, half the galaxy has been abandoned. Forests have overtaken Perivale and West London. Earth colonies have no major enemies in the longest period of interplanetary peace since the Cyberwars. On Aberna colony, starving people turned to cannibalism.

At the End of the Day

Decently paced, with some good characterization – but damn, it's hard to feel good about this one. *The Dimension Riders* is so bleak, dreary and depressive that a lot of the fun is sucked right out of it. We're kept too clueless as we read pages upon pages of people turning into skeletons, and the Time Soldiers' aging-weapons become repetitive one-trick ponies. All in all, you leave *The Dimension Riders* feeling like you've watched a particularly bloody and personal train wreck. Enjoy.

The Left-Handed Hummingbird

Author: Kate Orman. Virgin New Adventure #21. Release Date: December 1993 . "Alternate Universe Saga" Part 3 of 5.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Switzerland, 2030; Mexico City, 1994; Aztec capital Tenochtitlan, 1487; London, Dec. 20, 1968 through Jan. 30, 1969; New York City, Dec. 8 and 15, 1980; *Titanic* sinking, April 14, 1912.

Summary

The Doctor, Benny and Ace respond to a summons via UNIT from an empath named Christián Xochitl Alvarez, who has met their future selves. Christián tells them of his various encounters with the Blue, a psionic being who's causing murder and mayhem, and the Doctor links the timing of one of the Blue's appearances archaeological digs in the former Aztec capital of Tenochtitlan. Seeking more information, the TARDIS crew and Christián sneak into the Mexican Studies Institute. There, the Doctor discovers a page of the Florentine Codex, a book rich with psychic energy. In that instant, the Blue is revealed to be Huitzilin, a former Aztec chief who – by the power of a crashed Exxilon device – has become a being of pure mental energy. Unable to stay corporeal for long, Huitzilin, who feeds on death energy, kills Christián and leaves.

The TARDIS crew seeks answers from Christián's younger self in 1968, but Christián's roommates are cult worshippers and drug the Doctor and Ace with LSD-laced noodles. Huitzilin physically exchanges places with the Doctor for a few minutes. In that time, the Doctor ceases to exist and Huitzilin slaughters the cultists, absorbing their life essences.

UNIT's Paranormal Division investigates these events and, as the Doctor is unknown to them in this time period, Lieutenant Hamlet Macbeth arrests the Time Lord and holds him captive for weeks. Ace and Benny report the maverick Paranormal Division's abuses to Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart, who closes the division down, even as the Doctor's companions rescue him.

Using his psionic link with Huitzilin, developed during their physical exchange, the Doctor realizes Huitzilin has caused some fear-causing events in history, such as the Charles Manson murders, and may soon gain enough power to solidify completely.

The Doctor also realizes that Huitzilin is seeking the *Xiuhcoatl*, a destructive device from Exxilon located as cargo onboard the doomed ship *Titanic*. The Doctor's party arrives aboard *Titanic* to confront Huitzilin, who soaks up enough power to solidify and manifest himself. Fortunately, Christián finds a gun and shoots the now solid Aztec dead. In escaping to the TARDIS, Christián rescues a baby from the *Titanic* and adopts it as the Doctor returns Christián to his proper time. In turn, the Doctor sleeps for a week, but recovers from his ordeal as Huitzilin's symbiote.

Memorable Moments

There's something of a grisly moment as Bernice bludgeons a Huitzilin-possessed Professor Fitzgerald, an expert on Egyptology, to death and bits of his hair cling to her frying pan.

Ace wonders how the Doctor received his chest wound and the Doctor, concerned about her violent tendencies, doesn't tell her that she did it – while being manipulated by Huitzilin.

Sex and Spirits

Ace flirts with a student named Preston from Houston, Texas.

Ass-Whuppings

Thirty-one people are shot in a random, Huitzilin-staged massacre by the "Halloween Man." The Doctor witnesses John Lennon's death. Huitzilin kills Christián Alvarez and Lieutenant Hamlet Macbeth, but that timeline is erased when Huitzilin dies aboard *Titanic*. Ace The *Titanic* sinks, killing 1,502 people.

Ace's scalp contains tiny scars, which the Doctor speculates came from exploding Dalek shrapnel. She takes a knife wound fighting Huitzilin-possessed Aztec warriors. Huitzilin's psionic attack knocks Ace out and puts the Doctor so comatose, he's believed dead and taken to the morgue. Physically exchanging places with Huitzilin bursts many of the Doctor's blood vessels.

Lieutenant Macbeth holds the Doctor captive for three weeks, handcuffed

and legcuffed to a bed, and mistreats him in many ways. A Huitzilin-possessed Ace stabs the Doctor with an obsidian blade. Huitzilin, attempting his final transfer, sinks his teeth into the Doctor's neck.

Continuity

The first Doctor previously visited Aztec times in "The Aztecs." No records of the event apparently exist. Air Commodore Gilmore ("Remembrance of the Daleks") retired some time before 1968. By 1994, Captain Yates lives rather reclusively, shunning reporters. He "doesn't speak to anyone." In the same year, Harry Sullivan is reported to have vanished. Harry's reports said Hubert Clegg ("Planet of the Spiders") died of a heart attack. Corporal Bell of UNIT ("The Mind of Evil," "The Claws of Axos") was promoted to captain and was brain-damaged in a car accident. The Doctor carries radiation tablets, possibly those used in "Destiny of the Daleks." The TARDIS has a new pool, as the old one was jettisoned in "Vengeance on Varos." Ace's T-Shirt says "Hard Rock Café Svartos" ("Dragonfire").

The time-active enemy that plagued the Doctor in *Blood Heat* and *The Dimension Riders* alters history so Huitzilin survives as a powerful entity when an Exxilon energy influx should have killed him. Hamlet Macbeth next appears in *Happy Endings*.

Given the amount of hardship the TARDIS crew has encountered, and the hostile natures of the Doctor and Ace (*Deceit* to now), Benny considers leaving the TARDIS, but says supposedly to watch their moves (and probably because she cares).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor has better control of his biochemistry than humans, and under normal conditions can instantly metabolize the hallucinogenic psilocybin. The seventh Doctor's favorite ice cream is boysenberry ripple and he's lousy with a bow and arrow. He can mentally "duck" psionic booby traps.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny here learns what pizza is and discovers that "Star Trek: The Next Generation" is not a documentary. She knows a neck nerve pinch that momentarily paralyzes.

• *The Doctor and Benny:* When the Doctor scans Benny's mind, he learns she doesn't trust him. When he's stabbed by a possessed Ace, Benny surgically removes a piece of obsidian from his chest.

• *Ace:* Ace's combat suit has temperature control. When Ace was four, she was trapped in a lift and since then has a recurring dream about a small lift that goes sideways, impossibly fast.

• *The Doctor, Ace and Benny:* The Doctor asks Ace to kill him if Huitzilin takes him over completely, as Benny won't do it.

• *Huitzilin (a.k.a. Huitzilopochtli):* Psionics recognize Huitzilin's mental energy signature as "Blue." Even before he encountered an Exxilon energy source (*see History*), Huitzilin was a powerful telepath who psionically extended his life. After the Exxilon energy charge, Huitzilin stopped being human and existed as a psychovore, feeding on death energy and fear.

His name vaguely translates as "The Left-Handed Hummingbird," the patron god of the Aztec nations and the deity who leads the Aztecs to war and makes them "strong and glorious."

• *The Doctor and Huitzilin:* The Doctor served as Huitzilin's *ixiptla*, the being he can exchange places with to physically manifest.

• *The alternate TARDIS:* The TARDIS' chameleon circuit is momentarily repaired and the ship disguises itself as a baleful idol while in Tenochtitlan. On the return trip to Mexico City, the circuit breaks and the TARDIS becomes a police box again. The TARDIS library composes dozens of rooms. The TARDIS takes its own initiative to materialize around Ace, saving her from freezing waters as the *Titanic* goes down.

Alien Races

Time Lord biochemistry is vulnerable to certain Earth drugs. Aspirin can kill.

Stuff You Need

The Xiuhcoatl, one of the most powerful weapons the Doctor has ever seen, was an Exxilon device that could fuse two molecules of hydrogen or turn a puddle into a nuclear bomb.

Organizations

UNIT: Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart investigates abuses on the part of Lieutenant Macbeth in detaining suspects and closes Macbeth's Paranormal Division of UNIT.

Time Travel

Few races have time-travel technology, probably because many tinker with their own history and wipe themselves out.

Phenomena

Psychic sensitivity is in the Aztec gene pool. Aztec priests – and humans in the future – enhance its effect with hallucinogenic drugs.

History

• An Exxilon spacecraft crashed to Earth on an undetermined date and its plutonium fuel pod ruptured. The nomad Aztec chief Huitzilin, sheltering in a cave that housed the Exxilon device, became a powerful psychic. The Aztecs made the ship a holy relic when they migrated.

• At least two of the Doctor's other selves are at Woodstock.

• On January 30, 1969, Ace stops a Huitzilin-possessed housecleaner from shooting John Lennon in Hyde Park. The Doctor's present in 1980 when John Lennon's assassin, acting under Huitzilin's influence, kills the famed musician.

• It's suggested Huitzilin was responsible for the Charles Manson atrocities.

At the End of the Day

An almost ideal use of the "Who" premise of traveling anywhere in time and space, *The Left-Handed Hummingbird* has layer upon layer of historical events (the Aztec Empire, Lennon's death and *Titanic*) mixed with envelope-breaking science fiction concepts. The story's so finely crafted that when the normally restrained Doctor trumps his companions and becomes a screamer, it's completely appropriate. It's also chilling in parts as the Doctor fights for his soul and his companions' love, and a proves to be a great opening volley from the elegant Orman.

Conundrum

Author: Steve Lyons. Virgin New Adventure #22. Release Date: January 1994. "Alternate Universe Saga" Part 4 of 5.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

The Land of Fiction, rendered as the small town of Arandale in the English Midlands, November 2, 1993.

Summary

In the little English village of Arandale, things are quiet – too quiet – and quite loopy. There's a mild-looking bar patron who's actually a blackmailer with life-sized games such as "Mouse Trap" in his house. There's an ex-superhero named "The White Knight" who's being stalked by his foe, Dr. Nemesis. There's a town slasher who leaves his or her victims drained of blood. And it's into this murderous web that the TARDIS crew, the tension among them at an all-time high due to recent adventures, is thrust into when they escape from a time storm.

While Benny has a series of misadventures with the White Knight, Ace realizes there's nothing beyond the confines of the village but empty space. The Doctor comes to the growing realization that the murders are purely incidental and that he is once again trapped in the Land of Fiction.

The Doctor discovers the new Master of the Land of Fiction is a mentally unbalanced young man who is desperate for the Doctor to take his place. The Doctor tricks the Master of the Land, a.k.a. "the Writer," into developing a character empowered by "McAllerson's Radiation" – said to grant superpowers to individuals with special DNA. The radiation that the Doctor describes, once written into the story, disrupts the energies composing the Land of Fiction and the time-travelers flee in the TARDIS.

As the Writer engages, and is about to best, the Doctor in a battle of mental wits, Ace saves the day by using the TARDIS chameleon circuit to make the Ship a sphere and it slides out of the Land. The Doctor sends a message to the Time Lords asking them to place warning beacons around the

Land, and they travel to confront the time-altering adversary who has dogged them on recent adventures, following the Writer's off-handed reference to a 1976 Earth invasion that never took place.

Memorable Moments

Archaeologist Benny comments that the White Knight's ornate vase, "could be worth something," then understands it holds his partner's ashes. Ace chases a villager through his fun house, which contains a full-sized Mouse Trap game. Ace and Benny also have a burly, succulent brawl with Dr. Nemesis that's worthy of Marvel Comics. After a major battle, something hot drips down onto Ace's face – she tastes it and discovers it's actually the pulverized Dr. Nemesis' cooked and melted body fat.

Sex and Spirits

Benny takes a "majestic" bath and is later appalled to learn *Conundrum*'s narrator watched her the whole time.

Ace drinks and plays cards in the Black Cat Tavern and gets too drunk to walk home. Ace and Benny later have a heart-to-heart there. During a bar brawl, a Newcastle Brown gets shattered on Ace's chest.

Ass-Whuppings

The White Knight practically atomizes Dr. Nemesis and later, thinking he's still super-powered, jumps into space and goes splat.

In a cat fight between Benny and Ace, spurred by the emotional pressure of recent adventures, Benny catches Ace with an elbow in the cheek. A flying piece of mortar knocks Benny out, plus she's choked and takes a vicious kick to the chin from Nemesis. Doctor Nemesis also throws Ace over his shoulder into the far wall, rendering her unconscious. Father Sheridan punches out the Doctor and wounds his scalp.

Continuity

The second Doctor, Jamie and Zoe escaped from the Land of Fiction in "The Mind Robber." The Land was originally created to entertain the Gods of Ragnarok ("The Greatest Show in the Galaxy"). John and Gillian, the Doctor's grandchildren in the stage play, "Dr. Who and the Seven Keys to Doomsday" (in which Trevor Martin played the lead role) here appear as "fictional" characters. The kids "recall" the Doctor regenerating because in

the play, Martin "regenerated" from Jon Pertwee.

The Doctor's time-active enemy from *Blood Heat* on here resurrects the Land of Fiction and chooses the new Writer to trap the Doctor. The Land of Fiction and its Writer return in *Head Games*. Tension among the TARDIS crew continues to build. The Doctor's destruction of Silurian Earth in *Blood Heat* and the deaths of the Althosians in *The Pit* still weigh heavily on everyone. Ace is plagued by visions of a woman in red and a door she can't open, a plot revealed in *No Future*. In the Land of Fiction Library, Ace sees "Who" works such as "Dragonfire," *Love and War* and *Deceit* – the story of her life. The Doctor first watched "Captain Millennium" in *The Highest Science*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor has enough comprehensive knowledge to know he and his companions are in the Land. He uses the Land's fictional attributes to his advantage, such as playing Scrabble and achieving combinations that would have run off a "real" board. He talks directly to the Writer (the *Conundrum* narrator) and knows when the end of a chapter arrives. He can cause minor rewrites, such as influencing his jailer and including "Captain Millennium" into the story. As in "The Mind Robber," he can challenge the Writer's control. The Doctor doesn't sleep so much as meditate. He also envisions his sixth self attacking him and the Valeyard's face boasting of victory.

• *Ace:* We still don't know Ace's surname. Words in a book that is likely the "Who" Writer's Bible call her "a loner, with a self-protectively over-developed sense of individuality, personal morality, her own ideas of right and wrong..." The lowest setting of Ace's blaster makes an impressive pyrotechnic display.

• *The Doctor and Ace:* Ace has learned to operate the chameleon circuit, despite the Doctor's protests. Years of frustration with the Doctor bubble over as Ace understands how much the Time Lord stood between her loves Jan and Robin. Her goal in staying with the Doctor now is to finally one-up him.

• *The Doctor, Ace and Bernice Summerfield:* As everything goes to hell in a handbasket, Benny dreams of Ace strangling her while the Doctor observes and says it's for the good of the Universe. The pressure of travelling with a manipulative Doctor and a psychotic Ace drives Benny perilously close to leaving the TARDIS crew. She betrays Ace somewhat by

telling the Doctor how Ace feels about him.

• *Master of the Land of Fiction (a.k.a. "The Writer"):* A wild, blond youth, with ripped jeans and black KISS T-shirt. He grins lopsidedly with a high, stabbing laugh, and the Doctor finds him loathsome. The Doctor's unidentified time adversary placed the new Writer in his position to wreck havoc. The Writer kidnapped as many as 3,000 people and turned them into Fiction while their real bodies decayed. Like the previous Writer, he can do anything in the Land except leave, unless someone replaces him.

• *The alternate TARDIS:* In the Land of Fiction, the chameleon circuit actually works and Ace disguises the Ship as a 25th century Axmeister tank – pissing the Doctor off when he can't find the door. The Ship also morphs into a gingerbread cottage (the outside was possibly edible). The TARDIS seems to protect its crew from jet-lag up to a point. The Defense Indefinite Timeloop Option can project the TARDIS a split-second into the future and hold it there, making it inaccessible.

Places to Go

The Land of Fiction's boundaries end in empty space until the Writer decides what goes there. Fictional characters cannot exist outside of the Land. The process that turns people into Fiction is now irreversible (Jamie and Zoe were changed back in "The Mind Robber").

Restoring dead characters is easy in the Land. Time can be distorted with words like "Meanwhile," "eventually" and "later." The TARDIS crew thinks they've been in Arandale for three days, but it's more like three hours (the length of time needed to read the book). Arandale's rain freeze-frames when the TARDIS crew isn't around. "Real" people see incidental characters in the Land, such as cleaning ladies, very differently because readers inherently impose their own perceptions on minor characters.

With the Writer's defeat, the Doctor asks the Time Lords to put up warning beacons around the Land.

Phenomena

McAllerson's Radiation does exist, but does not, as the Doctor claims for the narrator's benefit, grant people superpowers.

At the End of the Day

Tremendous. Not only does *Conundrum* deal with the mistrust among the

TARDIS crew without leaving a bad taste in your mouth, it offers a fantastically detailed, playful romp through the strange village of Arandale, in a story that's revolutionary by letting the Doctor continually break the fourth wall. For maturity and forethought, *Conundrum* actually tops the surreal "The Mind Robber" and unfolds as one of the most clever seventh Doctor novels.

No Future

Author: Paul Cornell. Virgin New Adventure #23. Release Date: February 1994. "Alternate Universe Saga" Part 5 of 5.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace, Benny and UNIT.

Travel Log

Trafalgar Square, the Meddling Monk's TARDIS and the planet Varda, 1976; Glastonbury Festival of Performing Arts, 1993.

Chronology

For UNIT, after "Terror of the Zygons."

Summary

Tipped off to an alien invasion in 1976 London by the Master of the Land of Fiction (*Conundrum*), the Doctor, Benny and Ace watch for time interference, even as Benny becomes part of a punk band named Plasticine.

Unknown to them, the Doctor's old Time Lord adversary, the Meddling Monk, a.k.a. Mortimus, seeks to avenge himself for past defeats by taking everything the Doctor prizes away from him. It is Mortimus who has dogged the TARDIS crew on their recent adventures, sneakily altering the timestream again and again. And now, as Robert Bertram, head of Priory Records, Mortimus usurps the Doctor's position as scientific advisor to UNIT. Also, he notes how Ace has become disgusted with the Doctor's various manipulations and convinces her to become his "companion" instead.

The Doctor realizes that UNIT has been infiltrated by his old foes (and Mortimus' allies), the electromagnetic Vardans. However, Ace approaches the Doctor and appears to stab him in the chest. A wounded Doctor falls into Mortimus' TARDIS, but escapes.

The electromagnetic Vardans, seeking to invade Earth, prepare to flood through the airwaves of a world-wide Priory Records concert. In unison with Mortimus' pacification ray, the Vardans will brainwash anyone watching the concert, heralding the first stage of their invasion force.

However, the Doctor finds a clue from his future self and technologically traps the wave-riding Vardans in a standing pattern in Earth orbit. Ace, having only pretended to betray and wound the Doctor, locates the source of Mortimus' power – the Chronovore Artemis – and frees her.

UNIT forces rout the last of the Vardan spies, but Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart is killed in the crossfire. Artemis agrees to give Ace a boon for freeing her, and Ace asks to travel back in time to save the Brigadier. Artemis agrees, then pursues Mortimus as he escapes in his TARDIS. As Mortimus' Ship dematerializes, the only sounds we hear are Artemis' laughter and the Monk's screams. The Doctor then sends the Vardans back to their home planet at light-speed, even as he, Ace and Benny renew their friendship and depart for parts unknown.

Memorable Moments

Benny eventually tells Plasticine's audience that they don't know any more songs and that they're very sorry. She offers to recite poetry and a fire extinguisher narrowly misses her head.

In Mortimus' TARDIS, the Doctor's voice tells him it's pointless to make the Doctor feel cold ("You think that I've never felt that way?"). The dying Brigadier, with his last words, asks Captain Yates if the children are safe. When Yates replies yes, the Brigadier gasps, "Very good. Carry on," and dies.

Sex and Spirits

Ace is frustrated that she cannot charm Plasticine member Danny Pain. Mortimus promises to restore Ace's lover Jan Rydd (*Love and War*) to life, but she sides with the Doctor. Sergeant Benton is dating a woman named Violet. In a more comical scene, a hungover Benny wakes up in bed with Danny Pain and they desperately try to rationalize how the whole thing could be innocent. (Given Danny's inhibitions to shagging friends, it likely was.) Ace jabs the back of Benny's neck with a champagne bottle.

Ass-Whuppings

Benny shoots a Vardan pilot in the head. The Brigadier plugs another five. He dies himself, shot by Vardan troops, but Ace cheats time and saves him. The Doctor fails to revive a student after a subway attack. Ace nails Benny in the wrist with a flechette.

Continuity

The first Doctor bested Mortimus, a.k.a. the Meddling Monk, in "The Time Meddler" and "The Daleks' Master Plan." The fourth Doctor defeated the Vardans in "The Invasion of Time." (Mortimus later discovered the planet Varda and freed it from the Time Lords' time-loop). Mortimus also served as technical adviser to the Moroks ("The Space Museum") and the Voord leader Yartek ("The Keys of Marinus").

Time and Death are now referred to as "Eternals," denoting the race the Doctor encountered in "Enlightenment." Chronovores such as Artemis first appeared in "The Time Monster." The third Doctor was a guest on *Nationwide* after the Carrington affair ("The Ambassadors of Death").

Mortimus is revealed as the time-active foe who created Silurian Earth (*Blood Heat*), read about the Garvond in the *Red Book of Gallifrey* (*The Dimension Riders*), empowered Huitzilin (*The Left-Handed Hummingbird*) and granted the Master of the Land of Fiction power (*Conundrum*).

Ace dreamed in *Conundrum* about a red-dressed woman that was the Chronovore Artemis. She lost her fellow Traveler Marie (*Love and War*) on the planet Palmeras. The Master of the Land of Fiction told the Doctor in *Conundrum* that Danny Pain would become a hero. The Brigadier isn't certain what happened to Hamlet MacBeth (*The Left-Handed Hummingbird*).

The Doctor gives the Brigadier amnesia so he appropriately won't remember the Doctor's seventh incarnation until "Battlefield." The Brigadier's memories are restored in *Happy Endings*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: As Time's Champion, the Doctor's left his handwriting – literally and figuratively – across the Universe. His future self broke the First Law of Time by leaving notes for his past self. The Doctor first heard Benny's voice on a Plasticine disc at a 21st century party in Finchley – he knew she would join the group.

The Doctor can erase someone's memories by touch. He has a replacement sonic screwdriver and pulls a white rabbit from his hat. He didn't cash a lot of his UNIT paychecks. When Ace "knifes" him, he thinks he deserves it and half-expects the blade to be real.

• *Ace*: Ace remarks that sometimes she feels like putting a gun to her mouth. Her battle suit responds to her synapses, and her computer can

generate gold-tipped flechettes.

Inwardly hollow, Ace says she drinks to make herself feel vulnerable. In battle, she saw a boy get scalped. Like Mortimus, she was once marooned on an ice planet. She only believes in bacon sandwiches. She avoids the Heaven landscape in the TARDIS, fearing she'll never leave.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny sings and writes for the band Plasticine. Okay, actually, she growls and the audience calls for more. She hasn't had a migraine since she was 16. Army-resistant Benny was pained to call the Brigadier "Sir," but did it anyway.

• *The Doctor and Benny*: When Benny thinks the Doctor is dead, Benny takes a moment and says, "I loved you very much." She even screams the "dead" Doctor's name as she's about to fall and die.

Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart: At age 46, the Brigadier is on a Buddhist kick, introduced to the Eightfold Path by the Doctor. The Brigadier can set up strict mental barriers. The Brigadier believes the Doctor symbolizes the best values of British life: eccentricity, the creative amateur and civilization.

• *Mortimus (a.k.a. The Meddling Monk)*: Mortimus, having been stranded by the Doctor on an ice planet, keeps his TARDIS cold and moist to let his hatred grow. He systematically steals everything the Doctor valued. As Robert Bertram, head of Priory Records, Mortimus became UNIT's scientific advisor in the United Kingdom. To counter the Doctor's being Time's Champion, he imprisoned the Chronovore Artemis and became Death's Champion. He also stole warnings from the Doctor's future self to his younger (i.e. seventh) self. This involved creating the CD player 10 years too soon to scramble a message the future Doctor left in a song.

Mortimus was an agent provocateur for the Gallifreyan High Council who was betrayed in an unspecified controversy. Strangely enough, he was a Gallifreyan "monk," an initiate in a secretive, scholarly Gallifreyan college. His force field deflects bullets.

• *Captain Mike Yates*: Has doubts about renewing his UNIT status because he believes in Black Star's goals of a better world, but not their means.

• *Harry Sullivan*: Harry works for the United Nations. He was visited by the Brigadier in Eritrea, and assisted food convoys there.

• *Danny Pain (a.k.a. Danny Paripski)*: Plasticine member Danny Pain had three daughters and two sons with a woman named Helen, but she left him.

• *TARDISes*: Disrupting another TARDIS' Chameleon Circuit can weaken the structure of the offenders' craft. A temporal baffle (an early Gallifreyan device) wrecks control systems.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The Chameleon Circuit disguises the TARDIS as Nelson's Column. By the end of *No Future*, the Doctor is disgusted with his Ship changing shape and literally hammers the Chameleon Circuit – the TARDIS becomes a police box again. The TARDIS has a copy of Ace's memories, and a forested hillside that resembles Heaven (*Love and War*). Mortimus could shrink the Ship into the palm of his hands.

• *Mortimus' TARDIS*: While Mortimus' TARDIS was disguised as a desk, pieces of paper on it served as portals into the craft.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Are immune to Vardan brainwashing. They can mentally enter the Vardan Mediascape.

• *Chronovores*: May be imprisoned in a ritual by the blood of an immortal or an Eternal.

• *Vardans*: Ridiculed as the only race ever outwitted by the Sontarans, the electrical-based Vardans control humans by interfering with their brains, especially through broadcasts. Strong-willed humans can override the effect. Vardans can kill with an electrical charge, and tailor their human forms to duplicate their victims. The Vardans, a militaristic race, lived by the code of "survival of the very fittest." As such, they cull their babies and leave weak ones out to die.

A greater power likely helped the Vardans transcend their physical bodies. Wave-riding Vardans can be endlessly spun in a holding pattern.

• *Eternals*: In Ace's dream, Death suggests that all Eternals have a champion.

Alien Planets

Varda: A mere 5,000 light years from Earth.

Places to Go

Vardan Mediascape: An artificial landscape, created by the Vardans using the same technology that generated the Land of Fiction. The Mediasphere grants access to the Land and the collective unconsciousness of Britain.

Organizations

• *UNIT*: United Nations Resolution 2245 allows UNIT to use "ultimate force" on hostile extra-terrestrials. Captain Pike, designated "Bloodhound Leader," was a Vardan spy, and ironically UNIT's alien liaison officer. Spontaneous human combustion happens to UNIT operatives ten times more frequently than to civilians. UNIT literally misplaces five troopers a year.

• *Broadsword*: Intelligence wing and Special Ops division of UNIT, created by the Brigadier, which uses Buddhist meditation techniques in training.

• *Plasticine*: Benny's rock band. Some lyrics to Plasticine's "Dissent is Good": "I do want to be anarchy. Oh yes I do."

• *Vardan Popular Front*: Vardan group opposed to the Vardan military. The Front favors exploring the Mediasphere, not using it to control others.

• *Black Star*: Black Star was a group of anarchists, a development of the so-called "Angry Brigade" and a creation of Mortimus' time interference. Skywatch, a satellite in geo-stationary orbit, relayed information to Black Star ground forces. Julie Quinlan served as leader until she was killed by Vardan troops.

Time Travel

Although artificial parallel universes drain energy from the real Universe, some natural-spawned alternatives such as Morgaine's continuum ("Battlefield") sometimes exist. The Doctor mentions that Time can be very neat – if the Brigadier is killed too early, someone else will have his adventures with the Doctor. Chronovores such as Artemis can apparently rewrite time without creating an alternate future.

History

• The fourth Doctor once performed at Find The Lady with a young David Bowie.

• In 1976, the terrorist group Black Star bombed Big Ben's face. The group also hit Harrods, Albert Hall and the Science Museum.

• For that matter, 1976 was an odd year. As Mortimus' agent, Ace grazed Queen Elizabeth II with a bullet, the first deliberately inflicted injury on a monarch since Charles I lost his head. In other tragedies, Pink Floyd's plane was lost over the English channel and entertainer Jimmy Tarbuck was wounded by a hit-and-run driver. On a happy note, a Live Peace Concert,

organized by Robert Bertram (Mortimus) featured Paul McCartney and Wings.

• On Varda, the democratic Vardan Popular Front seized power.

At the End of the Day

Not as revolutionary as previous Cornell works, the emotion-seeped *No Future* nonetheless triumphs, full of moments that rip out your heartstrings. Benny is bowed when the Doctor appears dead. It marks the payoff as the angst plaguing the TARDIS crew, as Ace symbolically "kills" the Doctor who betrayed her in *Love and War*. The Monk, a mighty-yet-tragic figure, rants to the Doctor: "I'll make [Ace] my companion! I'll make her love me!" Overall, one of the strongest novels, a story about restored TARDIS camaraderie that's a joy to read.

Tragedy Day

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin New Adventure #26. Release Date: March 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Olleril and Pangloss, 5597.

Summary

Five minutes after randomly landing on the planet Olleril, the Doctor and Benny are expelled from the city while Ace is deported to a test island where mutated Slaag creatures run amok eating everything. On Olleril, the nefarious cult of Luminus rules from the shadows and of course the Doctor encounters them. A Luminus agent, hoping to appease the Doctor, rescues Ace.

Meanwhile, the nebulous Friars of Pangloss send bounty hunters after a piece of red glass the Doctor took in his first incarnation – a piece of red glass that carries a terrible curse on it. Luminus agents replace the Doctor with an android double, thus tricking Ace and Benny into revealing the TARDIS' location. Luminus then steals the Ship and takes it to their submarine base, the *Gargantuan*.

The Friars hire the services of the bounty hunter Ernest, a giant, six-shooting spider, who shoots the fake Doctor and tracks the TARDIS. But as Ernest enters the *Gargantuan*, Slaags attack him and he sabotages the submarine, moments before he becomes Slaag crap.

The real Doctor discovers Luminus is led by Crispin, a deranged, genius youth who's constructed a psychotronic generator that will install order on Olleril – by turning everyone into characters from the domestic show "Martha and Arthur." The generator works, but the late Ernest's sabotage to the *Gargantuan*'s generator causes the ship to buckle, releasing the Slaags. The Doctor and company escape, but Crispen is crushed and the *Gargantuan* is destroyed.

The Friars' glass communicator transports the Doctor to Pangloss and he

finds it akin to Hell – a barren landscape where the people are suppressed. The TARDIS' power of travel proves too tempting for the Friars, and they "convince" the Doctor to take them to Olleril. The Doctor lands near a dance floor where young hotshots perform, knowing a deadly, random burst of anti-matter could kill them at any moment, and a surge of the energy disrupts the Friars' links with each other, spinning them hopelessly out of control in the Vortex, alone and powerless.

The Doctor announces to the people of Olleril that the cursed red glass they feared for so many years – is red glass. Nothing more or less. The TARDIS leaves the self-actualized people to rebuild.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor blatantly drops a match and screams "Fire!", then douses his pursuers in fire extinguisher foam. The Doctor demands a cheese sandwich, mostly to inconvenience his captors. And, as chaos breaks out, the Doctor shakes with anger, picks the self-pitying child villain Crispin up by the scruff of the neck and informs him: "I said it would all end in tears."

Sex and Spirits

Little Crispin develops an extremely juvenile and quasi-pubescent crush on Benny. Ace snogged Paul Wilkinson, one year above her in school, behind a fair generator.

Ass-Whuppings

Stars, what a bloodbath. Ace kills three, and the assassin Ernest shoots a duplicate Doctor. Crispin shoots the assassin Meredith but is himself crushed. Slaags munch the men aboard the *Gargantuan* before the ship explodes.

Continuity

The Doctor steps onto a filming set for "Captain Millennium," a show he watched in *The Highest Science*, also by Roberts.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Time Lord still wears a blue gemstone ring "one of his few remaining secrets." He keeps a bank account on Pantorus. He once fell asleep on the Bognor beach and washed up at Hove. He can trim hedges into

TARDIS shapes at superspeed. Androids can't copy the Doctor's vast mind completely. He has experience delivering babies. A detector helps him find the red glass.

Benny explains that variations in localized atmospheric pressure can create similar speech patterns at locations galaxies apart. This could explain the seventh Doctor's Scottish accent.

• *Ace*: Ace swore not to go back to the dentist after age nine. Ace's mom was a hairdresser's assistant, working in a salon called Rene's in the Broadway. Ace fought nausea on carnival rides.

• *Crispin (a.k.a. "Supreme One")*: Little Crispen took over Luminus at age six. By age 12, he had five degrees in advanced science, but loathed other children. Crispen became terribly confused – he wanted to shut Luminus down, keep it going, make out with Bernice, etc. He's likely the youngest "Who" villain.

• *Friars of Pangloss*: There were three Friars: The feared Portellus, the thin-and-wise Anonius and the shorter and timid Caphymus. They were immortal and immeasurably powerful, able to bend raw matter or ectoplasm at will and tether stars, but their telepathic abilities were spread a bit thin. They often resorted to human agents such as the mystic mediums on Frinjel 87. The Friars claimed the red glass was an instrument of their power.

The brothers gained power from entropy heat, so a reversal of basic scientific laws – such as anti-matter – screwed them royally. Time Lady Pandorastrumnelliahanfloriana researched this weakness. With the Friars' minds set adrift in the Vortex, slaves hurled their physical bodies into a flame pit.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Has curiosity circuits, which the Doctor forgot to reset.

Alien Races

Bivalve Heart Species include Time Lords, a couple of monopod species and a drone race.

Alien Planets

• *Pangloss* lies in a vast, uncharted region of space, It orbits a red giant. The workers live in hovels with the Immortal Heart shrine, decorated in red crystal, towering above them. Number of Pangloss Bibles: 337. Olleril is the nearest inhabited planet.

• *Olleril*: At the far end of the Pristatrek galaxy, Olleril has two small suns. Visitors are rare. Empirica's the most powerful city-state, while Vijja's small and poor. Thanks to Luminus' interference with society, the levels of technology range from "level three to level six." Tragedy Day on Olleril is meant as a day of generosity for the less fortunate.

• *Slaags*: The Slaags are totally vile creatures bio-engineered from Sline lizards and Aaglon sharks. They crap almost immediately after they eat, so they're always hungry. They'll even munch many forms of wood and metal, but can't eat jauxite. They're restricted to water and are blind, reacting to movement. You can also eat them, preferably in a Frestand cheese sauce. They have leathery, pea green skin, purple blood and two antennae atop a bulbous, scaly body.

Organizations

Luminus had many branches and controlled everything on Olleril – science, politics, wars, everything. Luminus considered Western 20th century Earth a fine model of control and a good society to replicate. It introduced coercive capitalism with a manageable level of poverty.

Stuff You Need

The Dancefloor of Destruction is a curious nightclub feature on Olleril. Patrons – mostly young punks, one presumes – dance, knowing there's a thousand to one chance of the stage surging with anti-matter at any moment and kill them.

History

• Olleril's history speaks of the planet's ancestors being cursed by a piece of red glass. In fact, the red glass was perfectly ordinary, a device used by the Friars of Pangloss to keep their slaves under control. Luminus settled the planet six centuries ago and could have taken direct control at any point.

• On Olleril, the first Doctor neutralized radiation from a crashed spacecraft's engine by spreading a special blue powder. The natives gave him the red glass to protect them from its "curse."

• If not for the Doctor, Henry VIII might have written *Greenfly* instead of *Greensleeves*. The Time Lord also delivered Genghis Khan, and said he looked like a sweet baby. He advised Mary, Queen of Scotts to change her muckspreader.

At the End of the Day

A breakneck pace finishes this meaty piece of satire, speckled with Roberts' characteristic wit and humor. Some comparison to "The Greatest Show in the Galaxy" is unavoidable, given the cosmic-powered Friars of Pangloss (read: The gods of Ragnarok) and the geeky genius Crispin (read: Whizkid), but *Tragedy Day* grows stronger for it. It's the sort of nice satire that TV writer Robert Holmes produced, with Gareth Roberts cheekily pointing out how drop-in-the-bucket charity events are quick-fix ways of making the masses feel good about their wealth. Guralza's comments about movies and television being rubbish strike home, complimenting a fine read.

Legacy

Author: Gary Russell. Virgin New Adventure #25. Release Date: April 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Io, 3984. (The TARDIS crew travels to Peladon via shuttle.)

Summary

When the daughter of the Federation chairman dies sending an important message about relic thefts, authorities suspect the return of a malevolent, sentient circlet named the Ancient Diadem. The Federation chairman, an old friend of the Doctor's, asks the Time Lord to assist. While Ace follows a stolen-art trail to the Pakhar homeworld, the Doctor and Benny pursue a relic thief to Peladon.

There, the Doctor reunites with his old friends Alpha Centauri and Lady Lianna. They introduce him to Peladon's new ruler, King Tarrol, son of the late Queen Thalira. Peladon proceeds to celebrate the biennial restatement of King Tarrol's Ascendancy Vows, even as the Ancient Diadem is smuggled off Pakha by mercenaries.

As sacred Peladonian artifacts go missing, Lianna is murdered, pinned to the wall by a sacred spear. The Doctor arrives too late to save his old friend and is convicted of the crime. The Martian Ambassador Savaar executes the Doctor by beheading him, but "the Doctor" is only a hologram, designed to flush out Lianna's real killer.

The murderer stands revealed as a crooked art dealer posing as Federation Representative Nic Reece, intent on stealing Peladon's historical treasures. Attempting to flee with Benny as a hostage, Reece dies in battle with King Tarrol. The Ancient Diadem possesses one of Reece's mercenaries and tries to flee, but is blasted out of space by the Martian Deep Space Cruiser *Bruk*.

Because of the chaos brought by Federation officials and citizens such as Reece, King Tarrol feels that Peladon must be more self-sufficient and

announces that the planet will leave the Federation for at least 50 years. The Ancient Diadem intelligence survives in the burnt-out husk of its host body, and the Doctor, knowing the Diadem is alive, vows to await its return.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor tries to remove a spear from the impaled Lianna, and for once feels total, uncontrollable panic. Savaar notes the Doctor hates Martians with an unbridled venom for something they did thousands of years ago.

Sex and Spirits

Ace bangs Bill Cook, first mate aboard the freighter *Arrow*, in Captain Riddler's cabin. When Riddler discovers them, a totally naked Ace holds Riddler at blaster point and frisks her for weapons.

Benny fancies Nic Reece – a pity since he's a murderous slimedog. Benny kisses Savaar as part of a plan to help the Doctor – Savaar confesses that he liked it. Benny chugged hard on her 30th birthday.

Ass-Whuppings

Queen Thalira and Gebek ("The Monster of Peladon") died in an unseen shuttle accident that exposed them to space. Thalira's handmaiden Lianna (also "Monster") is speared to death by Nic Reece.

Continuity

The third Doctor helped Peladon join the Galactic Federation and met Alpha Centauri, Commander Izlyr and the late King Peladon in "The Curse of Peladon." Peladon refinery's self-defense mechanism slowly killed people by neutralizing its victim's autonomic nervous system. Sarah Jane Smith's influence led to Queen Thalira radically reshaping Pel society ("The Monster of Peladon"). Chancellor Goth ("The Deadly Assassin") helped conspire to send the third Doctor to Peladon.

The food machine from "The Daleks" is finally replaced. Mavic Chen succeeded Madame Amazonia as Guardian of the Solar System ("The Daleks' Master Plan"). Lurmans mentally age a lot slower than humans – they might look like adults, but could mentally be only 11 years old ("Carnival of Monsters"). Some Ogri are augmented to serve as gate guards ("The Stones of Blood"). Ace beats a teddy bear labeled "Mike Smith" with a baseball bat, swearing at it and accusing it of betraying her

("Remembrance of the Daleks").

At the end of *Legacy*, Benny leaves the TARDIS for three months on an expedition to Phaester Osiris with Savaar's brother Rhukk to uncover the riddle of the Osirians. She joins up with the Doctor and Ace on Menaxus in *Theatre of War*. The real Sword of Tuburr appears in *GodEngine*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor has an irrational and deep rooted mistrust of Martians. He hasn't visited Peladon since "The Monster of Peladon," and carries a tiny stone sculpture of Aggedor.

Benny watches the Doctor's eyes turn from coal-black to blue to green. As a gift for assisting with Peladon, the Time Lords give the Doctor a traveling chess set. He learned to flip his hat from a friend in the Moscow State Circus.

• *The third Doctor*: Helped defeat Vor'r'na, a Pakhar possessed by the Ancient Diadem.

• *Ace*: Ace served as Hamster Monitor in Miss Marshall's class. Alas, she came in one morning and found both hamsters dead – and suspected Chad Boyle (*Timewyrm: Revelation*) had killed them.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: When the TARDIS stopped in Liverpool last week, Benny made a field trip to "Ancient Mersey" to see the birthplace of the Beatles. Her fellow archaeologist Clive was a prankster and one of her best friends. She knows enough about Martian physiognomy to stun them comatose. She becomes long-lasting friends with Savaar.

• *Chancellor Geban*: Son of Chancellor Gebek. Geban was killed in an explosion.

• *Lianna*: Queen Thalira's handmaiden and confidante had a daughter named Atissa, who became the High Priest of Peladon. Lianna's husband, Lofton, was also killed in the shuttle accident that slew Queen Thalira.

• *King Peladon ("The Curse of Peladon")*: The late King Peladon's father was named Kellion, who died in a hunting accident. Ellua, princess of Europa, was his mother.

• *Commander Izlyr ("The Curse of Peladon")*: A deep space cruiser class is named after him. He became a Supreme Lord, retiring to the planet Bennion.

• *Supreme Commander Savaar*: Current Martian ambassador to Peladon. Savaar comes from the family of Lassaal, and serves as supreme

commander of the Martian fleet and chief executive of the Federation Corps. Professor Rhukk is a famous archaeologist and Savaar's second brother.

• *The Terrible Zodin ("The Five Doctors," "Attack of the Cybermen")*: Few people stay awake through the entire story of the terrible Zodin and her giant animals, which were either grasshoppers or Ch'tizz. (The Doctor forgets which villain had the grasshoppers and who had the giant kangaroos.)

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Ace has reprogrammed the TARDIS to respond to voice commands and to holographically design weapons, then build them for her. She installed a food machine that gives out real food. Only Susan, Romana and Ace accurately got the TARDIS to reconfigure things. Adric tried, but his mathematics couldn't cope.

Alien Races

• *Peladonians*: Have shorter life spans than humans – about 65 years at most, and even that's due to Federation technology.

• *Alpha Centaurians*: Though normally olive-green, Alpha Centaurians glow a jaundiced yellow when irritated, and turn crimson when angered. When subdued, they're purple. As hermaphrodites, the drive to reproduce comes naturally, assisted by the proper mental urges. Their heads have a weak spot, to the side of the eye.

• *Martians*: Young Martians take the oath of Tuburr, the first great warrior on Mars. They must draw a sword shaft from the heart of a red-hot blazer with their bare hands. When Martians changed their warlike tendencies, the legendary sacred Sword of Tuburr was deliberately lost, hidden on Olympus Mons on Mars.

Ice Warriors have stubby fingers under their gloves. Shsurr is a term of respect reserved for family, the Martian equivalent of "M'Lady."

• *Pakhar*: Look like giant hamsters.

• *Cantryans*: Orange-skinned, with three thick fingers and no fingernails.

Alien Planets

• *Peladon*: Alcohol is not allowed on the planet. The atmosphere prevents matter transportation.

• *Pakha*: A peaceful blue-green planet, roughly the size of earth's moon. It's a tourist's dream.

• *Io*: One of the 700 wonders of the Universe, terraformed over a 70 year

period with millions of Federation credits. The Federation chair is located there.

Places to Go

Mount Megeshra ("The Curse of Peladon"), the site of Peladon's citadel, is the highest, widest and most deadly of Peladon's mountains.

Stuff You Need

Peladon's sacred objects include the Chalice of Blood, used on accession day. The Crown of Sherak belonged to Peladon's first king, who made Aggedor royal protector. Sherak used the Lance of Aggedor to make Aggedor a blood brother. The Sword of Truth can resist blasterfire.

Ships

Bruk, the Federation flagship, is a Deep Space Cruiser owned by the Martian Star Fleet.

History

Time Lord scanners showed a future where the Peladon conference helped spark an intergalactic war ("The Curse of Peladon").

History

• Peladon ruled by a joint council until the Peladonian Erak killed his rival Narral and tried to make himself king. Sherak, son of Gart, in turned killed Erak and became Peladon's first king. Gart became the first king's champion. Sherak went to the dark side of Megeshra and became a blood brother to the sacred beast Aggedor. Gart objected to this, then realized his mistake and exiled himself.

• Pakha had centuries of tranquillity. The Ancient Diadem fueled a terrible war but was defeated.

• Martians as a warrior race were nearly extinct by the mid-26th century.

• Mid-39th century humans live about 120 years.

• King Tarrol, feeling that Peladon must be self-sufficient, severed ties with the Federation but asked that representatives return in 50 years. This meant that when a Dalek/Federation war broke out in 30 years, Peladon avoided the fighting.

At the End of the Day

Painful. For lack of any sizeable plot, Legacy defaults in parts to bloodbaths, also relying on pointless continuity references and the framework established in previous Peladon stories to carry it through. Problem is, they don't. Even worse are the central villains: Nic Reece, who makes so many mistakes a laundry boy could have unmasked him, and the Ancient Diadem, an intelligence hyped to be capable of toppling civilizations, but which gets blasted to smithereens at the flick of a switch.

Theatre of War

Author: Justin Richards. Virgin New Adventure #26. Release Date: May 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Planet Menaxus, just off the edge of the Rippearean Cluster, and the planet Heletia, 3985. Unnamed planet, unnamed time, at sunrise.

Summary

Fresh from her expedition to Phaester Osiris, Benny is asked to join a dig on Menaxus, a planet reputed for its love of theatre. But when the expedition members start dying violently, Benny uses her homing device to summon the Doctor and Ace.

Upon the Doctor's arrival, two discoveries come to light. First, the team finds a Menaxan projector that shows holographic recordings of plays, including the famed but long-lost drama, *The Good Soldiers*. And second, near the mainstage, three large stone statues are uncovered – statues that look exactly like the Doctor, Ace and expedition leader Lannic.

Much to everyone's horror, the animated statues begin crushing and suffocating the expedition party. The Doctor and company stage a hair-raising escape with the projector and return to the expedition's homeworld of Heletia, a planet also famed for its love of theatre – and for its Nazi-like treatment of conquered territories.

At the famed Braxiatel Collection, located on an asteroid and founded by Time Lord Irving Braxiatel, Benny's research indicates the design of the Menaxus theatre is totally impractical. The whole site's built more like a ruin than a theatre. Also, beyond the theatre, no records from Menaxus' long-dead society exist. Benny concludes Menaxan civilization never existed. The theatre and its projector were likely planted for the Heletians to "unearth," and the projector created statues of the Doctor and company to spur them to leave – with the projector in tow.

The Doctor enters the projector's holographic matrix and discovers it's

programmed to stage a real slaughter at the end of *The Good Soldiers* and kill the Heletian officials. The Doctor rewrites the projector's story to prevent the massacre, but at a request from Braxiatel, the Doctor's old associate, the Doctor creates a diversion that allows Benny to deactivate Heletia's defenses. The planet and its oppressive people consequently fall to a sudden attack from their enemies, the Rippeareans. In the confusion, expedition leader Lannic murders the oppressive Heletian leader named the Exec, whose army that butchered her husband and child and, it's implied, raped her. The Doctor, outwitted, realizes the Exec's assassination was probably Braxiatel's goal from the start.

Memorable Moments

When the seventh Doctor discusses the sights he's seen – from the Eye of Orion to the black hole of Tartarus to playing backgammon with Kublai Khan and more – we see how much ground the "Who" series has covered.

Sex and Spirits

Benny unbuttons her blouse to seduce a junior technician and grab his blaster. (Thank Heavens she grabs the correct hard object.) She also drinks Craxiatanian Chardonnay.

Continuity

Thought the Braxiatel Collection was exclusive to the "Doctor Who" novels? Nay. Romana mentions the Braxiatel Collection to the Doctor on the way to the Louvre ("City of Death"). The Collection is rumored to have Perry's original survey notes from the disastrous Telos expedition. ("The Tomb of the Cybermen").

We learn about Braxiatel's earlier encounter with the first Doctor in *The Empire of Glass*. Benny joined Supreme Commander Savaar's expedition at the end of *Legacy*, which first mentioned Irving Braxiatel and the Braxiatel Collection.

This is the first mention of Benny's book *Down Among the Dead Men*. In the Benny New Adventures, she's constantly working on a sequel, but never finishing it.

The Benny NA *Tears of the Oracle* reveals that Irving Braxiatel is the Doctor's brother (no kidding). We learn here that Braxiatel has an interest in the Ormand-Seltec Corporation, showing in the Benny New Adventures how he knows to deactivate an Ormand-Setec Security System.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor holds ticket 0001 to the Braxiatel Collection. His expert navicomp skills evade many warships. He hasn't been to the theatre in centuries and knows some ventriloquism.

He asked a teacher, apparently Borusa, why they learned temporal theory instead of doing stuff. Borusa claimed theory was as important as practice, that without knowing what you were doing, you couldn't know what you were doing. (It's easy to see why the Doctor left Gallifrey.)

• *Ace*: Can pilot the shuttle *Pride of Padrillion*.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny published an archaeological book called *Down Among the Dead Men* in 2566. She forms a strong friendship with Ice Lord Savaar and his archaeologist brother Rhukk. Her hobbies include bug collecting and poker. For once, Benny wears a full-length scarlet dress.

• *Irving Braxiatel*: A Time Lord who claims to have known the Doctor "forever." This might not be the same Braxiatel incarnation that appears in *The Empire of Glass*, though he doesn't seem to have changed a lick. He founded the famed Braxiatel Collection.

• *The Doctor and Braxiatel*: The seventh Doctor concedes that Braxiatel is a grand master of political chess and a formidable actor, too, if a bit melodramatic. Most of the time, Braxiatel and the Doctor agree on the ends if not the means. Braxiatel clearly has a warm regard for the Doctor, who calls him "young Braxiatel." The Doctor leaves without meeting face-to-face with Braxiatel – perhaps unwilling to admit Braxiatel outwitted him.

Places to Go

The Braxiatel Collection is a famous collection of everything. Irving Braxiatel supposedly won an asteroid playing cards and set about terraforming it to house the Collection. Distinguished individuals can use the Collection for research, but must give their findings to the Collection's archives. Archivist Elliniko is in charge of the archaeology libraries.

Stuff You Need

• *The Good Soldiers*: Stage play universally acclaimed as the greatest work of Stanoff Osterling, considered to be in Shakespeare's league. The full *Good Soldiers* manuscript was lost for centuries, which likely added to its reputation. Irving Braxiatel in fact owned a copy (in the Doctor's handwriting).

The basic gist of *Good Soldiers* is that six soldiers from the Ragussan army meet in the town of Limlough before a battle. They dine, and five of them act jubilant – only Jorvik is discrete and introspective. Robot armies of Samrong destroy the Ragussan army, but the six soldiers survive and re-meet two months later, trapped in a castle besieged by their enemies. They are boastful about their victories, and the quiet Jorvik suggests they watch a play.

The characters of the play represent Jorvik's five colleagues – and all meet violent ends. Jorvik then reveals that the five soldiers, "good soldiers" all, only survived because they were deserters. Suddenly, the players reveal themselves as the robot soldiers of Samrong – the traitor Jorvik has sold them out. The soldiers are killed in a fashion similar to their play counterparts. Only Jorvik the traitor survives, true to his misguided beliefs.

• *Menaxan Projector*: Device created by Braxiatel as a way of invading Heletia from the inside and allowing Lannic the chance to assassinate the Exec. The Menaxan projector was allegedly invented by a man named Aronholt – based on Elliniko, curator of the archaeology department of the Braxiatel Collection. The projector could show stage plays by creating solid statues or characters. It could also replace real individuals with duplicates lacking in true emotion.

Time Travel

Faster-than-light travel doesn't mean there's a time-warp effect, merely that people are traveling faster than light.

History

• The Doctor insists he isn't to blame for Walter Raleigh's execution.

• By the start of the 23rd century, drama had badly devolved to the Greek model – action largely happened off-stage. Stanoff Osterling wrote his famed *The Good Soldiers* in 2273. The play was slightly revolutionary by including an *on stage* massacre. The Doctor's handwriting on an original draft proves he helped with it.

• Locris Marlock became Manact of Heletia through political chess-playing and an heaping reliance on assassination. There was a dramatic justice when the ruling Exec and Marlock were killed by Lannic, whose husband and child were killed by Heletian troops. However, it's also implied that Lannic was created by the Menaxian projector and only existed as a character to murder the Exec.

At the End of the Day

Haunting, like good theatre. There's a quick-paced, terrifying "The Mummy's Hand" feel in the first half as cold, shadowy death approaches. The solutions in the quieter, more cerebral second half turn over like facets on a crystal. Benny proves that she's foremost in her field, clinically answering the Menaxan riddle and upstaging the Doctor. The well-planned ending – where the Doctor is slightly chilled to learn Braxiatel bested him – tops a nourishing read.

All-Consuming Fire

Author: Andy Lane. Virgin New Adventure #27. Release Date: June 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Jabalhabad, India, March 1843 (the first and seventh Doctors make separate trips). The TARDIS stays at Professor Litefoot's house in London from 1887 until the San Francisco earthquake, 1906.

Summary

Returning to England, famed detective Sherlock Holmes and his companion Dr. John Watson are hired by none other than Pope Leo XIII. His holiness requests that Holmes recover three books on mythical beasts that have been stolen from the Library of St. John the Beheaded, a repository of forbidden texts.

In London, Holmes and Watson meet the Doctor, the last man to read the stolen books and whose researches may have motivated the books' theft. Holmes' elder brother Sherringford admits that their father's diary was one of the books stolen. Sherringford also says he used the information therein, acquired by their father during his time in India, to pierce the dimensional veil and friendly aliens from the planet Ry'leh.

The aliens far that Baron Maupertuis, the man who stole the Library books, will shortly invade Ry'leh with his criminal army to restore the "glory" of the British Empire. The Doctor, Sherlock Holmes and Watson pursue the Baron to India. At Maupertuis' base, the heroes fight fierce winged creatures of Indian myth called Rakshassa, but finally open a gateway to Ry'leh and pursue the Baron.

Ace, dispatched earlier by the Doctor to investigate Ry'leh, shoots the Baron as he's about to kill Watson – but that hardly solves our heroes' troubles. The Doctor discovers Ry'leh is the home of Azathoth, a giant, powerful slug and one of the Great Old Ones. Sherringford Holmes' "peaceful" aliens are revealed as the mercenary Shlangii, who once

restrained Azathoth but were subverted by her. Sadly, the captive Azathoth, needing servants, has also brainwashed Sherringford and turns him into a Rakshassa.

It was Sherringford who maneuvered Maupertius' troops to fight the Shlangii, using the chaos to rescue Azathoth from its imprisonment. By opening a new gateway, Sherringford paves the way for Azathoth's arrival and likely conquest of Earth. But the Doctor instead moves the gateway's location to the 1906 San Francisco earthquake and Azathoth dies in the cataclysm. When the Sherringford-rakshassa tries to extract vengeance on Watson, Sherlock Holmes bludgeons his own brother to death with a pipe.

Stranded in 1096, the Doctor retrieves the TARDIS from the house of his friend, Professor Litefoot, where it has remained for the last 19 years. He then returns Holmes and Watson to London, 1887. With Arthur Conan Doyle's help, Watson writes of this adventure in the unpublished novel *All-Consuming Fire*.

Memorable Moments

The third Doctor, sitting in the Diogenes Club, gets stumped by a crossword and curses when the seventh Doctor holds up a paper saying, "14 Across: Sesquipedalian." And most dramatic of all, Sherlock Holmes lethally bludgeons his brother Sherringford to save Watson.

Sex and Spirits

Watson takes a gentleman's fancy to Benny, but assumes, when she cross-dresses, that she's a lesbian.

As a kid, Ace fancied a stoic Christian guy who took her to Saturday night church discos. She messed his faith over so badly, he went to a monastery in Hebrides for five years to recover. He now lives in a Woolwich squat.

The Doctor and Watson drink London beer in an era where it is laced with strychnine, "to give it body."

Ass-Whuppings

Four rakshassi are killed, one by Benny, one by Watson and Moriarty, one by Holmes, and one impaled on the Doctor's umbrella. Ace kills Baron Maupertuis to save Watson, and also the transforming fakir Tir Ram. The Great Old One Azathoth goes up in flames. Sherlock Holmes kills his brother Sherringford.

Continuity

The Great Old Ones include, from the Doctor's foes, Lloigor ("The Web Planet"), Yog-Sothoth ("The Abominable Snowman," "The Web of Fear"), the Gods of Ragnarok ("The Greatest Show in the Galaxy") and Hastur the Unspeakable ("The Curse of Fenric").

Redvers Fenn-Cooper wrote a book entitled *Adventures Amongst the Abominable Snowman*. Watson doted on Fenn-Cooper's adventures as a child ("Ghost Light"). The Doctor has trouble recalling bits of his life around the Vervoid conflict ("Trial of a Time Lord"). We get the first hint that Ace lost her virginity to (bring hither the vomit trough) Sabalom Glitz ("Dragonfire").

We learn in Lane's *The Empire of Glass* that Time Lord Irving Braxiatel founded the Library of St. John the Beheaded. The Great Old Ones were first mentioned in *White Darkness* when the Doctor fought Cthulhu. The Doctor mentions meeting Arthur Conan Doyle and Rudyard Kipling, foreshadowing *Evolution*. Holmes doesn't recognize the dirt in the Doctor's gaiter because it comes from Menaxus (*Theatre of War*). Many of Ace's smart bombs deserted her on Peladon, setting up a union with the mining machinery (*Legacy*). Software mogul Ashley Chapel becomes the owner of the Library of St. John the Beheaded in *Millennial Rites*.

The Doctor lodges in Hampstead with Professor Litefoot ("The Talons of Weng-Chiang," *The Bodysnatchers*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The first Doctor and Susan met Sherlock Holmes' father, Sigor Holmes, at the British Army cantonment in Jabalhabad, India, where Sigor told the Doctor about a strange temple in the hills. Susan wanted to travel on, so the Doctor arranged for the Library of St. John the Beheaded to acquire Sigor's journals so he'd have access to them later. The Doctor's ticket to the Library was issued 500 years ago. The first and seventh Doctors possess the exact same pocket watch.

A previous Doctor took a medical degree in Edinburgh in 1870, the same year Watson started there for his Bachelor's degree. At the Gallifreyan Academy, the Doctor failed practical theology but was highly commended for landscape gardening. In a bit of nonsense, he quotes Voltaire, claiming he is a Doctor of "metaphysico-theologico-comologo-nigology!"

The Doctor has a spatula-like right forefinger from too much prodding of large, metal creatures. He claims to have two brains, "one for everyday use,

one for best," but this is likely figurative talk. The Doctor says he doesn't *ever* have to sleep, then revises that statement, saying that he sleeps for a decade or so every hundred years. He swims only "if pushed."

He's fought the Great Old Ones for 1,000 years. A hollow compartment in his umbrella contains a oil, with which he calms an area of the Serpentine River.

The third Doctor frequents the nefarious Diogenes Club, irritating members by reading newspapers from 10 or 20 years hence as if he'd never seen them before. Unlike the sixth Doctor, the seventh isn't great on quotations.

• *Ace*: Ace doesn't like people touching her. She's a proficient hunter with a bow and arrow. She did route marches on the planet Ragnarok. The Doctor calls Ace's smart missiles "suicidal robots" and says she's exploiting thinking creatures. She only has one smart bomb left. She's long had a personal interest in the 1906 California earthquake because dynamite was involved.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny lived in the slums of Avernus, where dead bodies rot where they drop, and a squat above a throat-gelding shop in the mires of Zellen VIII. She now can't stand the stench of decay. She claims 19th century Earth is the most alien place she's been. Sherlock Holmes compliments her on being a superb agent. Benny doesn't have a brother.

• *Arthur Conan Doyle*: The famed author merely edited stories of "Sherlock Holmes and Doctor John Watson." Those names are merely pseudonyms, to protect the detectives from undue publicity.

• *Sherlock Holmes*: The great detective, his real name unknown, prefers being referred to by his pseudonym of Sherlock Holmes. He hasn't heard of the Library of St. John the Beheaded. Holmes gets terribly depressed on Ry'leh because he can't use his comprehensive and deductive knowledge – everything is too alien. The Doctor is the strangest man he's met. Sherlock Holmes gained the faith of Pope Leo XIII by recovering the Vatican cameos.

• *Sherringford Holmes*: The elder brother of Sherlock and Mycroft, who stays at the old family farmstead. His brain is sharper than Sherlock and Mycroft's put together. At his death, Sherringford regretted his actions as Azathoth's agent.

• *Doctor John Watson*: Watson recalls an Australian afternoon fishing with his father and brother as the happiest day of his life. Watson lived in San Francisco for a year.

• *Professor Moriarty*: The ultimate Sherlock Holmes nemesis, Moriarty

grows upset that Baron Maupertuis has been drawing from his criminal army. He writes a paper on the mathematics of folding higher dimensions (sound familiar?), but says nobody will understand it but himself.

• *Professor Challenger*: This "fictional" detective was "real" and a patron of the Library of St. John the Beheaded, with an address in care of the Royal Society.

• *Azathoth*: A god of anarchy and chaos, and one of a pantheon worshipped on various planets. The Silurians ("The Silurians") venerated them, as did a cult of the Shobogans on Gallifrey ("The Invasion of Time"). Azathoth was larval when it developed its powers and became the weakest of the Great Old Ones. It manifested as a big fat slug, with terrible black drool and a horrific stench.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Travel by TARDIS is like folding a map with two points. If you put the two points on top of one another, you could step directly from one to the other. The Ship contains a book called *Every Gallifreyan Child's Pop-Up Book of Nasty Creatures From Other Dimensions*, with four-dimensional pop-ups. Slang confuses the TARDIS' language translator.

Alien Races

• *The Great Old Ones*: As the universe that preceded ours died, the Great Old Ones shunted themselves into a parallel universe to survive destruction, then immediately jumped back into ours. Their universe, however, had different physical laws, including a different speed of light and electron charge, so they gained fantastic powers. Numbered among the Great Old Ones is Dagon, a being worshipped by the Sea Devils, and Nyarlathotep, whom the Doctor "hopes to never encounter."

• *Rakshassi*: Beings converted by Azathoth and associated with Hindu worship of the death goddess Kali. Rakshassi were venomous, crimson creatures, armored like a crustacean that walked on tallied points of thick, billowing wings.

• *Shlangii*: Among the most feared mercenaries in the Universe, able to use certain sounds to pierce dimensional veils. They appear to be a bizarre combination of a handful of pipe-cleaners and a walnut, with five spindly legs that jut in odd directions.

Alien Planets

Ry'leh, an ice world, saw its star go nova, imploding to a colder, smaller

core. Ry'leh's atmosphere froze, but wasn't tight. Heat from the planet's core melted interior layers of ice back into an atmosphere. Pillars of mountains now support an oppressive ice sky. The Earthly juncture with Ry'leh is best achieved at the Plain of Leng.

Places to Go

The Library of St. John the Beheaded, a repository for banned, forbidden texts, has an exceptional selection of Catholic Church-banned works. In 1887, Jehosephat Ambrose serves as Head Librarian. The librarians don't read the books, lest they go insane.

The Library is located in London, Holborn, the crime-filled area known as the St. Giles Rookery. The Library appears to derive from the Venetian Church of S. Giovanni Decollato, or "S. Zan Degola," as the locals call it.

Two local gangs, led by Jitter and Mack "The Knife" Yeovil act as security. The gangs also watch each other.

Among the Library's many works are Shakespeare's lost play "Love's Labours Wonne," the unexpurgated version of the *Malleus Maleficarum*, five lost plays by Aristophanes, the only complete transcript of Galileo Galilei's trial and shelves of works on the Chinese Si Fan society and its leader, Doctor Fu Manchu. There's also proof of Fermat's Last Theorem.

History

Forebearers of the fakir Tir Ram created the gateway to Ry'leh and believed it to be the realm of Siva, the Destroyer. They built a worship temple in the hills of Jabalhabad, India.

At the End of the Day

A little long, but damn fine work. The humanity displayed by *All-Consuming Fire* wins the day, even if the main villain, the giant slug Azathoth, is a big bloated wimp. Lane painstakingly captures the flavor of Conan Doyle's stories, and Sherlock's brother Sherringford makes a fine addition to the Holmes mythology. The end result: Mostly a Holmes story, but far more of a "Doctor Who" book than other pretenders.

Blood Harvest

Author: Terrance Dicks. Virgin New Adventure #28. Release Date: July 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny, with Romana.

Travel Log

Chicago, 1929; the Vampire Planet, date unknown; Gallifrey.

Summary

As the Doctor prepares to track down Agonal – an immortal entity literally feasts on the suffering of others – his ex-companion Romana summons him to the Vampire Planet in E-Space. The Doctor dispatches Benny to aid Romana, then tracks Agonal to Chicago, 1929, where the fiend's mental influence stirs up violence between the city's mobs. As a cover, the Doctor opens a speakeasy named Doc's Place, located just off Dearborn, with Ace serving as his hired muscle. The infamous gangster Al Capone grows suspicious of the new speakeasy and hires detective Tom Dekker to investigate it. The Doctor therefore arranges a meeting with Capone and saves him from a rival hit. A grateful Capone designates Doc's Place neutral ground and asks to hold mob conferences there, even as the Doctor continues to watch for Agonal. Dekker quickly makes friends with the Doctor and Ace.

But Agonal is also on the Vampire Planet, working behind the scenes to drive hostilities between the planet's peasants and nobility. Agonal feasts on the fear and suffering produced as outright war breaks out, especially when a group of vampires swoop down and lunch on everyone in sight. Even worse, Agonal has cloned the Great Vampire, formerly killed by the fourth Doctor, and intend to set the vampires loose on the Universe.

On Earth, the Doctor fails to trap Agonal at a mob meeting. Benny, terrified by the vampires' power, summons the Doctor to the Vampire Planet. The Doctor, Ace and Dekker travel in the TARDIS to the Vampire Planet, where the Doctor again tries to lock Agonal's essence in a mechanical container. But suddenly, a Time Scoop from Gallifrey teleports

Agonal away. As the cloned Great Vampire prepares to awaken, the Doctor destroys Agonal's laboratory. The sluggish Vampire flees into the sunlight and is killed.

On Gallifrey, a secret triumvirate of Time Lords loyal to ex-President Borusa (imprisoned in Rassilon's tomb in "The Five Doctors") prepares to use Agonal as a weapon to free their mentor. Borusa is freed, but Rassilon swats Agonal aside and imprisons him in Borusa's place. Borusa, having seen the error of his ways, agrees to return to his imprisonment, but Rassilon grants Borusa worthy of release and transports him to another dimension.

Romana chooses to remain on Gallifrey, while the Doctor bequeaths Doc's Place to his barman and Dekker. The TARDIS returns to Chicago, where Ace and Dekker spend a night as lovers. But when Benny examines a box of her artifacts, she finds the vampire Yarven inside. Yarven, having stowed away in the Doctor's TARDIS to escape the vampire purges on the Vampire Planet, flees into the night. Benny starts to panic, but the Doctor arrives and assures her he's already dealt with the problem, leading to events in the fifth Doctor's Goth Opera.

Memorable Moments

As the Doctor talks about neutralizing Agonal, Dekker feels his blood freezing and wonders if the little Doctor is a killer after all. As Dekker and Ace leave the bar for wild nookie, the Doctor plays the piano while Benny sings the blues – all's well. But when Benny screams as the vampire Yarven jumps out of her cargo box, in rushes the Doctor, Dekker wearing only a sheet and a Colt .45, Ace in a Browning and an extraordinary garment in black silk and the doorman in a nightgown and shotgun.

Sex and Spirits

Ace and Dekker make the hot monkey love. The Doctor brews beer in the TARDIS swimming pool and whisky in the bathtub. He runs a Chicago speakeasy, but doesn't seem to drink anything. He can identify Krug 21 champagne.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace shoots rival gangster Morelli in the head. Dekker guns down lesser clones of vampire lords Zargo, Camilla and Aukon ("State of Decay"). The Great Vampire dies – again.

Continuity

Blood Harvest serves as the direct sequel to both "State of Decay" and "The Five Doctors." Since "Decay," Ivo's wife Marta has died from exhaustion and we learn the late Tarak had a son of the same name. Kalmar continued to live in the rebel base, but Yarven's agents here murder him. Agonal removed the Great Vampire's hand for cloning. The rebel camp had a Truth Machine.

After "Warrior's Gate," the Tharils became "mostly free" and re-established interplanetary travel. K-9 serves as Biroc's Lord High Administrator. The music the fifth Doctor plays in "The Five Doctors" is called "Rassilon's Lament." Councilor Rath is the younger brother of the late Chancellor Goth ("The Deadly Assassin").

There's also a large amount of contradiction here. K-9 supposedly used the Hydrax data banks to plot safe passage into and out of E-Space, but the fifth Doctor in "Earthshock" insists the trip is too dangerous. There are other villages on the Vampire Planet, going against contradictory claims in "State of Decay." Romana says she's a "Gallifrey girl at heart," an abrupt reversal from "Full Circle" and others.

Time Lady Romana meets Ruathadvorophrenaltid and Lord Yarven travels to Earth in the TARDIS, both events sparking *Goth Opera*. The Doctor returns Spandrell's Gallifreyan Army Knife, first mentioned in Dicks' *Timewyrm: Exodus*. Dekker reappears in the sixth Doctor's *Players*, also by Dicks.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Not only does the Doctor acclimate to Ace's use of violence, he's an expert with a sawed-off shotgun. He can pilot the TARDIS into E-Space with little difficulty. He can play the piano. Chicago police think the Doctor is the criminal "Doc McCoy." His crystal sphere of memories could have imprisoned Agonal if he'd touched it. He's urged the Time Lords to do something about Agonal for some time.

• *Ace*: The mobsters call Ace, the Doctor's main gun and blackjack dealer, "the lady in black." Her field-cryogenics disc puts wounded persons into stasis for later treatment.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny used to be employed by the Ellerycorp Foundation. Ace gave her weapons training. "Professor" was an affectionate title bestowed by the kids Benny helped while hiding in the woods. She can sing the blues.

• *Romana*: Romana admits she partly left the TARDIS because the Doctor can be overpowering at times. She can communicate telepathically with the Doctor across time and space, and perhaps to horses. She's a good harp player and returns to Gallifrey to resume her studies. She talks about the Doctor's companions like they're all interesting but faintly eccentric kinds of pets.

• *Castellan Spandrell* ("The Deadly Assassin"): Still head of security on Gallifrey, Spandrell seems extremely fit, indicating he's regenerated.

• *Tom Dekker*: Dekker took his experiences on the Vampire Planet in stride, but to prevent mental trauma, the Doctor erased part of his memory. Thanks to Gallifreyan surgeons, Dekker will never get ill and always heal quickly.

Agonal: From a Greek word meaning "the agony of death," the elemental Agonal magnifies evil but doesn't cause it, literally feeding on others' pain and suffering. He can influence people's behavior and teleport through time and space. Vanity is his weakness, but he's immune to telepathy. His re-mastered regeneration technology works, but not much brain tissue survives. Rassilon imprisons Agonal in Borusa's place.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Miraculously lands on the same spot on the Vampire Planet, even though she hasn't been there.

Alien Races

• *Vampires*: Cannot stand the alien garil flower, which acts like garlic.

• *Time Lords*: The Doctor guesses that if he stays in Chicago long enough, he'll be the first drunk Time Lord in history (he's forgotten his drunk binge in *Transit* or was faking at the time). Gallifreyan medicine works on humans. Gallifrey's Chief Hospitaler rarely has live patients. A Prydonian's word is an unbreakable oath (yeah, right).

Stuff You Need

SPATAB: Short for Spatio-Temporal Alarm Beacon. It acts as a homing beacon for TARDISes.

Alien Planets

The Vampire Planet, at Benny's suggestion, adopts a British form of government.

Organizations

The Committee of Three: High Council committee responsible for matters of security, composed of Borusa's acolytes, chancellors Rath (Prydonian), Elar (Patrexes) and Morin (Arcalian).

History

• Agonal exacerbated tensions during the Spanish Inquisition, the Reign of Terror, the Charge of the Light Brigade, the First World War and the St. Valentine's Day Massacre.

• In addition to getting chummy with Al Capone, Ace rides with Dekker's friend Eliot Ness.

At the End of the Day

The wild and woolly Chicago gangster drama makes a mob family of the Doctor, Ace and Dekker, as the Doctor plays the city's gangsters, Capone included, like a fine-tuned piano. The vampire drama pales at first, but builds to a horrific slaughter in the woods as Benny and Romana kick undead ass. Unfortunately, the Chicago and E-Spare plots are joined, not by CVEs, but by the thinnest of plot devices. Agonal gets a huge wind-up but lasts nearly a page before Rassilon squashes ''em like a centipede, making the Gallifrey stuff anti-climactic and sometimes damn silly. That *Blood Harvest* succeeds despite these flaws is a tribute to Terrance Dicks' ingenuity.

Strange England

Author: Simon Messingham. Virgin New Adventure #29. Release Date: August 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

An asteroid in the Jupiter belt and London, 1873.

Summary

In a world that looks like – but isn't – Victorian England, in a strange land were trees grind up gardeners like No. 2 pencils, our time travelers give aid to Victoria, a young woman with a strange insect lodged in her throat. Ace leaves to get help, but meets a farmer named Arthur. Unknown to the travelers, they've arrived in a simulated England created by another TARDIS' architectural configuration program. However, the program weakens at points, and Ace and Arthur are shunted through the ground into the "real" Victorian England.

There, they meet Dr. Patrick Rix, leader of a criminal gang. Rix surmises that Arthur has healing powers and requests he use them on Rix's deformed son. Unfortunately, Arthur's powers are unstable, and Rix's boy further mutates. Arthur, a holographic creation of the TARDIS generated England, is unable to survive outside that environment and slowly vanishes into nothing. Meanwhile, Ace finds the second TARDIS' control circuits, in the cellar of Rix's house, which help her escape from Rix and his thugs into the artificial Strange England.

Meanwhile, despite the Doctor and Benny's best efforts to remove Victoria's insect, she dies. The two of them gather with Victoria's friends and watch as the Strange England's biology greatly accelerates. A young woman named Charlotte ages 20 years in one day, and autumn arrives with the wild pace of a mad tango. Worst of all, terrifying creatures that are part spider, part crab and part human lay siege to Charlotte's house. The creatures also kill Rix's men, who were accidentally transported there with Ace, and Rix shoots himself out of fear.

The Doctor regroups at his TARDIS finally understands the Strange England is generated by another TARDIS' Architectural Configuration program, and that the Doctor's trio corrupted the program, which telepathically incorporated their natural paranoia and suspicion. Unfortunately, the telepathic program has absorbed the dead Rix's evil mind and the Strange England has literally become a living Hell.

The Doctor locates the second TARDIS, owned by his old friend, the Time Lady Galah, who's mind resides in her TARDIS. The Strange England was Galah's attempt to create a place of pure beauty, but she didn't account for the possibility of evil, even the natural, residual evil inherent in the TARDIS crew. Galah acknowledges the Doctor has won their ages-old argument about good and evil and together, they purge Rix and close down the system. Galah, unwilling to live in the real world, accepts the Doctors suggestion that she use the last of her energy to convert Charlotte from TARDIS protein to a fully functional human being, then joining her in a symbiotic state. Galah-Charlotte in turn marries ghost hunter Richard Aickland, a writer of ghost stories.

Memorable Moments

As the Doctor and Benny enjoy a meal, the food turns to maggots before their eyes; the gardener Ted gets trapped in a tree and it grinds him up, bones and all; the dead Victoria asks Mrs. Irving for a kiss.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace breaks the thug Archie's neck with a savage kick. She also blows up oodles of creatures and monks, including the Quack. Ace's neck is broken (whoops!), but Arthur heals her, also fixing her broken fingers.

Continuity

After *All-Consuming Fire*, the crew enjoyed three trips of rare tranquility, including one to the Moscow City Carnival of 2219.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: A telepathic itch tells the Doctor when Ace, or any of his companions, are in the area – he would also feel it mentally if Ace died. He rarely dreams, but has superhearing and carries earplugs. He learned trapeze lessons from the Venusian State Circus, and didn't expect the

Encyclopedia Britannica to get off the ground.

• *Ace*: Ace's armor cracks in the Strange England and she leaves it behind. She's pale from being in space too long.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Professor Summerfield swears the TARDIS changes rooms and locations just to annoy her. She doesn't get hay fever.

• *Galah*: Having used up her allotted regenerations, Time Lady Galah linked herself directly to her TARDIS' Architectural Configuration Program. The energy produced from her death transformed the TARDIS into her new body... living tissue formed from a program based on Victorian Earth. Galah lived a long, tedious life on Gallifrey as a sculptor.

• *The Doctor and Galah*: They went to the Academy together, but the Doctor says they weren't close. Unlike the Doctor, Galah believed in a state of pure and absolute goodness, and didn't take into account the possibility of evil. (The Doctor used to tell her: "I believe that good is an action, a struggle. A verb and not a noun.") She concedes the Doctor won the argument.

• *The Quack*: An opposite of the Doctor, the Quack was a representation of the trouble-shooting program in Galah's TARDIS. It first thought the Doctor's crew was part of the program, then treated them like a virus and sent the spider-creatures against them. The tall and thin Quack dressed smartly in black, like a funeral director, with little round glasses, wisps of straggly beard on his chin, and black eyes. He was finally blown up by Ace.

• *The alternate TARDIS (Architectural Configuration Program)*: The ACP created a closed universe with finite and recursive spatial parameters. In layman's terms, it was like a "Star Trek" holodeck, except the people were organic components of limited emotional programming, with no experience of aging or death. If they left the program, they ceased to exist. TARDISes cannot create fully living beings.

• *TARDIS (Protyon Unit)*: A crucial TARDIS component, and the reason why TARDISes have some independent thought. The Protyon Unit is a room full of billions of eyes – single bits of protein – that wink on and off in binary sequence. The eyes cover the walls, ceiling and floor. The unit's essentially the organic soul of a TARDIS, the part that makes Block Transfer Computation possible, and where Galah transferred her consciousness.

For greater efficiency, protyon bits have some deliberation – they choose which way to flex. If you put huge quantities of them together – voila! – you have a thinking, intelligent machine capable of making independent, complex decisions.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: The Story of the Rock squashes curiosity in young Time Lords, warning to leave things alone. Galah proves some Time Lords keep the same form when they regenerate. It's unknown if in that instance, the personality also remains the same.

• *Crab/Spider Creatures*: Pale, vulpine faced creatures with scaly, furry limbs. They also have a mouth full of sharp teeth.

At the End of the Day

On the plus side, there's moments of genuine wood-tearing horror, the kind that incites sweaty, pulsing hysteria. Benny runs like it's a showing of "Scream," a Victorian lady Tillie is ripped apart in an explosion of blood and bone, and Ted the gardener is eaten by a tree (I peed at this point.). Unfortunately, *Strange England*'s readers work like whipped horses to figure out what the hell's going on. Rix and company turn nasty mostly just to be nasty – which fits with the tone but makes them boring to read about – and it all becomes kinda simple and irrelevant when we learn it's akin to a trippy "Star Trek" holodeck story. The Doctor and Galah end with a way-cool argument about the nature of good and evil, but everything before that's a confusing monster mash.

First Frontier

Author: David A. McIntee. Virgin New Adventure #30. Release Date: September 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Holloman Air Force Base, White Sands Proving Grounds, New Mexico; Elephant Butte Reservoir and a deserted hanger at Corman Field, all October 4th, 1957.

Summary

Benny requests to see mankind's earliest launches space, so the Doctor takes her and Ace to the United States, 1957, since two of his incarnations are already watching the Sputnik flight. But aliens already walk among us. A space vehicle downs an American missile and in turn is grounded by the Army. And by sneaking into an Army base, the Doctor recognizes the craft as a Tzun shuttle.

The warrior-driven Tzun conquer other races and merge their DNA with them, creating a hybrid with both progenitors' strengths. Several converted Tzun-humans, called Ph'Sor, already control much of Corman Air Force Base. The Tzun intend to secretly detonate warheads in Washington and Moscow, then jam further missile strikes and approach Earth as "heroes" who prevented a nuclear holocaust.

The Tzun are aided by the Master, who exchanges his services for nanites that make his Time Lord DNA dominant once again and grant a new regeneration cycle. Ace and Benny disarm the Washington warhead, but encounter the Master. In the skirmish, Ace shoots him in the back. As a result, the Master regenerates into a tall, lean and slightly aristocratic incarnation.

For chaos' sake, the Master turns the Ph'Sor against the Tzun, while the Doctor releases the captured Corman soldiers. As a slaughter breaks out, the Tzun mothership explodes, sabotaged by the Master to prevent his DNA, given to the Tzun for experimentation, from being misused. The Master then

sends the second warhead to Russia and escapes while the Doctor destroys the warhead's detonator with a Tzun disrupter. Once the TARDIS trio leaves, the Russians safely down the warhead.

Memorable Moments

Benny considers the Doctor's symbiosis with the TARDIS and fantasizes a bizarre image of him marrying the Ship. The novels meet TV as Bernice steps into the Master's TARDIS. When Ace shoots the Master in the back, he's comically surprised.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace and the Anthony Ainley Master tie at four killings each. Ace wins when she plugs the Master himself. The Master kills thousands of Tzun aboard their Stormblade mothership. The fourth Doctor helped destroy the Stormblade Ksorn and a Tzun expeditionary force.

Continuity

The Nestene Consciousness controls a sector of the Tau quadrant ("Spearhead from Space," "Terror of the Autons"). Bandraginus Five was a shipyard for the Vegans ("The Pirate Planet"). The Master acquired Tremas' pacifist DNA in "The Keeper of Traken."

Before "Survival," the Master to tried cause a war between Antari Two and Antari Three, but the plan went sour and he evacuated to the Cheetah Planet. He left his TARDIS on Antari Three. The planet of the Cheetah People had a magnetosphere riddled with artron energy, which enabled it to alter living matter. As the planet was destroyed in "Survival," the Master recovered his wits enough to teleport to Earth, but the planet's explosion boosted his transmigration and flung him back in time 32 years to 1957. The Tzun answered his call for help and he used Tzun technology to summon his TARDIS. The Master remained linked to a kitling named Shadow, but his regeneration wiped all symbiosis with the Cheetah Planet. Ace's Cheetah senses, left over from "Survival," allow her to sense the Master.

The Doctor uses the sonic screwdriver of his alternate self from *Blood Heat*. The Veltrochni appear in *The Dark Path*. Both the Veltrochni and the Tzun reappear in *Mission: Impractical*. The Sidhe, first mentioned here, appear in *Autumn Mist*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor often rents accommodations for himself and companions retroactively. He rendered certain medical assistance at Chosin and Panmunjom, with varying degrees of success. Because he's not a medicinal Doctor, he prefers to avoid medical matters.

He hasn't liked deserts since he was in the Gobi. The Doctor has Majestic clearance with the United States government. He keeps smelling salts in the sphere that punctuates the question mark on his umbrella. He now uses the alias "Dr. Jon Smythe." He sometimes has wanted to appear on television. After 24 hours, the Doctor's beard doesn't seem to grow.

• *Ace*: Ace will be 27 in a couple of months. She can fly Spacefleet assault hoppers or a four-engine Hercules transport. She can alter transponder signals to avoid radar. She can defuse explosives and still carries plastique. She fought in the Ceti sector, where they used disrupter microwaves to cook Daleks inside their armor.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny saw the Carlsbad caverns circa 2457. She considers the Doctor and Ace her only family. She's flown skimmers with a joystick and three read-outs. She excavated a series of 500-foot towers on Metaluna.

• *The Master*: The Master used Tzun genetic engineering to denature his corrupted Trakenite DNA and remodel his body according to the remaining Time Lord DNA. The new Master is a couple of inches taller and more slender than the Anthony Ainley Master. He has long fingers. He also has a glossy moustache, a neat beard, a high forehead, an aristocratic nose and a lean face.

He still wears a long black tailcoat with narrow silver edging, buttoning it over his black silk shirt and midnight-blue waistcoat. A silver pin with a bird of prey completes his billowing jade cravat. He sympathizes with Ace's need to shoot him, thinking she might make a fine enforcer.

At the Prydonian Academy, the Master avoided punishment for misdemeanors and believed the Doctor wasn't living up to his full potential. The Master claims to be "a Time Lord of the first rank."

• *The Master and Benny*: The Master has read Benny's paper on the foundations of Martian Feudalism. He disagrees with her conclusions, but holds respect for the work. She proves immune to the Master's hypnotism.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The Doctor's TARDIS dates from a period when the Time Lord engineers were a little more innovative, crossing circuits and functions. This might help explain why she brazenly lands where the Doctor is needed.

You really can't get seasick in the TARDIS. Almost every journey involves some spatial movement, as you have to compensate for planetary movement.

• *The Master's TARDIS*: Can be summoned with Tzun communications technology.

• *The Doctor and the Master's TARDISes*: Have the same energy signature.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: We must ask: Do Time Lords have penises? The Master responds to Benny's double entendres with: "Your inane opinions have no relevance to Gallifreyan physiognomy."

• *Venusians*: It is best to have five arms and legs when using Venusian Aikido.

• *Tzun*: After the Darkling conflict (*see History*), the Tzun could pass as human. They genetically made their body wastes recycle, collapsed their lungs and replaced their blood with an artificial polymer. Their new DNA can completely break down all non-essential fats. As natives of a blue spectrum, they made their eyes more resistant to infa-red and ultraviolet.

The Tzun are among the most skilled warriors in history. They show respect for races they genetically bond with, living in symbiosis.

• *Tzun (S'Raph)*: Little gray, purebred Tzun, 3-4 feet high, with big heads and black eyes, engineered to compose most of the Tzun starfleet.

• *Tzun (Ph'Sor)*: Term for any Tzun genetically bonded to another species, such as humans.

• *Time Lords and the Tzun*: Are genetically incompatible. There are no Time Lord Ph'Sor. Time Lord nanites can destroy Tzun genetic material.

• *Veltrochni*: Egg-laying mammals that live in trees like sloths.

Alien Planets

• *Earth's neighbors*: The nearest spacefaring power to Earth lies on Alpha Centauri ("The Curse of Peladon"). The closest potential military threat is the Rutan Host ("Horror of Fang Rock"), massing near Achernar in Eridani.

• *S'Arl*: The Tzun homeworld was the sixth planet of Hadar, a.k.a. Beta Centaurus, about 120 parsecs away.

• *Veltroch*: The Veltrochni homeworld is the second planet of Fomalhaut system. The jungle there serves as a hatching ground.

Ships

Tzun Stormblades have hull molecules programmed to act like a single object, allowing for greater resistance. Tzun Stormblades use a gravitron pulse drive to ride gravity waves. They can channel energy as a focused graviton beam or an electromagnetic pulse. The converse is that they're vulnerable to gravimetric anomalies and often need a ground station for guidance.

Time (and Space) Travel

Dimensional Transcendence: Consider that the Universe in which we live is infinite, with no exterior boundaries. However, since any finite number divided by infinity equals zero, the Universe, with its 11 dimensions, also acts like a single point with no dimensions.

Got it? Because the Universe acts as a single point, you can instantly travel from one place to another because you're staying put on the same point. Hrrrrmmm. The same principle also applies to the infinite dimension of Time, by the way.

What's required is that you manipulate the basic building blocks of reality, as the Logopolitans did in "Logopolis" with Block Transfer Computation. You would reach a point of reality that's too small to physically exist, where you exist only as a mathematical concept. Such a concept forms the basis of Gallifreyan warp matrix engineering. And with that, you can achieve trans-dimensional engineering, space and time warping and dimensional travel.

History

• Twenty-five thousand years ago, the Tzun Confederacy rebelled against an oppressive fungoid people named the Darklings, originally from Yuggoth. The Tzun won the war, but the Darklings' genetic weaponry left the Tzun with a fragile genome. The Tzun used their own genetic engineering to merge their weak genome with stronger ones, thus beginning the P'Shor Tzun.

• The strengthened Tzun Confederacy spread and established mining colonies on three planets of the Reticulum system, 50 light years from Earth. The fourth Doctor intervened with the Tzun colonization of Mimosa II in

733. The Tzun there lost the Stormblade *Ksorn* and their entire expeditionary force.

• The S'Raph Tzun undoubtedly fueled "little green men" stories at Roswell.

• The Doctor helped with a 1956 Santa Mira town overrun by aliens and met CIA Director Allen Dulles.

• Sputnik One, the first Soviet satellite launch, went up unofficially on May Day, 1957. The Master interfered with the flight, using it to send a signal to the Tzun on Zeta Reticuli Four. Sputnik exploded, but the incident was wiped from the history books. Two of the Doctor's incarnations later watched the "official" Sputnik launch.

• The Tzun Confederacy lasted until Tzun tried to conquer Veltroch in 2172 and ruined some Veltrochni breeding grounds. The parochial Veltrochni in response turned S'Arl into a radioactive cinder and destroyed the Tzun fleet. A few Ph'Sor Tzun colonies survived, but most were incapable of spaceflight.

At the End of the Day

Sad as it is to see the Anthony Ainley Master kick it, the new version kicks ass. Kudos to David McIntee for crafting the Doctor's "new" nemesis. Unfortunately, First Frontier's tremendous premise suffers as a stretched-out plot with too much much filler. The genetically merging Tzun become generic villains and Benny's smart-ass character gets watered down. *First Frontier* could have been much more, but needed to shed about 100 pages and not end with a whimper.

St. Anthony's Fire

Author: Mark Gatiss. Virgin New Adventures #31. Release Date: October 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Massatoris, Betrushia, Betrushia's orbiting rings and the St. Anthony Chapter mothership, 2148.

Summary

Benny asks to study the planets of the historical Shovoran Empire and the Doctor complies. They leave Ace for a holiday on Massatoris, then hop two weeks forward to the sister planet of Betrushia and its impressive ring system.

On Betrushia, the reptilian Ismetch and mammalian Cutch fight a racial war as the planet undergoes many tremors. The TARDIS scanners conclude Betrushia is dying, plagued by deadly meteor showers and a yellow ooze that eats the inhabitants. The Doctor backtracks the meteors' path and finds a mothership of the Chapter of St. Anthony, a religious sect dedicated to pain and death as a means of purifying oneself and others. The mothership has been destroying the Betrushian ring system, propelling the interstellar debris toward the planet. The Chapter has already butchered the inhabitants of Massatoris and brainwashed as few of the stronger subjects, including Ace.

The Doctor investigates the Chapter, finds Ace and breaks her conditioning. He learns from historical artifacts that Betrushia, once home to an advanced civilization, birthed a genetic catalyzer designed to test species for survival. When the catalyzer, a glob of giant yellow ooze, ran out of control, the inhabitants built the artificial ring system with devices to restrain the creature to Betrushia. With the destruction of the rings, the creature has awakened to plague Betrushia and other planets.

The Chapter is persuaded of the danger and the Doctor re-energizes the ring system with the Chapter's mothership. The creature is held long enough for the inhabitants to evacuate in a shuttle and the TARDIS. Benny, appalled

by the Chapter's actions, sabotages the mothership's drive system, which holds it in a destructive orbit as the planet and the yellow ooze creature are destroyed. The Betrushian survivors relocate to Massatoris and repopulate it.

Memorable Moments

Benny gives an Ismetch lip and is pleased – until she's hoisted up and almost thrown off a gondola. In a top gory moment, a small girl is speared and thrown into a fire, where she liquefies until only her screams reverberate.

Sex and Spirits

Ace, like all proper members of the St. Anthony Chapter, runs about naked. A brainwashed Ace thinks Chapter leader Magna Yong's the most beautiful man she's ever seen.

Ass-Whuppings

Benny helps sabotage the St. Anthony mothership, killing all aboard. Magna Yong (ugh!) decapitates a kitten.

As the cover shows, the Doctor's knocked unconscious and put on a spit. The Doctor's hit by a flying asteroid fragment in the chest.

Continuity

The Doctor's cricket ball, which saved his life in "Four to Doomsday," was specially adapted, vacuum resistant and propulsion powered.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Once had some boots re-soled on Massatoris. An analytical device in his pressure suit gauges geological activity. His eyes turn watery gray, emerald green, blue and blue-green. He's seen Betrushia's past.

• *Ace*: A small, grimacing wooden mask pinned on the door of Ace's room warns everyone from entering. The Chapter of St. Anthony shaves Ace's head.

• *The Doctor and Ace*: After Spacefleet, Ace gained a talent for meticulous cleanliness, which clashes sometimes with the Doctor's style.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Archaeologist Benny researched the decline and fall of the Shovoran dynasty (*see History*). This in turn sparked her interest in the planet Massatoris and its mildly famous colonies. She'd learned details about Massatoris as a child. Benny's seen firestorms before. She's strangely forgotten what she knows about the TARDIS' Chameleon Circuit.

• *The Doctor and Bernice*: Play nine-dimensional Scrabble, a game with many Qs.

• *Betrushian Organism*: A gigantic, one-of-a-kind monster made from yellow ooze (*see History*). It could restructure itself.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The Chameleon Circuit fluctuates without maintenance. As a result, the Ship's outer shape breaks down. Once, the police box's stacked roof disappeared. The Doctor here fixes the Circuit.

The Ship still has an index file. The "Eighth Door" leads to a wall that fades away into rosy, sunny sky, with an expanse of beach. The TARDIS sensors can give readings on earthquakes. The console lets travelers speak with their fellows in spacesuits.

Alien Races

• *Ismetch*: Reptilian species on Betrushia, at war with the Cutch. Porsim was the Ismetch capital.

• *Cutch*: Mammalian, warlike Betrushian race with a number of gods. They're not fond of armistices and prefer death and glory.

• *Cutch and Ismetch*: As antagonistic mammals and reptiles, they make war to stop each other from breeding.

• *Keth*: Betrushian legends stated the planet was devastated an eternity ago by the warlike Keth. In fact, the Keth were racial memories, mere metaphors for the Betrushian organism (*see History*).

Alien Planets

• *Betrushia*: A planet rich in minerals and jungles.

• *Massatoris*: The fourth planet in its system, a sister world to Betrushia. It's cultured and temperate, with oceans and forests.

Organizations

• *Chapter of St. Anthony*: The Chapter extended its coda of pain to its outer-space missionary work – it would test races by destroying them. It

would visit a planet, brainwash a few strong subjects and level the rest. Magna William Hon Yuen Yong led the Chapter until his sudden death.

History

• The faiths of Earth united to create planet-wide peace. However, the different factions agreed on little, and the Chapter of St. Anthony filled the consequential power void.

• China was taken over by Hong Kong.

• After the seas claimed Holland, the Dutch became wanderers of Europe.

At the End of the Day

An unabashed train wreck, *St. Anthony's Fire* wants to simultaneously juggle racism, religion and war – but doesn't have the conviction or mettle for any of them. As religious fanatics, the blatant Chapter of St. Anthony, whose members decapitate kittens and want to kill their parents, lack any subtlety. A giant yellow ooze creature gets thrown in for good measure. And the underscored hypocrisy from Benny, who destroys the St. Anthony mothership without telling the Doctor, sadly isn't referred to again. A true disappointment from Mark Gatiss after the skillful *Nightshade*.

Falls the Shadow

Author: Daniel O'Mahony. Virgin New Adventure #32. Release Date: November 1994.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Shadowfell, Scotland, November 1995.

Summary

Fifteen billion years ago, there existed a race that became driven by duality. To them, ideas and concepts were black and white. But when the Grey Man, one of their members, saw the atrocities and death that came from this rigid thinking, he was exiled and created Cathedral, a pan-dimensional engine that seeded the Universe with abstract symbols and concepts, creating thoughts of grey.

Fast forward to modern-day Earth. Professor Jeremy Winterdawn, a famed quantum physicist, is experimenting with an artifact found in South America – the Metahedron, a representation of Cathedral in our Universe. Unfortunately, Winterdawn's experiments with the Metahedron create Gabriel and Tanith, the living incarnations of the Universe's pain and suffering, capable of restructuring reality to feed their sadistic tendencies.

The Grey Man, fearing Gabriel and Tanith's power and hunger for malice, randomly selects a traveling Time Lord to assist him in stopping them and summons the Doctor. The TARDIS lands in Shadowfell, Winterdawn's home, where Gabriel and Tanith are creating a mass of tortured people that were never allowed to exist. This horde seems to kill Benny, but she is actually transported to Cathedral by the Grey Man.

Gabriel and Tanith destroy the Grey Man, and devastate Cathedral with entropy. They revel in their agenda to destroy everyone in the Universe, one soul at a time. Winterdawn tries to convince Gabriel and Tanith that pain and suffering is not more powerful than the human desire to live, but he suffers a heart attack and the lesson is lost on them. However, Cathedral, existing as a Universal engine, retains enough power to restore the Grey

Man, and he cuts Gabriel and Tanith off from the Universe's suffering, neutralizing their power. Ace stabs the now-human Gabriel to death, then chases Tanith down and shoots her. With Cathedral in pieces, they will never reform. The Grey Man departs to explore the Universe, leaving the Doctor's party to leave in the TARDIS.

Memorable Moments

Ace and the Doctor have an argument about her being hardened to gore ("This shit doesn't screw me – period." The Doctor: "It should.") Ace then retreats to her room and cries for hours.

The reality bending Gabriel and Tanith announce: "We present, the damned!" then open a curtain to reveal people who never existed. The Doctor finds himself at a loss on how to bury Bernice, as his friends usually die in interesting ways, like incineration.

Ass-Whuppings

Benny is "killed" but her mind is restored to her body in Cathedral. The Grey Man is destroyed, but also restored. In a dream sequence, Benny beats a bullying classmate to death with a splintered chair leg. Ace stabs Gabriel to death, then chases and shoots Tanith. Cathedral, its people and ruling Mandelbrot Set turn to dust. Wheelchair-bound Professor Winterdawn suffers a heart attack.

Fiendish leech-like plants suck two pints of blood from Benny.

Continuity

The concept of interstitial time, where the Doctor and Winterdawn are momentarily stranded, was introduced in "The Time Monster." A cover story said Professor Carl Thascales, the Master's identity from that story, drove his car into a wall and was burned beyond recognition. The Grey Man refers to the Doctor as "Theta Sigma," a term that isn't his name, but identifies him uniquely among the Time Lords ("The Armageddon Factor"). Claire Keightley ("Shada") serves as the head of Winterdawn's research team at Cambridge. C. Moore Wedderburn wrote *The Trail of the Black Orchid: A botanical and zoological guide to the journeys of George Cranleigh* ("Black Orchid").

The Doctor considers burying Benny at Saul's church (*Timewyrm: Revelation*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor knows a nerve pinch that paralyzes. His eyes are steel grey. The Doctor says his family is "gone, long gone." He sometimes misses the stability and warmth of belonging to a single place. He believes the Daleks are irredeemably evil.

• *Ace*: Ace was born in North London in 1970.

• *The Doctor and Ace*: The Doctor considers returning to Gallifrey and asks Ace to stop traveling with him; she drives home the point that he's needed.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: It's stated that Benny was born on an Earth colony in 2422. However, many novels have been unable to reconcile this, and Lance Parkin's *The History of the Universe* definitively marks it as 2540. Her mother's name was Claire.

• *The Grey Man*: The Grey Man gave Cathedral with a measure of his power, and the destruction of Cathedral releases energy that restores him. The Grey Man was put on trial by his own people for blasphemy and destroyed (*see History*). The Grey Man who appears in *Falls the Shadow* is an avatar of the original. He doesn't like the Doctor's vendetta against the Dalek Empire.

• *Gabriel and Tanith*: Smartly dressed, handsome beings who drew strength from the structure of the Universe – especially its suffering and pain – and pattern their bodies out of their victims. Their power to restructure reality seemed bound only by their own child-like need to inflict pain on others. They lured humans to Shadowfell, then tortured and killed them out of malice. They could mentally implant suggestions and typically levitated off the ground. They could assume any form, but preferred to address humanity in its own shape. In time, they planned to abolish the order of Time and Space.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: A failsafe device keeps the TARDIS from erasing itself. The Ship is insulated against Gabriel and Tanith because it exists more in the Time Vortex and not in our Universe.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: There are institutions where the Time Lords put their insane. They call true madness "the Dark Design."

• *Mandelbrot*: The Mandelbrot Set of Cathedral blurs the distinction between chaos and order. The 23 Mandelbrot members are bodiless heads,

like the stone heads of Easter Island. Had they survived, it seems likely they would have fought amongst themselves until only one lived and made things homogeneous again as Ruler of Time and Space.

Places to Go

• *Cathedral*: For more than 15 billion years, Cathedral, created by the Grey Man, was the physical representation of an engine, seeding our Universe with archetypal imagery to blur the distinction between "white" and "dark." The Universe's thoughts, beliefs and symbolism in turn affected Cathedral, creating a synergy.

• *Metahedron*: In our Universe, Cathedral manifested itself as the Metahedron, meaning that when the Metahedron was taken to Cathedral, Cathedral was, in fact, inside itself. The Metahedron could grant access to interstitial time, or, more importantly, could restructure our reality.

Time Travel

Time travelers that *fulfill* history may in fact be destroying millions of potential, real futures. The Doctor concedes his time traveling has eradicated hundreds of possible futures.

History

• Fifteen billion years ago, during Event One, the Grey Man's people visited a world 30 billion light years from Earth, the first planet to gave birth to humanoid life. The culture there resembled Earth, and the Grey Man's people observed it for 10,000 years. The planet died in a bacteriological war. The Grey Man found that his own people, for reasons unknown, had created the madness that destroyed the humanoids. In mourning, he created Cathedral to alter the structure of reality and develop culture, wiping away his colleagues' clear-cut duality.

• Oscar Wilde considered the Doctor the life and soul of parties.

• The Doctor debated with President Harry Truman about the Manhattan Project.

At the End of the Day

Too long and too vague. *Falls the Shadow* hemorrhages so much text as to alienate many readers, and is further proof that your typical 300-plus page "Who" novel is too padded. It's a pity, because this book, which heavily

examines the nature of pain, has much potential and might have worked as a shortened Fringe play. But as is said about Benny in the book: “Parts of the story appalled her, parts intrigued her, parts amused her and some parts lost her completely. It was difficult to tell which part was which.” And with us, as well.

Parasite

Author: Jim Mortimore. Virgin New Adventure #33. Release Date: December 1994

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

The Artifact, circa 2515.

Summary

In the Elysium system, war is brewing between the Founding Families, who control the system and the stranded Earth colonists there, and the Reunionists, who favor re-making contact with Earth. And when the Artifact, a gigantic hollow biostructure the size of many planets arrives in Elysium space, the political friction increases because the Artifact's dimensional discontinuities might allow for short-cut travel to Earth.

The TARDIS randomly arrives in the Artifact, but the crew is attacked by a number of alien, octopoid predators and separated. The Artifact's biology seems in turmoil, and many changes happen in rapid succession. In particular, a monkey-like race in the Artifact gestates a number of parasites, and Benny meets a crystalline creature named Midnight, a former Founding Family agent that was mutated by the Artifact. Ace also meets scientist Mark Bannen, who has achieved an extended lifespan though symbiosis with the Artifact and as such, seeks to protect its secrets.

With a growing amount of wide and varied evidence, the TARDIS crew members variously realize that the Artifact is alive and about to lay planet-sized eggs. If not stopped, it could spawn a race of beings that could absorb all water-bearing worlds in the Galaxy.

The Artifact tries, through a series of spores, to absorb the Doctor's intelligence and the Time Lord goes comatose to protect his mind. Ace, caught by a radiation burst from a newborn star in the Artifact, asks Midnight if it can manipulate the Artifact and make it think it's at an earlier, non-hostile part in its life cycle. Theoretically, the Artifact will release its hold on the Doctor so the Time Lord can cure Ace's radiation poisoning.

But as Midnight begins manipulating the Artifact, Bannen, already tainted by the Artifact's influence, shoots him dead.

The interruption of Midnight's changes causes upheaval in the Artifact, and a spark in its rim forests ignites the local atmosphere and kills one of the Artifact's eggs. The Doctor, revived once the Artifact's biology was upset, returns to the TARDIS to try to telepathically make the Artifact expel the dead egg to become a new planet for the monkeys and other species living in the Artifact.

Unfortunately, Bannen, injured from the Artifact's geographic upheaval, beats the Doctor to the TARDIS and shoots him. Ace locates Benny and they reach an outcropping of safety, then ride the Artifact's egg out into space. The Doctor reaches the TARDIS and heals his gunshot wound, then retrieves the two women and heals their various injuries. Through his link with the Artifact, the Doctor biologically manipulates the Artifact so all further births will be symbiotes that will live in harmony with water-based biospheres rather than destroy them. Sadly, a clutch of Artifact eggs already born will likely doom the Elysium system – in millions of years. Bannen's fate remains unknown.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor, twisted aloft by terrible winds, doffs his hat to Bernice. When worms infest Ace's eyes, she demands Drew cut them out.

Sex and Spirits

Benny's first and only lover, Kyle, betrayed her. This contradicts other stories that state she's been with a few more men.

Ass-Whuppings

In an unrelated flashback, the Doctor watches a food riot kill Mark Bannen's mother Sonia, unable to interfere with the web of time.

Benny's monkey friend Elenchus dies. A monkey tries to eat Bernice, so she breaks its neck. Ace kills some killer octopuses with a slingshot, Benny kills more when they nibble on her and are poisoned by human flesh. Ace, mentally dominated by the Artifact-possessed student Rhiannon, cuts off Rhiannon's oxygen supply to gain time to think. Unfortunately, Ace keeps Rhiannon under too long and she dies.

For injuries, this is a truly abysmal showing for the TARDIS crew,

especially Benny. She gets a hairline fracture of the skull, so Mark Bannen drills into her head to relieve the pressure. She also gestates a parasite, so Ace injects Benny with poison to make the creature form a cyst, then removes it. Benny's leg gets a compound fracture and she burns with fever.

Ace suffers radiation poisoning. Bannen shoots the Doctor through one of his hearts. A parasite bursts from under Ace's skin, but the Doctor saves her.

Continuity

Temporal grace, the feature that keeps people in the TARDIS from being harmed, is functioning ("The Hand of Fear").

Mark Bannen is the son of Alex Bannen, an engineer in *Lucifer Rising*. The Doctor carries Venusian nenetif-web (*Venusian Lullaby*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: A spore's infection momentarily triggers the Doctor's seventh regeneration, and his eighth self is shown for a few seconds in a blur of light. Fortunately, the Doctor's healing factor kicks in and saves his seventh life.

The Doctor has enough mastery over his potential energy to sit up on a frictionless surface and not slide away. He could teach this trick to Benny – if given 50 years. He can survive a bullet through a heart if he can reach the TARDIS in time. He carries a brass telescope and soup packets. He has a pill that cures the alien octopoids' infection. He was once caught inside a newborn planet, and also a storm in 1706 off the Cape of Good Hope. The Doctor's brain can shield parts of itself with special proteins that block the movement of transmitter chemicals. He's always liked the thought of a higher power, of a Maker, to believe in.

• *Ace*: As a training officer, Ace was stationed on Verdanna and saw three men infested by insects that hatched. One committed suicide, another killed his family, but the third fared better and only needed counseling. It was a nightmare for her to watch three highly trained officers lose so much control.

Ace designed a search pattern that enables suited troopers to hunt through asteroid fields for concealed scoutships. She can assemble an orbital lander suit blindfolded, performs impromptu surgery on Benny and is a good hunter.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: A younger Benny, unable to bond with any of her

foster parents, ran away and found herself with a damaged landing boat near a monastery on Olundrun VII. The monks wouldn't let her in, fearful that she'd corrupt them, so she spent six weeks in a tent feeling sorry for herself. The thought of sanctuary being so close nearly drove her mad. She finally fixed her landing boat and left.

Benny broke both legs falling down a bluff on Auriga, 30 km from a dig site. To survive, she opened an arm vein to attract night crawlers and fed on them. It took her a month to pull herself back to camp.

Benny has five years back rent on Chlaan VI to collect. Her childhood doll Rebecca is also referred to as Molly.

• *Mark Bannen*: When the food riots wracked havoc on a starving Earth, Mark's mother Sonia deposited him in the care of a Church. In time, Mark became a scientist and explored the Artifact, only to be biologically tainted by its influence. Bannen gained extended life, but went insane with desire to protect the Artifact. He killed 23 people to preserve its secrets.

• *Midnight (a.k.a. Benjamin Green)*: Green, an agent of the Founding Families sent to recover Mark Bannen for questioning about the Artifact, was mutated by the Artifact into a "lumpy, two-meter long blend bag of elephant skin and pink crystal," from which projected rough knobs of pink crystal, with many mouths. As such, "Midnight," as Benny nicknamed him, could see through solid objects and had a degree of symbiosis with the Artifact.

• *The Doctor and Midnight*: Through a protein exchange, the two swap some memories.

Alien Races

• *The Artifact*: The Artifact, hollow and large enough to contain many planets, bends gravity, creating dimensional discontinuities that in turn transport water (often taken from other planets) through the Artifact and create water-bearing worlds. On such worlds, life forms evolve. This process can take millions of years, during which time the Artifact works mostly on instinct, not intelligence. The process is regulated by fungus in the Artifact's rim forests, which rapidly changes species and acts like various kinds of neurotransmitters.

When the Artifact is ready for the next stage of its reproduction, it creates planet-sized eggs and transforms some of the fungus into metallic *schill*, which are eaten by various species on the water-bearing planets. The *schill* in turn parasitize the species. As the new parasites are born, they take to

water and are transported by the discontinuities (i.e., swim down river) to fertilize the Artifact's eggs.

Simultaneously, the Artifact forms symbiotic links, either through parasites or spores, with intelligent beings such as Mark Bannen. The Artifact uses the beings' knowledge as its own to continue its increasingly complicated reproduction cycle. Beings who prove intelligent enough to evade the parasites and potentially threaten the Artifact are exterminated.

Eventually, the water worlds undergo gravitational collapse and ignite into stars, which warm the Artifact's fertile eggs, already incubating inside gas giants. It's suggested that the Artifact then dies giving birth. The new Artifacts immediately seek out a water source to begin the process again.

• *The Artifact Monkeys (a.k.a. "The Builders")*: One of the Artifact's monkey-like species lives in tents and has no concept of an afterlife. They have seven arms. They can project microwaves that allow them to hunt and kill.

Stuff You Need

The Artifact Fungus, aside from its other uses, can act as a "smart molecule," meaning that given the right stimuli, it can produce various enzymes, even radiation decontaminants, to regulate the Artifact's biology.

Phenomena

The Universe has 11 dimensions, but we can only perceive three.

History

Three-hundred and-fifty years ago, a colony ship crashed in the Elysium system. Navigation records were lost, cutting off all hope of returning to Earth. The Founding Families took power and tried to protect their bloodlines, but a Reunionist faction gradually favored finding a way to rejoin humanity. Fifty years ago, the Families banished the Reunionists to the moon of Neirad.

At the End of the Day

How Jim Mortimore, who gave us the power-packed *Blood Heat*, could then give us this long and tedious read is almost beyond words. *Parasite* drives home the point that humans are animals, not meant to survive in certain parts of space, but little of it's actually entertaining. There is

something of a plot, but it gets buried, as if the mystery of the Artifact is enough to carry it through. The near-worthless secondary cast ranges from blatantly stupid to shallow characters, such as the students Drew and Gail – both of whom meet irrelevant ends.

Warlock

Author: Andrew Cartmel. Virgin New Adventure #34. Publication date: January 1995. "The War Trilogy" Part 2 of 3.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

The Doctor's house in Kent, circa 2014.

Summary

Curious about a new drug named warlock that defies analysis, the Doctor sends Benny with faked credentials to the International Drug Enforcement Agency (IDEA). Meanwhile, Kent residents Jack and Shell ask Ace to help them tail a suspected pet-napper, but Ace declines – until the Doctor's cat Chick is taken. The thief leads Ace, Jack and Shell into a trap at an animal research laboratory where they're given a choice: be prosecuted for trespassing or serve as guinea pigs for a new strain of warlock. They choose the latter, and the reality-altering warlock literally deposits Ace and Shell's minds in cats. Jack switches minds with a dog.

Benny informs the Doctor that warlock alters reality according to the mood of the user. The Doctor decides to find warlock expert Mrs. Woodcott through his former allies, Justine and the empath Vincent. Now married, Vincent and the pregnant Justine enjoy a quiet domestic life – so Vincent takes Justine and bolts the moment he sees the Doctor. IDEA troops capture them, having learned of Mrs. Woodcott through the Doctor's home computer net. IDEA throws Vincent in a suspension tank as leverage to make Justine find Mrs. Woodcott for them.

Justine escapes from IDEA agent Creed McIlveen, but gets captured by a forced prostitution house. The house owner orders Justine's baby terminated, but Mrs. Woodcott shows up and helps Creed rescue Justine. Grateful to the man who saved her baby, Justine becomes Creed's lover.

The Doctor and his allies rescue Vincent and storm the animal research lab, restoring Ace's brain to her body. Shell has died. IDEA director Harry Harrigan arrives at the Doctor's house in Kent, intent on using warlock to

gain a sort of immortality and transfer his consciousness to Creed, his younger successor at IDEA. The Doctor reveals that warlock is a sentient being, an alien intelligence that crashed to Earth and incorporated itself into the strain of Russian mushrooms that composes the drug. By touching Harry Harrigan, Vincent's empathic power energizes warlock, releasing it from the drug and killing the IDEA director. The alien warlock flares like a phoenix and returns home.

With the crisis ended, Justine chooses Creed over her husband and they depart. A devastated Vincent drives away with a stray dog he names Jack.

Memorable Moments

Looking at an envelope that threatens a death sentence for anyone who opens it, the Doctor asks his companions, "Have either of you got a letter opener?" and resorts to a pair of rusty sheers. Shell sprays graffiti on the Allen Road sign to make it read "Alien Road."

In a top dramatic moment, Vincent takes his wife Justine and runs like hell the moment the Doctor shows up. Justine's near-abortion will put a lump in your throat.

Sex and Spirits

Ace drains a gin and tonic, and wakes up with a hangover after drinking with Vincent.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor's cat, Chick, loses its life, and lowly lab worker and wacko Tommy guillotines a rat. A fireball incinerates Canterbury Cathedral and heaven knows how many people. Vincent's body count: three. Creed's: one, and a bunch of guard dogs in flashback.

Continuity

Vincent, Justine, Mrs. Woodcott and James McIlveen (Creed McIlveen's brother) first appeared in *Cat's Cradle: Warhead* and appear in *Warchild*. Jack is returned to his body in that book.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Has knowledge of how to perform human births. His computer set up is rather odd – he uses an ancient dot matrix printer, but can

bounce transmissions through a thousand different points. Yet IDEA penetrates his computer system. It's been years since he broke into a national police computer. He's always found New York time exhausting. (This author agrees.)

• *Ace*: Ace watches *Ren and Stimpy*, isn't a vegetarian and occasionally gets stirrings to have a baby.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Under the alias of Miss Winterhill, Benny faked credentials and became a "special agent" on secondment to IDEA and NYPD. She can take warlock and handle it.

• *Creed McIlveen*: IDEA agent with something of a death wish. Creed's IDEA contract was invalidated in London, so in turn, he stole IDEA cash used for drug busts.

• *Creed McIlveen and Anna*: Creed and Anna were partners professionally and personally. They made rancorous love as few people do, yet his hatred for her sometimes flared like a blowtorch. When Anna was killed in the line of duty, Creed knew he never would never get over her – and never did.

• *Justine Wheaton*: The moment before the IDEA troops capture her and Vincent in a park burns in her mind for years to come – a girl in love, with birds around her under the shadow of Canterbury cathedral. Justine knew prostitute house operator Paulie Keaton when he was younger – he resents that she remembers his humble origins.

• *Mrs. Woodcott*: Since *Warchild*, she's continued as a drug designer, holds glamorous tastes and looks like a "ruddy-faced gym teacher."

• *Chick*: Short for "Chichester," a ginger fur cat with greenish-amber eyes. The Doctor discovered Chick's pregnant mother and gave away the rest of the kittens, but Chick remained. He stayed at the Doctor's house for nearly a year before his sudden death.

Stuff You Need

Warlock, called a "smart drug," smells like liquorice and is highly addictive. And nobody could synthesize, let alone it. (*For Warlock's Origins, see History*.)

Warlock has an interesting effect in group situations. It magnifies collective emotions and makes them reality. When a group of drug users decided to ignore the suspected traitor Russel, warlock magnified the rejection a thousand times and the overwhelming sense of isolation and loss killed him. The group even forgot his name.

Warlock allowed Creed to accentuate his subtle behavior and slip by some guards invisible, unnoticed. It cloaked Creed and Justine enough for them to slip into Buckingham Palace. It also allowed Harrigan, probably the first American to use it, to put his mind in other people's bodies.

Iron-willed individuals, such as Creed or Benny, could resist warlock's effects.

Places to Go

The Doctor's House (Adisham, Kent) has a communications network that allows the Doctor to route Benny's image to a TV screen. The home computer has a voice interface, and sounds like Cary Grant. The front gate sign has the rearranged words, "Beware of the God." Stables were converted in the 1920s into a huge garage, which now contains the Doctor's workshop.

Organizations

International Drug Enforcement Agency (IDEA) serves as a high-profile drug agency, created by Harrigan, to pool the FBI and Interpol resources and keep the public "gung-ho" about the war on drugs.

History

Warlock's origins begin with an alien spaceship, perhaps containing many individuals. It crashed on Earth, where friction from re-entry reduced the alien(s) to raw energy. They impacted in rural Russia, and their bare, reality-weaving intelligence merged with a breed of fungus spores, mutating into a mushroom strain that humans could interact with. The genetic code that comprised the alien intelligence used people such as Shell and IDEA founder Harrigan to seek out the Doctor, desperate for his aid.

At the End of the Day

Warlock strikes your chest dead-center, warming you up and making you angry. I cried. It takes turns debating animal cruelty and weaving a memory play, delivering slice after slice of background (Shell's tale of rape and her tattoos is astonishing). The book's 359-page length, the longest for a "Who" novel, will frighten some, but there's surprisingly little fluff and Warlock unpacks only one plot thread per chapter, making it way more lucid than its predecessor *Warhead*. Strong roles from Benny and Ace, plus a developed

supporting cast, make up for the Doctor's absence in parts, and Cartmel humanizes Creed by making him slime with a heart and razor-sharp intelligence. All of this and more combines to make *Warlock* a highly-recommended trip.

Set Piece

Author: Kate Orman. Virgin New Adventure #35. Release Date: February 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Ace and Benny.

Travel Log

Luxury liner *Cortese*, date unknown; the TARDIS is buried near Akhetaten 1366 BCE, and stays buried until Cairo, 1798; Paris, 1871; the Ship, date unknown. At the inter-dimensional Cafe: Sydney, 1995; Bellatrix City, 25th century; Argolis, time unknown; three more unknown locations.

Ace's Travel Log

Paris, October 1815, age 28; Glebe, Sydney, July 14, 1993, age 37; Paris, May 28, 1871, age 26.

Summary

The Doctor and company are disturbed by a number of time rifts that suddenly appear and destabilize the space-time continuum – but that's only the first problem. At the same time, a large number of spaceships are found adrift, stripped of passengers and crew. The Doctor and Ace pretend to be luxury liner passengers on *The Cortese* and get themselves captured to confront the kidnappers.

They find themselves prisoners on an alien spaceship called Ship, a vessel designed to save a group of desperate, doomed colonists by uploading their memories into its system. Unfortunately, Ship is now running amok, trying to assimilate every being in the entire Universe. Benny charges to the rescue through one of the time rifts, but the trio lose hold of each other escaping and are flung through the rift in three different directions.

In ancient Egypt, Ace becomes a bodyguard to the Lord Sedjet. She later hears strange reports that Ants, the Ship's insect-like mechanical drones, have returned. Ace luckily finds the TARDIS, carves "Ace was here" into a prominent landmark and forces an Egyptian Ant-drone to open a time rift. She leaps through.

In France, 1798, a stranded Benny works with Baron Vivant Dominique Denon, one of the founders of archaeology. When she finds Ace's graffiti, Benny locates the TARDIS and programs it to home in on the Doctor.

The Doctor himself has arrived in Paris, 1871, the year the Commune's rule came to an end. He re-meets the time-traveling Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart, and realizes her slipshod time machine has torn the mysterious time rifts in space-time.

As Ace and Benny arrive in Paris, the Ship, hoping to obtain time travel, implants Kadiatu with a brainwashing device. Now under the Ship's control, Kadiatu knocks the Doctor out and kidnaps him. Ace tracks the Doctor with one of Kadiatu's time hoppers as the Doctor, directly linked into the Ship's computer systems, manages to directly shut down the Ship's nervous system. In death, the Ship tears itself apart as a mentally unstable Kadiatu leaps through a random time rift. The Doctor and Ace return to Paris in his TARDIS.

By now, Ace has learned about the struggle of the Commune and wishes to leave the TARDIS and stay in Paris, knowing that she might save some lives as a Commune defender. Ace then plans on using Kadiatu's time hoppers to watch the time rifts for alien invaders. The Doctor reveals that he had studied Ace's history and knew she would end up here. The Commune falls and its last defender, the dynamic Ace, begins her new life as a guardian of Earth.

Memorable Moments

Death tells the defiant Doctor, "What do I have to do to make you scream?" The Doctor, Ace and Benny bond in a pillow fight. And Ace's final farewells, both from the TARDIS and the fallen Paris Commune, mark a major turning point in the novel line.

Sex and Spirits

Sedjet proposes to make Ace one of his wives, but she refuses. Vivant Denon proves a good conversation partner for Benny, and there's some attraction between them. An older Ace is eventually romanced by Count Sorin, Captain Sorin's grandfather.

Ass-Whuppings

Ace blows away a control unit disguised as a five-year-old child. Her body count here is 399 people. The Paris Commune falls – 25,000 people

die.

The Doctor suffers exhaustion, dehydration, malnourishment, low blood volume and lots of subcutaneous bruising. There's also a greenstick fracture in his left humerus.

Continuity

Ace's Windsor Castle portrait was seen in "Silver Nemesis." She arranges for the boys who burned her friend Manisha's flat to be arrested ("Ghost Light").

Actress Sophie Aldred ("Ace") wrote the afterward for this book. *The Curse of Fenric* novelization revealed in a back-up story that Ace would finish her TARDIS days in Paris with Captain Sorin's grandfather. Kadiatu debuted in *Transit* and has destroyed her time travel research from that story. She next appears in *The Also People*. Death's Eternal siblings make an appearance (*Love and War*). Ace's surname is used for the first time (*Conundrum* makes mention that she doesn't have one). The Doctor gives Ace his 500 Year Diary, stolen by the Shadow Directory in *The Death of Art*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Independent of the TARDIS translator, the Doctor knows French. He can lock certain memories away in his mind, and pre-record his brain to suddenly remember when he sees a pre-programmed mnemonic such as marbles. The Ship tries to process the Doctor 19 times and fails. The Doctor mysteriously hovers Indian style an inch or two off the floor – an act that takes great mental effort – for the first time.

Though put on ice by Ship, the Doctor struggles on and performs 35 escape attempts. For all the torture, he never screams until Ship decides to process Ace. His eyes are blue and he sleeps about one hour in 48. He carries a Chinese lockpick. The Doctor's nanites can repair lost limbs, using the patient's DNA as a template. Like all Time Lords, a blow under his left shoulder renders him unconscious.

• *The Doctor and Ace*: The Doctor traced her family tree long before they went to Whitby and knew she'd end up in Paris.

• *The Doctor and the Brigadier*: The Doctor told the Brigadier a blow to the left shoulder knocks out Time Lords in case the Master returned. The Brigadier passed the secret on to his descendants, including Kadiatu.

• *Ace (a.k.a. Dorothy McShane)*: A pan-European database in 2006 still lists Ace as missing. She can wield a *khopesh*, a heavy copper sword shaped like a sickle. Her father died. Her mother boozed on warm tea laced with whisky.

Ace gets goosebumps around people who are a source of time distortion. After leaving the TARDIS, she works with the Paris suffragettes. She monitors Kadiatu's rifts, but her time hoppers can only go a century in either direction. A 37-year-old Ace doesn't think she'll marry Count Sorin because "the bloody laws are ridiculous."

• *Bernice Summerfield*: The Eternal Death clarifies for Benny that her mother was killed by the *first beams* in a Dalek attack. It wasn't that she was stunned and didn't know what she was doing.

Benny starts with grown-out blonde hair but ends the story with dark hair a couple inches long. She carries a force shield generator and remembers her high school French. She saw Ace's graffiti on Amarna cliffs at university class, hates Jungian stuff and detests virtual realities.

• *Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart*: Kadiatu's first time jump took her to the 25th century, where she stockpiled gold. She created a virus for Ship's tissue.

• *Time*: The Doctor's Eternal patron, Time, has a chalk-white face and wears a kimono. A butterfly perches on her hand and she carries an hourglass.

• *The Doctor and Pain*: Pain, another stark white Eternal, says she first met the Doctor, entirely of his own violation, high on a rocky hillside. He'd run out of the house to watch a valley's outsiders with their bows and arrows. Pain says she wants the Doctor to "keep his side of the bargain," whatever that means.

• *Ship*: Uses a brain leech to absorb victims' memories, skills and personality. When finished, the brainstem gets severed. Ship was only designed to hold a few hundred minds but absorbed thousands.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The TARDIS' telepathic circuits manage to link the Doctor and his companions subconsciously, even when they are in different time periods.

Alien Races

Time Lords have a giant nerve cluster like a tiny, separate brain lies just below a Time Lord's left shoulder. It grants a Time Lord precise control over his or her metabolism, but a blow there knocks them out.

Ships

Kadiatu's Time Ship: It's actually a cargo shuttle, with three-quarters storage space and one quarter life-support, painted a drab military green. Basically, a train engine wraps the capsule in a dimension-warping field, protecting it from a *thermonuclear explosion* (!) that powers the ship. Kadiatu rigged her vessel to explode onboard Ship, but it self-destructed in a Paris vineyard instead.

Time Travel

Time traveling ships must compensate for the spatial displacement of the Earth and the galaxy. Kadiatu's time rifts can drift, opening up at various weak points along their five-dimensional length.

History

• Benny travels with Baron Vivant Dominique Denon, the man who more-or-less invented modern archaeology. Ace tells a 68-year-old Denon in 1815 that Benny is safe.

• Ace fights the Ants in 1850, witnesses the Boston tea party and sails for a time with Zheng Yi Sao. At some point, she helps save Earth's population from a Voltrana plague. Wellington took Ace's portrait from the Louvre. It wound up at Windsor Castle by TV's "Silver Nemesis."

At the End of the Day

Good, focused and clear. In a story about the Doctor and Ace loving each other, Ace wonders why she's so cold and can't cry at the Doctor's "death." The concept of fighting mechanical Ants in ancient Egypt is a bit ludicrous, but Set Piece approaches its task with a neat precision. The set piece format means too much can't happen at once, but it's worth the effort. Ace gets as fine an exit as any companion.

Infinite Requiem

Author: Daniel Blythe. Virgin New Adventure #36. Release Date: March 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Benny.

Travel Log

England, 1997; Gadrell Major, 2387; Taprid, circa 100,000.

Summary

The TARDIS detects traces of a dangerous Sensopath, an immeasurably telepathic entity, divided into three separate beings and scattered throughout time and space to limit its power. On 20th century Earth, the Doctor finds the Sensopath Kelzen growing in the unborn child of a young Indian named Tilusha Meswani. Tilusha's pregnancy proceeds at a hugely accelerated rate and she dies giving birth to her child Sanjay, who rapidly develops into a 20 year old. Though her symbiosis with Sanjay, Kelzen comes to appreciate human life. She agrees to go with the Doctor to confront Shanstra, the most ruthless and powerful of the three Sensopaths, on the planet Gadrell Major.

Meanwhile, the Earth Council sends *The Phoenix* and its captain, Darius Cheynor, to Gadrell Major on orders to stop the rival Phractons from taking the planet's porizium, a mineral used for medical treatment. But Gadrell Major's porizium is actually gone, and *The Phoenix* is just cannon fodder to distract the Phractons from Earth. As negotiations take place, Shanstra, for malice's sake, powers herself with the anger of a Gadrell Major colonist named Livewire toward the invading Phractons and kills the Phracton delegates. To her delight, hostilities between Earth and Gadrell Major grow.

The Doctor leaves for the far future to find the third Sensopath, Jirenal, at the Pridka Dream Centre, a renowned psychiatric satellite. Shanstra tries to absorb Jirenal, but as the Doctor had planned, the now-compassionate Kelzen merges with Jirenal first. Kelzen, knowing she cannot resist Shanstra forever, kills herself and Jirenal to protect the Universe from the Sensopaths' power. The loss of her other selves cuts Shanstra's abilities, and Livewire kills Shanstra to end her mental tyranny of the colony.

As the Doctor and Bernice depart, he gives her the sad news that Phracton terrorists, hell-bent on revenge for the deaths of their delegates, bombed a shuttle and killed their friend Cheynor. Because the act will gave the Phractons a sense of vindication and spur further negotiations and peace, the Doctor is powerless to save him.

Memorable Moments

In a top grisly moment, Jirenal's powers make a Pridka's head peel back, smoke and burst open like a flower as a white dove flutters forth and soars away. The Pridka's head, now empty of organic material, follows his dead body to the floor.

Ass-Whuppings

Shanstra destroys the hologram-projected "h-Doctor." Captain Darius Cheynor's shuttle is destroyed. Earth and Phracton forces blast each other on Gadrell Major, destroying the Banksburgh sports center in the crossfire.

Continuity

Ever since Susan left the TARDIS ("The Dalek Invasion of Earth"), the Doctor has been afraid of dying alone. The Time-Space Visualizer has kept a record of the Doctor's adventures since its installation in "The Chase." The TARDIS still has a timer device ("Resurrection of the Daleks" and more). The Doctor recently repaired the TARDIS' Stattenheim remote-control. ("The Two Doctors"). It's alleged that the seventh Doctor at first acted with a "whimsical idiocy" to disguise his darker side ("Time and the Rani" through "Dragonfire").

It's been six years since Captain Cheynor met the Doctor and Bernice in *The Dimension Riders*. The Doctor's shoulder wound from Set Piece hasn't healed. Heaven is misnamed as Benny's homeworld (*Love and War*).

The TARDIS *still* has a spare Zero Room, having lost one each in "Castrovalva" and *Deceit*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Continual conversation keeps the Sensopaths from sensing his mind. The Doctor received a lowly double gamma rating for Time Lord philosophy at the Academy. He carries a basic thought-wave damping device.

• *The h-Doctor (a.k.a. "hologram Doctor")*: In the Doctor's absence, this interactive hologram, projected from a small marble-like pyramid, assisted Benny. However, the h-Doctor lacked most of the Doctor's knowledge and abilities and was mostly useful as a conversation partner. He was integrated into the TARDIS' symbiotic nuclei.

• *Captain Darius Kieran Cheynor*: The 42-year-old Darius Cheynor had a brother Simon who was killed in battle.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: It's again suggested the Doctor deliberately locked the TARDIS' shape as a police box.

Alien Races

• *Sensopaths*: The most powerful telepaths the Doctor's ever met, the three Sensopaths are interlinked and in many ways the same being. They were so powerful, that at some undefined point, they were captured and given a choice: Total annihilation or an existence outside time, with only the unity of their minds for companionship. They chose the latter, and were scattered throughout time and space.

The Sensopaths' telepathy and telekinesis are so highly developed, their thoughts can instantly alter reality. They regard the Time Lords as just legends. The three Sensopaths here included:

Shanstra: The most powerful of the three Sensopaths, capable of sending mental images that kill. Shanstra could dominate her two Sensopath siblings, Jirenal and Kelzen.

Jirenal: remembers the Sensopaths being born and split into three parts.

Kelzen: In the body of Sanjay Meswani, Kelzen grew to over two meters tall and was very feminine.

• *Phractons*: They're typically mobile in translucent air globes armed with laser-tubes. They act independently and aren't emotionless. Yet a Phracton's brain forms part of a greater entity and Phracton Commandants serve as data nerve centers. A Phracton's word cannot be broken. They have a great deal of honor, and avoid killing civilians.

• *Pridka*: A race of powerful telepaths, gifted with 36 senses. They often acknowledge other beings in ways that can't be seen or heard.

Places to Go

• *Pridka Dream Centre*: Renowned psychiatric satellite, locked in geo-stationary orbit around Taprid II, at a future date beyond the Earth calendar.

Members of 700 cultures reside there, only 52 of whom find unclad bodies offensive. The Pridka are the indigenous population. The satellite boasts 15,000 visitors.

• *The Dreamguide*: One of the most experienced dream-healers in the universe, sexless and beautiful. The Dreamguide made subjects physically confront their treatment. The Sensopath Jirenal usurped its position.

Organizations

The Adjudicators and *Earth Security Council* employ telepaths as agents.

Ships

Phracton ground ships are hylerium-plated intrusion vehicles, probably hymetusite-powered ("The Horns of Nimon"), with average reaction time of 0.34 seconds.

Phenomena

The Infinite Requiem, the ultimate goal of the Sensopaths – and Shanstra in particular – was an undefined state where the Universe is "a single, cohesive whole."

At the End of the Day

The usual seventh Doctor set-up, with a mad cosmic entity and a misdirected military – but it mostly falls apart. For once, the criticism that the Virgin line had too much woe, angst and inner blackness is here justified. The work would also be stronger if the Sensopaths' goals, including the vague "infinite requiem" concept, were better defined. Cheynor, tailored to be a main character of the book, admits that he "hasn't made a great success of anything much," and his last-minute death is a rather stupid way to go. All this and some big-testicle dialogue ("This is where the holiday fun stops. This is where we do our job.") combines to leave one hungry for more meat.

Sanctuary

Author: David A. McIntee. Virgin New Adventure #37. Release Date: April 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Benny.

Travel Log

Southern end of the Eastern Pyrenees, 1242.

Summary

A black star snares the TARDIS, sending a time displacement field through the Ship. The field will kill the Doctor and Benny, so they abandon the TARDIS in the Jade Pagoda lifeboat and plan to rendezvous with it in a week.

They land in France, 1242, where the Doctor convinces Church officials that he is an observer from Alexander's court. Benny's a little less subtle – she fails to interfere with an Inquisition execution and runs, encountering the rogue Guy de Carnac, who's branded as a traitor to the Order. He leads her to the Roc of the Cathares, a fortified sanctuary for those fleeing Church persecution. Guy and Bernice's attraction grows, but they spend a lot of time trying not to show concern for one another.

As Church forces eye a takeover of the Roc, the Doctor locates the fortress and is reunited with Benny and Guy. A series of "suicides" break out in the sanctuary, as the Doctor suspects a church agent is hunting for a sacred skull believed to be that of Jesus Christ. The Doctor confirms the skull isn't even male, and was planted by Church officials to disgrace the Cathares as heretics. He keeps this information to himself, not willing to interfere with history.

History dictates the Roc must fall, but the Doctor suggests that taking Guy in the TARDIS won't disrupt the future. But it dawns on Guy how much Benny loves him and he makes plans to run, not wishing to subject her to a fugitive life and probable death from the Order.

Church forces overrun the Roc and set it afire. The Cathare leader asks the Doctor to hide "Christ's" skull, but a sudden Church attack on the

Doctor's group outside the Roc results in the Order retrieving the holy relic. Guy, having secretly followed the Doctor and Benny, attacks the Church's men in a blood fever to protect her. With no hope of rescuing Guy, the Doctor and Benny time-jump in the TARDIS, returning to a fiery wreckage moments later. The Doctor suggests Guy might have escaped and they could look for the body. Benny says no, not wanting to ruin her illogical belief that Guy is alive by seeing his corpse.

Memorable Moments

The Order's spy, Jeanne, wounds Guy trying to take the sacred skull. Benny seeks revenge by telling Jeanne of the Roc's fate – Jeanne is devastated. Guy's final battle is amazing. The TARDIS dematerializes and the Doctor looks at Benny as if daring her to accuse him of dragging her off, his fingers tracing his Aztec talisman all the time.

Sex and Spirits

In Guy, Benny has her most emotional romance of the series.

Benny's former love, Kyle, was a considerate and caring individual – to start with. Perhaps because of this, she's never been interested in brief flings. Booze Benny can brew alcohol. She downs hooch vodka and uses it to clean out wounds. She finds a flask – literally – of Napoleon's brandy.

Ass-Whuppings

Guy kills 17, as well as many of the Church soldiers pursuing the Doctor and Benny. The Roc of the Cathares is destroyed.

Continuity

Philppe's father loaned King John the use of Sir Gilles Estram ("The King's Demons"). In "Timelash," the Doctor says the TARDIS has no lifeboats – the Jade Pagoda must have been installed after. Benny has knowledge, perhaps firsthand, of what Necros looks like ("Revelation of the Daleks"). The Doctor and Benny play a card game involving two jacks making a sralk and rules that change on Tuesday (from the original "Star Trek" episode "A Piece of the Action").

The Jade Pagoda was first seen in *Iceberg*.

The Doctor again wears his Aztec jade brooch, nervously holding it when he thinks of Bernice and Guy's relationship ("The Aztecs," *White*

Darkness).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor's nerve pinch feigns death in humans for ten minutes. He can identify fingerprint widths down to three percent. He knows how to stitch tissue. His sword skill at least matches Guy's.

The Doctor frees a prisoner to lead him back to the Roc of the Cathares, only to realize that the prisoner's escape could be used to disgrace Louis de Citeaux and overthrow him, usurping history. The Doctor ponders killing the man to preserve the timeline, but isn't sure he can do the deed. Fortunately – if you can call it that – the prisoner dies from his injuries.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: The loneliness of Guy's death makes Benny miss Ace.

Her home town was Vandor Prime, in the Gamma Delphinus System. After the Daleks wasted it, she learned tourniquets and stitches in the resettlement camp. She can quote *Henry V* and hums "Deadwood Stage." Not in a sexual fashion, she constantly tries out new clothes for women *and* men.

Benny carries a metal fossil-scraper that doubles as a lock-pick. She has some knowledge of forging Japanese samurai swords. She can curse in ancient Tzun.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The TARDIS has an arboretum, a complete indoor sports center, a ballroom, a tennis court, a groundcar garage, a water purification planet and a quarantine bay.

The Ship's time-field is generated from the center outwards. All three console rooms have direct access to the Ship's real-world interface. Lateral drift compensators can send the TARDIS into a slingshot orbit. An automatic time-jump is needed to calibrate the TARDIS autosystems for spatial transport.

• *The TARDIS' Jade Pagoda*: The official TARDIS escape pod, constructed of marbled jade. The Pagoda homes in on the nearest location within specified parameters – the Doctor here specifies a Class-M planet orbiting a main sequence G-class star. The TARDIS can later home in on the Pagoda and merge with it.

A green light tops the Pagoda's roof, making it look like a Chinese cabinet or wardrobe. A yellow glow appears inside. Its walls, floor and ceiling are made of smooth, almost marbled jade, with paper and bamboo floor-to-ceiling partitions. The Pagoda's simplified console has four sides

and triple-roofed housing for a smaller time rotor at the center. The scanner screen is a large, free-standing Chinese mirror.

Alien Planets

There are close to 650 million Class-M planets with main sequence G-class stars in the galaxy.

Organizations

The Adjudicators prefer internal assassination as a method of advancement.

Phenomena

• *Black stars*: A star made of quasi-baryonic dark matter. They're only partially real and can become more massive than a black hole, without actually collapsing out of real-space. They don't give off an energy signature and their semi-tachyonic nature makes them a temporal danger as well. In short, you can't see black stars coming at you, and you're utterly screwed if they do.

The stars send out a wave front of time displacement. Everything on the one side of the wave is roughly three and a half seconds in the future of everything on the other side. Designed to survive this, good sir, the human body was not.

• *"Ace's Kiss of Death"*: Term used by Spacefleet veterans to denote unrequited love that results in the sacrifice of others.

• *Fortune telling*: The Doctor says fortune telling can test the general strength of local reality. Under normal conditions, fortune-telling is 50 percent accurate and 50 percent flawed, so anything that deviates from that suggests a disruption of the local nexus.

History

Homer wrote *The Odyssey*, but a female admirer of his wrote *The Iliad*.

At the End of the Day

Astounding. As a couple, Guy and Benny put Ace and Jan to shame – proving that simply sleeping with someone pales before true romance. *Sanctuary* has a few cracks, such as a wimpy name for an action-driven

book, a fairly obvious murderer and dialogue-thin battle scenes that get weary. Yet it meticulously pulls together previous novel threads – Could the Doctor kill someone in cold blood? What does it take to win Benny's heart? When is interference with history justified? – to create one of the best stand-alone books. The ending will tear your entrails out.

Human Nature

Author: Paul Cornell, from a plot by Cornell and Kate Orman. Virgin New Adventure #38. Release Date: May 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Benny (and Wolsey the cat too!).

Travel Log

Planet Crex in the Augon system and near Farringham, Earth, April 1914.

Summary

Recent events, especially the death of Benny's beloved Guy, have taken their toll on the Doctor and he decides to take a vacation from being him. With the help of an alien bodysmith, the Doctor replaces his mind with that of "John Smith," a fictional persona crafted from personality bits of former TARDIS travelers. Nanites restructure the Doctor's DNA to make him human, and "Smith" becomes a history teacher at a boy's military academy near Farringham in 1914. Benny watches after him, disguised as his niece.

However, the shapeshifting, alien Aubertides learn of the Doctor's plan and seek his Time Lord DNA to grant them regeneration and extended reproduction abilities. One of them approaches Benny as the "tenth Doctor," but she sees through the deception. Benny tries to restore the Doctor's persona, contained in a biodata pod, but the tormented schoolboy Timothy Dean has taken the pod and is assimilating the Doctor's DNA.

Smith meanwhile pursues a romance with science teacher Joan Redfern. They quickly fall in love – he proposes, and she accepts. Benny is less than thrilled, trying to convince Smith he's not human as the five Aubertides attack the school and level it with a low-level nuclear device. The aliens capture Joan and offer to trade her for the Doctor's biodata. Smith decides to sacrifice the Doctor for Joan, but Dean shows him a future in which the Aubertides, powered by regeneration, conquer Gallifrey and put the High Council to the sword.

Smith restores the Doctor and puts his own mind in the biodata pod. The Aubertide leader August, prepared to absorb Time Lord DNA, is ill equipped to handle Smith's human nature. Smith's mind takes over August,

but he takes a blast from the Aubertide Hoff that was meant for Joan and dies. The living incarnation of Death collects Smith as part of a long-standing deal with the Doctor.

With the school destroyed, the Doctor confesses to Joan that as a Time Lord, he isn't capable of loving her. She gives the Doctor her tabby tom-cat Wolsey to "guard" him and Bernice. The TARDIS departs.

And the Doctor, alone in the TARDIS console room late at night, smooths Wolsey's fur and weeps.

Memorable Moments

In perhaps the top moment in the series, the school is besieged by Aubertides and a blood-covered Smith looks at the headless corpse of young student Phipps. Joan calls him "John," Benny calls him "Doctor" and gives him his umbrella. Smith makes his choice between the two, taking the umbrella – and symbolically becoming the Doctor. But as he decides not to respond to death with death, he tells the frightened and armed boys, "There's another way. Throw away your guns."

Timothy Dean deserves a punishment, but Smith, compassionate soul that he is, decides to slap Dean with a fluffy pink slipper. ("Yes... that shouldn't hurt.") In another top moment, Dean's classmates try to hang him and nearly succeed. Gutsy Benny, her face smothered by Aphasia's killer balloon, pushes her face *toward* Aubertide Greeneye's blade to pop it.

Benny, pretending to be the Aubertide Greeneye, nibbles on Joan's hair. And the final touch, as the Doctor's mask slips and he cries for the loss of Joan.

Sex and Spirits

Smith first practices kissing on the bark of a tree, but enjoys at least six smoochie sessions with Joan. (Please note that the eighth Doctor only had two in the FOX movie. Solely based on this evidence, Sylvester McCoy becomes the sexiest Doctor.)

Also, the randy Greeneye insists on having sex with Bernice, but nothing happens.

Boozer Benny downs six pints on the planet Crex and keeps a bottle of Aldebaran brandy on standby. Benny also likes reading manuals cover to cover – in the bath, with a good bottle of Cabernet Sauvignon. Fortunately or unfortunately (depending on who you are), the Doctor keeps a medi-patch

that cures drunkenness instantly.

Ass-Whuppings

Death quite literally claims John Smith. The Aubertides lose Aphasia and Serif. Aubertides August and Hoff lose their bodies. The school is devastated by a fusion bomb, slaughtering boys and teachers and killing hundreds. In an alternate future, Aubertides wipe out the Gallifreyan High Council. The end of Smith's finger is bitten off by Serif, but the Doctor heals it.

Continuity

Smith's fictional ex-fiancée Verity could allude to Verity Lambert, the first producer of "Doctor Who." There's a symbolic flashback to "The Aztecs" as Smith and his beloved Joan enjoy cocoa.

Benny struggles with Guy's loss and doesn't doubt that she loved him (*Sanctuary*). Death collects Smith, making good on the promise of taking a life from the Doctor (*Timewyrm: Revelation*). The Doctor bundles August and Hoff's intelligences into the biodatapod, sends it to the Monks of Felsecar for safekeeping (*Love and War*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor conclusively states that as a Time Lord, he cannot love Joan. He also cannot recreate the late Smith – and wouldn't want to. The Doctor ends *Human Nature* by reaffirming the knowledge that he wants to be the Doctor.

He can re-heal his severed fingers. He's been having nightmares, and amuses himself with jigsaws, Chinese conkers and clay models of Zygons. The Doctor's pupils glow silver when he reassumes control from Smith.

The Doctor instructs Benny that while he's Smith, she mustn't let him commit suicide, hurt animals – especially owls – or do anything impossible. He's still a vegetarian, but hates pears.

The Doctor says he hasn't been called "Father" in a while. He hopes that one day, when he's old and his travels are over, that he can be just a man again and find the dangerous love that makes and kills human beings.

• *Dr. John Smith*: An insightful teacher, Dr. Smith (surprise, surprise) keeps interfering in other classes. Allegedly 48 and from Aberdeen, Smith writes children's stories such as "The Old Man and the Police Box" about a

world called Gallifrey and a strange inventor who teaches about police boxes.

His faked credentials claim he's from the Flavian Academy of Aberdeen. He likes the feel of woolens and has innate cricketing skills. He was tormented in school by a boy with a little beard. (Please tell me all this sounds familiar.)

His Navy father went missing and is suspected of being a traitor. Sarah McCloud, who died at Culloden, taught him to read. He hasn't seen his ex-fiancée Verity in years. When the final battle looms, Smith prays the Lord's Prayer.

• *The Doctor and Smith*: Smith suspects the Doctor discovered he was a bully who hurt people terribly. He at first resists the idea of turning back into the Time Lord, but finally accepts the Doctor can best stop the Aubertides.

• *Joan Redfern*: Smith's love is in her early forties and teaches science. Her husband Arthur died in the war. She doesn't like teaching at the school, but does like other people making the first move. She sees her husband's death in the Doctor's biodatapod and the Time Lord's cold reaction to it frightens her.

• *Smith and Joan*: They enjoyed many talks and games of whist and planned to get married. Then the Aubertides showed up.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: The Doctor refuses to fix Benny's portable history unit, a dangerous anachronism, a second time.

Benny, now 32, isn't convinced she'll ever have children, but dislikes being called "Miss" and thus reminded of her marital status.

Benny hasn't met Rudyard Kipling and carries a laser cutter. Her little beer belly doesn't slow her down. Because of Guy, Benny has a phobia of being surrounded by men with swords. She paints pictures of gentle hills.

• *Death*: Death and her sisters, Time and Pain and several more Eternals, make sordid little deals with Time Lords. Those taken as Champions pay a price. Death says she's probably done dealing with the Doctor (*SLEEPY* proves otherwise).

• *Verity*: Supposedly an ex-fiancée of Smith, Verity was actually a female custodian of the Doctor's subconscious.

• *Timothy Dean*: Infected with the Doctor's DNA, Dean gains two hearts and a respiratory bypass system. He dies in 1995, with many children and grandchildren. The Doctor visits Dean in his last moments.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Artron energy traces ("The Deadly Assassin") permeate Benny and probably other TARDIS crew members. The TARDIS communicates with Timothy Dean through the telephone in the exterior shell. For Wolsey's benefit, there's a TARDIS room full of cat litter and another with sunshine and a lot of transforming cushions.

Alien Races

Time Lords – certainly the Doctor – can take advantage of time barriers to view possible futures, a talent similar to the eighth Doctor's "foresight" ability.

It's rumored that Time Lords destroy their enemies by hammering them with asteroids. Time Lord biodata can mutate other beings, such as humans or trees, into pseudo-Time Lords.

According to August, the Time Lords guard against future threats by interbreeding humanoid races, shifting genetic material from one biosystem to another. Perhaps they're attempting to overturn their periodic sterility. Time Lords sometimes dream of choosing their next forms, being able to fly, becoming the opposite sex or bearing children.

Aubertides: The Aubertides, shapeshifters from the planet Aubris, reproduce asexually by sprouting buds in pouches on their back (rather like the titular "Gremlins," one supposes). They can only reproduce for six generations, before the genetic material gets too thin, progressively stupider and dies out. Worse, Aubertides have short lifespans. The Aubertide Queen starts the cycle over by laying eggs every hundred years, and the King fertilizes them in the ground – taking a lot of the fun out of it, one presumes. Nutrient vats nourish newborns.

The Aubertides can duplicate the appearance of anything they eat. They can transport themselves through a vortex and can create a time barrier impenetrable to anyone short of a Time Lord. Some have individual talents or weapons – Aphasia had a speech-controlled, suffocating killer balloon and Serif could pick through a person's memories by ingesting their flesh.

Aubertides eat anything, even their own family members. Consuming Time Lord DNA almost killed August's family with a fever. However, an Aubertide Time Lord could theoretically regenerate 12 times, with each incarnation budding one figure.

Alien Planets

• *Earth*: The Aubertides cite Earth as being in the Stellarian Galaxy.

• *Crex*: Has a market that stretches for miles. The Doctor purchases mind-swap equipment there from a merchant named Laylock.

Stuff You Need

The Doctor's biodatapod, also used as a cricket ball, contained the Doctor's sentience. It gave off harmless radiation and radiated the Doctor's memories and emotions.

Organizations

The Grand Circle of Aubis: is composed of 36 Aubertide members (six complete families).

History

After August's Aubertide family was exiled from Aubis, they subdued six local solar systems with biological weapons, then enslaved several more. They returned to Aubis and conquered it, slaughtering their former tormentors.

At the End of the Day

A must-not-be-missed bold experiment, disliked by a few "No shagging in the TARDIS" traditionalists, but lusted after by more passionate souls. As a romance, *Human Nature* proves just as memorable as "City at the Edge of Forever" from "Star Trek," dishing out satire and war commentary. The Doctor, like many of us, breaks apart like a bunch of Legos but totally reaffirms himself. It's the second of back-to-back heartbreaking stories for the Doctor and Bernice, filled with so many twists that poor Bernice can only hang on for dear life. And so will you.

Original Sin

Author: Andy Lane. Virgin New Adventure #39. Release Date: June 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz Forrester and Christopher Cwej.

Travel Log

Oolis, Spaceport Five Overcity, and the house of Chris Cwej's parents, 2975.

Summary

Benny's Hith friend, Homeless Forsaken Betrayed and Alone, has inside information of a stolen Hith ship. As he dies, Homeless warns Benny away from an unspecified danger on Earth, but of course, she and the Doctor investigate. Bad move. The TARDIS goes missing on Earth, and they follow a lead to Purgatory, home of Earth's soldiers, the Imperial Landsknechte.

Meanwhile, Adjudicator Roslyn Forrester and her new partner, Christopher Cwej, investigate the murder of an Undercity Hith and find evidence implicating the Doctor and Benny. Worse, their superior, Adjudicator Secular Rashid, is fueling the cover-up.

On Purgatory, a Landsknechte goes berserk and the Doctor finds madness-inducing icaron particles in the crazed man's brain. While interviewing an expert on icaron particles – the murderous Zebulon Pryce – the Doctor and Provost-Major Beltempest are captured by the alien Hith. They tell the Doctor of their stolen, great warship, the icaron-powered Skel'-Ske, and the Doctor concludes the ship is on Earth, accidentally irradiating people with icaron particles.

Roz and Chris prove the Doctor innocent, but the evidence-manipulator attacks them with killer robots and gravely wounds Chris. An underworld doctor not only helps them, but restores a memory he once took from Roz. She remembers killing her late partner, Fenn Martle, in self-defense, having discovered he was taking bribes.

The memory leads them to the headquarters of INITEC, an electronics conglomerate, where the Skel'-Ske is moored in hyperspace. The INITEC

chairman, the mastermind who built much of the Earth Empire and faked the murder evidence against the Doctor, stands revealed as Tobias Vaughn, the man who tried to invade Earth in the 1970s with the Cybermen. The robotic, thousand-year old Vaughn now captures the Doctor, demanding the secret of time travel.

Roz, Benny and Chris sneak onto the Skel'-Ske and their Hith friend, Powerless Friendless, brings the ship crashing into real space and destroys it. The Doctor seals Vaughn in the TARDIS, previously stolen by Vaughn, and therefore neutralizes Vaughn's ability to transfer his consciousness to other robots. The Doctor runs from the robotic Vaughn and hops out the TARDIS' back door, grabbing an energy blade from a robot. Dashing back inside, the Doctor slices Vaughn's head off.

The Doctor saves Vaughn's brain crystal and fixes the Cwej family's food irradiator – a sort of oven – with it. Roz and Chris, now placed on the Adjudicators' death list by the corrupt Rashid, depart with the Doctor and Benny in the TARDIS.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor's throw-down debate with the manic Zebulon Pryce (echoes of killer Hannibal Lecter from "Silence of the Lambs"), in which the Doctor doubts he has the right to make life-and-death decisions. Pryce proves, with the Doctor's logic, that he'd be justified in killing the Time Lord and "saving" those the Doctor would kill in future. A little less philosophically, the Doctor slices through Vaughn's neck like a knife through hot butter – very cool.

Sex and Spirits

Benny lip-mashes Chris long and hard for saving her life.

Roz offers Chris scotch on duty, but he declines. Chris' father serves a Gallavax Prime drink, brewed from the fermented pollen of mutant space bees.

Ass-Whuppings

Roz previously murdered her lover Fenn Martle. The Doctor and Benny set a trap that inadvertently kills five Landsknechte troopers. Fifty thousand humans plus an unknown amount of aliens snuff it when an orbital laser platform malfunctions and destroys an entire accommodation block. Pryce killed an unknown amount of Landsknechte over three years, plus 58 after

arriving on Dis. The insane Pryce himself is killed by the Hith after sabotaging a *Skel'Ske* control unit. A thousand Hith died when the Hith flagship Gex was destroyed.

Chris fares poorly, enduring a blackened skin, burned fur, bleeding lips, a missing ear and Heaven knows what else in a skimmer explosion. Benny gets a bit crisp from an explosion.

Continuity

Tobias Vaughn, working with the Cybermen, first tried to seize Earth in "The Invasion." Vaughn's funding built BOSS ("The Green Death") and furthered Think Tank's robotics research to hopefully gain a robot body for himself ("Robot"). He financially supported Whitaker ("Invasion of the Dinosaurs") and the ubiquitously mentioned Blinovitch. Vaughn's researchers built the glitterguns that won the Second Cyberwar ("Revenge of the Cybermen"). Vaughn ransacked Earth-strewn Cybermen bodies from stories ranging from "The Tenth Planet" to "Attack of the Cybermen." For his other machinations, *see History*.

The Wars of Acquisition ended a few years ago when the Sense-Sphere ("The Sensorites") capitulated, sparking Earth's economic and technological upsurge. Romana's regeneration in "Destiny of the Daleks" is firmly established as her first.

Events in *Lucifer Rising* damaged the Adjudicators' power and integrity for hundreds of years and the Service became a quasi-religious organization to help compensate.

During the Wars of Acquisition, the Greld (*The Empire of Glass*) resisted Earth's advancement. Earth forces launched a quark bomb into the Greld's sun, turning it from a white dwarf to a red giant. The Greld were annihilated, and the system used as the prison world of Dis.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor admits to Pryce he's afraid of dying, and questions if more people die than live because of his interference. Because he left Gallifrey, his mind won't transfer to the APC Network at death.

The Doctor can, just for a few seconds, shift his genetic make-up to mimic another being's DNA he's been in close proximity with. He hates robots because they have no emotions to play on, and his hat is made from something sturdier than ordinary cloth. Lady Genniploritreludar, an Arcalian lecturer, taught him stellar engineering at the Academy. He can speak pig

Latin. His equipment can remove icaron radiation.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Now 33-years-old, Benny also understands pig Latin, but doesn't comprehend the phrase, "the cat's mother." She hates being called "Bernie."

• *Roz Forrester*: Roslyn Sarah Forrester's reputation among Adjudicators was built on the fact that she once ate an untouchable animal abuser's plastic ident and got him arrested for having no identification. When he claimed she ate it, he was convicted for perjury, too.

Roz's family comes from old money based on centuries-long patents and stocks, and they keep an estate on Io. They're pure-bred African Xhosa stock, having isolated themselves from "inferior" stock. Roz spent long hours taking centcomp lessons, alone with no friends and no fun.

She's slightly claustrophobic, from long nights spent in deep shelters during the Wars of Acquisition. Friendships with other children showed how barren her life was, and she split from her family's path. She took an Imperial Landsknechte induction course on Purgatory, but considered the Adjudicators more concerned about justice.

Roz loathes ambiguity, and views people as innocent or guilty. Roz lived in the upscale Overcity level 505, and considered Undertown residents untrustworthy and unsanitary, deserving everything that happens to them. She considers herself a tired, old woman.

• *Roz and Fenn Martle*: She spent two years training on Ponten IV, another five acting as squire to a roving off-world Adjudicator. She was recalled to Earth and spent 15 years as Fenn Martle's squire and lover. She considered him the most dedicated Adjudicator she'd ever met. Roz followed him to a hotel room, armed with only her personal vibroknife. When she realized he was taking bribes, Martle tried to kill her and she knifed him in the eye. Tobias Vaughn, Martle's true employer, planted a false memory in Roz's mind that an alien Falardi killed Martle, strengthened her already high xenophobia.

• *Chris Cwej*: His last name's pronounced "Shvey," not "Cwej," if that helps you. Christopher Rodonanté Cwej's family has a tradition of Adjudication service. Not only did Chris' dad graduate in 2905, squiring to Roz's partner Fenn Martle and retiring in 2971, a Cwej sat on the founding panel of Adjudicators. The Cwej family lives in Overcity's lower levels, but after *Original Sin* ponders moving off Earth, possibly to Hithis.

Chris graduated on Ponten IV in 2974 and was assigned to traffic squad, Spaceport Nine Overcity Lodge before becoming Roz's partner. As a

teenager, Chris had a reptilian pet and his room has modern spaceship models, pictures of semi-naked music singers in erotic poses and walls plastered with "Galaxy's Most Wanted" simcords.

Body-bepple techniques gave Chris golden fur, pointed ears, a small, black bear-like nose and little button eyes, but the alterations are burned off by story's end. He's naturally blonde-haired.

• *Professor Zebulon Pryce*: A member of the University of Sallas who traveled to Purgatory and discovered, using a Landsknechte weapons research grant how to produce icarons. Sadly, this drove him mad. He kept his victims alive for weeks, torturing them, until a lab fire exposed him and he was sentenced to the Imperial prison on Dis.

• *Tobias Vaughn*: Vaughn, not trusting the Cybermen ("The Invasion") kept spare bodies. After he was shot, his mind, personality and essence were transmitted to an International Electronics communications satellite in geostationary orbit, then downloaded into a robot body in his New York office. He regained control of his company using a different body. Within three years, the board of directors of International Electromatics consisted of different versions of himself.

Vaughn could put his mind into any robot running on INITEC software. Yet, he could only be in one body at a time. In many ways, his goal was the protection of humanity.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The Ship can supply artron energy to heal the Doctor.

TARDISes actually "live" in the Time Vortex and emerge into reality with encouragement and protest. The controls are only isomorphic if the Doctor sets them up that way. Type 40 TARDISes are rated for environments up to and including quasars.

The TARDIS has a rose garden, golf course, cinema, a wine cellar two floors below the library and an air lock leading to a back door. In a rare moment, the Doctor directly speaks to the TARDIS and it telepathically responds.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: The Doctor says Time Lords' psycho-surgically removed their shame many generations ago. (It's likely a joke, but you never know.)

• *Hith*: The slug-like Hith can change sex from female to male. (There is nothing to prove or disprove the reverse.) Hith have a vestigial shell and tail, eye-stalks and blue blood. They naturally shun company, even each

other, and they use genetically-engineered small animals as control elements in their technology. They turn gray as they die. The Hith renounced their original names to remind themselves and the rest of the galaxy of their suffering during the Wars of Acquisition.

Threllinius Omega moon anthropods: Creatures bio-engineered into Landsknechte uniforms. They're brainless, but very loyal. The uniforms are keyed to a particular user, so unauthorized wearers get ripped to shreds.

• *Ditz*: Alien, poodle-sized animal that looks like a bee. Ditzes are pretty stupid and can't fly in Earth's gravity.

Alien Planets

• *Purgatory*: Training center and headquarters of the Imperial Landsknechte, and one of the Eight Wonders of the Universe. Purgatory was terraformed into force-wall separated segments, each with its own ecology and climate, that's used as training grounds.

• *Dis*: A prison planet, orbiting inside the photosphere of a sun in the Greld system, that holds special criminals and political dissenters.

Stuff You Need

Time Tanks speed up time so injuries heal more rapidly.

Organizations

• *Adjudicators*: The 800-year-old Adjudication Service prides itself on being incorruptible, unbiased and on dispensing unarguable justice. Hence, the merest hint of corruption could permanently damage the organization. Most Adjudicators report to an Adjudicator Secular. Mindprobes are used on criminals. Adjudicator gene testers run security checks.

• *Imperial Landsknechte*: As the marine-like champions of Earth, the Landsknechte scourge off-worlders and burn numbers on prisoners of war, and are funded by taxes from conquered planets. Under War Act of 2825, the Landsknechte have full powers to administer the death penalty for almost anything.

• *INITEC (a.k.a. Interstellar Nanoatomic Independent Terran Empire Corporation)*: Vaughn's new company is an anagram for International Electromatics ("The Invasion").

Ships

Skel'-Ske, an experimental Hith ship, was powered by icarons and armed with klypstromic warheads, quark projectors, high-power masers and long-range transdyne impellers. "Skel'-Ske" is the sound made by the wings of Jakkat-Kajjat, the twin-headed Goddess of Justified Retribution, as she tears the souls of her enemies from their bodies.

Phenomena

• *Icarons*: Artificially-produced tachyon particles that are native to hyperspace. Hence, icaron-powered ships require zero energy to stay there. Most societies ban icarons, which cause paranoia and psychotic behavior in carbon-based lifeforms with abnormal or altered body chemistry. Icarons are named for Icarus, whose death resulted from badly applied science.

• *Body Bepple*: Genetic alteration, done mostly for fashion or vanity. Body bepple works on the basis that all cells in the human body – except for brain cells – are replaced every three months or so. Therefore, if you stick a specific mutagen onto a targeted virus, you can make alterations within the design limits of the body.

History

• Earth is now run by an Imperial Court, divided up into culturally-different areas called "spacesports." Xenophobia characterizes the current era. Twenty-nine races filed reparation claims for the Wars of Acquisition. Human longevity sped past 135.

• During the Wars, floating buildings were constructed above Earth's battle-torn cities using cheap null-grav technology. Within 10 years, battlefronts pushed far away from Earth and half the population moved to the Overcities (the site of London, formerly called Central City, is now Spaceport Five Overcity). Twenty years later, only underdwellers inhabit the neglected surface.

• The Hith lost a short and nasty war with the Earth Empire circa 2971. Hithis was terraformed, and the surviving Hith scattered throughout the galaxy as lowly workers or vagabonds.

• Vaughn claims INITEC's invention of the boson cannon stopped the Jullatii from overrunning Earth in 2350. INITEC-built Vigilant laser defense satellites blocked the Zygons ("Terror of the Zygons") from melting the ice-caps and flooding the world in 2765.

At the End of the Day

Tasty! A no-nonsense, solid work, all the more impressive because it doesn't try to impress you. Before this book's release, many fans moaned, "Oh, God, two cops in the TARDIS," but *Original Sin* cleanly lays out Roz's emotional scars and Chris' deer-in-the-headlights routine, balancing them as companions. Zebulon Pryce reeks of raw, wide-eyed death like few "Who" maniacs, and the Doctor's fear before the madman, who can philosophically best him, is laid waste before us. A wholeheartedly innovative piece, launching a new novel era.

Sky Pirates!

Author: Dave Stone. Virgin New Adventures #40. Release Date: July 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

Sloathe pocket universe.

Summary

The TARDIS intercepts a distress signal, and each traveler hears it differently. The Doctor realizes something's wrong, but it's too late – a "reality bomb" left from the Time Wars explodes and grounds the TARDIS in the System, a self-contained microcosm.

They find themselves in a dimension where the human inhabitants are plagued by the rogue Planet X and its race of invading, shapeshifting Sloathes. The Doctor and Benny join the swashbuckling crew of the starship *Schirron Dream* on a quest for the lost Eyes of the Schirron, artifacts that can manipulate reality. Unfortunately, Roz and Chris are captured and dosed with Sloathe venom that will grow in their systems and kill them without regular injections.

After locating some of the Eyes, a growing amount of evidence makes the Doctor conclude the entire system might have been created by a Charon, an ancient foe of the Time Lords.

As Roz and Chris discover the parasitic Sloathes only became evil because everyone they encountered thought, "Argh! Argh! Horrible slimy monsters!", the sentient Planet X turns rogue and begins munching Sloathes for lunch, becoming an unstoppable mass. Simultaneously, the System finally undergoes a catastrophic collapse it'd been fighting for centuries.

"Evil" Sloathes steal the Eyes from the Doctor's party and deliver them to the Charon. In turn, the Charon blasts the Doctor with bioenergy, activating a multi-dimensional attack response programmed into all Time Lords, should they encounter their ancient enemies. The Doctor's body ignites like a magnesium flare and deflects all of the Charon's energy

attacks. The Doctor then communicates with the Charon and the creature decides to perish, unable to bear the loneliness as the last of its kind. As the threat passes, the Doctor's body returns to normal.

In the System, the Sloathe named Six deliberately opens the TARDIS door and is shish-ka-bobed by Planet X's tentacle. Six in turn blasts the TARDIS, which responds with an Eye of Harmony-power burst that destroys both Six and Planet X. Thanks to the Doctor's manipulations, the *Schirron Dream* crew members Li Shao and Leetha t'Zhan use the Eyes to reshape the System and create a new planet for the surviving humans and pacified Sloathes. The Doctor then locates Roz and Chris, cures them of their infection, and the TARDIS crew departs.

Memorable Moments

The strange nature of the pocket universe mentally influences Benny and a group of menacing Sun Samurai to sing a chorus line of Rojahama's Song-and-Dance – just to break the ice ("Everyone should learn to trust each other..."). Benny is haunted by the experience.

On Prometheus, vampire chickens strut in the night. Leetha, one of the Eye-handling Chosen Ones, decides there's no point to fighting on and the Doctor responds: "Slit your wrists. Go on. You've got the tools in hand, so why don't you do it?"

The Doctor's multi-dimensional transformation is memorable, if baffling. We feel the Time Lord's inner pain and loneliness with the death of the last of the Charon.

Ass-Whuppings

The rogue Sloathe Planet X gobbles its fellows like they were pudding pops. Once the System stabilizes, only about 200,000 people out of two million have survived.

Continuity

The Doctor's previous incarnations are shown – in addition to the Valeyard ("Trial of a Time Lord"). Benny mirrors Ace's debut in "Dragonfire" by working as a strip club waitress.

The Doctor fine-tunes Chris' biomorphic pattern after his exposure to Icaron radiation and turns him into a lizard creature for laughs (*Original Sin*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor symbiotically feels the wounded TARDIS' pain. His lunch hamper looks like a small Chinese-box TARDIS and acts trans-dimensional. He's got good receptivity to morphic resonances. Benny thinks to some degree that the Doctor views his companions as pets. The Doctor has green-gray eyes. He creates a biological counter agent to the Sloathe venom.

The Doctor's physiology gives some protection from the Eyes' radiation, and he can stabilize the Eyes by secreting electrostatically active substances from his pores. He inspired the legends of the Magic Man among Yani's people.

Like all Time Lords, his body has an extra-dimensional nature that we as humans cannot understand. He's been programmed to defend and attack against ancient Time Lord enemies, including the Charon. In such a situation, he can deflect a Charon energy assault by creating extra-dimensional bodies, replacing them as fast as the attacker can destroy them.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Professor Summerfield once tried to selectively breed a hamster capable of doing a handbrake-turn so it could ram-raid rabbit holes.

Benny can read some Navaho. She can dislocate arms with a TerraFed military technique she learned during the Dalek Wars. At age 15, she wrote a "depressing" thesis that would likely make Mr. Rogers suicidal. She's been with the TARDIS three years.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz smokes Cuban-leaf and Lebanese Gold cigars.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris is about 20. As a child, he cowered behind the couch watching "EarthDoom XV" with its low-production Third Dalek War tales (an interesting parallel to another science-fiction show, don't you agree?).

• *Nathan Li Shao*: Nefarious sky pirate and captain of the *Schirron Dream*. He's also called the Sky Wolf, the Child Slayer, and the Barbarous Buggering Butchering Buccaneer of a Billion Bloody Battles! – names he gave himself to look more fierce. Li Shao frequently leads his crew on plundering adventures, but sometimes undertakes quests, such as for the Eyes of the Schirron.

• *Leetha T'Zhan*: As a Chosen One – one of a specific group who can manipulate the Eyes – Leetha also carries the rank of Sun Samauri from the planet Aneas.

• *Sgloomi Po*: A Sloathe somewhat humanized by Roz and Chris.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Roz's bathroom is ornate brass and marble. The crew hikes through four to five kilometers through the TARDIS' quasi-jungle environment for a picnic. The Ship electrostatically zaps Wolsey when he strays. The Curio Room holds an Ice Warrior *sklaki* sword.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Possibly have a retro-engineered spare-body-parts repository. After the Time Wars, they pattern-encoded their unborn with a multi-dimensional response to kill their ancient enemies.

• *Sloathes*: Underground-dwelling. Rabidly acquisitive. Shapeshifting in the extreme. The Sloathes depend upon other lifeforms to shape their thought-processes and physical forms. Therefore, if you imagine them as strawberry shortcake, that's what they become. No sex, please, they're hermaphrodites. The self-renewing Sloathes, somewhat vulnerable to radiation, only die by severe trauma or by being eaten. It's possible their life cycle ends with one big 'ol Sloathe eating the rest.

• *Snatas*: Like "It" from the infamous Steven King novel, the gray and slimy Snatas creatures feed upon the endocrinic secretions produced during fear and terror. Its original gene-plasm came from a species long extinct on Earth, and formed the basis for various human monster myths. Chris and Roz likely encounter the last of its kind.

• *Charon*: Name corrupted as "Schirron." The meta-dimensional Charon could twist the very fabric of the Universe, building worlds nothing humanoid could live in. They were extremely long-lived and could have countless resurrections, but become immobile in old age. One survived in a freak osmosizing, one-way energy field until this story.

Alien Planets

• *The System*: A Charon-created microcosm, 50,000 leagues in circumference, hidden in an electrostatic bubble-shell. Four high-density planets, called Wanderers, spun around the sun. This wacky microverse obeyed its own personal and quite remarkable physical laws, and the sun was powered by previous Eyes of the Schirron.

System species are massively hybridized. Certain System hallucinations are so alien to the viewer's perception that they could kill.

• *Wanderers*: The planets of the system. Their remains created a new world. Before the Wanderers' destruction, Prometheus was the nearest Wanderer to the sun, and a vast rock bowl. Elysium was a water world

occupied by Sloathes for years. Talking tigers, considered the most gracious of hosts, populated Aneas. Reklon, with its (literally) superdense inhabitants, was also Sloathe-controlled. So-called "tiger prawns" are actually Reklonian polar tiger testicles.

• *Planet X*: A black ball of basalt caked with ash and slag, cracked like perished rubber, flung from its original orbit – possibly as a Wanderer – millennia ago. The winds could strip a man's flesh. When united with what used to be Most Supreme Captain Trenkor Lep, the sentient Planet tore into the Sloathes.

Stuff You Need

• *The Eyes of Schirron*: Powerful artifacts that are interactive and each linked to the System's Wanderers on subatomic and extra-dimensional levels. The set included the Elysium, Reklon, Promethean and Anean Eyes. The Eyes acted like interdimensional wormholes, linking the System to our Universe, but the Eyes' radiation could kill. Sloathes, the Doctor and a rare type of humans (called "The Chosen Ones") had limited immunity to the Eyes and could somewhat manipulate them.

• *Sloathe Venom*: If you're injected with Sloathe venom, millions of mutated Sloathe microspores feed on each other until only one remains to feast on your body. Further injections of Sloathe venom make the survivor bigger.

Organizations

• *Adjudicators*: Adjudicators electro-simulate the effects of Earth heroin to give them resistance.

• *Anean Sun Samurai cult*: Organization dedicated through various rituals to finding the Chosen Ones.

Ships

• *Schirron Dream*: Nathan Li Shao's space-raiding ship.

History

• Once the Time Lords harnessed time travel, they conducted the Time Wars to eliminate any potential threats. Entire species, not evil but incompatible with life as we know it, were exterminated. One such race was the Charon.

• Another nameless race – later eradicated – constructed "reality bombs" that tore at the Time Vortex and corrupted the Time Lords' control systems, using a hypnogenic signal to lure them in.

• In 2001, text-enhancement persuasively demonstrated that Shakespeare's *The Most Lamentable Tragedy of Titus Andronicus* as printed in the 1623 Folio was incomplete. The "restored" play was holographically filmed in 2004 as *Carry On Amputating*.

• The Doctor gave the Clangers their big break.

At the End of the Day

Office gushing... with text!... Going under... for the... third time! Excalibur couldn't cut through this twisted, verbose mess, featuring words like "piscoluminescent" – and that's really too bad. The playful *Sky Pirates!* generates some pretty neat ideas such as the silly-putty Sloathes and the awwwww – cute widdle blobs that grow in Roz and Chris. But none of those concepts count if you can't get at them, and there are apple orchards smaller than some of the book's footnotes. It's a drug-induced work, perhaps best suited for trippy, skewed-view people who like "The Rocky Horror Picture Show."

Zamper

Author: Gareth Roberts. Virgin New Adventures #41. Release Date: August 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

Zamper and Aristarchus, 5995; the Doctor's House, Allen Road, time unknown.

Summary

The TARDIS arrives on a test ship and the Doctor's crew discovers too late that it's programmed to crash land. Unable to reach the TARDIS in time, they leave in escape pods and land on Zamper, an world where near-invincible ships of war are constructed. A charming and dapper central computer named the Management directs genetically engineered slug-like creatures named Zamps to build the ships.

At the Zamper concourse, Benny encounters two Zamper clients, the human-hating Chelonians Hezzka and Ivzid. In time, she forges a friendship with Hezzka. Meanwhile, the Doctor and a biologist named Smith discover a cavern of malformed, discolored Zamp eggs and the Doctor realizes the Zamps are building their own ship to leave Zamper.

A psychotic Ivzid arrives and, believing Hezzka has gone soft toward alien species, activates his self-destruct mechanism to bring down the cavern. Before that can happen, one of the Zamps splits open and a terrifying two-meter-long tentacle with a giant mouth springs forth. The loop creature bites Ivzid's head off, then speaks with the corrupted Management's voice. The animal nature of the Zamps has finally denatured their conditioning, and in retaliation for being enslaved, the Zamp-loops plan to infest the galaxy, feasting on every race they encounter.

More loops are quickly born and they take off in a specially made Zamp ship with their eggs. The Doctor talks with Big Mother, the exiled Chelonian leader, and convinces him that for the safety of the universe, and Chelonia in particular, the Chelonian battlefleet must be sacrificed to overwhelm the

Zamp ship's special shielding. The Management locks down the Chelonians' computer control, but a Chelonian commander self-destructs the fleet manually, destroying the Zamp ship. However, the Management survives, but only as a disembodied intelligence.

And, while relaxing later at the Doctor's house on Allen Road, Roz tells the Time Lord about a hidden stash of loop eggs she located on Zamper. The Doctor makes a note to deal with them – eventually.

Memorable Moments

In a top comedy moment, Benny accidentally crawls in bed with a giant turtle, General Hezzka. In a top grisly moment, a newborn Zamp-loop bites Ivzid's head off and picks his skull clean, then feasts on Ivzid's innards. Turning toward the Doctor's party, it then says in the Management's eloquent voice, "Now, what are we to do with you, I wonder?"

Also touching is Hezzka's tearful and quiet death from lingering injuries, a la the sudden realization about the last man down in "The Dirty Dozen."

Sex and Spirits

Chris gets infatuated with the Zamper hostess Christie.

Ass-Whuppings

About 30 Chelonian battle cruisers and a Zamp ship laden with Zamp-loops and eggs.

Continuity

The Chelonians first appeared in *The Highest Science*, also by Gareth Roberts, and "next" crop up in Roberts' *The Well-Mannered War*. The sixth Doctor freed Big Mother's yacht from an agglomeration of frozen stellar matter (*Perfect Timing*: "Schrodinger's Botanist"), earning Big Mother's respect and the courtesy of not being killed.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor escapes from the Chelonian battlefleet before it self-destructs, reasoning he has a role to play in the universal scheme of things and owes it to others and himself to stay alive.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny authored *Similarities in Proto-Cultural*

Artifacts of the Second Dynasty of the Zyrs on a bet, and was surprised when it published because there aren't any similarities in those artifacts. On one of the Doctor's England trips, she snuck off to Milton Keynes to settle future archaeological debates about British clothing and returned hours later, her theories proven right, with boxes full of shoes.

• *Roz Forrester*: The Doctor assures Roz she's safe from most 20th century infections, perhaps due to the miracle virus he gives to his companions.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris doesn't recognize the name Calvin Klein. Roz considers Chris' mawkishness in the dining room "embarrassing, dumb and misplaced – three words that sum him up pretty well."

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Passing through the Zamper wormhole erodes some of the TARDIS' circuits. A yellow and green-spotted button can widen the doors for a Chelonian to fit through.

Alien Races

• *Chelonians*: The Chelonian anthem has 185 verses. Chelonians trade in livres, have saints, keep hatching posts at Kaapon and eat hiatus blossoms and smasti nuts. They possess X-ray eyes and cyber-enhanced hearing, remote-control activated weapons, and small tanks of sealing gel for damaged shells. The Chelonian Science Ministry works to eliminate human "parasites" more efficiently.

Chelonians cannot sit and usually sleep in hammocks. The Hakifur bloodline protects the First Family; the Kumzir line has reputed physicians. A Chelonian's internal grafting with three micro-quintols of inert amytol can implement the self-destructing Strategy Z. Officers have no personal wealth, reserving their payment for retirement. Some Chelonians refer to the Doctor's collective incarnations as "the brotherhood of Doctors."

The Management says human and Chelonian minds are rather similar. The mythical Arionites supposedly ate Chelonians.

• *Zamps*: Zamps originated as a peaceful species on a moon orbiting Kappa Geet Perba, a planet now long-dead. The unnamed founders of Zamper enhanced their brains. The Zamps look identical, like footlong snails missing their shells, and move by squeezing the middle section of their bodies, aided by sticky fluid on the underside. They have smooth, dry skin, three feelers up front and no eyes or mouths. Alone, they die. Together, their feelers exert enormous telekinetic power. They're also mildly telepathic. Normal Zamp eggs look like frogspawn that are protected by

telekinetic fields.

The Zamps formed the organic component of the Management.

• *Zamp-loops*: Imagine a huge black slimy tentacle about two and a half meters in length, powered by a springtail and complete with a hideously slavering purple jaw and massive fangs. The Zamp-loops gave up telekinetic power for brute force, and their eggs are the size of footballs; muddy brown with pulsing turquoise veins.

Alien Planets

Zamper: The famed shipbuilding planet had an untarnished reputation for 473 years and was last headed by the Secunda. Zamper ships out-performed all others and were impossible to duplicate. The planet, protected by six defense outposts and a custom-made wormhole, also served as a heavy source of computer gambling.

Ships

• *Zamper Series 336c Delta-Spiral Sun Blaster*: This cylinder-shaped ship featured a crew of 20, withstood neutronic rays up to 60 blarks, had a range of 14 light centuries and was powered by tachyon displacement. The Sun Blaster's neutrino tickler could split a sun in two in one astral week.

• *Zamper Ships (general)*: Large Zamper ships could last 90 years and had enough clout to control about five planets. The ship's force aura could pass through a minor-mag sun.

History

• Chelonian leader Big Mother had a jubilee celebration in '736, but was displaced by Little Sister, who favored a more accommodating view of the human "parasites." As a result, the Chelonian Empire crumbled and its people became famed as flower arrangers.

• A consortium built Zamper 600 years ago, creating a fold in space and shifting a large planet into it. Zamper ships dominated the local space lanes, stabilizing money markets once upset by a thousand years of political upheaval on Earth.

• Humans heavily control the galaxy's East Side.

At the End of the Day

A traditional Doctor-blunders-in adventure that's lovingly self-contained

and streamlined. Compared to Roberts' groundbreaking works such as *The Highest Science*, *Zamper* will seem standard to some readers, but by itself, it features a layered, tightly nit cast, from the blustering Chelonians to the kowtowing Jottipher. Also, Roberts is one of few who could take innocent-looking slugs and turn them into one of the most terrifying "Who" villains. Read this when you want to feel warm and good.

Toy Soldiers

Author: Paul Leonard. Virgin New Adventures #42. Release Date: September 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

An orchard a few kilometers from Septangy and the planet Q'ell, 1919.

Summary

Shortly after World War I, huge numbers of European children and some adults go missing. The Doctor's only clues are the missing victims' teddy bears, mass produced five years before their time.

At the Doctor's suggestion, Benny gets a job at Universal Toys and finds a brainwashed kidnapping victim among the company's executives – a discovery that gets her captured. She's then transported to the war-torn world of Q'ell, where the alien Biune, creatures that look like giant teddy bears, brainwash her into becoming a sergeant. And with her help, they capture the Doctor.

When they try to brainwash him, the Time Lord only pretends to be conditioned and confronts "The Recruiter," designed with the sole purpose of destroying the Ceracai race. The Recruiter crash-landed on the planet Q'ell and used it as an experiment, cultivating a 3,000-year war there. Through the advancements of war, the Recruiter hoped to discover the ultimate weapon that could crush the Ceracai. When the planet's indigenous population was exhausted, the Recruiter had the Biune kidnap Earth children to use as soldiers, because they're far more creative and malleable than adults.

As the Recruiter transmats another five million Earthlings, the Doctor convinces it that the war has sapped creativity from those involved. It's unlikely the "ultimate weapon" will be created. The Recruiter ends the war, but then reasons that throwing the transmat beam out of phase will transmat Earth into the sun, thus generating enough energy to decimate the Ceracai dominions. Fortunately, Roz and Chris steal the transmat control and the

Doctor holds the transmat beam hostage.

The Doctor then counter-argues that if the Ceracai are destroyed, the Recruiter will have no reason to exist. With the Recruiter's permission, the Doctor reprograms it to arbitrarily postpone the Ceracai destruction for a year and do something more constructive. The TARDIS spends two weeks returning the refugees home and the Recruiter eventually becomes a benevolent culture-building device.

Memorable Moments

Benny realizes the factory has churned out a half million of the child-kidnapping teddy bears, then is disturbed that the concept doesn't disturb her.

A bellowing cow fools Chris into thinking the TARDIS has arrived. The Doctor crumples when he realizes he must kill five million children to save the Earth, but stops the Recruiter in time.

Ass-Whuppings

The 1,400-year-long Q'ell war ultimately killed 2,846,014,032 people.

Chris gets knocked out and his armor deflects two bullets. Shrapnel hits Benny.

Continuity

The Ogrons appeared in "Day of the Daleks" and "Frontier in Space."

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor's eyes are blue-gray, and he doesn't bother to open his umbrella in a steady rain. He hides a transmat-energy tracking device in a gray fluffy rabbit. He has a parking permit from the Greater Manchester Traffic Authority, and doesn't have the sonic screwdriver with him.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny's not an expert on seances but proves strong-willed enough to break Biune mental conditioning.

• *Roslyn Forrester*: Roz can recite stories about historical figures Nomgquase and Nelson Mandela.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris' medikit holds a hyper-adrenaline spray, some plastaforms and a couple of programmable viruses. He once flew a solar-

powered, lazy Zlifon box-kite with a propeller, but doesn't know what an airplane is.

• *The Recruiter*: A huge, near-cathedral sized cylinder, perhaps 50 feet high and 300 long, built to learn how to exterminate the Ceracai race with a minimum of casualties. The energy bolt that grounded the Recruiter on Q'ell also destroyed its repair circuits. It could use the Q'ell's limited psionic powers.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The last four co-ordinates entered are temporal co-ordinates, and go forward at a normal rate.

Alien Races

• *Biune*: Big alien teddy bear-like creatures with two green, pupil-less eyes, three fingers and blue and brown uniforms.

• *The Ceracai*: They live half a galaxy away from Q'ell, and haven't fought a serious war in centuries. The nature of their conflict with the creators of the Recruiter is unknown.

• *Q'ellites*: They look like walking skeletons, but are actually insectoid. The Q'ellites call themselves "The True People" and have limited telepathy.

Places to Go

Universal Toys Factory dates from about 1890. The Biune used it to manufacture Biune-augmented teddy bears.

Stuff You Need

"Ice Warrior" is 30th century drink.

Phenomena

Telepathy may create "psychic resonance between Earth-born and alien telepaths, allowing them to share images of similar wars.

History

The Recruiter extended the Q'ell's already impressive war by 1,400 years. The war thus lasted 3,000 years. The population of the English village Larochepot, among millions of other people, was taken to fight in Q'ell battles.

At the End of the Day

A wind-up, but no pitch. *Toy Soldiers* uses the premise that children suffer the most in war, but doesn't go far enough. Beyond the initial concept, we're given plain-Jane characters like Josef Tannenbaum and several unmoving battles. A couple of items, such as Roz's encounter with racism and the level on which she and Chris are displaced in time (Roz drinks her first Coca-Cola: "Are you sure I won't grow horns?"), perk interest. But the whole thing, like over-watered Jell-O, fails to gel. If you want a better story about kids and war, read *Human Nature*.

Head Games

Author: Steve Lyons. Virgin New Adventures #43. Release Date: October 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris, with Mel and Ace.

Travel Log

Planets Detrios (twice), Arcalis and Avalone. Also, the Galactic Prison, the interdimensionial Cafe in Glebe, the Lake by St. James' Park in London, Ponds Forge International Sports Centre in England and the Miracle (four times), all in the year 2001.

Summary

A new space-time anomaly bleeds fictional energy from the Land of Fiction and endangers all life in the Universe. The Doctor dispatches himself, Benny and Chris to place force-field generators on the anomaly and seal it, but fails to tell them the fictional energy is also generating the Miracle – a source of heat and light that's sustaining the doomed planet Detrios. Sealing the anomaly will likely doom the planet.

Meanwhile, the fictional energy has re-energized Jason, the ex-Master of the Land of Fiction, and for spite's sake, he creates a meddlesome duplicate of the Doctor named "Dr. Who." The pair try to capture the seventh Doctor's companions, whom Jason labels "evil." They capture Mel and nearly nab Ace. Dr. Who and Jason then carry their crusade for "liberty" to Earth and, with an extremely tiny band of "rebels," seek out Queen Elizabeth II.

In Sheffield, Dr. Who obliterates Her Majesty with a fantastic, fictional weapon, but Jason subconsciously believes the bloodshed is wrong and restores the Queen. On the Doctor's impassioned plea that real life isn't as clear-cut as fiction, and that Jason's power is corrupting him, Jason reforms and dissipates Dr. Who.

The Doctor, Ace and Jason re-attempt to seal the anomaly. Unfortunately, the fictional energy in the area allows a fictional version of the sixth Doctor to manifest. Enraged because the seventh Doctor prematurely terminated his

existence, the sixth Doctor grapples with his successor, but the seventh Doctor prevails and mentally re-imprisons the sixth Doctor.

As the anomaly closes, the Doctor wipes Jason's memory of recent events and returns him to his home in 2001. On Detrios, the Miracle disappears and a small group of rebels impose some order. Even though the planet is still dying, a new era of hope begins as the people try to find new ways to survive.

Mel, utterly disgusted with the Doctor's new ways and his gun-totting companions, leaves with Ace and doubts they'll meet again. Benny says the Doctor's remaining companions still trust him and for a change, the Doctor sets random co-ordinates. But a message from his future self prompts the Doctor to secretly reprogram the TARDIS and find a solution to the troublesome Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart.

Memorable Moments

Benny laughs until her sides ache when she hears the sixth Doctor died by banging his head against the TARDIS console. The Doctor appears all too human as he slumps forward and admits to Mel that he's failing at his overall mission.

The sixth and seventh Doctors grapple, the sixth Doctor becoming their evil future self, the Valeyard. Mel's rebukes the seventh Doctor as being rotten to the core. And the most dramatic of all, as the Doctor's companions turn on him in one fashion or another and he boils with anger, throwing his umbrella to the floor, he proclaims, "Leave me then. Go on your own ways, like all those before you. I'm only trying to save your Universe!"

Sex and Spirits

Chris ponders whether he and the Detrios rebel Kat'lanna might end up sleeping together. They might have, but Chris fails to find her and believes her killed by the fighting. Chris doesn't love Roz romantically.

Ass-Whuppings

The Queen is killed, but later feels much better when Jason resurrects her. Jason and Dr. Who eradicate most of Detrios' lizard people. Jason's velociraptors on another planet destroy a village. Benny inadvertently kills dozens of soldiers during the Draconian War (*see History*). Ace tells Mel her body count is now 423.

Continuity

The unborn seventh Doctor, deciding that Time needed a champion and that the sixth Doctor was making too many mistakes, seized control of the Doctor's body and plunged the TARDIS into the Rani's time beam, thus terminating the sixth Doctor's incarnation ("Time and the Rani"). The Doctor planted the suggestion in Mel's mind that she leave him in "Dragonfire," knowing that Mel was an inappropriate companion for the struggle ahead. Worse, Mel might have tried to stop him from accomplishing his various missions. He says the sixth Doctor's choosing her as a companion a mistake.

Brigadier Winifred Bambera and Ancelyn ("Battlefield") gave birth to twins.

The unborn seventh Doctor became convinced the sixth Doctor was making too many mistakes when he nearly sacrificed Mel and almost became the Valeyard in 1999 (*Millennial Rites*). The idea that the seventh Doctor terminated the sixth Doctor's incarnation was first suggested in *Love and War*. The Doctor's past selves here appear in their *Timewyrm: Revelation* forms. The seventh Doctor defeated the Valeyard in *Matrix*.

Jason, the Master of the Land of Fiction, first fought the Doctor in *Conundrum*. Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart tore holes in the space-time continuum, creating the Miracle, in *Set Piece*. Ace pays a return visit to the inter-dimensional cafe in Glebe from that story.

This is the first mention that Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart was promoted to General, an act seen in *The Dying Days*. Benny has Jeremy Fitzoliver's UNIT pass (*The Paradise of Death*).

After the Doctor escaped the Land of Fiction ("The Mind Robber") in *Conundrum*, the Time Lords dismantled it.

Character Development

• *The seventh Doctor*: The tortured seventh Doctor rarely sleeps, fearing his dreams. Mel, Ace, Benny, Roz and Chris are established as his only companions to date. He admits to Benny that he didn't fully understand what made her and Ace tick. The Doctor cannot channel fictional energy outside the Land of Fiction while Jason taps it. His mindblocking drug helps humans resist fictional energy, but can only be taken once. He can recognize Earth's early 21st century by the pollution level. The Doctor is still in danger of becoming the Valeyard.

The seventh Doctor and the sixth Doctor: A "sixth Doctor" generated by the Miracle's fictional energy accuses the seventh Doctor of killing him – specifically, of first degree murder and suicide.

The seventh Doctor argues they were young when they left Gallifrey and created paradoxes that needed correcting. Some Doctor, he insists, had to become Time's Champion and the Skaro-killing Ka Faraq Gatri. The sixth Doctor counter-argues that at least he treated his traveling companions with respect.

• *The sixth Doctor*: Alas, enforced captivity in the Doctor's mind and the perceived injustice of his demise has driven the sixth Doctor insane. Though imprisoned, he has knowledge of current events. The sixth Doctor, grappling with the seventh Doctor, transforms into the Valeyard.

• *The Doctor's past selves*: Along with the seventh Doctor, they fortify a mental containment shield around the real sixth Doctor – but there are cracks in the barrier. The sixth Doctor threatens that one day, when the body is weakest, he will reach out and seize control (perhaps becoming the Valeyard). A seventh Doctor regeneration crisis could free the sixth Doctor.

• *Ace*: Ace's time hopper is semi-sentient, but can only jump forward to November 2002. She knows about the Doctor's vulnerable shoulder nerve cluster (Set Piece), and meets the TARDIS crew's future selves in December 2001. She now regards the Doctor as "a bastard, but our bastard."

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Before Benny met the Doctor, she was knocked unconscious once. She delights in verbally torturing the virtuous Mel.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz has overloaded force fields with continual streams of energy "a hundred times." She still trusts the Doctor implicitly, but doesn't judge a kidnapped Mel worth rescuing.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris wasn't sorry to leave Undertown. He feels betrayed at being tricked into sabotaging the Miracle, but ultimately understands what the Doctor did.

• *Melanie Bush*: After "Dragonfire," Mel left Sabalom Glitz after six months and attempted to hitch-hike to Earth. Six months later, she was stranded on Avalone. Mel spent two years on the planet, slowly questioning why she left the Doctor in the first place for Glitz, a self-professed thief. Mel designed a Dragon cypher program, which Glitz used to steal. She hacked computers to get free bed and board on Avalone, but declined to steal enough funds to leave. Mel's disturbed by the gun-slinging Benny and Roz.

• *The seventh Doctor and Mel*: The seventh Doctor knew Mel was on Avalone, and claims he thought she'd settled down there. Mel believes he was monitoring her in case he needed to use her again. She doubts she will meet the Doctor again.

• *Jason (a.k.a. the Master of the Land of Fiction)*: When the Time Lords dismantled the Land of Fiction, they returned 16-year-old Jason to his proper place on Earth, 1993. Re-powered by the Miracle, he created the entire Galactic Prison and the dragons near it. His guilty subconscious not only saves the Doctor and his companions when their ship blew up, but saves the Queen.

• *Wolsey*: Fictional energy makes Wolsey the cat talk, plus dress in a mask and cape as "Power Puss."

• *Blinovitch*: The infamous temporal physicist's first name was Aaron.

• *Sabalom Glitz ("Dragonfire")*: Lovable rogue Glitz hoists ten million grotzits, then pins the crime on Mel.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Under Jason and Dr. Who's guidance, the TARDIS had a healing machine and starship-blasting smart bolts. The TARDIS can't land directly in the Miracle's mass.

Alien Races

Time Lords limited the number of regenerations to 13 because although the body renews itself, multiple personality disorders emerge.

Places to Go

The Miracle, composed of fictional energy, served as a heat and light source for Detrios and was immune to most forms of attack. It's protective barrier is a large, solid crystal, the size of a small moon.

Time Travel

It's suggested that the Dalek invasion of Earth (duh – "The Dalek Invasion of Earth") might have only been a possible future until the Doctor first landed there, thus crystallizing it into the web of time. The Doctor retroactively suggests new train timetables so he and Mel can travel to Sheffield faster.

The year 2001 is Jason's present, Mel's future and Chris' past. Therefore, if history changes in 2001 eradicate Chris, it creates a disastrous time loop.

History

• In 2001, Benny kicks a mangled drinks can into the middle of a path. Four and a half hours later, it overturns a young man's bike and injures him. His fussing mother stays up late, therefore delaying his sister's conception by a month – and producing a son instead. His descendant never joined the Earth Peace Corps, and a less eloquent writer drafts a crucial speech on the eve of the Draconian War. Conflict hits Earth an hour early, killing dozens more soldiers.

• 10 Downing Street and the Houses of Parliament exist in 2001. Queen Elizabeth reached her Golden Jubilee year.

At the End of the Day

A story that needed to be told, one that leaves a lump in your throat as you down cup after cup of cafe mochas. *Head Games* pales for some because in parts it wants to be its predecessor *Conundrum* and can't measure up. And to be fair, the Detrios scenes are dull and you almost have to read *Conundrum* first to understand the bits about the Land of Fiction. But *Head Games* totally cements its place in novel mythology by laying waste the Mel-Doctor friendship and giving us a wronged and insane sixth Doctor, one of the series' most difficult things to see firsthand. All told, this makes for an underrated treasure.

The Also People

Author: Ben Aaronovitch. Virgin New Adventure #44. Release Date: November 1995.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

The Worldsphere, the far-flung future.

Summary

The Doctor takes the TARDIS to the Worldsphere, a Dyson Sphere inhabited by the People, a race that's so powerful, they have a non-aggression pact with the Time Lords. They also have a society enhanced by sentient drones and machines. As Chris develops a romance with a young girl named Dep, Roz falls into the arms of an ex-warrior named feLixi. Meanwhile, the Doctor gets his crew to investigate the death of vi!Cari, a murdered drone.

Benny discovers the Doctor deliberately brought them to the Worldsphere, where he's been hiding an unresponsive Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart, whom he rescued shortly after their adventure in Paris (Set Piece). The Doctor explains they can stabilize Kadiatu by giving her a Time Lord's DNA, but that they risk higher powers from outside of Time using her as their agent. It might be better to terminate her... and the Doctor says the choice is up to Benny. As Benny debates what to do – and learns what it's like to make decisions like the Doctor – the TARDIS' telepathic circuits link the two women. Just as the Doctor planned from the beginning, Kadiatu telepathically gains Benny's strength to live and becomes fully sociable again.

The Doctor's party discovers vi!Cari knew the true identity of R-Vene – a ship that murdered 200,000 beings in a moment of combat panic. Roz goads the R-Vene – now the massive ship called the !C-Mel – out with vi!Cari's diary and the ship goes rogue. The Doctor exchanges himself for the !C-Mel's hostages and asks to telepathically speak with !C-Mel, who threatens to dump its anti-matter and kill two million People if it's not given political

asylum. The Doctor then disables and destroys !C-Mel, with a drone counter-strike technique he learned from Kadiatu.

Roz deduces that the !C-Mel's accomplice and vi!Cari's actual murderer is her lover feLixi, who blamed vi!Cari for the death of his former beloved. FeLixi suffers the terrible penalty of being ostracized from the People's society.

As the TARDIS prepares to depart, Kadiatu builds a new travel machine and leaves with aM!xitsa as a companion. And unknown to Chris, Dep is pregnant with his child.

Memorable Moments

Benny shines throughout. She cries for Chris' recent lost love Kat'lanna, from *Head Games*, not knowing if she's crying for Chris or the void in her own life. It dawns on Bernice that if she lets Kadiatu live, all of her potential victims will be Benny's fault. Benny works out Kadiatu's psychological problems in a dream involving a two bottles of Dom Perignon 2597, a Dalek, a Cyberman and a Sontaran officer named Grinx. A beachful of deadly grubs attack Benny and the Doctor and she fries them with a can of liquid nitrogen.

And in a top comedy moment, the Doctor wakes to find his companions have buried him up to his neck in sand. (Roz's sarcasm drips: "What if he's buried himself on purpose? I'm sure he must have a good reason. It's probably something cosmic.")

Sex and Spirits

Chris and Dep bang each other blue. It's hinted that it's Chris' first time ever. Roz and feLixi play a game where they smooch and see who grabs something first, then end up rutting like cats in heat. SaRa!qava, one of the People, propositions Bernice, who doesn't feel like being a lesbian. Kadiatu and Roz strut about au naturel. Benny loses her bra diving.

The Doctor orders Benny wine. Benny and Roz have "sexual innuendoes" with dashes of patriot's spirit and extra mushrooms. *Flashback* makes Roz relive the past and discolors her iris slightly. (You're supposed to mix small doses of it with something mellower like *nostalgia*.) She also tries a glass of the amber-colored *tranquility*. The *flashback*'s so strong, Roz has to drink *purge* to clear it. Roz later gets hammered.

Benny thinks wine tasters get the short end of the stick because they spit the wine out. In her youth, Roz woke up hungover in many strange beds, but

decided messy sex didn't offer anything a three-pack of Martian ale and a long shower couldn't.

Ass-Whuppings

Some years previous, the ship R-Vene got combat psychosis when one of its reconnaissance parties was killed. It dumped six kilograms of anti-matter onto the asteroid facility Omicron 378, killing 200,000.

vi!Cari's murder forms a central mystery of the book, but the Doctor kills its murderer, !C-Mel.

Roz has scar tissue from a vibroknife wound cut diagonally across her left forearm. Another scar on her belly marks where a nameless BEM tried to disembowel her. Her collarbone's been fractured. She's got healed breaks in her right tibia, and repaired subcutaneous tissue on at least 26 separate sites on her body. The medulla sections of her adrenal glands and her elevated blood pressure point to prolonged stress. aM!xitsa twists his ancillary manipulator field and fixes a microscopic tear in the superior vena cava of her heart that might cause problems in ten years.

Continuity

The TARDIS databank contains the treatise *Tarin Capel: A Case Study in Robophobia* ("The Robots of Death"). The Doctor feels guilt for condemning the Brigadier's violence in "The Silurians," yet he destroyed Skaro in "Remembrance of the Daleks."

Kadiatu was last seen in *Set Piece*. The Doctor rescued her a short bit before *Original Sin*. In a goof, *The Also People* says Roz cut her partner/lover Martle's throat, but in *Original Sin*, she stabbed him in the eye.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor once broke the Galactic record for continuous spoon playing: 67 hours. He would have broken a Universal record, but a Garthanian telekinetic kept bending his instruments. He doesn't visit the Worldsphere very often. He learned some Xhosa in prison. He once lost a chess game to Mel, afraid to sacrifice a pawn.

The Doctor leaves notes on edible paper that tastes like peppermint. He likes music by Duke Ellington and from "Sarajevo: The Musical." He would likely have killed Kadiatu if Bernice hadn't succeeded in helping her.

He's never seen an ornithopter that actually flew in this dimension.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny has visited the remnants of a Dyson Sphere at DM+39 4567 at the stellar cluster known as Varteq Veil (*Lucifer Rising*). Her father served on the Outer System Patrol. Her room is filled with the detritus of past adventures, yet she feels indifferent toward owning stuff. The Doctor jokes (perhaps) that two cultures venerated Benny as the goddess of indiscriminate drinking.

• *The Doctor and Benny*: Despite all that's happened, Benny still trusts the Doctor.

• *Roz Forrester*: Inyathi, Roz's clan name, is iXhosa for buffalo, so they don't eat them. Her mother always thought Roz was too scrawny. Her mother body-beppled her skin darker twice a year, and would have had Roz beppled if her Grandmother and Father hadn't said no. Roz finally abandoned her heritage to seek "the truth." She could have stayed on Io and inherited the Baroncy.

Roz has a sister named Liebe, and they used to dance for their father's guests. She hates toilets that wipe your ass afterward. Roz can speak some Swahili and Xhosa, and her room's compulsively neat. Her grandmother used to paint flowers along the sides of Roz's small breasts while her mother braided her hair. Roz disassembled a securitybot with a plasma torch for answering back. Since traveling with the Doctor, she's found things she hates more than home. As a Novice Adjudicator squired to the aged "Wrath of God" Konstantine, Roz found an alien corpse in a pool she'd stripped off to bathe in.

Roz's father collected Dalek poetry and made her memorize it. She becomes a pop icon on the Worldsphere – imagine Roz T-Shirts and little figurines of her and Chris. She learns to surf.

• *Chris Cwej*: He can also fly a biplane. Chris' grandfather was color-blind, and the Cwejs are susceptible to late-onset diabetes and schizophrenia.

• *Ace*: Someone (take a guess) with the letter A wrote *Zen and the Art of Machine Gun Maintenance*.

• *Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart*: The Doctor found a feral Kadiatu on a British slaver drifting off the coast of Sierra Leone in the spring of 1754 – everyone else was dead. He shot her with 60cc of teterodoxine, then deposited her on the Worldsphere for three months. She's level 35 going on 36 technology, and is likely the most competent temporal engineer outside Gallifrey.

The Doctor downloaded Kadiatu's specs from the Imogen database in Zagreb. She can run at 40 km per hour and mentally counter-strike against probing drones. She plays telepathic chess against the Doctor. Kadiatu and aM!xitsa are named the Worldsphere's temporal back-up in case the Time Lords welch on the treaty.

• *God*: The main system that manages the Worldsphere. God has nodes all over the place, was against the People's last war and is a member of the Anti-Machine Interest Group. God insists it isn't a computer. Having common Gallifreyan in his linguistic files would violate the treaty.

• *Dep*: Green-eyed Dep is the youngest of saRa!qava's six daughters and is Chris' height. She can manipulate her braided hair, which falls to her knees. Her floor-sized room is filled with home-built flying machines. Dep has three ovaries, one more than her mother, two more than her father.

• *feLixi*: Roz's lover volunteered for Xeno Relations (Normalisation) as a secret agent in some of the proxy wars. Soo'isita was his ex-lover.

• *aM!xitsa*: Long-time friend of the Doctor's, charged with looking after Kadiatu in secret.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Communication between the TARDIS and God could yield disastrous results. The TARDIS' translation system telepathically links the Doctor and his companions..

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Innately have enhanced temporal perception and resistance to chrono-instability.

• *The People*: Some People have square nipples! Also, they kiss, but not on the mouth. The People are absolute masters of bioengineering. Natural sex change seems easy for them. If you're hurt and they find your brain stem within 12 hours, they can grow you a new body in three months. Females can screen sperm, discarding imperfect DNA sequences. They can communicate with their gestating babies. Taking sperm for impregnation without telling the father warrants social isolation. The average lifespan of social outcasts: 32, typically ending in suicide.

• *The Time Lords and the People*: By treaty, the People have total authority within their sphere of influence but are forbidden from time-travel research, threatening Gallifrey or even keeping a database on Mutter's Spiral. The Time Lords, by contrast, cannot use time travel against the People. The Treaty gives the People carte blanche authority, even deadly force, in dealing with the renegade Time Lord known as the Doctor. The

Doctor, aM!xitsa and God formed half of the original negotiating team.

• *Worldsphere drones*: Can survive a direct hit from a 20-kiloton nuclear device. Most of a drone's brain exists in a subdomain of hyperspace. Vi!Cari, a drone rated 8.3, was about 20 times smarter than a human being. The Worldsphere has 68,920,438 drones.

• *The Daleks*: The 128-stanza "Lament of the Non-Operational" is a piece of Dalek poetry.

• *Martians*: Funnel data into a process they call Aiyix-sith, the time telescope.

• *Worldsphere fish*: The Doctor claims they hate mathematics because they have no fingers to count on. About two million fish, says a fish, are re-designed humans trying to flee humanity.

Alien Planets

• *The People's Worldsphere*, a Dyson Sphere, radius nearly 150 million km, is nestled around a G-class main sequence star. This gives the Worldsphere 600,000,000 times the surface area of Earth and a population of two trillion.

• *Scorbiski Major*: The fish go angling for the people, baiting throwing lines with mooncalves. It's a very good idea to carry a vibroknife on Scorbiski Major.

Organizations

Adjudicators use armor with nightscope vision. They're taught to shed their armor quickly in case of contamination. Adjudicators used to bathe and purify themselves from justified killing, but the practice was reduced in the 30th century to being sprinkled with holy water every week. The Order approves of potential mates before marriage. Celibacy is encouraged but not mandatory. Sleeping with a colleague is called "going over the side." Adjudicators have a frightful rate of divorce and suicide. The *Codex Adjudicatas* contains many Adjudicator sayings.

Worldsphere Interest Groups: A number of Interest Groups exist on the Worldsphere to keep the People occupied. These include the Anti-Machine Interest Group (which has 82 percent machine members), Xeno Relations (Normalization) that "handled the war," Weird Aviation, Esoteric and Useless Genetic Manipulation and Masochistic Parent. The Voluntary Devolution Group changes people into fish and perhaps other creatures. The

Truth Through Ugliness group perhaps spawns deep-sea creatures.

Ships

Dyson Sphere Ships are so powerful, their engines do horrible things to the space-time continuum. They're divided into VAS (Very Aggressive Ships); GPS (General Purpose Ships), which crew 60,000 each; VLR (Very Long Range) Drones and TSH (Traveling Space Habitat). Most ships have 13.3 tetrachildhoods of memory. Close range is considered a trillion kilometers. Many have tiny flying "bugs" that snoop.

Time Travel

Time travelers might be vulnerable to the influence of beings, who exist outside of linear time (such as the Guardians, "The Key to Time" season), always looking for suitable agents.

History

• The People amalgamated from different spacefaring species who ran into each other and built the Worldsphere. They tinkered with themselves so they could interbreed. The Worldsphere originally had about 20 billion People.

• Thirty years previous to this story, the People fought a war. Twenty-six devastated low-level civilizations needed to be rebuilt. Fifteen planets, three rings and 15 asteroids habitats were blown away. Twenty-six billion people died, most of them collateral casualties.

• The Doctor once mentioned a World War IV.

At the End of the Day

Meaty and domestic, with low-action. Thank God, because we all needed a break. Fans rave about *The Also People* as one of the best "Who" novels ever, and indeed, it deserves every drop of the hype. It's sexy and triumphant – Chris and Roz separately get laid and Bernice solves a problem (Kadiatu) that the Doctor can't. It's a casual tale that's a hoot, with wacky machine personalities and a Parachute that designs apple trees to grow on asteroids. It's in many ways the epitome of humanoid development, and a world we'd all like to live in. The final shock is how little *The Also People* tries to impress you – but how much it does.

Shakedown

Author: Terrance Dicks. Virgin New Adventure #45. Release Date: December 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

The TARDIS isn't seen in this story, but it's circa 2376. The Doctor's crew variously visits Megerra, Space Station Alpha and Sentarion.

Summary

At the Doctor's request, Chris and Roz pursue a serial killer gutting his various victims and wearing their identities. The killer in question is the Rutan spy Karne, who is trying to warn his people that their eternal enemies, the Sontarans, may have discovered their greatest secret.

Roz and Chris confront Karne in a club on Megerra, where the killer transforms into his Rutan form and dices the patrons. He escapes to Space Station Alpha, where Roz and Chris rendezvous with the Doctor, only to find Karne has already escaped. The Sontarans pursue all ships recently departed from Megerra to get Karne, and confront him aboard the solar racer *Tiger Moth*. The resulting battle kills most of the *Moth*'s crew, the Sontarans and Karne.

Unfortunately, Karne reproduced and his duplicate flees the Space Station, where it was hiding, to Sentarion, a university planet inhabited by huge insects. Benny is already there researching the great Rutan secret for the Doctor, trailing clues to the forbidden "Temple of the Shining Ones."

On Space Station Beta, the Doctor meets Captain Lisa Deranne of the *Tiger Moth* and his old friend, *Tiger Moth* owner Kurt. They track Karne to Sentarion, where the Rutans have established themselves as "gods" to protect a secret wormhole to the Rutan homeworld – a last-ditch escape route for their Great Mother. The Sontarans, however, could also use the route to invade the Rutan homeworld.

The Sontarans arrive and seize the Temple. A Sontaran War Wheel enters the wormhole, but the Doctor closes both ends in an infinite loop, trapping

the War Wheel forever. A terrible slaughter between the Sontarans and the Sentarions breaks out and the Sontarans are massacred. Karne tries to kill the Doctor for knowing too many Rutan secrets, but is shot down by a Sontaran and Deranne. Two weeks later, the *Tiger Moth*, with the Doctor and company serving as crew, wins the Tri-Systems Cup.

Memorable Moments

Garshak, Megacity Chief of Police, bows and establishes himself as the most intelligent and elegant Ogron ever. Benny's insect assassin assures her that he will observe all the proper rituals as he drinks her life juices. Roz orders another assassin be taken alive, so of course an Ogron policeman heaves the killer over his head and off a rooftop.

Solar race winner "Doctor Smith" says in an interview that he prefers a quiet life, and that the excitement and stresses of solar yacht racing are too much for him.

Sex and Spirits

Chris fails to pick up a waitress, who asks if he'd like to meet her brother instead. It's suggested that the fourth Doctor, as a pilot on the Mars-Venus run, stole Professor Lazlo Zemar's girlfriend.

Benny gets rather drunk on several doses of the head-kicking rekkar. Chris has a tall glass of green fluid with a number of tiny worm creatures in it.

Ass-Whuppings

In a top grisly moment, the Sentarion Lord Chancellor seizes a Sontaran and bites its head off (You can try this at dinner with a baked potato.). Another Harrubtii hauls a Sontaran upside-down and bashes his brains out. Rutan spy Karne dices bar patrons and carves up the manager, revealing his insides and still-beating heart. The Doctor pulls a stunt worthy of handy-man MacGyver, constructing a crossbow from scrap and skewering a Sontaran with a metal rod. Roz stabs another Sontaran with the Doctor's spare crossbow bolt.

Chris once broke his hand on an Androgum's chin.

Continuity

The middle of this book is a novelization of the direct-to-video

"Shakedown," also written by Terrance Dicks, a space romp that features Sophie Aldred (Ace), Carol Anne Ford (Susan), Jan Chappell (Cally, "Blake's Seven,") and Brian Croucher (Travis II, "Blake's Seven").

For trying to warn them about the Sontarans, the Rutans forgive the Doctor for killing one of them on Fang Rock ("Horror of Fang Rock").

The Sontarans learned of the Rutan wormhole in *Lords of the Storm*; the Rutan spy Karne also escaped in that story. The Doctor again gives Benny a Spatio-Temporal Alarm Beacon (SPATAB) that allows him to locate her through space and time (*Theatre of War*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor, again shown with gray eyes, holds a Master of Arts from the University of Antares. He has previously visited Sentarion and is friends with the Lord Chancellor there.

• *Chris Cwej*: Fugora-fish stew wrecks havoc on Chris' innards. Chris played poker in recruit school and always wanted to try solar racing.

• *Captain Lisa Deranne*: One of the finest solar yacht captains in the tri-planetary system and the winner of the Algolian Cup.

• *Kurt*: When the rogue Kurt was caught smuggling jekkarta weed, he shared a cell with the Doctor.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Roz sends T-mail through the space-time continuum to the TARDIS via a crystal cube.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: The Time Lords – and the Doctor – seem to support the Rutans in their war, believing they're the only force that can contain the Sontarans.

• *Sontarans*: The Sontaran Military Code requires the death penalty for every infraction. The High Council of Admiralty leads the Sontaran Military. The Gunnar Clan is exceptionally influential. Badly wounded Sontarans shut down into comas, which usually ends in death, but sometimes anabiosis occurs and they revive.

• *Rutans*: The Rutans are a gestalt entity, essentially the same being. The Great Mother, the repository of the Rutan group consciousness, links the race together. If the Great Mother is killed, every Rutan would die or go mad. A Rutan's personal energy shield absorbs a limited amount of blaster-fire. Projectile weapons short of a blunderbuss pass through Rutans without

doing much harm. Rutans reproduce by binary fission and often leave an afterbirth.

• *Sentarrii*: Sentarion's dominant lifeform, highly-evolved from soldier ants. They are honored as scholars on all civilized worlds.

• *Harrubtii*: Giant beetle-like creatures on Sentarion, treated as bandit scum but actually keepers of the faith and assassins of the Shining Ones (the Rutans).

• *Jekkari*: The vegetarian Jekkari live in tree-houses houses and don't like machines. For lack of vocal chords, they employ a complex system of signing. The Jekkari hated killing – until the Doctor showed them how to overthrow their Sontaran oppressors.

Alien Planets

• *Sentarion (a.k.a. the Library Planet, the University Planet)*: Said to be the greatest concentration of scholars and scholarship in the known galaxy.

• *Megerra*: Mostly covered by a large Megacity, where corruption is rife. Ogrons handle police work. The original population is now extinct, and tourism is a booming industry. Fugora-fish stew is an exclusive dish there.

Organizations

• *The Pinkerton Agency (a.k.a. The Eye that Never Sleeps)* is an infamous spy organization that flourished back as far back as the 19th century, and later followed mankind to the stars. Members of the Pinkerton Agency have legendary status as invisible, invincible agents of justice.

Ships

The Tiger Moth, Captain Deranne's ship, for which the Doctor develops new solar sails.

Stuff You Need

• *Rekkar*: Most basic form of booze available in the galaxy. It's a distilled white spirit, colorless and tasteless, and said to produce nightmares, even hallucinations. So of course, it's in high demand.

• *Jekkarta Weed*: A mild euphoric with almost no side effects when dried and smoked. Jekkar's government imposed a tariff on its export and grew rich.

• *Galactic Gold Card*: Credit card with basically has no limit on almost every inhabited planet.

Places to Go

Sentarion City originated as a handful of buildings in an oasis, but grew into Sentarion's impressive university.

Phenomena

The Sentarion Space-Time Wormhole, located above the Sentarion Temple of the Shining Ones, links Sentarion with the Rutan homeworld. It appears as a darkened circle.

History

• The Sontarans fought many civil wars before turning their hatred toward other races.

• Sentarion's respective insectoid races killed each other until the "Sacred Day of Revelation," in which the Shining Ones, actually the Rutans, appeared in their crystalline vessels.

At the End of the Day

Quick reading with a streamlined plot. If you approach this as good fun with shapeshifting, it mostly works, barring the occasional testicle-tough dialogue. Terrance Dicks smartly doesn't do a full novel of his straight-to-video "Shakedown" and nicely weaves it into "Who" mythology, allowing the Doctor to kick alien ass.

Just War

Author: Lance Parkin. Virgin New Adventure #46. Release Date: January 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

London, December, 1940. In flashback, Cairo, mid-1930s. The TARDIS departs to Canterbury, 21st century, but isn't seen arriving.

Summary

At the Doctor's request, his companions investigate reports of a crushing Nazi super-weapon in 1941. Roz and Chris go undercover as Allied lieutenants, while Benny hides out on the German-captured island of Guernsey. But in providing a distraction for the Doctor to escape some Nazis, Benny stumbles across Gerhard, a young German she flirted with as part of her cover. Knowing he will denounce her adopted family, Benny shoots him down in cold blood. Standartenführer Joachim Wolff captures her and the Doctor anyway.

Chris and Roz suspect Nazi scientist Emil Hartung may have built a new super-aircraft as Roz finds herself attracted and then engaged to Captain George Reed. They find Hartung's super-bombers are code-named *Hugin* and *Munin*, and Chris is stunned to realize Hartung must have created radar-invisible aircraft years before radar was invented. During testing, *Hugin* explodes due to a fault in the fuel system. Chris rescues the Doctor, taken to occupied France as part of a Nazi scheme to enlist his scientific knowledge in the war effort, and they steal *Munin*.

Wolff tortures Benny, who knuckles and claims to be a time-traveling archaeologist. The Nazis, thankfully, don't believe her. Using her wits, Benny escapes to England. The Doctor and Chris also return and Roz blows up *Munin*.

The Doctor is hauled away to prison, mistaken for a German agent. In his cell, the Doctor confesses to Roz and Benny that the Emil Hartung, who died aboard *Hugin*, was a friend of his. By casually talking with Hartung in the

mid-1930s about how owls navigate, the Doctor inadvertently gave Hartung the insight to build *Hugin* and *Munin*. Benny is stunned by the Doctor's role in events. To avenge her torture, the Doctor, released on Roz's authority, has a psychological game of Russian Roulette with Wolff, who's been captured by the British. The game proves to Wolff, who tires to shoot the Doctor but keeps hitting blanks, that not all problems can be solved with guns and the Nazis do not have the glorious future he envisioned. The Doctor leaves Wolff's cell and the Nazi shoots himself. The Doctor and Benny reconcile. With Chris and Roz, who chooses traveling over staying with Reed, they continue their journeys.

Memorable Moments

As a "distraction," Benny tells the Nazis she's just looking for her coat, then seizes a gun, shoots above their heads and leaps into an armored car. The Doctor disguises himself as a Nun. Benny locks the nurse she's holding hostage in a corpse drawer in a morgue. The bigoted Wolff allows Roz one free punch and she jabs his right eyeball out. Most dramatic of all, Benny and Roz confront the Doctor, literally and symbolically imprisoned. When she learns the Doctor caused everything and that Hartung is dead, Benny asks if their mission was for nothing and shows the Doctor her nauseating bruises.

The Doctor challenges Wolff, Benny's torturer, to a game of Russian Roulette. Wolff pulls the trigger three times on the Doctor – but keeps hitting the blank spots, a psychological *tour de force*. When the Doctor apologizes to Benny and walks away, she smiles and says, "That's all I wanted to hear."

Sex and Spirits

The Doctor is the only person Benny knows who doesn't notice when she's naked. She strips off for her Nazi captor to prove she's "perfectly relaxed about the whole sans frock deal." French maid Monique lip-locks Chris. Roz and Reed definitely do the deed. She declines his marriage proposal, but keeps his emerald engagement ring. The Doctor suggests he's married at one point while talking to the Nazi Steinmann.

Ass-Whuppings

The carnage! Benny shoots Gerhard to stop him from betraying the Doras family, who adopted her as part of her cover. The Nazis retaliate and shoot

six residents when she can't be found. Chris snaps a Nazi's spinal chord, then guns down two more.

The Doctor and Chris forget Allied Spitfires can't see *Munin* and cause the squadron to collide. British bombers hit Granville, killing 1,450 French people and 30 German officers. As the Doctor and Chris watch, a shelter goes up. Granville is bombed into submission. Benny views Emil Hartung's body.

Benny receives from the Nazis sleep and food deprivation and several beatings. Her right hand is put in a splint. Two of her left-hand fingernails are ripped off. Some of her back scars, caused by whipping, are likely permanent.

Continuity

The Germans created a radar system called "Wotan," of no relation to the system in "The War Machines."

Oberst Oskar Steinmann, a Nazi, takes Benny's diary here. It's returned to her by Anne Doras' daughter Bernice in *Happy Endings*. Roz has a vision of her dying violently, foreshadowing her death in *So Vile a Sin*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor's mental influence makes a Nazi pull his aim and miss the Time Lord's chest. Despite his respiratory bypass system, the Doctor is knocked out by chloroform. He's a friend of Ma Doras, but failed to save her daughter Celia Doras, who died on October 31, 1913.

The very first time he visited Earth was with Susan during the French Revolution. He'd never heard elation at the sound of empires toppling before.

The chess-playing Doctor claims he never loses his queen. (Tell us another one.) He knows enough about jet propulsion "to fill books on the subject." To gain the Nazis' trust, he signs a paper swearing allegiance to the German nation.

He can fake credentials with the British War Office and his metabolism neutralizes simple relaxants. His umbrella tag reads, "If lost please return to Portland Street Library, Paddington, London."

• *Bernice Summerfield*: When the Nazis threaten to shave Benny's scalp, it nearly breaks her spirit. Tortured and delirious, she later mutters, "Doctor, Doctor, you saved me. I love you, Doctor." Her birthday is June 21. Benny

thinks she's now 33, but isn't sure. She's not religious, neither has she belonged to a political party or trade union. She's proficient in French, Egyptian, Hebrew, Ancient and Modern Greek, Latin, most of the Martian dialects, Old English, Old Norse, and gets by in many other languages.

She knew Gerhard, the Nazi she kills, for three months. He was 16. Benny wears a blonde holowig. She tried to bleach her hair when she was 12, an act of defiance that "went very, very wrong." As a child, she visited Stuttgart. On one of her first digs, she researched daggers and gained an expertise of knives.

• *Benny and the TARDIS*: Bernice can now make the TARDIS travel to the Doctor.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz can trace her ancestry back to Nelson Mandela, hailed as her people's great liberator. She can remove a person's eyeball using her thumb. (Ugggg!) To the Doctor's annoyance, she smokes cigarettes. Her accent (which she might be faking) is a mixture of South African, American and English. She recognizes the name Hyde Park. Roz's ancestors, the Rarabe Xhosa, fought with the British in the Fifth Kaffir War against the other Xhosa.

• *Roz and Captain George Reed*: Roz's fiancé is about 30 and comes from a rich Kent family. He works in Allied counter-intelligence. To her surprise, she can actually picture herself staying with Reed – the distinction between good and evil in his world seems appealing. Despite the primitive medicine of the 1940s, Roz expects to live another century if she stays.

• *Chris Cwej*: Pretending to be a Canadian agent, Chris grows a thick handlebar moustache. Benny thinks it looks stupid. "Just fight for what's just" was the motto of his Adjudication Lodge.

• *Roz and Chris*: Chris hasn't heard of Franco, Mussolini or Stalin. Roz only recognizes two of them. The Doctor gives Roz and Chris keys to the TARDIS.

• *Melanie Bush*: On her first trip to the past, Mel and the seventh Doctor visited Emil Hartung, who was slightly smitten with her. The Doctor's friendship with Hartung, a Nazi, may have boosted her desire to leave the TARDIS.

• *Emil Hartung*: Hartung, born June 26, 1898, was an expert on aerodynamics, physics, rocketry, mathematics, metallurgy and radio waves. He served in the Luftwaffe in France during the Great War. Since November 1936, he stayed in Rechlin working on *Hugin* and *Munin*, and ultimately had over 200 aerodynamic patents to his name. (*See History*.)

• *Standartenführer Joachim Wolff*: The Butcher of Mallesan, assigned as Luftwaffe regional Direktor.

• *Anne Doras*: Eventually has two daughters and named one of them "Bernice." The Doctor visits them in 1960.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Roz uses the TARDIS computer to calculate bomb damage on London. She also uses technology in the TARDIS to heal Benny and regrow her fingernails. The TARDIS removes itself from "Minkowski" space, whatever the hell that means. The TARDIS has an Infinity Chamber that projects holographic stars. The Ship can survive being dropped from a bomber.

Stuff You Need

• *Benny's Spacio-Temporal Alarm Beacon* can monitor local transmissions as well as communicate with the TARDIS.

Ships

Hugin and *Munin* were named for Odin's two ravens, referring to "Thought" and "Memory." Construction began in November, 1936, and took just under four and a half years. A revolutionary carbon foam made the cigar-shaped ships radar-proof.

Time Travel

Chris points out that history's been mucked up so much, who can tell what's real and what's false? (This paraphrases the Doctor's same words at the end of *Timewyrm: Exodus*).

History

• The Doctor, in mid-1930s Cairo, discussed with Nazi Emil Hartung how owls are binocular, with a narrow field of vision, and track by sound. The Doctor even bragged how nice it is that the mouse can't see the owl coming. Mel told Hartung of the kilohertz, a term coined in the 1960s. From this little chat, Hartung gained an insight about radar and constructed his radar-proof aircraft.

• The Doctor was present at Dunkirk. Before World War I, he saved the Guernsey islands from an unspecified threat. He also advised Victor Hugo in St. Peter Port to change the title of *Les Miserables*, but Hugo ignored him.

• Oberst Oskar Steinmann was one of 23 Nazis tried at Nuremberg, sentenced to life imprisonment. He died in 1972, age 89, from spine cancer.

• Emil Hartung won the Cairo 500, because the Doctor gave his car special modifications.

• In the 30th century, Trafalgar Square is called "Trafflegarr Square." The century past the 1940s is known as "The Age of Legend."

• The Doctor, Roz and Chris attended to a "political situation" on Troxos 4. Mel and the seventh Doctor previously went there.

At the End of the Day

We explore the collateral damage of traveling with the Doctor as our hearts leap into our throats upon seeing Benny tortured. Conversely, the Roz/Chris story is in danger of becoming pedestrian *until* the Doctor's prison scene unfolds the story like a flower and we realize the little bastard is responsible for everything that's happened. *Just War* from that point explodes like a boxer, wailing on your gut, and ultimately turbo-charged Lance Parkin's stellar reputation.

Warchild

Author: Andrew Cartmel. Virgin New Adventure #34. Release Date: February 1996. "The War Trilogy" Part 3 of 3.

The loosely-named "Psi Powers Series" begins.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

London, circa 2030.

Summary

Creed McIlveen, working for a crime-fighting organization called the Agency, has married Justine and sired two daughters, Cynthia and Eve. But his marriage fractures when Justine discovers Creed having extra-marital thoughts about his assistant Amy Cowan. Justine's son Ricky, by her ex-husband Vincent, has his own problems – his budding empathic powers have gotten him thrown out of three schools.

At Heathrow Airport, the psychic Mrs. Woodcott press-gangs Roz into government service as hundreds if not thousands of wild dogs run amok. Woodcott also nabs Creed when he responds to her fake message for help from the Doctor. At a stewardess' house, Roz's party hunts for the "White King," a curiously malicious, alpha male dog that seems to be motivating the other killer hounds. Roz's group slaughters hundreds of canines in a fierce battle and barricades themselves inside the house.

When the Doctor arrives, the White King oddly kowtows to him. Years ago, warlock experiments trapped a man named Jack's mind in the body of the White King. In time, the hostile dog behavior developed from Jack's madness and unsuccessful attempts to contact the Doctor. Restored to his body, which was safely kept at the Doctor's house, Jack details how his dog self encountered the Doctor's ex-ally Vincent, who has been monitoring his ex-wife Justine and son Ricky for years. An unhinged Vincent now seeks revenge for losing his family.

In America, Creed finally yields to Amy's passion and they become lovers. The Doctor arrives at Creed's house to find a renegade Vincent has

beaten them there and tied up Justine. When Creed and Amy arrive, Vincent explains his plan to use Ricky's powers to make the boy president of the United States. Vincent is duly proud of his son's abilities, until the Doctor points out that Creed's other two children are also empathic – perhaps Ricky's talents come from Justine's taking warlock while she was pregnant, and not from Vincent.

Vincent, sickened, tries to shoot Justine. Amy's gun shouts out, killing Vincent. He dies with Justine's name on his lips. As Creed comforts Amy, Justine watches her marriage end. The Doctor, Chris and Jack plan a road trip to train Ricky in his budding mental abilities.

Memorable Moments

In a top comedy moment, as their plane's engines freaks out, Benny gives a clinical explanation about what's happening while Roz freaks. Roz asks if there's anything they can do and Benny says yes, asking for a bottle of the plane's best champagne. The stewardess Jessica, still smiling, galvanizes into action and breaks out bottles of champagne for everyone. Jessica's only concern is that she won't finish serving customers before they hit. But damn, that's good service.

Roz skewers a dog with a bayonet, then glows a bit with martial pride. Dumb but understandable – Jessica goes back into the house for a picture of her freshly dead fiancé.

Ass-Whuppings

Vincent dies. Roz also kills three of his thugs. Furthermore, Roz and Mrs. Woodcott shoot dozens, maybe hundreds of dogs! Oh, the horror! The humanity! Roz skewers one with a bayonet! – actually, I hope they got a lot of those little nippy pooches that old ladies kiss.

Sex and Spirits

Bernice innocently tells the Doctor: "Some would say you're the prince of deception. Now let's see what you've really got hidden in your pocket."

Continuity

Benny and Roz return from an unnamed mission in Belfast. The first two parts of this story included *Cat's Cradle: Warhead* and *Warlock*. Jack, sealed in a capsule in the Doctor's house in *Warlock*, is revived here.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Keeps some warlock in a gold box. He works off an Apple Macintosh in his house.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny likes "peasant cooking," with garlic and red wine.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz can fall asleep almost anywhere. She used to drive something similar to an APC vehicle, and arms herself with a state-of-the-art Styer AUG.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris shaves his head and pretends to be a Buddhist monk. He learned enough (from Benny, no doubt) to teach a Comparative Anthropology class. He knows many martial arts.

• *Creed McIlveen*: After *Warchild*, Creed moves in with the blonde-haired Amy Cowan. He still gets to see his children.

• *Justine*: Signed her divorce papers from Vincent after the statutory two-year waiting period. She never regretted it.

• *Creed McIlveen and Justine*: Their youngest daughter, Eve, is four-years old. Their oldest is named Cynthia. Eve has strange dreams and might be psionic.

• *Ricky McIlveen*: Ricky uses his budding psionic abilities to draw the attention of women. He's learned to be bold, and leads his friends into bars at age 15. Despite strong academic achievement, his powers have caused many people to dislike him and gotten him booted out of three schools. His sisters, Cynthia and Eve, can neutralize his power on themselves and people near them.

• *Vincent Wheaton*: Called himself "Retour" for "return." His psionic talent no longer works. He got a government job in special weapons development because they knew about his power. His rejected love for Justine turned him bitter.

Jack: The mind of a man, trapped in the body of a pooch, Jack taught Vincent about pack behavior. Jack himself could mentally direct other dogs, and Vincent noticed the same alpha male trait in Ricky. Restored to a human, Jack retained his ability to control canines.

Mrs. Woodcott: Now head of a government press-gang division, Mrs. Woodcott is psychic – perhaps from exposure to warlock.

Stuff You Need

The Doctor's Life Support Cylinder (fluid) kills roses, and perhaps other planet life. In time, it breaks down harmlessly. Adrenaline shot into the heart helps counter-act its effect. Prolonged exposure can cause psychotic behavior.

Places to Go

The Doctor's House (Adisham, Kent) has a library that's a mess. The septic tank consists of several interconnected vaults that can be drained independently. It also has a wine cellar.

At the End of the Day

An incredibly mature, humanistic book. Cartmel plays his characters like a fine harpsichord, unveiling a Greek tragedy-style tale that forces you to think who's responsible for Vincent's death on page 307. Yea-whoo also for Ricky using his psi talent to get babes. This isn't to say *Warchild* doesn't have action. In the tradition of "Cujo" and "The Omen," Roz endures a nail-biting, thousand-strong killer dog attack/massacre. All of this stellar drama loses its punch if you haven't read Warlock, but it's totally worth reading the two back-to-back. I stayed up late to finish *Warlock*, then devoured *Warchild* as the sun rose.

SLEEPY

Author: Kate Orman. Virgin New Adventure #48. Release Date: March 1996. “Psi Powers Series”.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

DKC base on Dione, 2227; Yemaya 4, 2257.

Summary

Future records of an outbreak of psi powers on Yemaya 4 perk the Doctor’s interest, and the TARDIS crew finds a colony of frightened, developing telepaths and pyrokinetics, who are mutating due to a virus. The Doctor accidentally pricks himself with a laboratory needle and infects himself with the virus, thus realizing it contains powerful RNA with another being’s memories.

As the airborne virus infects Chris, the colony’s telepaths find themselves drawn to a mysterious alien temple and a crashed spaceship. The Doctor wonders if the colonists were deliberately infected by the Dione-Kisumu Company (DKC), the organization that founded the colony. As if to prove him right, DKC troops arrive and secure the planet.

The Doctor seeds revolution by giving the colony’s Artificial Intelligences (AI) a dose of independent thought. Meanwhile, Benny and Roz travel 30 years back in the TARDIS to learn the virus’ origins. At DKC’s base on Dione, they encounter GRUMPY, a telepathic AI designed to store and transfer memory RNA. In time, DKC hopes to perfect the ability of encoding human brains as RNA. However, the project’s director, Madhanagopal, is a member of a mysterious Brotherhood with secret purposes for GRUMPY, likely another attempt to elevate humanity’s level of psionic power. GRUMPY, attempting to achieve some independence, frees Benny and Roz and infects them with a counter-virus to the plague on Yemaya.

Back in the future, the colonists continue to gather around the crashed spaceship. Aboard is SLEEPY, the AI formerly known as GRUMPY.

Sometime after encountering Benny and Roz, GRUMPY sought independence and fled, seeding its memory into bits of RNA hidden in the colonists' inoculations. Dione-Kisumu, desperate to silence SLEEPY and its corporate secrets, sends the warship *Flame Warrior* to Yemaya. SLEEPY pilots its shuttle into the *Warrior*, destroying both ships and SLEEPY itself.

Life on Yemaya, as much as it can, returns to normal. The Doctor dreams of again encountering the Eternal named Death, claiming he won their bet by saving lives. But Death in turn reminds the Doctor that he can't be everywhere at once…

Memorable Moments

The strength of the Doctor and Benny's relationship is shown when he's screaming in agony from the SLEEPY virus and she quietly tells medics "No, I'll stay with him." The ailing Doctor, perhaps hoping his legacy will continue, asks Benny if she's going to have children.

We learn about the volume of the Doctor's mind when telepathic Dot Smith-Smith goes into spasms reading it. Wolsey the cat hopes a sleeping Benny dreams about opening tins. The Doctor tells Death all fatalities can't be pinned on him since he can't be everywhere. Death tells him: "Remember that."

Sex and Spirits

Roz and Benny gulp homemade hooch, the sort you could strip paint with.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor wins his bet with Death. SLEEPY pilots its shuttle, the *Olpiron*, into the warship *Flame Warrior*, though most of the crew evacuate. The AI named CONNECTICUT is erased.

The Doctor feels the electric sear of the SLEEPY virus. Dot Smith-Smith's telepathic assault makes the Doctor's eye bleed. An explosion torches Chris' hair a bit and singes off his eyebrows. A DKC thug breaks Roz' arm. The colonists suspect the Doctor caused their woes and a 15-year-old boy shoots him. A piece of shrapnel digs into Benny's neck.

Continuity

The Hostile Action Displacement System (HADS) is functioning ("The Krotons"). The Ikkaba and D'nasian civilizations helped spread Exxilon

culture throughout the Yemaya region ("Death to the Daleks"). Benny wears a T-Shirt that says "Keep the Leap," referring to the science-fiction show "Quantum Leap."

The spent his 1,000th birthday imprisoned aboard Ship (*Set Piece*), nursing two broken ribs.

FLORANCE, an AI who achieved full sentience and became GRUMPY's great-grandmother, first appeared in *Transit* and runs off with DOCTOR in *Seeing I*. Benny wears a vortex diffraction force shield, likely the same device she wore in Orman's Set Piece. The Doctor fails to find the Brotherhood that created SLEEPY in *Christmas on a Rational Planet*, but battles the group in *The Death of Art* and *So Vile a Sin*.

The healing talent the Doctor gives to his companions, first labeled a benign virus in Deceit, is here called nanites.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor has made no personal funeral arrangements and assumes his enemies will kill him. His immune system can handle almost all micro-organisms or viruses that affect humans. His biochemistry can interpret human memory RNA and produce the Gallifreyan equivalent.

Telepaths who read the Doctor's mind are staggered by the sheer volume of memories in his mind. A "good night's sleep" can last him a couple of weeks.

The Doctor wears essentially the same clothes during each regeneration to give him some degree of stability. His Gallifreyan name has 38 syllables. His eyes are blue.

The Doctor can type two things at once. He knows sign language. He can telepathically read another person's dreams by touch. He has heard of DKC.

• *The Doctor and Death*: Death bets the Doctor that he can't stop people from dying on Yemaya 4. Fortunately, the Doctor wins, as the loser has to endure "all the angst they can eat."

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny authors *An Eye for Wisdom: Repetitive Poems of the Early Ikkaban Period*, published by Youkali Press, 2315, which includes a Yemayan poem.

As a child, Benny wished she had magical powers and could fly. She has some latent psi ability. She's talented with swordplay. Benny has seen Ikkaban relics on three different planets.

• *Benny and the TARDIS crew*: It scares Benny that the rest of the

TARDIS crew relies on her, lest she screw up.

• *The Doctor and Benny*: Benny's decided not to have children while she travels with the Doctor. He offers to drop here somewhere for a maternity leave, but she declines.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz's aim utterly sucks. She can read Xhosa. She prays to the Goddess. She can hack computers less advanced than her era, and feels out-of-place among young people making a fresh start.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris hasn't been trained for service in forest terrain.

• *Tegan Jovanka*: Medics freed a trapped moth from a child Tegan's ear.

• *GRUMPY*: GRUMPY was originally located in a monolith, a great gray box six meters wide. It was created as a model of the human brain. In time, it developed a human psychology, telepathy and its own personality. GRUMPY's molecular storage mechanisms were organic.

• *SLEEPY*: After SLEEPY's self-sacrifice, bits of its memories likely survived in the Yemayan colonists and Chris.

Madhanagopal: Director of the GRUMPY project and member of a psionic brotherhood. Madhanagopal's true motives were unknown, but he was a telekinetic who could mentally analyze AIs and alter their memories. With GRUMPY's help, he could probe human brains. He disappeared shortly after Roz and Benny's investigations in 2227.

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Medical devices in the TARDIS can repair burnt-off eyebrows. Roz and Chris spent hours remodeling the TARDIS gym. The weapons room contains swords from dozens of historical periods, plus spears, antique guns and a very ornate cannon.

Alien Races

Ikkabans are an extinct race of which almost nothing is known. The Ikkaban left religious alters to the Turtle cult on three planets. *Roses and souls* is the Ikkaban metaphor for sacrifice, especially for when they would kill themselves by walking into fire at the Turtle's temple, one at a time.

Alien Planets

Yemaya 4 was ruled ideal for colonization because of its large temperate zone and lack of predators, plus a biochemistry and gravity that resembles Earth. The DKC base on Sunyata is less than 36 hours away.

Places to Go

• *The Doctor's Beach House (Sydney)*: The Doctor bought it while his Kent House was being painted. Melanie Bush flew with him to Sydney and they went up the coast in a rented VW.

• *Yemaya 4 temple*: The only archaeological find on Yemaya 4, with an Exxilon or Osirian design. Some of its symbols are identical to Ikkaban and D'nasian glyphs.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Datacubes*: He gives Roz and Benny such a cube, which can adapt to fit and siphon information from local technology.

• *The Doctor's Purple Knob ("Mawdryn Undead")*: A device that helps Benny and Roz track the TARDIS' telepathic trace.

Organizations

• *The Brotherhood*: A mysterious organization whose motives are as yet unknown. They heavily sponsored the GRUMPY experiment. They blame their failings on *le Docteur*.

• *Turtle cult*: A mysterious cult of which little is known. The Turtle was likely a symbol of life, death and resurrection.

• *Dione-Kisumu Company (DKC)*: Company that provided medical technology for the Yemaya colony. Officially, DKC is the only company that employs telepaths. The company's illegal experiments on Yemaya 4 were exposed and DKC agents offered amnesty for testimony.

Time Travel

The Doctor's party sees 24th century records that Yemaya 4 became a lump of charred earth, with only a few survivors babbling about mental abilities. Against the rules of most other novels, The Doctor's crew then diverts history and prevents the disaster.

Phenomena

Telepathy varies from race to race. Some only have a few psionic individuals. Some are telepathic only with their own kind. Few human telepaths, no matter how powerful, can breach a Time Lord's mental defenses.

History

The outbreak of psionic powers on Yemaya 4 occurred two months after the colonists arrived in a DKC colony ship. Australia is almost uninhabitable, radioactive and full of garbage.

At the End of the Day

SLEEPY has Orman at her prime, carving characters and sub-plots with the finesse of a sculptor. Chris' paranoia about psi powers and Benny's caring for the Doctor are just two of a multitude of insights about our cast. At this point, the loosely named "Psi Powers" story arc is reasonably compact and almost makes sense. The opening, in which the tormented Doctor can't figure out why his companions are strapping him down, is one of the most surreal novel moments.

Death and Diplomacy

Author: Dave Stone. Virgin New Adventure #49. Release Date: April 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

The Summit, a space station orbiting the planet Moriel; and Moriel itself, 1996.

Summary

As the Doctor's companions suddenly vanish, the TARDIS is forcibly piloted to the Summit, a space station where representatives of the competing Saloi, Czhanos and Dakhaari Empires meet to contest a world called Moriel. The negotiations have been arranged by the Hollow Gods, all-seeing, all-powerful beings who command the three Empires. While Roz and Chris find themselves as soldiers in the Czhanos army, the Doctor, as requested, mediates the negotiations.

Meanwhile, Benny materializes on the planet Jaris, pursued by killer robots. She escapes thanks to Jason Kane, a rogue mysteriously teleported away from Earth in 1984. Jason hasn't seen a human female in 13 years, and he and Benny swap histories. Their time together culminates with them getting drunk and making love. An embarrassed Benny tries to part company and stake out on her own, but the two find themselves drawn together.

Finally, Jason's pet alien Shug pulls a gun and reveals himself to be The Mighty Leader of All Skrak, the commander of a race hell-bent on conquest. A teleportation mishap on Earth 15 years ago stranded him and Jason far, far away from their home planets, and Shug – hiding as a pet to disguise his true identity – has been trying to reunite with his people ever since. Shug's homemade teleportation device takes Jason's spaceship to Moriel, where Shug's forces are waiting.

With the Empire leaders, the Doctor proves the Hollow Gods are false projections and that they're in a simulated environment area on Moriel. The Skrak, using their limited time-travel abilities, have projected the Hollow

Gods throughout history and put the Empires at war so the Skrak can conquer whoever's left standing.

The Doctor confronts the Skrak, who tried to seize the Doctor and his TARDIS to gain time travel, but first teleported the Doctor's companions away so they couldn't interfere. When the teleportation misfired, they sent killer robots after Benny.

Unfortunately for the Skrak, one of those same killer robots shows up on Moriel, damaged but still programmed to destroy. It kills Shug and then, having fulfilled its instructions to kill, switches off. With the death of their leader, the Skrak capitulate. The Doctor – with the blessing of the Empire leaders – pretends to be the Hollow Gods long enough to announce the Summit's success and bring peace to the Empires. The Dakhaari and Czhan leaders marry to perpetuate the peace, but the Skrak escape into space.

The Doctor reunites with Roz and Chris on Moriel. And Jason and Benny, arguing like bulls in heat, decide they're in love and announce their engagement. Heaven help them.

Memorable Moments

Jason pretends to not speak English during his first meeting with Benny, so she pantomimes putting food in her mouth. Jason pantomimes something other than food in his mouth and acts gleeful.

Benny lets slip to Jason that a girl does not like being totally ignored after the best sex of her entire life. She later freaks when she thinks libidinous Jason has infected her with alien STDs. When she reunites with the Doctor, she realizes her priorities have shifted away from him – for the readers, it's the end of an era.

Sex and Spirits

In one of the most sexy, if not sex-filled, novels, Roz and Chris suddenly materialize in a closet naked, and Roz grabs, shall we say, the wrong knob to get out. There's surviving footage of Peri and Mel in the bath (thankfully not together).

Jason and Benny first smooch when he gives her CPR. They first do the deed after a drunken bar crawl. They next do the nasty in prison, and shag before announcing their engagement.

Jason appears to have shagged everyone. He mentions Kara, his lover before he left home, meaning he lost his virginity no later than age 15. Jason

rattles off at least 14 human partners, both male and female, and six alien ones. In November, 1983, his horrible relationship with a Louise got him on a mostly-celibate kick.

Jason and Benny drink green stuff that tastes like jet-propelled melon juice.

Ass-Whuppings

The empires' battle for Moriel kills 400,000.

Saloi propaganda says Dakharri Queen Ravla personally murdered 15,000 of her own people, oversaw the murder of 20 million more and had killed 147 of her "husbands" in a single night. The husband total is closer to seven – and three of them weren't murdered.

Jaris' sun explodes, destroying three planets and seven artificial satellites. The Skrak Shug drops his rival Gleka into a chute with spikes. Damaged automatons in turn squish Shug.

Benny and Jason prove it isn't easy being them. He near-asphyxiates doing repairs outside his spaceship, but struggles through, while Benny loses air and floats by, deathly pale and blue. Shug blasts Jason and flings him in a hole. Teleporting from Earth scorched Jason but good.

Continuity

Jason and Benny get married in *Happy Endings*. The Doctor thinks Gilgamesh was a complete sociopath and dipsomaniac (*Timewyrm: Genesys*). Roz reads *All-Consuming Fire* by Dr. John Watson. Author Dave Stone says this is the second book in a trilogy, consisting of the previous *Sky Pirates!* and the Benny NA *Oblivion*. Stone's *Burning Heart* deals with a possible descendent of Benny and Jason. The piglet people of Glomi VII, first mentioned here, are explained in that work.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: Before the Doctor's first regeneration, his body was more-or-less human and effectively mortal. If he had a penny for every time he heard, "You will obey our command!" he'd have 47 pounds, nine shillings and four pence. He ruins his umbrella stumbling attackers. Ironically, he thinks his previous self was too forceful with people and has decided to back off.

His hat is reminiscent of the black hats worn by the spy-caste throughout

the Three Empires. If the TARDIS is immobilized, the Doctor loses his inner sense about his location. In the TARDIS, he can surgically remove Skrak implants.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny cannot dance the fandango and despises stubble.

• *Jason Peter Kane*: Jason grew up 60 or 70 miles from London. He lived with his mother, a sister named Lucy – six years his younger – and a father who beat the living crap out of them. Jason still has some scars.

When Jason was 15, his father went after the family with a newspaper, rolled-up hard as a billy club. Jason walked five miles to the nearest town and left.

He spent two-and-a-half-years wandering through Centrepoint, Mile End and Yorkshire. He lived with his friends Danielle, Mo and Susan in Euston for four months before they kicked him out. On Christmas Eve, 1983, he bought a leather jacket from the Zone and wandered to Oxford Street, where he was caught in an alien beam transporting the Skrak leader Shug. The beam was deviated by a rival Skrak and deposited them in an alien swamp on t'Kao, a major spacelane crossover planet.

After a year, he hitched a ride on an ore-processor launch. Before Benny, he hadn't seen another human for 13 years. (Jason says he's been in space 15 years, but has to be ballparking, based on his age and the fact that he spent more than two years on Earth wandering.)

Jason's now 30-years-old, 6'1" and muscular. He has an electronic device that calculates odds and electronically stimulates his hand to play the right poker cards. He's never been an arms dealer. He's an expert spaceship pilot, and can fake spaceship identification sequences. He's highly skilled at re-wiring electronics. He's heard of the Time Lords.

Jason's maternal grandfather was at Normandy in 1944, twenty-first Army group and was killed when a bullet hit his silver crucifix and turned into shrapnel. As a result, Jason lines his jacket with layers of long-chain polycarbon micromesh.

• *Benny and Jason*: When Benny and Jason first meet, she's on the run, grabs him in an arm lock and shoves a pistol in his back. She tells the pursuing militia to back off, or the "grubby little chancer gets it." He helped save her butt a couple of times, though after he was forced to apply CPR, she'd rather die than touch him again. Regardless, her barriers came down with a terrifying ease.

• *Lucy Kane*: When Jason's sister was six, she touched herself in a bad

place and her father decided she would have to be "corrected." For three days, at the same time each day, he broke one of her fingers with a mallet and a chisel, the cutting edge blunted with masking tape.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz's family is immensely powerful – if they were in the 20th century, they'd own half the United Kingdom. She's seen battlefields from the 1914 Somme to the 2697 Rigel Wastes. Still xenophobic, Roz avoids a betrothal ceremony.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris' antecedents were Indentured Chattels in the 2700s and 2800s, part of the New Earth Feudalism. He's a crack marksman, but agonizes for days if he kills someone (he's reformed since his playful killings in *Just War*).

• *The alternate TARDIS*: The Doctor re-teaches the TARDIS how to treat visitors. She can normally break through electrogravitational fields by sheer force, but gets stuck in complex ones.

Alien Races

• *Saloi*: A treacherous race with fleets of war-stilettos. Morweth was supposedly the absolute ruler of the Saloi Empire, but the real power lay with Sareth, head of the Saloi's enforcing Removal Men. Morweth, a blank personality, merely implemented Sareth's suggestions and doubled as a bodyguard. When Sareth's life was threatened, Morweth transformed into a fierce killing machine and died. Sareth assumed proper power.

• *Czhan*: A war-based hierarchy. The fleet is made from iron dreadnoughts. Koth served as Supreme Commander of All Czhan Forces, and endured many uprisings.

• *Dakhaari*: Olive-green skinned with slitted ears. The Dakharri are regarded as savages with cannibalistic tendencies. Dakhaari culture is based on posture, pretence and deception.

• *Skrak*: The Doctor compares the furry, three-eyed Skrak to extra-dimensional animals, the results of early time experiments on Gallifrey. Basically, the creatures were merged with vermin and their timelines looped back on each other as temporal paradoxes. Whether the Skrak in fact are these Gallifreyan creatures or are merely similar isn't made clear.

Regardless, the Skrak haven't existed for more than 20 years, and their self-enclosed time loop drove them mad. At some point, the Skrak happened upon the TARDIS and a previous Doctor. They rewired the Ship and secreted a timing mechanism that brought the TARDIS to them so they could gain time travel.

The Skrak implant brain wires to enslave other races. A Skrak year equals 1.55 human years.

Alien Planets

The Dagellan Cluster, a sector of space occupied by the Dakhaari, Czhan and Saloi. Jaris and 400-odd non-aligned worlds also share the star cluster.

Ships

Jason's Spaceship is about the size of a Boeing 727, sans one engine, and woefully out of date. The Skrak leader Shug teleported the ship and wrecked it.

Stuff You Need

The Skrak Time-Travel Device was a crude lash-up, incorporating Cybermen, Sontaran and Earth technology. It was a blundering attempt to replicate the TARDIS, but could teleport objects or influence other beings' minds by redirecting bursts of inter-dimensional energies through space and time.

History

Professor Bernice Winterhill and Dr. John Smith (as if you don't know who they really are) authored *Quantum Theory A-(Omega Sign) for Dumb People*, a self-generating database application, distributed by Trojan Horse Software Inc. It locks the host system beyond hope, and was used by neo-Luddite activists in 3123, causing the collapse of the Dragos XIFV Global Technocracy.

At the End of the Day

Runs hot and cold. The Benny/Jason scenes are a hoot and a holler. Benny's love story becomes a comedy of errors – jokey, bawdy as hell and even shameless. By contrast, the Doctor/Roz/Chris plots are rather dull and drab. If you're not into the Doctor being on the sidelines, this isn't the book for you, as Benny takes the limelight. But the overall package, compared to other novels, is mostly underrated and easily the most readable of Dave Stone's "Who" books.

Sidebar: Shug Speaks

As Benny and Jason have a major row, Shug, Jason's pet of 13 years, rears up with a gun and gives his two cents on their relationship. As Shug sees it, Jason's terrified of any sustainable relationship because of his childhood abuse. Jason equates love with violence, so he fears it will turn him violent and brutal. He therefore prefers encounters with no involvement.

However, Benny suffers from an Elektra complex because she's given her absent father such godlike proportions, no man can ever compare. She subconsciously maneuvers men into betraying her. In short, she's re-enacting her Dad's betrayal.

Shug concludes Jason and Benny are in love, but that they're going into overload trying to wreck their relationship. The damn pet was likely right. Things got better for Benny and Jason – but it didn't last.

Happy Endings

Author: Paul Cornell. Virgin New Adventure #50. Release Date: May 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Benny, Roz and Chris, with Jason Kane and Dorothée.

Travel Log

Cheldon Bonniface, 2010. The Doctor makes side trips to pick up guests, including the Isley Brothers from Earth, Sherlock Holmes and Watson (London, 1887) and Silurians Jacquilian and Sanki from 30th century Earth. The original TARDIS arrives at Cheldon Bonniface, having been Heaven knows where.

Summary

It's Benny and Jason's wedding day, and the Doctor has assembled her friends and colleagues from across time and space in the little town of Cheldon Bonniface, with musical performances by the Isley Brothers, Plasticine and the Silurian group Bona Fide.

But members of the wedding party start acting odd, and Benny in particular nurtures serious doubts about Jason's fidelity. However, initial reports of Jason's flirtations prove to be the gerbil-like alien Kitai, holographically disguising himself as Jason to pick up chicks.

Nonetheless, when Dorothée arrives, there seems to be an odd attraction between her and Jason and they have a liaison in a barn – so it seems. Meanwhile, the wedding activities carry on, with a bar brawl between the Martians and UNIT, a cricket match and a pagan bonding ritual. Of particular good note, the insect-like Charrl randomly arrive in the Doctor's original TARDIS, which survived the Time Ram in *Blood Heat*. Of particular bad note, Romana, now Lady President of Gallifrey, discovers someone has stolen the Loom of Rassilon's Mouse, a bioengineering tool. And even worse, Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart's body, now more than 100 years old, is finally giving out on him.

The night before the wedding, Jason's stag party ends with his hanging

from his feet, clad only in his underwear, from a tree in the Doctor's original TARDIS. On the wedding day, Benny nurtures a number of doubts and considers calling the whole thing off. But as she and Jason approach the isle, a boxer-clad, raving Jason suddenly appears, having escaped from the TARDIS and proving that Benny is marrying an imposter. Suddenly, the Bishop reveals himself to be the evil Master, even as a horde of clones, based on the wedding guests, bursts forth from the church crypt.

The Master stole Rassilon's Mouse to fashion a new body for himself, but chose, through the influence of a Fortean Flicker – a Universal phenomena that causes fantastic coincidences – to carry out his work in Cheldon Bonniface. To ensure his privacy, the Master tried sabotaging the wedding with subliminal messages and doubts, and even made a clone Jason to "cheat" on Bernice with Dorothée.

Suddenly, the Master's experiments, neglected for too long, erupt from the cemetery as a gigantic gelatinous mess – the raw foundation for a new body. The Brigadier, in saving a Silurian's life, is absorbed by the beast. The Doctor begs Ishtar to remember her heritage as the cosmic-powered Timewyrm, and Ishtar's power bursts forth and kills the monster. As a happy side effect, decades are shed from the aged Brigadier's body and he's restored to health.

With the Master apprehended by UNIT, Benny and Jason wed and leave for their honeymoon on the planet Plautus. The Doctor gives them two time rings to travel time and space with and, with Roz and Chris, departs in his original TARDIS for a series of New Adventures.

Memorable Moments

If you're in tune with all of the novel references, you can basically count the whole book. Dorothée and Benny swap sex stories a la "Four Weddings and a Funeral." There's a memorable bar brawl, and Benny and Jason clear space in it by simply arguing.

The Doctor tells the Brigadier he's leaving because his companions have suffered too much and that Benny was even tortured. (The Brigadier replies: "Bastards. You killed some of them, I trust?") A tear forms on the Doctor's eye as he prepares to leave everyone behind, but a drunken Benny stops him.

The Brigadier saves the Silurian Jacquilian, a nice symbolic reversal from his xenophobic attitude in *Blood Heat*. And the Brigadier's restoration to health is cause for celebration like few others.

But the best of them all – in a book of tearful moments – the Reverend Anne Trelaw gives the wedding address and says: "We are often caught up in violent situations, but we are creatures of peace…That's why we'll keep on going, and keep on having new adventures."

Sex and Spirits

Benny and Jason get hitched. We even see Benny mount Jason, who's tied to the bedposts with socks. Ace gives Benny condoms. SaRa!qava (*The Also People*) turned into a man to get it on with Benny, but Benny declines. Even though she truly loves Jason, a part of her longs for the late Guy de Carnac (*Sanctuary*).

Chris impregnates his girlfriend Ishtar (the *Timewyrm* series). Also, his romance with Dep in *The Also People* has now produced a one-year-old daughter, iKrissi. (Dep made a mistake during conception, so iKrissi isn't an exact copy of Chris.)

Dorothée lost her virginity to Sabalom Glitz, on the floor of his spaceship ("Dragonfire"). She thought it was awful. Her second lover was Jan (*Love and War*). Her 38th lover was a Neanderthal named Arnkush. No. 39 was a dentist named Peter, who gave her a filling. No. 63 was Count Nikolai Sorin ("The Curse of Fenric" novelization). She also fancied Gilgamesh (*Timewyrm: Genesis*).

Dorothée kisses the real Jason and nothing happens. The clone Jason shows up and they go at it. They depart the story together.

A conversation between homosexuals Alexander Shuttleworth (*Human Nature*), Forgwyn (*Tragedy Day*), the Silurian Sanki and Captain Mike Yates establishes that Yates becomes a homosexual later in life. This is supported by his misunderstood sex life in *The Devil Goblins of Neptune*.

The Pakhar Kitai (*Legacy*) holographically disguises himself like Jason to get babes. John Watson still has a fondness for Benny (*All-Consuming Fire*). Roz sends her ex-lover feLixi (*The Also People*) a silent message that she misses him.

O'Kelly Isley hits Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart (*Transit* and on) up for dinner. Kadiatu replies they could do sexual reproduction, but O'Kelly might not survive the experience.

Benny jokes about a menage a troi with the two Jasons. "Her" Jason's look makes her spit champagne.

Speaking of booze, this book is a veritable geyser. Basically assume that when nothing key is happening, people are drinking up, either at the

wedding events or the Black Swan bar. Benny and Jason are arrested for being drunk and disorderly – Jason was last in a pub brawl on Squaxis. There's a bar brawl between some Ice Warriors and UNIT. Benny catches a bottle of French champagne. Benny drank herself silly when the Travelers Daniel and Lucas were pair-bonded.

Ass-Whuppings

Years ago, the Reverend Ernest Trelaw (*Timewyrm: Revelation*) died peacefully from natural causes. The Doctor wanted to be there, but was afraid of causing a fuss. The living Church named Saul eased Trelaw's passing. Other than that, the Master shoots an Ishtar clone, and Ishtar herself destroys the Master's biological organism. First Pilot Jinkwa (*The Highest Science*), freed from suspension, finally dies.

Continuity

Castellan Spandrell ("The Deadly Assassin") is still head of security on Gallifrey. Dorothée finally reunites with her mother (remember "I haven't got no mum and dad!" from "Dragonfire"?) and promises to visit more.

No novel is more seeped with other book references. However, for everyone's sanity, check book notations in the individual entries. Benny says, as a bit of inaccurate history, that various powers on Earth know about the Ice Warriors' broadcasts, but nobody's met one, which conflicts with the entirety of *The Dying Days*.

The suggestion that Chris and Roz are going to bed together is the funniest thing he's ever heard, but they consider a romance in *Return of the Living Dad*.

Benny and Jason divorce in *Eternity Weeps*. Strangely enough, a possible descendent of theirs appears in Burning Heart, and an alternate universe son of theirs appears in *Return of the Living Dad*. (If Muldwych's book is to be believed, Benny and Jason have children and visit the Hutchings as they grow older.)

Romana frees humans pickled in a time bubble in *The Highest Science* and takes them home to 1993. The Doctor, having refused in *Who Killed Kennedy?* to learn, in fact, who killed Kennedy, now knows the assassin's identity.

The Doctor undoes the mental mindwipe that he performed on the Brigadier (*No Future*, "Mawdryn Undead").

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The seventh Doctor reads Neville Cardus to relearn how to play cricket, as the fifth Doctor's knowledge of the sport is lost to him. The fifth Doctor stayed in Cheldon Bonniface for a summer and won the local cricket league.

The Doctor can undo his mental mindwipes. He adds rooms, presumably as an extension of the TARDIS or otherwise, to Mrs. Higgins' guest house. He doesn't know Benny and Jason's future.

The Eternal Death, continuing her competition of wills with the Doctor, shows him an unnamed figure – possibly a relative – that makes the Doctor run in horror.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny's a lapsed Human Orthodox. Her wedding dress is blue. Benn knows Palare, an underground tongue that has existed in various forms for thousands of years.

• *Jason Kane*: Learned some Martian from Savaar.

• *Benny and Jason*: They have some problems, to put it mildly. Jason's fidelity is constantly in question. They solve rows by: sulking, sobbing, violence or shagging. The Doctor's about the only one who thinks they make a good couple.

She becomes Professor Bernice Summerfield-Kane. He, Jason Kane-Summerfield. They can travel through space and time using the Doctor's time rings, which only work by knocking them together, so divorce equates being marooned.

• *Dorothée Sorina-McShane (a.k.a. Ace)*: Count Nikolai Sorin, frightened of Dorothée's violent ways, left her. They pretended to be married. She hasn't carried a weapon for a year now. Dorothée is 31 and has a time-traveling motorcycle. She's thought about settling down in Cheldon Bonniface. She acquires an old CD of the Stone Roses (*Timewyrm: Revelation*, *Nightshade*).

• *Dorothée and "Jason Kane" clone*: The Jason Kane clone broke free of the Master's control, save for the in-built desire to rut with Dorothée. She feels like slime for having an affair with "Jason," even if she was going to admit to it. Dorothée has a house in the country and leaves for it with the clone.

• *Ishtar Hutchings (Timewyrm: Revelation)*: At 20 years old, Ishtar, the celestial being formerly known as the Timewyrm, likes jogging. She retains many of her Timewyrm abilities.

• *Chris Cwej and Ishtar Hutchings*: The two of them have a fiery romance in which Ishtar loses her virginity to him. Ishtar used her Timewyrm powers to bring gifts for Chris through time, including a copy of *Songs of Innocence and Experience*, signed by William Blake (*The Pit*), and a multi-function watch.

• *Jasmine Surprise Cwej-Hutchings, Ricky McIlveen (Warchild) and Time* (*Love and War* and more): Jasmine, the child of Chris and Ishtar, goes on to have a good life and influence Earth's Reconstruction. Her boyfriend was Ricky McIlveen, the son of Vincent and Justine. Ricky and Jasmine in turn give birth to the Eternal named Time, the patroness of the Doctor.

Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart: Glandular implants from the United Nations keep the Brigadier's body, now more than 100 years old, going. Before being restored to youth and health by the Master's monster, the Brigadier was dying, having been exposed to a lot of carcinogens in his service.

He saw action as recently as the turn of the millennium, leading King Charles' troops in a blockade of Westminster Bridge. The Brigadier became a media icon, a symbol of the Dissolution. King Charles offered him a role in the Provisional Cabinet, but the Brigadier declined. The Reconstruction pleased him, especially when they kicked Charlie's representative out of Parliament.

He finally meets Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart, his descendent. He's started to dictate his memoirs. He still uses his call sign of "Greyhound Leader" (TV's UNIT stories) and can authorize news blackouts. Should he die, he suspects his wife Doris will end up with Hamlet Macbeth (*The Left-Handed Hummingbird*). His restoration to health perhaps derails the peaceful end the Doctor saw for him in "Battlefield."

• *RSM John Benton*: Is now in his early 70s.

President Romana and ex-President Flavia: Romana returned to Gallifrey in *Blood Harvest*. After President Flavia was found drunk in the Sash of Rassilon, Romana put herself up for election and promised a kinder, gentler Gallifrey. Plus, she expected to involve the Time Lords more in universal affairs. She won by a 53-47 percent margin.

• *Death (Timewyrm: Revelation) and Time (Love and War)*: Are referred to as the gods of the Gallifreyans.

• *Peter and Emily Hutchings (Timewyrm: Revelation)*: Emily Hutchings lost her psychic powers because Ishtar used her as a power source. Peter made enough to support them teaching math. Emily becomes a novelist and

writes The Unformed Heart: A Jasmine Romance, based on Dorothée and the clone Jason's affair. She's going through menopause.

• *Reverend Annie Trelaw*: The niece of the late Ernest Trelaw (*Timewyrm: Revelation*).

• *Saul (Timewyrm: Revelation)*: Saul's psionic powers can obscure photographs taken of aliens.

• *Robin Yeadon (Nightshade) and Audrey McShane*: Now much older, Ace's ex-boyfriend Robin gets engaged to Ace's mother.

• *Máire (Love and War)*: After Heaven, Máire served with Ace for a time, but returned to the Travelers as their Priest (Cook William serves as Priestess). With a touch, Máire can implant others with microscopic computers that link to the individuals' neurons and grant access to cyberspace.

• *Kim Talevera (Shadowmind)*: Recovered from her injuries thanks to Shenn prostheses.

• *Muldwych (Birthright)*: Muldwych has escaped Antykhon, using a narrow beam of chronons, aligned perfectly with an original place of reality established by the Travelers (*Love and War*). He gives the Doctor time rings and a secret package. He also acquires a unicorn (*Cat's Cradle: Witch Mark*).

Evidence that Muldwych is the "Merlin" incarnation of the Doctor, as mentioned in "Battlefield," is supported because Muldwych doesn't want to talk about Excalibur around the Doctor (yet the Doctor occasionally asks Muldwych if events turn out well) and the two go to lengths to not touch and violate the Blinovitch Limitation Effect ("Day of the Daleks").

• *Mikhail Vladimir Popov (Birthright)*: Now 82, Popov became a Russian detective and moved to Volgograd, then London. The Doctor insisted Popov leave Volgograd, or Stalingrad, in 1942, saving the man's life.

• *Ruby Duvall (Iceberg)*: Ruby, as a Sunday Seeker correspondent, got too close to UNIT's intelligence arm, Broadsword (*No Future*), last year and the Brigadier persuaded UNIT Corporal Claire Tennant (*No Future*) – presumably now promoted – not to assassinate her. Ruby again asks the Doctor to take her with him and he declines, not wanting to be responsible for another life.

• *Hamlet Macbeth (The Left-Handed Hummingbird)*: Now a journalist, Macbeth writes good books about UFOs. He says he spent last 10 years missing aboard a flying saucer. He snuck into a UNIT wine-and-cheese

event five years ago and was forcibly ejected on the Brigadier's orders.

• *Ruby Duvall and Hamlet Macbeth*: The two strike up a professional partnership and are hired as gamekeepers for UNIT.

• *Benny and Hamlet Macbeth*: Benny forgives Hamlet for torturing the Doctor.

• *Christian and Benjamin Alvarez (The Left-Handed Hummingbird)*: Christian wrote *Overcome Your Fear of Flying*. His son Benjamin is now 30.

• *Savaar (Legacy)*: The Doctor gave him a time-jump device to attend the wedding with. Savaar dyes his skin a ceremonial red.

• *Rhukk (Legacy, Theatre of War)*: As promised, gives Benny the first rock excavated from the ruins on Karnas Prime.

• *Irving Braxiatel (Theatre of War)*: Plays cricket and knows many people at the reception.

• *Sherlock Holmes (All-Consuming Fire)*: Initially looks upon travel to the future as the chance to solve multiple crimes, but the Doctor makes him promise not to glean any such knowledge.

• *The Doctor and Sherlock Holmes (All-Consuming Fire)*: The Doctor likes seeing Holmes, but considers him a borderline psychotic with terrible manners.

• *Provost-Major Beltempest (Original Sin)*: Was body-beppled for an undercover Landsknecht mission on the Birastrop home world and became a hard-shelled alien with a metal eye.

• *Alexander Shuttleworth (Human Nature)*: Has a boyfriend back home.

• *Joan (Human Nature)*: The Doctor's ex-flame has a new cat, job and friends. The Doctor tells her he's still learning about being human.

• *Bernice Doras (Toy Soldiers)*: Anne Doras' daughter is named after Bernice. Anne is dead, but the Doctor gave her a wedding invitation at Bernice's christening 50 years ago.

• *AM!xitsa (The Also People)*: AM!xitsa can disguise itself as an owl and contains information on body-bepples. It can retrieves memory from emergency extra-dimensional dumps.

• *The TARDIS*: Believed destroyed by a Time Ram in Blood Heat, the Doctor's original TARDIS survived, saved by the Fortean Flicker (*The Highest Science*).

• *The alternate TARDIS*: Has plenty of air, countryside and mice. Entire rooms are filled with untold treasures and cat toys, some of it given to the

Doctor by grateful civilizations (he accepts the gifts if the givers have plenty). The TARDIS can be programmed for multiple rehearsal studios, complete with equipment and audiences.

• *The TARDIS and the alternate TARDIS*: The Doctor, Roz and Chris take up travel in the Doctor's original TARDIS, while Muldwych and the Charrl (*Birthright*) depart in the alternate TARDIS to settle on an uninhabited planet.

• *The Master's TARDIS*: Can avoid detection by the Doctor's TARDIS if all systems are switched into stealth mode. As such, it's hardly a TARDIS at all.

Alien Races

• *Alpha Centaurians (The "Peladon" stories, Legacy)*: Eat at their midriff.

• *Tharils ("Warriors' Gate")*: Romana proposes a Gallifreyan embassy for the Tharils, which appears in Lungbarrow.

• *Charrl (Birthright)*:After living in the Doctor's old TARDIS, the insect-like Charrl now regard him as a sort of deity.

• *Pakhar (Legacy)*: The Pakhar don't have an army. Earth hay fever may give the Pakhar delusional dreams of attacking trees.

Places to Go

• *The Land of Fiction ("The Mind Robber," Conundrum, Head Games)*: Gallifreyan marker buoys say the Land remains a void, as the Time Lords rendered it. Historically, the Land was part of the Gallifreyan Matrix, so Romana proposes re-annexing it.

Stuff You Need

• *The Loom of Rassilon's Mouse*: A golden loop that allows for advanced biological manipulation, so-named because Rassilon turned some mice into monsters but thankfully stopped playing with it.

• *Bloom (a.k.a. Pragostimine)*: Developed as a fertilizer in 2002, but already illegal under the First Reconstruction Act because it's viral. Given a DNA sample, it builds flesh. It's partly based on the Kilbracken cloning technique ("The Invisible Enemy").

Organizations

• *Bona Music*: The gay Silurians Jacquilian and Sanki serve as musicians.

• *Plasticine (No Future)*: Former member Anthony Christopher "Kit" Chapin is now a music agent. Cob and Danny live in a caravan on a patch of waste ground in Bristol. "Rheumatism" is another Plasticine song.

Ships

Kadiatu's Time Machine resembles a fighter aircraft with stubby wings. It can shroud itself.

Time Travel

Some temporal paradoxes might result in songs, books, poems, etc., being written by Time herself. They contain her messages, both helpful and harmful. One such song was "Summer Breeze" by the Isley Brothers, who time-traveled to Benny's wedding, heard the song before they'd recorded it and copied the music. Time, in a benevolent mood, inserted a hidden message that saved the life of Danny Pain (*No Future*), as he listened to the song, from a lorry accident in February 1998.

Phenomena

A Fortean Flicker (The Highest Science), which causes unpredictable coincidences, turned the candles at the Gallifreyan President's table into cheese during the Feast of Omega.

History

In the "Whoniverse," there wasn't a sequel to King Kong.

At the End of the Day

Excellent, even if the endless novel references will drain you. It's hard to imagine a more festive, friendly and jubilant novel romp than this, and *Happy Endings* really proves how uniform the Virgin writers were overall. But unless you're a novel aficionado – or even if you are – you're going to miss the relevance of many scenes. Still, if you walk into it knowing you'll miss a bunch the first time, as with many Tom Stoppard plays, you're fine – and for those who read even a third of the novels, *Happy Endings* is a must-read.

GodEngine

Author: Craig Hinton. Virgin New Adventure #51. Release Date: June 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

Mars, May 7, 2157; Earth, 2167.

Chronology

Immediately after *Happy Endings*.

Summary

A Vortex rupture and a failed transport stunnel experiment, conducted by Earth scientists on Pluto's moon of Charon, combine to double-whammy the TARDIS and apparently destroy the venerable craft. But moments before all is lost, the Doctor creates an escape portal and urges his companions to abandon Ship. The Doctor and Roz end up on Mars in 2157, during the infamous Dalek Invasion of Earth, and join a Martian pilgrimage to the Martian North Pole. Chris is similarly stranded on Charon, on the day the Daleks blasted it into oblivion. In a blatant violation of history, Chris warns the Charon scientists and they escape in a stunnel to escape to Mars.

Chris' actions further alter history when militant Martians brainwash two of the Charon scientists into finishing the GodEngine, a weapon that can make suns expel focused bursts of plasma. The Martian leader, Falaxyr, hopes to destroy the human race for the Daleks in exchange for the restoration of Mars.

Chris retaliates against a Martian base with some well-placed explosives, killing 50 Martians. Desperate to wipe the humans from Mars, Falaxyr targets the GodEngine's power on the colony of Jacksonville and ignores pleas that any attempt to destroy a target that small will vaporize both Earth and Mars.

Dozens of ghost-like TARDISes, all of them from a possible future, appear as the Doctor lobs a stunnel generator into the GodEngine, shorting

the weapon beyond repair and saving Earth. The destruction of the GodEngine both causes an energy release and insures Earth's normal timeline, both of which help the TARDIS solidify. Falaxyr escapes but is shot down by Dalek ships.

Chris' violation of history, however, is corrected when the Doctor calls up a file of Dalek War casualties and points out that the people Chris rescued are on the list. The Doctor explains that the web of time had to balance the sheets for the lives Chris saved, and that if history was to be preserved, the scientists had to perish.

Memorable Moments

After Adjudicator Santacosta bests Roz, Santacosta comments that nobody beaten so easily could be an Adjudicator, wounding Roz's pride beyond words. Chris realizes that everyone he saved from Charon was destined to die – and did. During a brief stop on Earth, the Doctor retrieves Susan's TARDIS key.

Sex and Spirits

Chris and Roz guzzled Martian ale at Benny's wedding (*Happy Endings*).

Ass-Whuppings

Charon's population dies when the Daleks turn it into radioactive slag. Chris' explosions kill 50 Martians. The Dalek Black Fleet wipes out Void Station Cassius, at the edge of the Solar System, and is reported to be exterminating a billion settlers on the beautiful world of Sifranos. Fourteen other colonies are also wiped out (*Lucifer Rising*). The indigenous population of Pluto is also wiped out when Charon is destroyed.

Continuity

The Daleks, allied with the desperate Martians, dug into Earth's core to destroy the planet's magnetic field ("The Dalek Invasion of Earth") and install the *GodEngine*. The Doctor here retrieves Susan's discarded TARDIS key (also "Dalek Invasion"). The Meddling Monk ("The Time Meddler") once allied himself with a Martian military nest. Ice Warrior Draan's father Slaar, commanded by Grand Marshal Paxaphyr, led the Ice Warrior battle-fleet in "The Seeds of Death." The role of the Osirians on Mars was examined in "Pyramids of Mars." The Fendahl ("Image of the

Fendahl") destroyed life on Mars while traveling to Earth, an event archaeologists now refer to as the "Great Death."

The Doctor has a gravimetric adjustment device, designed as a silver-red bracelet, courtesy of the Nimon ("The Horns of Nimon"). In *The Crystal Bucephalus* and *Millennial Rites*, also Hinton novels, the fifth and sixth Doctors say they should sue the Terileptils for destroying the sonic screwdriver. In this novel, the Doctor says he sued and re-gained his sonic screwdriver.

Thousand War veteran Samuel Robert Garvey Moore broke a sword on Arsia Mons, Mars, 2109, to prove he now was a man of peace. Stunnel research continued on Charon after the Transit project was dropped (*Transit*). Savaar used a copy of the Sword of Tuburr in Legacy.

Osirian technology is based on monopolar magnetic fields (*The Sands of Time*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: He's tailored survival kits to his companions' needs, and keeps a yellowing map of Martian cities. The Doctor's only encountered two Time Vortex ruptures – one after he took possession of the TARDIS, and one 9,000 years in the future. He has never met Martians in this time period and doesn't trust them. He can mentally undo brain-rack brainwashing.

• *Roz Forrester*: While squired to Konstantine, Roz trained on Mars in Jackson City. She learned Hi Shut's Defense when she was 20. She keeps her Adjudicator ID on her at all times.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris' father's birthday is May 7. His ancestor, Nathaniel Cwej, was an Oberon-based Adjudicator in the 22nd century. Chris knows how to make knock-out gas from starchy vegetables and the Doctor's first aid kit. His custom-made handi-kit contains Nitro-12 and Nitro-13. He also has a shroud field that blinds Martian sensors.

• *Roz and Chris*: Are very chummy with Martians after meeting some at Benny's wedding.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Benny's infamous work, *Down Among the Dead Men*, is a seminal work on Mars. The Martian Estaar gives Roz a *Book of Oras* for Benny.

• *Fate*: Presumably another Eternal like Death and Pain.

• *The TARDIS*: TARDIS occupants, taken outside of time, could temporarily survive the destruction of their timestreams. The combinations

of a Time Vortex rupture and subspace infraction can destroy TARDISes. Emergency systems latch onto the nearest safe environment, generating an orange globe-shaped escape route.

Alien Races

• *Martians (sex)*: All castes pair-bond for life. Fass-jul-Aqq, the Sundering, is a divorce ritual. Female Martians have a slighter body and a characteristic dorsal spine. Queens manipulate events from behind the scenes and lay eggs.

• *Martians (aesthetics)*: Aside from war, Martians value pride, beauty and aesthetics above everything else. Their flag has a triangle overlaid with a jagged lightning bolt and an artificial sun at the center.

• *Martians (body armor)*: All armor grants enhanced strength. Supreme Grand Marshals wear ornate purple armor inset with gold, with the face of the Martian Sphinx on their chest plates. Martian helmets contain breathing filters, which electronically screen out blinding gas and link to the Martian battle-net, boosting reaction time by 500 percent.

• *Martians (religion)*: The Osirians Sutekh, Horas and Nephthys (*The Sands of Time*) are worshipped as the Martian gods Ssethiis, Oras and Netysss. The peace-loving Order of Oras sprang from a desire to save the Martians from the Osirians' fate.

• *Martians (miscellaneous)*: Ice Warriors are vegetarians and can live for nearly 300 years. Spitting instigates a blood-duel. Martians recycle their body wastes and rarely need to defecate.

Alien Planets

Mars, due to the GodEngine, Mars developed a monopolar (rather than a bipolar) magnetic field. The Martian North Pole contained more than 30 gold and silver pyramids – now destroyed – that formed the external emitter array of the GodEngine. A city without a soul is one of the saddest traditions in Martian culture. Bodies of fallen Martian warriors are wrapped in warding shrouds to repel scavengers before cremation.

Places to Go

Martian cities/locations include the *Jull-ett-eskul Seminary*, which adheres to the ways of Oras. The Labyrinth of Lost Pride, the last obstacle before the holy ground of *G'chun duss Ssethiissi* (a.k.a. "The Cauldron of

Sutekh") is laid out like an Osirian cerebellum. *Ikk-ett-Saleth* (a.k.a. the City of the Sad Ones) lost its soul with the execution of the ruling Eight Point Table members. *T'Ran-ikk-Liis* is the largest city in the Northern hemisphere, but fell 100,000 years ago to a bacteriological attack.

Stuff You Need

• *GodEngine (a.k.a. Ssor-arr duss Ssethissi or The Engine of Ssethiss)*: Incorporates Osirian technology cannibalized from the Martian Sphinx to manipulate a star's electromagnetic, gravitational and subspace fields. With it, you can coax focused plasma bursts from the star to level planets, ignite Jovian stars or turn stars supernova. It's rather crude, though, and the narrowest focus can obliterate moons. The

GodEngine requires a planetary mass and the absence of a bipolar magnetic field. The Sword of Tuburr held the GodEngine's control elements.

• *The Martian Sphinx ("Pyramids of Mars")*: Lodestone of the Osirian power grid. The Martians moved it during the Thousand Day War and cannibalized its Osirian subspace technology. It's 1,000 years older than the Egyptian Sphinx.

• *The Sword of Tuburr (Legacy)*: The legendary symbol for the Martian military ethic. Broken, it symbolizes a new era of Martian peace. The law forbids making copies.

• *Martian brain-rack*: Martian device that brainwashes humans with no harmful effects. Controlled electric shocks to the brain override the effect.

• *Transit-Webs*: A portable stunnel generator that shoots dozens of straight black strings into a spiked wheel. The webs create an intense bipolar magnetic field, and can be disrupted by the Utet-Sak-Oras, a holy Osirian star-sapphire.

Organizations

Adjudicators (a.k.a. Ravens): Adjudication Intelligence existed in the 21st century. In the 30th century, Uranus' moon Oberon was second only to Ponten IV as a shining example of the Adjudication Guild, and served as an underground base during the Dalek blockade. An Adjudicator's uniform has built-in temperature control. Adjudicator fighting techniques include Hi Shut's Defense and the Herzganag Maneuver, a two-finger stab at the neck that can kill by causing brain hemorrhages. The Cthalz Maneuver brings instant, fatal death unless you know its defense, which was discovered in

the 28th century.

Ships

• *Dalek Black Fleet*: Armed with deep penetration ion cannons, anti-matter drills and photon impellers.

• *Osirian WarScarabs*: Invincible, made from an alloy of light neutronium and osmidium. The hull is opaque to subspace fields.

Phenomena

Transit Stunnels are subspace transport tunnels that work by weakening points between our dimension and subspace, creating entrance and exit points.

History (Alternate)

Before the Doctor's interference, Falaxyr's attempt to destroy Jacksonville with the GodEngine resulted in the destruction of Mars and Earth.

History

• Thousands of years ago, the Osirians Seth and Horus fought their brotherly war on Mars. Mars forged more legends during the Primal Wars.

• By 2157, the human colonies Jacksonville and Arcadia Planitia were set on Mars. Hshelbyville was founded in 2207; Springfield in 2227, next to the Ascraeus Plains. The Martian gravitic web was laid circa 2257. By 2310, Mars has an Earth-type atmosphere.

History (The Thousand Year War)

• In 2086, Mars invaded Earth, sparking the Thousand Year War. Paris was destroyed by a Martian-propelled asteroid. The only human military defeat occurred at Viis Claar (a.k.a. Valles Marineris), a valley near the Martian equator. Supreme Grand Marshal Abrasaar Urr'n'Jaas, one of the ruling Eight Point Table, set a trap for Earth forces and mutually annihilated 15,000 humans and 10,000 Martians. Abrasaar was condemned for violating the Martian war ethic of honesty, fled and became the Abbot Aklaar of the Order of Oras. His brother Falaxyr killed him in 2157.

• The Martian-sympathizing Martian Axis bombed Coventry and

destroyed the Montreal monorail system. Conversely, the Bureau of Adjudicators repeatedly clashed with Martian factions in the 21st and 22nd centuries.

• The Thousand Day War claimed 45,000 human lives, ending in 2088 with Mars' defeat as transmatted Earth troops stormed the planet. On Mars, most of the ruling Eight Point Table members were executed. All but a few thousand Martians fled to Nova Martia, a world on the edge of the Arcturan system. A small group stayed in the Rataculan system and defended their world of Cluut-ett-Pictar from an Arcturan strike-force.

History (The Dalek Invasion of Earth)

• Preparing for an invasion of Earth, the Daleks attacked the moons of Callisto, Tethys and Nereid, all of which were dedicated to weapons research. On May 7, 2157, they razed Charon, the oversized moon of Pluto, and its subspace research facility.

• In 2157, Dalek generators on Mercury flooded subspace with icaron particles (*Original Sin*) and blockaded the solar system. The GodEngine's destruction flooded subspace with exotic particles and sabotaged the blockade.

At the End of the Day

Solid, but unexceptional. The multiple additions to Ice Warrior culture help reconcile some snarled continuity, and at times prove interesting, but cover a not-very intricate plot. The tremendous ending – as Chris learns you can't beat Time – almost, but not quite, makes up for this.

Christmas on a Rational Planet

Author: Lawrence Miles. Virgin New Adventure #52. Release Date: July 1996. “Psi Powers Series”.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

Arizona, last days of the American Empire, 2012; New York State, Christmas, 1799; a void with sand, location and time unknown.

Summary

Investigating the roots of the nefarious, psionic Brotherhood that constructed the Artificial Intelligence SLEEPY (SLEEPY), the TARDIS crew arrives in Arizona, 2012, to look for clues among a convention of half-crazed telepathic UFO abductees. But instead, they find a dead gynoid, a creature that can alter reality in unpredictable ways. As the Doctor grows concerned the dead creature may signal a local breakdown of Universal laws, Roz falls through a random time rift to the town of Woodwicke, New York, 1799.

The Doctor locates and rescues Roz, and they variously elude psionics, who are hearing a mysterious voice and agents of the Shadow Directory, a nefarious group that investigates paranormal events. Meanwhile, Chris’ playful tinkering with the TARDIS’ architecture accidentally jettisons part of the Ship’s external shell. As the TARDIS tries to repair itself, Marielle Duquesne, a curious Shadow Directory agent, enters through the damaged exterior. The irrational things Marielle sees in the Ship weaken her belief that Reason can explain everything. Coupled with her own telepathy, this opens a channel to another part of the Time Vortex and allows the Carnival Queen, the living embodiment of a chaos long past, to break through into our world.

As the Carnival Queen mentally influences many people, including Chris, to the ways of Cacophony, Chris’ latent telepathic powers begin birthing gynoids. The Doctor confronts the Carnival Queen, each of them aware that Reason and Cacophony cannot simultaneously exist, and that Chris shall

decide who prevails.

The Doctor asks Chris a simple question: Whom does he trust more? The Carnival Queen or the Doctor? Chris remembers how his father stressed the need for law and order and chooses the Doctor's side – the side of Reason. The Carnival Queen, undisturbed by her defeat, says she will depart into eternity and inspire a few more ideas.

However, the Carnival Queen implies that the Doctor planted Chris' convenient memory of his father to win. The surprised Doctor finds the TARDIS herself planted Chris' memory, unwilling to become derationalized in the Carnival Queen's chaotic world. As Marielle safely departs to seek out other psychics, Chris hears the fleeting whisper of the Carnival Queen's voice. The TARDIS departs, leaving the Doctor to confront the psionic Brotherhood another day.

Memorable Moments

A time-stranded Roz believes she has located the father of United States President Abraham Lincoln and tries to assassinate the man, knowing the Doctor will somehow register this threat to history and find her to stop her. The Doctor grows resentful at this risk of life until Roz points out that he didn't have to live as a black woman in New York, 1799.

Surrounded by manic townspeople, the Doctor pretends to hail Beelzebub as a distraction, but has to cue a clueless Roz to make her escape. In a chaos-driven world ruled by the Carnival Queen, uniformed Revolutionaries charge after Chris in the TARDIS – their faces blank except for oversized mouths – each one a miniature guillotine. In a moment of rare Doctor/TARDIS tension, the Time Lord is pissed at his Ship's interference, even though it saves the Rational Universe.

Sex and Spirits

By 1998, Sarah Jane Smith, a speaker at the Nobel Academy, is married and named Sarah Jane Morley. This foreshadows her romance with boyfriend Paul in Miles' *Interference*.

Ass-Whuppings

Roz shoots her Cacophony-spawned evil self, and we learn she's previously shot innocent bystanders. A Shadow Directory assassin embeds a piece of scalpel in the Doctor's back. The Carnival Queen's laws make Roz's implanted ID mutate and burst out of her arm.

Continuity

The planet Astra ("The Rescue") is described as a terrible place, typical of 25th century Earth colonies. The Carnival Queen repeats William Hartnell's improvised TV words: "And a merry Christmas to all of you at home" ("The Daleks' Master Plan"). During a mania caused by the Carnival Queen's return, a female president of Gallifrey, perhaps Flavia or Romana, has an epileptic fit and releases 300 prisoners from Shada ("Shada"). An old QWERTY keyboard still programs the TARDIS' architectural configuration program ("Logopolis"). A TARDIS Library book is entitled *Black Orchid 2: This Time It's Personal* ("Black Orchid"). Stattenheim and his colleague Waldorf knew a thing or two about TARDIS configurations, but lived in 16th century Berlin ("The Two Doctors"). Cwejs have served in the Oberon lodge of the Adjudication service ("Revelation of the Daleks").

When the Artificial Intelligence named GRUMPY fled (SLEEPY), the Dione-Kisumu Company's records erased themselves. It's mentioned that Queen Elizabeth II was re-coronated, an event explained in *The Dying Days*. This is the first mention of Grandfather Paradox, a key Faction Paradox figure in *Alien Bodies* and *Interference*. Because of Grandfather Paradox's paradoxical nature, the Time Lords fear him more dead than alive.

It is nebulously suggested that as a child of the Age of Reason dies, its guilty spirit may wind up in Null-Space (*The Ghosts of N-Space*), and eventually develop into Eternals similar to Death, Time and Pain (*Timewyrm: Revelation* and more).

This is the first mention of *Genetic Politics Beyond the Third Zone* by Gustous Thripsted, a book that gives random advice in Miles' *Alien Bodies* and *Interference*. A TARDIS bottle that appears to have miniaturized people also foreshadows the "universe in a bottle" from *Interference*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor tries to wean himself off his umbrella and uses a walking cane. He curses in Miasimian and an alien language that heavily uses the letter X. The best meditation of his life was spent 26 years ordering the TARDIS Library books. The seventh Doctor knows Venusian karate and aikido.

The Doctor can literally adjust his thought processes to behave like a human's, albeit that of an exceptionally gifted human. This involves slipping into "ephemeral mode," thinking in only three geometric dimensions and

perceiving time as a linear experience. During such a period, his pain receptors act human. The shift back to Time Lord perceptions leaves him temporarily confused and absent-minded.

Shadow Directory assassin Raphael calls him *les betes aux deux coeurs*, "the devils with two hearts." He's also referred to as Fate's Accomplice and the Traveler from Beyond Time.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz spent six weeks in New York State. She calls herself Roslyn "Sarah" Forrester because she didn't want to keep explaining that "Inyathi" meant "buffalo." She doesn't like talking about her family and how successful her sister is.

• *"Evil Roz"*: The Doctor's amaranth (see *Stuff You Need*) restructures Roz's ID implant and generates a Roz who's a complete and utter bitch, what she would have been if she'd stayed on Earth. Evil Roz was armed with flenser and slither-caps, but good Roz shoots her down.

Chris Cwej: Chris spent six hours in the TARDIS going through every sunglass pair in the Doctor's collection looking for the "neatest" one. His family took him to see the *EarthDoomWorld* exhibit on Overcity 3.1. Guides threw him out when he refused to find the fake monsters frightening.

The full name of Chris' father is Volsted Kornbluth Cwej. His family lived on Level 53 of their city. The Adjudicators didn't trust their bloodline because they interbred. Chris once did a tour of duty on Jallafilla, a world run by the Church of Saint Thoth. The church, protected by the Colonies Cultural Identities Act, killed kids with red hair as being evil.

Chris flew "shrouded" ships that bent light. The fate of the gynoids he spawns is unknown, although presumably they discorporated when the Carnival Queen was beaten.

• *Mademoiselle Marielle Duquesne*: Born among Earth's first truly psychic generation, Marielle's telepathic "sight" can sense ships in the Time Vortex.

• *The Carnival Queen (a.k.a. Cacophony)*: As the epitome of Cacophony, the Carnival Queen seeks to set in motion an irrational universe. She isn't bound by linear time and can appear in several places simultaneously. To the Doctor, she's a random bit of symbolism. Her presence helps birth gynoids. Psionic resonances between our world and the non-linear matrices on the edge of the Vortex can summon her.

• *The TARDIS*: The Ship has a catering receipt for 36,000 sandwiches. Chris accidentally turns the "Eighth Door section" inside-out and pushes it into Hilbert space, causing the TARDIS to become somewhat de-

rationalized. The TARDIS has a planetarium and a clockwork solar system in miniature with 14 planets.

The TARDIS can induce false memories with its telepathic circuits. Through symbiosis with the seventh Doctor, the TARDIS has become a bit of a meddler. Its databanks don't talk much about Time Lord anatomy.

Parts of the Ship are beyond physical electronics. Teleplasmic mine fields and warning messages protect the core systems.

A copy of *A Passage to India* in the TARDIS Library contains dimensional shortcuts – every page has a portal to a different location in the TARDIS.

The TARDIS absorbed the cellar of madman Matheson Catcher, which was reconfigured using the Doctor's amaranth. Little corners of the Carnival Queen, with shifting courtyards and dark skies, probably remain in the Ship.

• *The Mouth (a.k.a. The Interface)*: A go-between software system used by Kamelion to talk with the TARDIS. When Chris reactivated it, the Mouth appeared as a pair of lips with an eye in a roundel and gave sloppy advice on the TARDIS systems. The Mouth based some of its personality on previous TARDIS occupants. From Ace, it learned manipulation. The Doctor turned the Mouth off with his priority deactivation code; Theta-Sigma-74384338.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: As myths are used to teach the next generation, and as Time Lords do not reproduce organically, they likely have no understanding of myths or fairy tales. Time Lords were likely genetically programmed to fight the Carnival Queen.

• *The Daleks*: All Daleks were grown from male tissue. It therefore begs the question of what happened to female Kaleds.

• *Gynoids*: The word comes from "gyno," meaning "woman." As creatures of irrationality, gynoids aren't built, they just are. They break down the essence of reality.

Alien Planets

• *Gallifrey*: Its moon is heliotrope-colored.

• *Alpha Centauri*: The 36-legged demon Trama-Tayn-Ku-Ku-Ro lies there in its ancient tomb.

• *Ponten IV*: The Adjudicators' training planet has an Initiation

Quadrangle, a great and sacred temple that's now a mess.

Stuff You Need

• *Amaranth*: Time Lord devices that rebuild affected parts of the Universe along rational lines. The first amaranths were built by Eye of Harmony engineers on Gallifrey to control the side-effects of black holes. In cases of dramatic instability, amaranths safely teleport users away to stable parts of the continuum.

• *Venusian Karate (the third Doctor era)*: In humanoids, the left arm does twice the work of the other extremities to compensate for missing limbs.

Organizations

The Shadow Directory hunts calliou, other-worldly elements of disruption.

History

• More than three-and-a-half billion years ago, the Time Lords, whom the Carnival Queen refers to as "the Watchmakers" due to their logical, precise nature, overthrew the forces of the Pythia and magic (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*) and allowed reason to reign. The Time Lords mapped every inch of the Universe like it was a piece of clockwork and in so doing changed some laws of reality, which were still mutable. For example, they proved that horses couldn't fly. So, presto! As a result, horses couldn't fly.

• On Minyos ("Underworld"), heliomancers were cast out of society.

• The Doctor has met Henry VIII, Cyrano de Bergerac, Madame Blavatsky, and Nostradamus and his wife.

• The United States fell in the 21st century.

• The fifth Doctor saw vid-archives on Riften-5 ("Attack of the Cybermen") about genetic tests on Dalek specimens after the "War of Sharpened Hearts."

• The Doctor worries that his Time Lord DNA may have infiltrated his companions' genetic structures on a surface level, but that their descendants may pump unholy amounts of Time Lord DNA into the human race. He cites Benny, Chris, Timothy Dean (*Human Nature*) and Jo Grant as likely suspects. Ancelyn ("Battlefield") may also have introduced his extra-dimensional abilities.

• In World War IV, people danced in the ashes of Reykjavik.

• The Carnival Queen invented chukka boots.

• The McCrimmon clan stood against the Sassenach hordes at Dolman Hill and the siege of Quebec.

At the End of the Day

Delicious, but a bit text-heavy and fragmented as hell. You can see the seeds of Miles' future genius being planted, although by itself, *Christmas on a Rational Planet* is discursive and quite flawed (the Doctor off-handedly gives Roz his frightfully powerful amaranth, which we never knew he had). Still, it's a sensuous book for people who like Salvador Dali paintings, with a nice fan following, extremely sweet if your brain has the patience and RAM to handle it.

Sidebar: Eighth Man Bound

"Eighth Man Bound" is a dangerous game played by neonates of the Time Lord Academy, students whose genetic codes haven't been stabilized by graduation rituals. "Eighth Man Bound" can easily kill, and isn't for those who come straight from the Loom with a secondary heart.

An "Initiate" instigates the "Eighth Man Bound" technique, surrounded by a circle of classmates labeled "the Inquiry." The Inquiry members give the Initiate an identity crisis, perhaps by chanting the Initiate's name until it becomes meaningless to him or her. Drugs may exacerbate the effect. In time, the identity crisis begins to trigger a regeneration, and the Initiate is held in a state of flux between his or her incarnations. So balanced, the Initiate may glimpse bits of his own biology and see his future regenerations.

There are some risks. The identity of the Initiate may be permanently lost. An actual regeneration might take place, causing disgrace. Up to 15 deaths are linked to "Eighth Man Bound" each macrosemester.

The actual term originated in the Arcalian Chapter, to honor a member who previewed his first seven bodies but couldn't unleash "the Eighth Man." A Prydonian student reportedly tied the record, but denied such an act as being "reckless and irresponsible." (I trust we know who we're talking about here.)

It is therefore suggested that the Doctor rehearsed his first regeneration, perhaps even shaped his second body. However, he didn't predict the irregular events of his second regeneration (in "The War Games"). The Doctor blatantly acknowledges himself as the Eighth Man Bound in Lawrence Miles' *Alien Bodies*.

Return of the Living Dad

Author: Kate Orman, from a plot by Orman and Paul Cornell. Virgin New Adventure #53. Release Date: August 1996. "Psi Powers Series."

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris, with Benny and Jason.

Travel Log

Sydney, 1996; the planet Youkali, 2587; aboard the *Tisiphone*, 2543; Little Caldwell and Albinex's space yacht, Dec. 10 to 11, 1983.

Summary

While studying for a real archaeology degree on Youkali Six, Benny decides to find out if her father, Isaac Summerfield, ran from a Dalek battle and was the coward that history claims. Benny summons the Doctor and travels via the TARDIS to Isaac's ship, the *Tisiphone*, during the infamous Dalek battle where it was lost. She briefly meets her father, who believes her to be a Dalek-projected hologram, mere moments before his ship is swallowed by a strange wormhole.

Benny and the TARDIS crew follow, but the TARDIS deviates and lands on 1983 Earth, 20 years after the four *Tisiphone* surviving crew members landed. Isaac Summerfield has now established himself in Little Caldwell, running an underground movement that protects Earth by helping stranded aliens get home. For years, Isaac has feared the ever-interfering Doctor would arrive and shut the operation down.

Alien Caxtarids, members of Isaac's organization, drug the Doctor and make him reveal that during his time with UNIT, he learned destructor codes that could trigger a number of nuclear warheads. Albinex, the Caxtarids' employer and one of Isaac's longtime alien allies, forms an allegiance with a Youkali "ghost" – actually a student dephased by an alien device. Albinex promises to restore the ghost to normal if she can secure the missile codes from the Doctor. The ghost, able to intensify emotion, barrages the Doctor with suffering. The Time Lord resists, until the ghost reverses and magnifies the Doctor's memory of having tea. The Doctor, unable to stand the intense pleasure, gives Albinex the codes. Albinex, in turn, doesn't honor his

agreement and the ghost dissipates.

Albinex releases the Doctor, but the Time Lord guesses correctly that Isaac Summerfield is working with Albinex. Isaac plans to detonate, under ”controlled” conditions, a nuclear warhead on Earth to spur an arms race and create new weapons – armaments that will protect Earth during the upcoming Dalek invasion in the mid-22nd century. The revelation devastates Benny. The Doctor convinces Isaac that the web of time isn't that malleable and that Albinex is actually following his own agenda to gain power and lead his people, the Navarinos, to war. With evidence that Albinex is also a Dalek agent, the Doctor, Isaac and their allies capture Albinex and use his hi-jacked missile to destroy a Dalek monitoring satellite in orbit. The Doctor insists on returning Isaac's alien friends home, and Benny makes peace with her father for manipulating them all.

Memorable Moments

In a top dramatic moment, the Doctor confronts Jacqui, a former patient at the UNIT safe house in *The Left-Handed Hummingbird*. The Doctor's battle with Huitzilin resulted in a telepathic burst that killed Jacqui's unborn child. The Doctor, held by Jacqui at gunpoint and having listened to her sad story, asks, “Do you want to kill me?” Jacqui replies: “No, I wanted you to remember,” then she puts the gun down and leaves.

While giving the Doctor hypothermia treatment (*see Injuries*), Benny for once can't think of anything clever to say and tells him: “Please don't die.”

Benny rushes in and cries in the Doctor's arms over her father's betrayal. The Doctor wonders if she cried like this aboard the TARDIS because of his own schemes.

Sex and Spirits

Chris and Roz consider a romance, and view a possible future where they're married on a lush green world. Chris surfs and fights villains while Roz dances and writes laser-sharp political commentary. Sometimes, the Doctor visits them.

Roz knew Chris fancied her while he was her squire. End result: They smooch a lot, but agree to stay friends who fancy each other, as their “jobs” with the Doctor rule out long-term relationships.

Benny asks her father about his relationship with Ace: “Oh, hell. You didn't shag her, did you?” (Thankfully, the answer's no.) Benny half strips and gives a freezing Doctor hypothermia treatment. The experience, she

says, “Was about as erotic as hugging a gasping fish.” When the TARDIS visited Navarino, Benny felt the hangover for weeks to come.

Ass-Whuppings

Chris snaps the neck of a shapeshifter disguised as Ace. Albinex shoots a shapeshifting “Doctor.” A Kapteynian insists the Doctor killed six of his scouting party. In the battle on Bellatrix, the Daleks dropped dozens of primitive weapons and destroyed a dozen or so Furies. The *Tisiphone* blew up at least one Dalek ship. A Doctor-engineered rebellion on Lalande killed some people, while a virus later wiped out the whole population. The temporal distortion of Keith Summerfield-Kane is here, then gone. The ghost Alekto gives up the ghost.

The Doctor takes a shallow stab wound in the shoulder. The duplicate Ace scratches Roz’s face and sinks her teeth into Roz’s neck. Albinex knocks the Doctor’s head into a wall twice, pitches him into a freezing river. The Doctor suffers from hypothermia and assorted cuts.

Continuity

Graeme the Spatula is a remnant from an Auton invasion (“Spearhead from Space,” “Terror of the Autons”). The Doctor learned the world’s nuclear missile codes while stopping the scientific organization Think Tank in “Robot.” Seven years later, Adam Colby still has nightmares of the Fendahl incident (“Image of the Fendahl”). Admiral Summerfield’s group also aids Sliders (the TV show “Sliders”). In “Delta and the Bannermen,” the Doctor encountered a Navarino tour party. A Bannerman from that story has lived in a cardboard box in London for the last five years.

The telepath Alekto shows the Doctor what his next death will be like (“Doctor Who: Enemy Within”).

For her fourth novel in a row, Orman writes in pyramids, this time as The Pyramid, Admiral Summerfield’s coffee shop.

The Doctor and Ace were duplicated by shapeshifters while visiting Llanfer Ceiriog (*Cat’s Cradle: Witch Mark*); Albinex uses the two as his agents. The Doctor returns to the UNIT safe house where he was held captive in *The Left-Handed Hummingbird*, rescues his captive friends from ghosthunters and burns it. When Benny saw “Star Trek” (and thought it was a documentary), the episode was “Darmok” (also *Hummingbird*). Tony the Tzun’s a leftover from the Tzun incursion in *First Frontier*. The Doctor remembers being human but doesn’t understand it (*Human Nature*). An

older Joel Mintz reappears in *The Room With No Doors*.

The Doctor still carries scars inflicted in *The Left-Handed Hummingbird*, *Parasite* and *Set Piece*. Colonel Kramer, who saves the Lacaillans, is promoted to Brigadier-General and appears in *Vampire Science*.

H.O. MacBeth (*The Left-Handed Hummingbird*) wrote The Shoreditch Incident ("Remembrance of the Daleks"). He also penned *Look! Up in the Sky!* and had dinner with Admiral Summerfield in 1982.

Jaspar and Stewart are here the names of teddy bears the TARDIS crew won at the Sprung festival on Vashig. In *Vampire Science*, also by Orman, they're the names of bats in the TARDIS library ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor has an amazing pain threshold. The telepath Alekto therefore takes the pleasure of a cup of tea and multiplies it a million times. The Doctor cracks under the pleasure.

He claims: "I'm not married. Currently." He can mentally stun Navarinos. He makes excellent coffee. He volunteers in a hospice. He thinks his epitaph will read "Behind you!" although he'd prefer, "He really did the best he could."

He can slip post-hypnotic suggestions into telepaths probing his mind. He can wake people by rubbing a finger along their eyebrow. He cannot resist Caxtarid truth serum. He likes the Beatles, cats and dipping croissants in coffee. Internet groupies think the "Doctor" is a code name. He can erase selected memories only with the TARDIS. He can reconfigure Navarino transformation gateways into teleportation units. He can modify hologram projectors to mask biosignals. He wants to be a juggler when he grows up and run away to the circus.

• *The Doctor and Death*: It's said that Death was born when the gods were drinking. She takes the names of others because they gave hers away. There's also a story of a hermit who broke his name into 38 pieces and gave one each to other people so Death wouldn't find his. (Curiously, it's established in *SLEEPY* that the Doctor's name has 38 syllables. Also, depending on how you count, there are roughly 38 companions.)

• *Bernice Kane-Summerfield*: Benny's now 35 and studying at the Archaeological Institute to get a real Ph.D. She looks like her mother Claire. She associates the smell of her father's cologne with childhood. She feels

caught between Jason, her father and the Doctor.

When Benny fled the Academy, she survived in the wilderness for a year because she'd taken wilderness survival. Her dad taught her that bullies are cowards. She realizes you never stop being a companion of the Doctor. She was seven when her mother died.

• *Benny and Simon Kyle*: After Benny escaped from the Academy, she fell asleep between two of Simon Kyle's reconstituted Galapagos tortoises. The Academy didn't allow pets, but Kyle had built a shelter in the forest. Benny was 16, he was 18. He became her best friend and first lover. An Academy patrol caught them one day. Benny refused to testify against Kyle. He, in turn, betrayed her and released his journal of their activities for reduced discipline. Cadet Kyle is a Captain now. For months, Benny inwardly scripted what she would say to him.

• *Jason Summerfield-Kane*: He has a gold tooth.

• *Benny and Jason*: Have discussed naming their children Keith or Dorothy. They've been having trouble conceiving and Benny fears one of them was exposed to something and became sterile. Jason's been jealous of Benny's long-standing fascination with her father.

• *Keith Summerfield-Kane*: In an alternate timeline, Keith was Benny and Jason's 18-month-old son. The temporal anomaly didn't last and Keith faded away.

• *Roz Forrester*: Her parents were annoyed that she didn't want kids.

• *Chris Cwej*: Perhaps due to the Doctor's nanites or futuristic medicine, Chris has no appendix. He's never had chicken pox. He has no scar tissue more than a few years old. His teeth and nails are shaped differently from 20th century humans. He believes he'll be surrounded by strangers and helpless when he dies.

• *The Doctor and Chris*: Chris says he'll never leave the Doctor (who's baffled, given everything that's happened).

• *Admiral Isaac Douglas Summerfield*: During the Dalek battle at Bellatrix, Admiral Summerfield was trying to hit the Daleks from behind when his ship was pulled into Albinex's wormhole. His crew arrived on Earth in 1963 and he formed his alien assistance cell. Above all, Summerfield wants to protect Earth in the long-term. He declines to know about his lost wife Claire, because he'd want to save her and fail. Benny doesn't look anything like him. Isaac's always stone–cold sober. Like Benny, he keeps a journal. He's met Ace twice. Admiral Sarah Groenewegen was Summerfield's commanding officer. Like Benny, the

Academy taught an incapacitating nerve pinch.

• *The Doctor and Admiral Summerfield*: Summerfield has heard so many stories about the Doctor, the Doctor doesn't think he's welcome. They reconcile.

• *Alekto (a.k.a. Caroline Grey)*: A first-year archaeology student who found an ancient Osirian time-travel device on Youkali that shifted her forward in time one picosecond and made her ghostlike. Grey could see someone's future and past through touch, but she could only read the Doctor's current incarnation. The Navarino Albinex promised he would restore her, but he welched on the deal and she dissipated. The Doctor later neutralized the Osirian device.

• *Joel Mintz*: Albinex's abortive attempts to fix his time engines caused distortions that took young Joel Mintz back to 1983.

• *The TARDIS*: When foul weather strikes, the TARDIS provides waterproof coats and a couple of umbrellas. A room full of bananas keeps an Ogron happy.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS*: The Doctor can sense, even in his sleep, if the TARDIS has been stolen.

Alien Races

• *Navarinos ("Delta and the Bannermen")*: Navarino culture is based on frivolity and recreation. They're so harmless, the Time Lords let them have limited time travel so they can go on holidays, but heavily tax them for it. Navarino children help fix machines that run the planet while the adults party. Navarino literature, art, adventure stories and comic books are fashionable in their sector of space. Their archaic battle uniforms are white and green, with twin ceremonial swords strapped to the back.

• *Caxtarids*: Natives of Lalande 21185 in Ursa Major.

Alien Planets

Youkali Six has an atmosphere is full of exotic charged particles.

Organizations

Admiral Summerfield's Cell (Little Caldwell): Admiral Summerfield's underground cell has quietly cleaned up the aftermaths of the Doctor's adventures for 20 years now. The group includes Summerfield, the slightly telepathic Ms. Randrianasolo, Joel Mintz, Tony the Tzun, Graeme the Auton

Spatula and Albinex. Admiral Summerfield also formed a network of paranormalists, academics, astronomers, journalists and a local group of the *Professor X* appreciation society to assist. The Doctor took Summerfield's current charges home, but the underground remains in place.

Ships

• *Tisiphone*: Admiral Summerfield's ship and flagship of "the Dalekbusters." Like all Fury-class starships, it had massive engine and weapons systems, but a tiny crew of seven. Of those, Reeve and Lawrie died in battle, Beilby died on earth of the common cold and Langford disappeared. Hogan got married and lives in Upper Norwood. The remainder, Summerfield and the slightly telepathic Ms. Randrianasolo, formed Summerfield's escape cell.

• *Clotho*: Admiral Groenewegen's ship – the only vessel to survive the Dalek battle at Bellatrix. It was later decommissioned.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Nanites*: Won't stop his female companions from getting pregnant because the nanites don't notice the human genome. As such, the machines also can't protect against cancer or auto-immune disorders.

• *The Tzun Book of Names*: States that nobody may look at Death's face, bargain with her, make an image of her or speak her name.

• *Who's Who and What's That?*: A blurry, but recognizable photo of the TARDIS appeared in the fanzine.

History

• The Osirians and Sutekh ("Pyramids of Mars") fought at Youkali Six over 5,500 years ago. The planet was laid waste as a consequence.

• The Navarinos were once a military power but gave it up. Later, they were the only nation who survived a war on their planet because they couldn't be bothered to join the fighting.

• The Doctor visited Lalande 21185, eight Lalandan years before 1983. He stopped the ruling government from using a lethal virus against rebel forces by meddling with the internal politics. Many died in the rebellion. Two years later, the government triggered a viral cache and everything living was contaminated. The Doctor went back, but it was too late. In five years, the virus killed everything.

At the End of the Day

One of Orman's masterpieces – a memorable text and one of the series' most comprehensive books. When not exploring the Roz/Chris romance or Benny's reunion with her father, Orman deals with the Doctor's suffering on a multitude of levels, and even finds time to handle Benny and Jason's desire for children. You won't always know how the character plots in *Return of the Living Dad* fit together, but you'll know that they blow you away.

The Death of Art

Author: Simon Bucher-Jones. Virgin New Adventure #54. Release Date: September 1996. "Psi Powers Series."

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris, with a cameo by Dorothée.

Travel Log

Paris and the center of Mutter's Spiral, Nov. 19, 1897.

Chronology

After *Cold Fusion*.

Summary

When Ace detects a psychic disturbance in 19th century France, she sends a message pulse to the TARDIS that alerts the Doctor. He materializes the Ship in Paris, 1884, and finds the city gushing with psionic activity.

Different factions of the mysterious, psionic Brotherhood that created the AI known as SLEEPY (SLEEPY) vie for control. One is led by the evil Montague, who has enslaved many of the Brotherhood. The other faction is called "the Family," a group of relatives who want to live in peace with humanity, but whose telepathic abilities are birthing mutations.

All of Paris' psionics, though they don't know it, owe their power to the multi-dimensional Quoth, a quark-sized race that fled the destruction of their home system. The Quoth took shelter inside Earthlings, whose brains contain redundant material suitable for the Quoth mating process. As the Quoth reproduce, they stimulate their hosts' psionic lobes. Some telepaths, such as Montague, have in turn forced the Quoth to deliver more power, driving many of the Quoth insane, a condition the Quoth call "The Shadow" and the more permanent "The Blight."

The Doctor meets many Family members and agrees to lead them against the sadistic Montague. As the Family battles Montague's mutants, Family member Claudette shoots Montague dead. The Doctor understands the Quoth's influence is causing the psionic powers and forges a link, via the TARDIS, between Family member Emil and the Quoth. They communicate,

and the Doctor uses a special liquid to draw the Quoth away from the Brotherhood. Roz serves as a Quoth-host long enough for the Doctor to take them to a neutron star, which becomes the race's new home. The Brotherhood members are mentally devastated and may never recover, but the Family's children are now cured and developing normally.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor, to his horror, finds he has very few harmless and peaceful memories. The Doctor draws Roz's likeness with a scowl, tries to make it a grin, but it ruins the likeness and he gives up.

Sex and Spirits

Roz runs through a room where a couple are making love. She memorizes the position, figuring it could help keep her limber.

Roz has never had the least inclination to be a lesbian. A bound Chris is untied by slim female hands and feels, shall we say, the mainsail hoisting. Because he's pretending to be the Doctor and the Doctor doesn't do that, Chris thinks about wet fish and the Carnival Queen (*Return of the Living Dad*).

Dorothée remains shacked up with the clone Jason Kane (*Happy Endings*).

Roz tends bar while looking after psionic David Clayton. The two guzzle red wine and get hangovers. Chris' boss buys him a drink and the Shadow Directory gives him wine. The Doctor sips red wine, but says he only drinks on special celebrations.

Ass-Whuppings

The Quoth "War" claims 100,000 immortal Quoth and a team of Quoth surveyors. In Roz's dreams, Hexachromite-B kills criminal Silurians in Spaceport Five's Undercity and she blasts a naked humanoid with wings.

Some of the Brotherhood die when the Quoth leave them – more blood on the Doctor's hands. Roz hits her head to avoid getting her throat cut. Her noggin throbs from hosting the Quoth. Worse, Chris' right shoulder is impaled by a rib as a Shadow Directory member mutates. Family member Dominic turbo-charges the Doctor's blood, scorching him.

Continuity

The Morok Empire ("The Space Museum") was overthrown by Earth-funded insurgents. The period after Liz Shaw left (before "Terror of the Autons") was rather boring, and the Doctor helped Sergeant Benton whitewash the Nisson huts behind UNIT HQ. Chris ponders if the fifth Doctor's self-repression didn't lead to the sixth Doctor's boorish nature ("The Caves of Androzani"). The Rani once sent the Doctor a raucous invitation to her 94th birthday party ("The Mark of the Rani"). The Doctor thinks about adding a cathedral into the Cloisters, foreshadowing the TARDIS' look in the FOX TV movie.

At some point, the Doctor has re-met writer Rudyard Kipling (*Evolution*). The Doctor gave Dorothée his 500-year diary in *Set Piece*.

Successors of the Brotherhood created SLEEPY (SLEEPY). Agents of the Shadow Directory appeared in *Christmas on a Rational Planet*. The Carnival Queen (also *Christmas*) fits into science as a personification of a potential Kuhn paradigm shift.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor has too many telepathic defenses for the Quoth to easily penetrate, even if he was willing. He devises a five-line solution to Fermat's last theorem using only Boolean algebra. He knows rude words in ancient Betelgeusian and old Gallifreyan loomtender's rhymes. He wants to visit Cremorne Gardens, Chelsea, 1863.

The Doctor's room in the TARDIS is barely the size of a broom closet. He glanced in it once.

The Doctor can spontaneously convey the TARDIS' gift of translation upon others. Most of his monographs have been forgotten. He put out a book on fly-fishing under a pen name that made lots of money. The Doctor's seen the Family's chalk markings before on the walls in Chislehurst Caves in Kent and the Megropolis Subterrania on Heiradi. He doesn't like the play "The Doll Maker" by Veber.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz cannot read French. Her racist grandmother spoke against the "gray-faced half-breeds" of the Imperial Court.

Roz's body is conditioned to a recoilless blast. Her mentor Konstantine and gave her three months of fraudster watch, to experience the tedium of medium-level Overcity work. She's seen "Young Frankenstein." She practices archery.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris spent his first month's stipend on better-than-natural night vision. The warranty has another five years. Chris carries a vibropick

he confiscated from an Undercity Delta-grade training exercise that became real.

A young Chris heard tales of Slippery Jim, a captured, expert thief who in turn catches other thieves. What Chris knows about cricket could be written on a tea-towel. Chris has some knowledge of plants from his father and mother's garden, especially delphiniums.

• *Roz and Chris*: Have TARDIS rooms that are mildewed. Roz's room is marginally the largest.

• *Bernice Summerfield*: Wrote a monograph about Altair IV.

• *The TARDIS*: The TARDIS can monitor phone transmissions, then tap a crew members' call to the console room. The Ship has an archery range. There's a room below the West Arboretum called the Dunkirk Suite, where the floor's covered with the dried mud of old army boots and tank tracks. The TARDIS can successfully land on a neutron star. The inner door functions as an air lock.

• *Ace and the TARDIS*: Ace can send a message pulse that rearranges the TARDIS interior to holographically depict where she wants the Doctor to go.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Not even Gallifreyans can turn the past back on itself. Like humans, their lives are linear, just in more dimensions.

• *The Quoth (nature of)*: The Quoth exist in multiform dimensions, and live about 18,000 times faster than a human being. They're essentially strings of quarks that are smeared down to micro-dimensions. They're also immortal, barring deliberate attack.

• *The Quoth (abilities)*: The Quoth have absolutely total recall concerning an object's structure and can restructure matter. Yet, human brains are difficult to fix. They can grow organs to give themselves different abilities, such as advanced communication.

• *The Quoth (reproduction)*: A Quoth can reproduce by itself, but couplings of 20 or more happen in the vaster dimensions. Quoth gather suitable raw material for the birth and decide which characteristics the newborn will have from which parents. Parents ask various questions of newborns to test for intelligence. If the young Quoth cannot answer, they're deemed imperfect and ostracized from the Quoth race.

Alien Planets

• *Quoth homeworld I*: Composed of three neutron stars that collided and became a time engine – a cylinder of neutronium a light-day long – which distorted time with its gravity. The Quoth evolved there by developing patterns that could control the time-flux. It was destroyed in some random cosmic event. The Doctor was possibly involved.

• *Quoth homeworld II*: A neutron star near the center of Mutter's Spiral.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's 500-Year Diary*: A Shadow Directory agent took it from Ace's house. The Diary's visible text, which seemed to be in principles of geometry, baffled notable cryptographers and archeologist Lionel Barton, who he mentioned some resemblance to carvings in Ecuador. One psychometrist died trying to trace the book's timeline and view its past. The Diary contains Rudyard Kipling's recipe for fondant fancies.

• *The Doctor's box*: Contains green liquid that attracted the Quoth like flies to a dung heap. The top disappears if you run your finger along the edge.

• *The Doll's House*: A psychic amplifier, modeled after Ilbridge House, one of the most haunted houses in England. The doll's house duplicated the relationship between the psionic nodes in the human brain. Montague stole it from the Shadow Directory and enslaved his followers with it, but the Family recovered the house. It could generate ectoplasmic manikins that killed.

• *Nitro-13*: Has been developed.

Organizations

• *The Brotherhood*: Group enslaved by Montague that kept its headquarters under Paris' Red Hill, where plague victims were buried. The Brotherhood had advanced psionic powers, including psychokinesis. Jean Mayeur (a.k.a. Major Henri and Brother Tomas) served as the Brotherhood's Grandmaster and could spontaneously generate matter.

• *The Family*: A Brotherhood splinter group, dynamically opposed to Montague's tyranny and seeking to live in peace with ordinary humans. Many family members have advanced abilities, such as psychokinesis, consciousness transfer and energy manipulation. The Family struggled to have normal births, but some children never grew once they were born. After the Quoth departed, the Family retained some residual abilities.

• *The Shadow Directory*: Nefarious organization that documents strange occurrences in Black Files (a pre-cursor to "The X-Files"). By 1892, Ace was on their Red List. The Directory relocated to London during the Bourbon restoration, and stockpiled alien technology and weaponry. The Directory could create psi-free zones and had advanced healing techniques.

Phenomena

• *The Universe*: When the Universe began, there were 10 physical dimensions, all at right angles to each other. All but the four we're familiar with collapsed into the world of the atom.

• *Telepathy*: With enough skill, you can lie to telepaths. Telepathy causes many bio-chemical effects, and isn't part of normal evolution. Reproduction isn't likely to occur when you know what's in your mate's head.

• *Teleportation*: Certain psi-sensitives can teleport if the brain encodes the body into a stream of quantum events. Such telepaths contain a single, hypertrophied organ that acts like a superlocator, re-routing various organs and reading Earth's magnetic fields. The process leaves them open to optic stimulation, meaning that if you blink light at a telepath in a certain pattern, the teleportation organ shuts down.

• *The Vantala Psycho Scale*: An exponential scale that measures psionic energy. Late 19th century Paris rated a 6.2.

Time Travel

A disruption of time could cause a superheating effect that could generate great heat, utterly vaporizing Paris.

History

• The First Quoth Blight was 25,000 billion pattern-lifetimes ago, when a group of Quoth became obsessed with making perfect children. A fraction of the race was torn away into a vehicle named the Node (not the Node from *Burning Heart*), which drifted for an unknown age and arrived on Earth, sensing breeding material.

• On December 18, 1845, Montague accused Charles Dickens of maligning him as the child-hating toymaker Tackleton in "The Cricket on the Hearth." While searching for Montague to talk, Dickens encountered Montague's killer dolls. After that, Dickens' books had a decidedly bleaker tone.

At the End of the Day

Let us not beat around the bush. *The Death of Art* is a long and convoluted nightmare. There's two plot tracks, one about the Brotherhood/Family feud, one about the Quoth, and you just don't see – or care – how they interconnect until the very end. We're never sure exactly why Montague is the villain, and just when you think you've got a grip on the story in the middle – Whoops! – chaos cometh again.

Damaged Goods

Author: Russell T Davies. Virgin New Adventures #55. Release Date: October 1996. "Psi Powers Series."

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

July 23, 1987, under the central neon array in Times Square; Memorial Statue, London, July 28, 1987; Columbia, 1983.

Summary

In London, 1987, the Doctor finally acts on future reports from his informants that contaminated cocaine is killing people, and he investigates the Quadrant, a council block rife with drug action. The Doctor's visit comes as a mysterious signal from the future activates an N-form, an extra-dimensional weapon left over from the Vampire War on Gallifrey, which physically manifests through the dead body of a drug dealer named the Capper.

The disorientated and damaged N-form looks for signs of vampire infestation on Earth and finds two of them. One comes from young twin brothers, Gabriel Tyler and Steven Jericho, the latter sold by his destitute mother Eva Tyler to another family. Gabriel, a psionic, is subconsciously draining energy from Steven in a very vampiric fashion. Simultaneously, the N-form detects a vampiric relationship in Eva, as exposure to Gabriel's telepathic field has spurred growth of her lithopaedian, a miscarriage that's settled harmlessly in her pelvis. The N-form, now convinced there are vampires on Earth, seeks to purge the entire planet.

The Capper sells the contaminated coke, tainted with more N-form molecules, at a ridiculously low rate. Everyone who uses the drugs develops engram scars, tiny dimensional brain tears through which the N-form can manifest itself. When Steven Jericho dies from his brother's energy drain, Eva's lifetime of grief telepathically cries out and draws the N-form, who casts off the Capper's body and merges with her. Distraught, Eva opens the engrams and 11,000 drug users die as the N-form erupts from

their bodies and goes on a killing spree. Chris finally supplies the Doctor with a dose of contaminated cocaine and the Time Lord ingests it, with his Old Gallifreyan command codes, to battle Eva's will. As the massacre continues, the Doctor turns the N-form's power on Eva's lithopaedian, making it grow. Eva and her "newborn" die as it bursts from her body. With her control gone, the Doctor forces the N-form, denied a host, to vanish from our dimension.

With the sudden severing of the link to his brother, Gabriel Tyler is left in a coma. The TARDIS crew leaves to backtrack the signal that awakened the N-form to Roz and Chris' era.

Memorable Moments

Roz imagines herself as an old woman, one of the Doctor's informants, carving words into the bark of a certain tree so he'll find it. A young homosexual named David gets so worked up and can't speak around Chris, Chris wonders if the TARDIS translation device is working. In a top gory moment, the N-form systematically, with hundreds of little digits, works apart chunks of flesh from a drug-dealing thug and reconstitutes the bits in itself.

Sex and Spirits

Chris wears his earring in his right ear, unaware of its significance. Homosexual David Daniels concludes Chris isn't gay, but convinces him to try the lifestyle, so they have an encounter. They part with a hug.

George Reed (*Just War*) could still be alive, but Roz has no interest in seeing him. Chris gets drunk on melon wine and has his ear pierced.

Ass-Whuppings

To stop the N-form, the Doctor prompts Eva Jericho's lithopaedian to grow, killing her. Eleven thousand drug-users die when the N-form engram activates and slaughters those around them.

The Doctor endures broken ribs. A wire whiplashes and bites through Roz's forearm. The Doctor writhes from a mental assault. Eva Jericho knocks Roz out with a gutted TV set.

Continuity

The Patrexes first appeared in "The Deadly Assassin." N-forms were

designed for Gallifrey's war against the Great Vampires, as established in "State of Decay." Earth's Haemovores ("The Curse of Fenric") went extinct, their evolution feeding on itself.

The Doctor incorrectly believes that the psionic Brotherhood is not a benign organization. An N-form destroyed the Quoth homeworld (*The Death of Art*). The TARDIS crew locates the N-form activation signal in So Vile a Sin.

A causal loop has been taking the TARDIS to areas of psi activity, but the Doctor believes the loop is now broken. The loop may have started with his curiosity over Rick McIlveen (*Warchild*) or Yemaya 4 (*SLEEPY*) or possibly his guilt over Professor Clegg's death ("Planet of the Spiders").

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor is crestfallen that nobody says "wicked" in 1987 anymore. He likes the Odeon restaurant, which makes fusilli with Swiss chard and sweet sausage. He can smell cocaine on bystanders. Various informants through space and time leave hidden messages for him. Mrs. David, one of his informants, wove ideograms into a carpet for him.

He can hide sandwiches behind his hat for future use. He knows Patrexes numbers and can transmit them through an LED counter, made from components of the TARDIS' central console. He can telepathically manipulate engrams with an Old Gallifreyan chant. His eyes are black. Broken ribs don't slow him down much. He can heal a limited amount of brain damage by placing his hands on the injured party's skull. He can forge a device that cements dimensional walls and hampers an N-form's teleportation. He can swear in plain Anglo-Saxon.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz smokes because manufactured metagenics in her 30th century bloodstream render the tar and nicotine harmless. Her family has a kraal on Io's Kibero Patera.

• *The Doctor and Roz*: They consider Chris as "mostly harmless." Because of Roz's logical brain, the Doctor tells her more than he does Chris or Benny.

• *Harry Sullivan*: In 2015, Harry is still alive and a former Chief of Staff for M15.

• *David Daniels*: Two decades after his encounter with Chris, Daniels somehow contracts HIV1.

• *The TARDIS*: With the TARDIS, the Doctor can excite the fabric of the Time Vortex and incinerate pocket dimensions.

Alien Races

• *N-forms*: N-forms exist in a pocket dimension and are anchored to our Universe by carrier molecules that create engrams – scars with more than three dimensions. When activated, an N-form can immediately burst half a ton of metal through these engrams and emerge into our world. An N-form's shape is presumably based on the environment it emerges into. Some N-forms have deadly tendrils and primitive scissor hands. They exterminate all members of any race infected by vampires. N-forms are programmed not to harm anyone with Gallifreyan genotypes, not even Gallifreyan vampires. They are impervious to most forms of harm.

• *Vampires*: Psi-powered vampires from the Vampire War used dimensional doorways for travel. They came from another universe, and the shape they took was perhaps influenced by nightmares from N-Space.

Places to Go

• *The Gallifreyan Capitol*: An artificial, multi-dimensional art gallery lies beneath the Capitol.

• *The Patrexes Academy Lodge*: Located on Gallifrey, it has an entrance gate of solid light, with a ball of gold suspended by harmonics alone, which is said to be the first gold ever formed.

Stuff You Need

Lithopaedians, for those of you who aren't biology majors, are fetuses created outside the womb that lodge in the pelvis, where they calcify, causing no harm. Unfortunately, psi-energy may divert blood and regenerate the dead tissue.

Organizations

• *Patrexes*: A Gallifreyan order of "artists, aesthetes, shallow Epicureans with pretentious minds." The Patrexes think there's something beautiful in the death of suns and view battlefields as canvases. That said, they lack the imagination to achieve high art. If the Patrexes were college kids, they'd be pot-smoking art or philosophy students.

• *The Psionic Brotherhood*: Dr. Greco of the Frei Institute, a member of the psionic Brotherhood in this era, experimented on Gabriel Taylor and Steven Jericho to understand their psionic talents.

Phenomena

• *The Glamour*: If you look at someone who has the Glamour, a low-level psionic talent, you'll see a bit of yourself in them and find them soothing. The world is full of such people, who get good jobs with no real intelligence. The Glamour even affects Time Lords.

• *Patrexes Numbers*: A numerical base placed in the heart of each piece of Patrexes artwork and Lodge gate, which is used to control the N-forms.

• *The Wasting ("State of Decay")*: A direct draining of psionic energy using a vampiric waveform.

• *Triobphysics*: An ancient art from the Time of Legend, it's the act of setting dimensional interfaces in motion, then slipping through the gap. The Osirians used this ability.

History

• During the Vampire War, the Prydonian and Arcalian Academies manned Rassilon's bowships. The Patrexes collaborated with Lord Rassilon to produce N-forms over the objection of the other Gallifreyan chapters. Entire worlds plagued with vampires died in seconds as the N-forms were unleashed. The N-forms were then left to decay, with only the Patrexes remembering they'd existed.

• The Doctor and Ace encountered an N-form beside the Rio Yarí in the province of Caquetá, 1983. Fifteen months later in 1985, the third Doctor and Jo encountered one on Tranquilandia, in a cocaine kitchen where they sheltered after an assault by Jaime Ramírez Gómez.

• Compulsory blood tests for HIV were instigated on January 1, 2014.

At the End of the Day

Sometimes forgotten in Virgin New Adventures tidal wave, *Damaged Goods* is worth remembering – a gory, down-to-earth story that's one of the most mature "Whos" you'll ever read. Granted, parts of it are thick, dialogue-lean and sometimes gross, but the book's shocking realism makes up for all of this and more, creating a web of sadness with an unforgettable ending.

So Vile a Sin

Authors: Ben Aaronovitch and Kate Orman. Virgin New Adventure #56. Release Date: April 1997. "Psi Powers Series."

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor, Roz and Chris.

Travel Log

Fury, Aegisthus, Jan. 2, 2982. This novel runs through events in September, 2982, during which time the TARDIS relocates to Kibero Patera, Io.

Summary

The TARDIS crew returns to Roz and Chris' era, determined to locate the automatic distress signal that awakened the N-form they fought in 1987. They find it on a deserted TARDIS warship, abandoned on the uninhabited planet of Cassandra. Unwilling to leave such a powerful device for anyone to find, the Doctor hurriedly self-destructs the warship and Cassandra with it.

When the Earth Empress Gloriana, an old husk kept alive only by machines, hears of the Doctor's actions, her Imperial agents bring the Time Lord before her to perform a special task. Gloriana, recognizing the Doctor as an independent agent, asks him to end her suffering. He agrees, thus sparking a power play for the throne.

Duke Walid is crowned Emperor, but the Doctor learns he's a pawn of the psionic Brotherhood that created the Artificial Intelligence named SLEEPY. The Brotherhood, having partial control over the Sol Nexus – a Universal cache of psionic power – seeks to restructure reality and make humanity psionic.

Roz's sister Leabie reveals she's been building an army for years, foreseeing the need to reassert control on an unstable Empire. She prepares to move against Walid, even as the Doctor begs Roz not to get involved, stressing he can't protect her if she delves into history. Refusing to listen, Roz demands her sister give her a rank and Leabie makes her a colonel.

The Doctor and Chris journey to the Sol Nexus on the planetoid Mimas,

and confront the Grandmaster of the Brotherhood, a gestalt entity composed of more than 100 personalities, who lives in several bodies. The Nexus generates multiple timelines of the Doctor, but "our" Doctor secures the Nexus and disables it. The Grandmaster's bodies, swallowed by the Doctor's multiple timelines, are either banished to alternate realities or killed.

Leabie's revolution proceeds. On Mars, Roz's forces charge Walid's stronghold, but Roz is killed leading the final, successful assault.

Leabie is crowned Empress. Roz is buried in the Umtata Reclamation Zone. The Doctor suffers a heart attack at the funeral and becomes morose until Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart arrives and makes him accept Roz's death.

Memorable Moments

Fat Monster Eater engulfs an attacker of Thandiwe Forrester – Roz's niece – to the knees.

In a top dramatic moment, Roz calls the Doctor's bluff, saying he owes her because she knows he can't save everybody. At Roz's funeral, the Doctor has a (single) heart attack. He staggers, hears somebody calling for a Doctor and says he's here, he's on his way, just let him get his breath back.

Roz's final charge at Walid's stronghold is her finest moment in the novel line. Kadiatu tells the Doctor, "Wake up, you old bastard!" and dissects why he can't handle Roz's death (*see Character Development*).

Sex and Spirits

Roz drinks in the Yellow Oasis, a bar. She's uncorking a bottle of Dargolian Jus de Claymore '56 when Emil Zatopek attacks her. Roz and the Doctor later enjoy two large and strong drinks. Chris and Jason go drinking. Benny comforts herself with a drink after seeing the video of Roz's funeral.

Ass-Whuppings

Colonel Roslyn "Roz" Forrester. A third of her forces were killed in the final assault on Duke Walid's stronghold.

Roz's niece and nephew, 16-year-old Somezi and 14-year-old Mantsebo, respectively, die in an attack that kills a dozen Forresters. Roz takes out an N-form with one million tons of dwarf star alloy.

At the Empress' request, the Doctor smashes her life-support globe with a fire extinguisher and thus kills her. He is indirectly responsible for the

extermination of the Jithrai (*see History*). He also destroys the planet Cassandra.

Stress makes the Doctor have a heart attack at Roz's funeral. The Grandmaster telepathically assaults the Doctor. An N-form's blast staggers Roz. Emil Zatopek temporarily makes Roz's heart stop.

Continuity

Another Nexus on the planet of Iphigenia makes temporal images of the second and fourth Doctors visit Roz.

The Artificial Intelligence named FLORANCE appeared in SLEEPY. It runs off with the AI named DOCTOR in *Seeing I*. The Doctor's House was first seen in *Cat's Cradle: Warhead*. Chris thinks Roz swallowed a crook's plastic ident more for justice than anything else (*Original Sin*). A comet hits Purgatory, the Imperial Landsknechte headquarters (also *Original Sin*), killing tens of thousands.

Leabie Forrester was mentioned in *The Also People*. Roz still wears the engagement ring George Reed gave her. Chris and Benny find her intended wedding dress (*Just War*). The Brotherhood Grandmaster was formerly defeated in *The Death of Art*. The Doctor destroys the TARDIS warship that activated the N-form in *Damaged Goods*.

Mictlan, mentioned here as suffering an outbreak of Breckenridge's Scourge, is not the Celestis base from *Alien Bodies*. Kadiatu was last seen in *Happy Endings*. Most people from this era have a tailor-made viewing lens that matches their eye color, foreshadowing Orman and Blum's *Seeing I*.

Orestes is named as the homeworld of the Ogrons. ("Day of the Daleks," "Frontier in Space"). The planet is named Braah in *Mission: Impractical*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor's met himself "dozens of times." He knows some Retro-Objectivist philosophy (though Emil Zatopek knows more). The Doctor's proficient with blades, custard pies and the Bohemian teaspoon.

He euthanizes the Empress Gloriana for humanitarian reasons, and to prevent a possible civil war if she's assassinated by an allied agent. Every time the Doctor visits Gallifrey, he expects the Time Lords won't let him leave. The Doctor's body contains healing nanites. His eyes are blue.

A Doctor-created device attaches to a TV and hunts for a specific

information quarry. He sometimes wears bifocals. He can filter out some telepathic interference. He says he's qualified in everything but HTML markup and dentistry ("The Gunfighters").

The Doctor can work ancient Gallifreyan controls, perhaps an ability Time Lords share, or due to his inheritance from The Other (*see Lungbarrow*).

Through the Sol Nexus, the Doctor witnesses 2,003 possible timelines of himself. In particular, one version of the third Doctor – who knew he was an alternate version – stayed on Earth even after his exile was rescinded. On Earth's behalf, he surrendered the planet to the Martians in 2010. The Martians went off to fight other races, leaving Earth as a peaceful nature reserve. That incarnation of the Doctor lived another 1,000 years to become an old man in a adjustable plastic wheelchair. He lived at the Doctor's House in Kent with some Venusians.

• *Roz Forrester*: Roz was declared legally dead a year after she left Earth, either by the Doctor, Leabie or the corrupt Adjudicators. The same culprit almost destroyed her Centcomp records. Roz was an Adjudicator for 23 years.

Emperor Walid offered Roz the position of Pontifex Saecularis, head of the Adjudicators. She accepted, and intended to purge the Adjudicators of corruption. When Leabie's insurrection against Walid broke out, Leabie made Roz a colonel.

Roz was buried next to her nephew and niece in the Umtata Reclamation Zone on Sept. 1, 2982 – a bright and sunny day. Chris delivered the eulogy. Hundreds attended the funeral procession, including some Ogrons and Silurians. Roz's grave was sown over with seeds and became indistinguishable from the savanna. A year later, the Doctor and Chris attended a feast at the Forrester estate to celebrate the end of Roz's spirit walking the Earth.

Roz had a gun that fired wire-thin flechettes of depleted uranium, 60 rounds in less than a second. Her TARDIS room contained guns and frocks from various time periods. After killing her lover Martle (*Original Sin*), Roz pondered becoming an acolyte at the Temple of the Goddess.

• *The Doctor and Roz*: The Doctor clearly knew something of Roz's potential fate and asked her not to accept the Pontifex Saecularis position. He said her life had more possibilities than Chris. Roz demanded Leabie give her field duty because she didn't want the Doctor to think she'd support the war and let someone else die for her.

After Roz's funeral, the depressed Doctor slept a lot and reclined in a wheelchair, upset because Roz's death was her own decision and he had nobody to take revenge on.

• *Chris Cwej*: Before Roz's death, Chris accepted a job as Leabie Forrester's personal pilot. He remains a vastly untapped psionic. Chris can't cook too well. Chris carries a universal connector that hooks into electronic devices. He's never been to the Temple of the Goddess. One alternate timeline version of Chris survived when the Doctor died on Yemaya (*SLEEPY*) and became immensely telepathic, with SLEEPY in his temporal lobe. That Chris became Pontifex Saecularis of the Adjudicators and was in love with Roz, but the unknown Jack White killed her.

• *Roz and Chris*: As head of the Adjudicators, Roz pondered making Chris the Lord High Sheriff and giving his family a moon.

• *Bernice Summerfield-Kane and Jason Kane-Summerfield*: Now live in a rental academic house on Youkali (*Return of the Living Dad*).

• *The Doctor, Benny and Jason*: A distracted Doctor didn't invite Benny or Jason to Roz's funeral.

• *Lady Leabie Susan Inyathi Forrester*: Roz's sister is the 15th Baroness of Io.

• *Roz and Leabie*: Thanks to time travel, Roz is now younger than her "younger" sister Leabie. But thanks to stress, Roz still looks older. Roz is shorter than Leabie. She once tattled on Leabie for leaving an injured toy named Twolumps in the woods, crying Leabie's name.

• *Thandiwe Forrester*: Leabie's youngest child is a genetic clone of Roz, without Roz's memories. She's protected by robots Mr. Fact, Mr. Fiction and Fat Monster Eater.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart*: The Forrester family credits a Brigadier, likely Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart, as saying the 19 calls to action. One of the sayings goes, "Shoot the winged man with five quick bullets" (a corruption of the Brigadier's infamous "Five Rounds Rapid!").

• *Kadiatu Lethbridge-Stewart*: Can leap down 20 feet with no difficulty.

• *The Grandmaster of the Brotherhood*: A gestalt entity made of at least 100 personalities. It spread itself over at least 28 bodies and was virtually immortal.

• *FLORANCE*: About 60 percent of FLORANCE's hardware is scattered over a dozen planets, moons and space installations. The part of her that's autonomous does a lecture circuit that includes the Institute Fantastique on

Yemaya 4. A maser on the moon of Castari beams info to FLORANCE's receiving station orbiting Arcturus.

• *The Divine Empress Gloriana*: Once named Helen Kristiansen, the Empress Gloriana reigned for 150 years. She became a computer-enthralled individual, simultaneously watching hundreds of images from the Empire. She had the memories of every Earth President, either downloaded or created through records. She also reconstructed the Doctor's involvement on Earth from fragmented records.

• *TARDISes*: All are equipped with self-destruct devices ("Attack of the Cybermen").

• *TARDIS warships*: Comet-sized carriers that transported bowships during the Vampire War ("State of Decay"). The Real World Interface in the warships tended to be unstable. A warship's distress calls may activate N-forms.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: For the last 10 million years, Gallifreyan technology has been refined rather than totally reworked.

• *N-forms*: Are psionically aware of what befalls their fellow N-forms. They cannot teleport amidst heavy subspace interference.

• *Qink*: A non-humanoid, asymmetric with five arms and a stumpy round brain case that can be pulled into their chests. All Qink sell guns as part of their culture, but they blatantly deny it.

Alien Planets

• *Agamemnon system*: Contains the sun, Agamemnon, plus Clytemnestra, a gas giant, and the moons of Aegisthus and Orestes, the Ogron homeworld.

• *Iphigenia*: Has 0.09 gravity. A quarter of this moon is jammed with Time Lord hidden technology – defense against the Great Vampires. The planet is the locus point of a ley line.

• *Io*: Sulfur-laden snow on Io is yellow.

Places to Go

• *The Doctor's House (Adisham, Kent)*: By 2982, the Allen Road house is abandoned and the front door has plunged through the rotting wooden floor.

• *Kibero Patera*: The Forrester estate on Io, built by the fifth Baron in 2870. The servants outnumber the family 15 to one and there are six dining areas, plus swimming pools, gymnasiums, cinemas, gardens, a zoo and an art gallery. The central palace is 400 stories tall and connects with the rest of the complex via "The Needle." The landscape simulates six Earth environments and six alien ones. Terran animals are created from a hidden gene bank.

• *Temple of the Goddess*: Located at Odysseus Crater on Tethys.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Shutterfly*: A JayJaxian device used to interrogate telepaths. The Doctor took it from two JayJaxians trying to extract a psi embryo from him. It's shaped like a robotic moth, flies on electric wings and extends a tube-tongue into victim's brain. With the Shutterfly, the Doctor can telepathically enter a subject's mind.

• *SARTRE, FLENSE and DALEK*: Are computer languages.

Organizations

• *Adjudicators, Imperial Landsknechte and Imperial Bureaucracy*: You must foreswear your family title before joining these orders, to help insure loyalty.

• *Adjudicators*: The Order of Adjudication assured the Imperial Court for years that the Brotherhood didn't exist. Acting Pontifex Saecularis Malinowski served as Roz's second-in-command and took over the Order after her death.

• *The Brotherhood*: In 1987, the emergence of an N-form that was hostile to psionics (*Damaged Goods*) accelerated the Brotherhood's plans to make humanity into psionics. Emil Zatopek, Duke Geoffrey Howard Armand of Europe and Duke Walid were Brotherhood agents. The Brotherhood recognizes the Doctor as Time's Champion.

Time Travel

The restoration of the Yemayan colony (*SLEEPY*) has rippled down Roz's personal timeline – Yemayan Strikes are now her favorite brand of cigarettes. Some alternate timeline-generated characters, such as the alternate Doctor possessed by Emil Zatopek, may suffer hyper-accelerated aging.

Ships

• *Triangulum Swift 400 series*: Class of Kadiatu's ship, made in the 21st century.

• *The Zero Discipline*: Leabie Forrester's personal shuttle.

Phenomena

• *Ley lines*: Universal lines of psionic power. One existed on Iphigenia, another passed through Earth's solar system. Ley line nexus points are lodestones of universal ley lines, capable of restructuring reality with the proper manipulation.

• *Psionics*: Though close to science, psi abilities don't obey normal laws of physics. Psionic traces can remain after 10 million years. *Orchestra strike*, *warding* and *backoff* are types of telepathic attacks.

History

• The Time Lords were the first sentient beings to evolve in this Universe. After the laws of physics were established over the laws of "magic," psionics, grounded somewhat in science, became the last magic to survive. The residue of psionic power became a network of ley lines stretching across the universe in various directions. The Time Lords used these ley lines as early warning systems or weapons against "irrational" citizens of the Universe.

• Gallifreyans visited Iphigenia about 10 million years ago, and filled a quarter of Mimas, a moon of Saturn, with Gallifreyan technology. In fact, the Time Lords may have constructed the entire moon.

• The Doctor was present when Vasco da Gama sailed into the harbor in 1499.

• The artist formerly known as Prince founded a religion. Fellow rocker Sting went into politics but was assassinated in the early 21st century.

• The Doctor once stirred up the alien Jithrai to resist the attacking Jeopards. But when humans arrived in 2972, the newly independent Jithrai were butchered to the last. The Jeopards surrendered and were spared.

• The Three Days' War that put Leabie Forrester on the Imperial Throne was preceded by a series of riots, small wars and civil unrest. The Antarctic Alliance fired upon the Horne Collective. The actual war was remembered for the battle of Achebe Gorge on Mars, where there hadn't been fighting for centuries.

At the End of the Day

For sheer dramatic intent, this is what "Who" is all about. You'll likely shed a tear before it's done. Like many Orman works, *So Vile a Sin* wants to be a bunch of set pieces, but all of them are engaging as hell. (You can even hear Kate and Ben's narrations trading off.) The only downside is that you'd better have paid attention during the "Psi Powers" novels or a lot of it escapes you. It's a story that makes Roz one of the most determined and self-actualized companions *ever*, and one that throat-punches you with her personal cost from page one. A novel you cannot miss.

Bad Therapy

Author: Matthew Jones. Virgin New Adventure #57. Release Date: December 1996.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Chris.

Travel Log

Soho, late summer and October, 1958; London, late 20th century.

Chronology

A month has passed since Roz's death in *So Vile a Sin*.

Summary

As Chris and the Doctor try to recuperate from Roz's death, they dine and enjoy the sights of Soho. But when the Doctor returns to the TARDIS, he finds a battered young man named Jack Bartlett dying outside the time Ship. The Doctor rushes Jack to a hospital, but he's too late and the boy dies.

Jack is one of a string of murder victims, all of them without a past. Suspicious of something sinister, the Doctor investigates and finds a black cab roaming London kidnapping people. Suddenly, the gelatinous cab absorbs the Doctor and takes him to the Petruska Psychiatric Research Institute, headed by Dr. Moriah. There, the Doctor discovers the people snatched by the cab serve as raw genetic material and are turned into "Toys," empathic, simulated humanoids. Designed as therapy devices, Toys sense their patient's desires and become the person the patient needs most. Jack and his fellow murder victims are Toys that have rebelled against control and are trying to make a life for themselves.

Chris fancies a pop star widow named Patsy, actually a Toy, and she subconsciously projects Roz's characteristics on her. Meanwhile, the Doctor's ex-companion Peri tires of her life as Yrcanos' wife and researches an old tale of the late Petruska, the Kr'on Tep's first queen. While doing so, Peri finds a gateway back to Earth and helps the Doctor confront Moriah, Petruska's husband and first of the Kr'on Tep warlords. Moriah originally created the Toys solely to restore Petruska's psyche.

Because the Toys cannot be restored to human and will die without a "patient" to bond with, the Doctor organizes a party to introduce them to Londoners. Chris and Peri argue that it's wrong to deceive people and the Doctor reluctantly agrees. Fortunately, the Toys achieve a greater level of independence.

Moriah's renegade black cab tries to capture the Patsy Toy, but in the subsequent chase, the cab crashes, wrecking itself and Patsy. Moriah comes unhinged and threatens retribution against all of London. The Doctor uses Peri's memories of Petruska to create a Petruska-like Toy, gambling that Moriah subconsciously believes himself unworthy of his dead wife's love. The guess proves accurate, and a pack of Petruska Toys overwhelms and kills Moriah, galvanized by his feelings of unworthiness. The Doctor reconciles with Peri for his abandoning her on Kr'on Tep, and returns her to her own time on Earth.

Memorable Moments

When Peri re-meets the Doctor, she slaps him so hard he falls down – a moment that's long overdue. The Doctor imagines Roz's face, the person he needs to see most, appear on the Toys. Chris and Peri both badger the Doctor about not throwing the Toy party – there's a palpable moment when they leave the Doctor standing alone.

Sex and Spirits

Chris clearly still longs for Roz, as he projects her characteristics on the Toy Patsy Monette. Bits of Chris' affection for Ishtar (*Happy Endings*), old girlfriends and even Bernice end up in the mix. Chris at first feels awkward about sex, thinking it's too soon after Roz's death, but does the deed with Patsy. He ultimately discovers Patsy isn't human and rejects her, unwilling to keep up the ruse.

The empathic Tilda notes that Chris favors girls, especially blondes. He misses pick-up signals from men, but is somewhat interested in them.

The Doctor gives the homosexual Jack CPR, has to explain that it was *just* CPR. Also, the Doctor, in a self-induced coma, wakes up naked in a morgue.

The Doctor stares at scotch as if it were lethal. Patsy treats Chris' wound with whisky – he also drinks it.

Ass-Whuppings

Peri finds Queen Petruska's remains. Many Toys died from loneliness or when the Petruska Institute. Events in *Bad Therapy* sparked the bloody Notting Hill riots.

The Doctor is showered by bricks and cement. Chris takes a bullet in the shoulder.

Continuity

Peri was separated from the sixth Doctor in "Mindwarp." She waited for the Doctor on Thoros Beta for a month. She thought he'd return right up to her wedding, which was reported in "The Ultimate Foe." The Doctor thought Peri was in love as a warrior queen and didn't look for her. He returns her old passport from "Planet of Fire."

After events in *SLEEPY*, Chris is frightened of telepathy.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor's Doctorate is his own invention. He has medical qualifications, but not on Earth. The literal translation of the Doctor's real name keeps changing. Last time he checked, it had 38 syllables. The Doctor can identify blood types by taste. He's fond of science fiction. He knows martial arts, especially the Venusian hip throw. He can exert tremendous centrifugal force, enough to spin a whole car. The Doctor can construct three-dimensional image projectors. He pick locks with a hair pin.

• *The Doctor and Roz*: Roz often thought the Doctor's ideals were just words.

• *The Doctor and Chris*: Since Roz's death, the Doctor and Chris don't know how to relate. They reconcile as best they can and keep travelling.

• *Perpugilliam Brown*: Peri was 18 when she met the Doctor. She spent 25 years with Yrcanos, so she's at least 43.

As Queen of the Kr'on Tep and its Seven Systems, Peri is very involved in Kr'on Tep politics. She's personally the Governor of seven worlds and the director of several health and education initiatives.

Peri wears a null-gravity belt. She can pilot shuttles and has blonde hair.

• *The Doctor and Peri*: Peri resents the Doctor for leaving her behind on Kr'on Tep. She wavers on trusting him again, but consents to let him telepathically scan her mind. By story's end, she's forgiven him. The Doctor returns her to Earth and gives her travelers' checks and American currency.

• *King Yrcanos*: Now 25 years older, with gray in his beard, Yrcanos believes it's important to know the truth about one's past. He's directly descended from the first born of Moriah and Petruska.

• *The TARDIS*: Chris found the TARDIS wardrobe has a room of wicker baskets filled with clothes. On another occasion, it was a small gentleman's tailor's shop, complete with an elderly shop assistant. Chris now finds the wardrobe closed for refurbishing, although the TARDIS prepares a suit in his size.

On the Ships' outer shell, there's only a cord where the police phone should be.

• *The TARDIS and the Doctor*: The Doctor, bereft of his TARDIS key, sends out a telepathic distress call to the Ship and it opens the door for him. The Doctor worries what dreams the TARDIS might project on the Toys.

Alien Races

The Toys: Some Toys can achieve true independence and real emotions. Independent Toys, or those with patients, assume human features. Normal Toys have blank faces and no fingernails.

One independent Toy named Tilda spread her fellow Toys throughout London to protect them.

Places to Go

• *Palace of the First Queen of Kr'on Tep*: Petruska's palace, now very much in decay.

• *The K'tum Pi desert*: A location on Kr'on Tep inhabited by the Ker'ana Ton Warriors, great writers of love poetry for soldiers.

Stuff You Need

Moriah's Black Cab was made from a metamorphic material. It collected humans for Moriah, but couldn't survive a terrible fall and returned to a sludge-like state.

Organizations

Adjudicator teachers recommend against an armed opponent the technique of a Diving, Rolling Breakfall with Kick as a last resort – because it doesn't work.

Ships

The Jeweled Sword is King Yrcanos' royal barge.

History

• Several thousand years ago, Moriah arrived from the depths of space, conquered Kr'on Tep and made it a powerful civilization. His bride Petruska, a woman scientist unwilling to endure a constricting life with Moriah, killed herself.

• Moriah fled Kr'on Tep, never to return. He sought to create Toys to bring Petruska's psyche back to life, and searched the Galaxy for suitable material. Upon learning of Yrcanos' Earthling wife Peri, Moriah set his gateway for Earth and found the required genetic stock to make Toys.

• Carl Scraton, on Moriah's orders, tried to kill a rogue Toy who'd become Dennis, a young boy on Notting Hill. Carl Scraton's public murder attempt on Dennis was taken as a racial attack and violence erupted into full-fledged riots, a crucial moment for black politics in Britain.

At the End of the Day

One of the more seductive novels, *Bad Therapy* starts out ho-hum but develops into something greater. It pushes the simple premise of walking into a room and meeting the person you need most – rather like "Star Trek: The Next Generation" episode "Perfect Mate." The dilemma of the Toys – bond or die – ultimately carries the day. And when the Doctor realizes he can't save the Toys' lives through deception, the book hits overdrive. Add in Chris' lingering desire for Roz and Peri's overdue confrontation with the Doctor, and Bad Therapy becomes needed counseling.

Eternity Weeps

Author: Jim Mortimore. Virgin New Adventure #58. Release Date: January 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Chris, with Benny and Jason.

Travel Log

Tranquility Moonbase and Turkey, April, 2003.

Summary

Benny and Jason's marriage, already on the rocks, totally flounders when he chats up a girl in the Eiffel Tower gift shop, so Benny joins an expedition to find Noah's Ark on Mahser Dagi. Jason follows, as Iraqi and Iranian soldiers compete for what they believe are uranium deposits in the area. But when the soldiers massacre the expedition members, Benny summons the Doctor to save them.

The "uranium" is actually part of an alien transmat system, built by the long-dead Cthalctose. Benny and an Iranian named Tammuz use the Cthalctose transmat to escape Iraqi bombs, and find themselves in a Moonbase. Liz Shaw, an ex-companion of the Doctor, is already there with a UNIT team, investigating a Cthalctose Ark on the Moon that's ready to recreate the sulfuric Cthalctose homeworld on Earth.

Tammuz demands to be shown how the Cthalctose devices work and Liz tries to stop him. She's transported by Tammuz to Earth and infected with Agent Yellow, a Cthalctose terraforming virus designed to generate sulfuric acid. Jason and Chris find a pain-wracked Liz while searching for Benny. She gives them her only two doses of an anti-virus, and begs Chris to kill her. Chris can't bring himself to do it, and a NATO team secures the area.

Imorkal, a Silurian associate of Liz, reads the anti-virus formula in her mind just before she dies. Unfortunately, Agent Yellow runs totally amok and Imorkal also perishes. As a result, Earth only has 48 hours to live.

Out of life-saving tricks and out of time, Chris hacks into two American warheads and detonates them, crashing systems on the Cthalctose Ark and liberating the two pinhead black holes that power it. A burst of energy from

the black holes kills Tammuz as he tries to flee in a moon rover. The Doctor pilots the black holes with the TARDIS, using their X-Rays to sterilize areas of Earth infected by Agent Yellow. Millions are killed, but Agent Yellow is halted.

Chris finally realizes Imorkal planted the anti-virus formula in his mind. With it, the Doctor makes a vaccine against Agent Yellow. But the catastrophic adventure has proven too stressful for Jason and Benny's marriage, and they divorce on the Moon. Jason returns to Earth to rebuild areas devastated by Agent Yellow, while the TARDIS returns Benny to her own time.

Memorable Moments

In a top grisly moment, Benny skewers a soldier through the eye with her paintbrush, straight into his brain, killing him. In another top grisly scene, Chris punches an Agent Yellow-infected terrorist, bursting his head. The Doctor, snug in a helicopter, trains the ship's weapons on a soldier holding Bernice. A dying Liz begs Chris to shoot her, tearing your heartstrings out.

Sex and Spirits

The Summerfield combo is a two-minute French kiss, followed by a straight left to the jaw – Benny performs this on Jason. As his marriage languishes, Jason thinks sex with Benny is boring. He thinks expedition member Denton is "the horniest bit of stuff" he's laid eyes on since Paris. Benny tries to get drunk but fails. She says she's at her best when hung over.

Ass-Whuppings

The intrepid Liz Shaw. The Doctor kills off 600 million humans to save all of Earth. Agent Yellow obliterates Turkey and the Sahara. Also sterilized was a lot of Asia, parts of Africa and Europe and the entire Black Sea. South America between Rio de Janeiro and Buenos Aires was consumed. Siberia and North America were dotted with infection. Tibet survived nicely, as did Australia. Liz's associate, Imorkal, perished.

Jason kills a guard by hitting him with a thermos. There's also the aforementioned paintbrush stabbing by Benny. She once saw a trading boat capsize, drowning and crushing half the crew. Trigger-happy Jason shoots a sheep. He watches the entire Cthalctose race die. Liz lost more than 60 percent of her team.

On injuries, *Eternity Weeps* is a roller coaster of pain. A bullet grazes

Benny. Liz zaps Benny with a tazer. Benny is infected by Agent Yellow and reddens terribly before the Doctor cures her. Jason and Chris burn while moving an infected NATO officer. An explosion chokes them. Jason gets shot in arm, gassed and is half-starved by his 1,000-year stasis.

Liz Shaw suffers immeasurable agony before she dies. Blisters cover her melting skin, which reveals the bone on her left thigh.

Continuity

Benny remembers Liz's alternate self from *Blood Heat*. In a continuity goof, Chris says Jason was at Roz's funeral (*So Vile a Sin*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor can hypnotize people into reciting texts they've seen from memory. He can walk about in sulfur dioxide without a force field for a time. His UNIT ID is still authorized. He can pilot a helicopter.

• *Liz Shaw*: Liz works for UNIT again and serves as field leader. Dying as she was from Agent Yellow, Liz tossed accusatory grunts at Chris for not killing her.

• *Bernice Summerfield-Kane*: Somehow, Benny can summon the Doctor (perhaps through her time ring). She has half of Bruce Springsteen's albums and has seen "Die Hard." She loves works by Lewis Carroll. She never liked sheep, but thinks kangaroos are cute. She has a side-scanning geological radar device and portable spectroscope.

• *Jason Kane-Summerfield*: Jason treasured *The Magician's Nephew* by C.S. Lewis, and lost his copy in a mugging on Denaria VII. He identified with the character Digory, who longed for a girlfriend as tough and sensible as his friend Polly.

On Jason's role in Cthalctose history, *see History*.

• *Bernice and Jason*: A combination of elements wrecks their marriage. They've failed to conceive. Benny makes many demands, both realistic and unrealistic, of Jason to be a hero. He's upset and guilty for not living up to her expectations as a hero and a husband. In turn, he's got a wandering eye, and chats up a girl in an Eiffel Tower gift shop.

The Doctor gave them a ton of credit for a wedding present, including a double-platinum-rated AmEx card (Jason loses this attempting to bribe a guard). They were in South Africa during an Ebola outbreak.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris feels guilty for Roz's death and keeps calling others

by her name. With the Doctor's equipment, Chris can hack into NASA via their own satellite. He's fast with a computer. He can fly a helicopter.

• *Chris and Jason*: Though they're friends, Chris and Jason argue about a course of action, so Jason holds Chris at gunpoint and demands they go after Bernice.

• *The TARDIS*: The dimensional stabilizers can be altered to make the TARDIS rugby-goalpost sized. As the Doctor does this, Chris and Jason's chopper hurls through the doors, past the central console, through the even larger inner door at a height of 30 feet and crashes into the swimming pool. The Doctor deletes the pool to stop Agent Yellow from spreading. Yet, Agent Yellow can infect the TARDIS interior.

The Doctor can wink the exterior roof light in Morse code. The Ship keeps telepathic communication with Jason and Benny's time rings. It can maneuver pinhead black holes.

Alien Races

• *Silurians*: The telepathic Silurians can force memories from a human mind. Silurians can planet telepathic information in the minds of futuristic humans, such as 29th century-born Chris. They have extended – but not total – resistance to Agent Yellow.

• *Cthalctose*: Very civilized, even if they look like three-meter wide crystal-armored sea anemones. The extinct Cthalctose had a philosophical culture that heavily favored reason, mathematics, physics and chemistry. They performed astronomy by feeling tidal movement in the sulfuric acid seas. They were rather long-lived, as some cultural performances take 300 years, including the reception. They had time to waste, seeing as how half their lives were spent on reefs, the other half dodging predators.

The Cthalctose lacked eyes and could get quite large – the Astronomer Royal was 600 meters wide, with 300-meter long tentacles. He had about 20 mouths, which were more than 15 feet in diameter. Dead Cthalctose decomposed in their homeworld's acidic atmosphere.

Alien Planets

16 Alpha Leonis One, the homeworld of the Cthalctose has sulfuric acid seas.

Places to Go

• *Cthalctose "Drogue Stone"*: Part of the Cthalctose transmat system, this semi-intelligent substance is made of "sibling particles," pairs of particles linked at a molecular level by a quantum wormhole, used for matter transportation.

• *Tranquility Base*: Cthalctose-built structure, with a command unit similar to the TARDIS console, inspired as it was by the Doctor's force field technology. The personality matrix of the Cthalctose Astronomer Royal speaks to visitors.

Stuff You Need

• *Jason and Benny's Time Rings*: The two rings have a range of at least six billion years. If you ask them nicely, they'll take you where you want to go.

• *Agent Yellow*: A Cthalctose terraforming virus that produces carbon monoxide and liberates sulfur, which turns the oxygen in your system into sulfuric acid. Agent Yellow contains thousands of molecules, only a few of them familiar to humans.

• *Agent Scarlet*: The Doctor's counter-agent to Agent Yellow. By itself, Agent Scarlet was unable to purge Earth of Agent Yellow, as Agent Scarlet is killed by radiation.

• *The Doctor's Laptop*: Chris boasts the laptop, armed with hacker software, could hold the Earth's entire data store.

• *The Doctor's Force Field Generators*: The Doctor has 100 personal force fields on old wristwatch straps. The force fields neutralize each other on contact.

Time Travel

Free will may sometimes cause predestination. Jason uses his free will to try and alter Cthalctose history, but in so doing, gets predestined to cause the Agent Yellow disaster.

History

• Six billion years ago, the Cthalctose sensed the approach of a black hole that would destroy their world. They planed to build a terraforming platform to seed Cthalctose life elsewhere in the universe, but a time-traveling Jason Kane begged them to reconsider as such an act would destroy his world. Jason gave the Cthalctose the Doctor's force field

technology, and urged them to use it to escape. The Cthalctose put Jason into stasis for 1,000 years while they studied his technology, which they used to build their terraforming Ark. It arrived in the Sol System, and remained dormant while orbiting the Moon for the last 200 million years. Jason had limited awareness and observed as the Cthalctose world changed and the race died. When the stasis finally wore off, the time rings returned him to Earth's moon, 2003.

• In 2003, rocker Bruce Springsteen is President of the United States.

At the End of the Day

Very tough to work your way into, but not deserving of its in-the-gutter reputation. That said, *Eternity Weeps* is tough to like, firstly because it's a near-Doctorless Benny New Adventure in disguise. Also, it's bloody as hell. There's hardly any time to rest and it's not much fun watching Benny and Jason argue, then divorce. As if that weren't enough, the death of Liz Shaw, one of the strongest TV characters, is one of the travesties of the book line because of its poor implementation – sandwiched in the book's middle and almost treated as a damn footnote.

The Room With No Doors

Author: Kate Orman. Virgin New Adventure #59. Release Date: February 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Chris.

Travel Log

Japan, March 1560.

Summary

In 16th century Japan, a mysterious new "god" trapped in a suspension capsule subconsciously heals people, even as rival samurais Umemi and Gufuu prepare to make war and secure its power. But when the roaming TARDIS detects a temporal flux in the area, the Doctor diverts his Ship to investigate.

The Doctor finds himself continually distracted, knowing his seventh body has worn out and regeneration is near. He worries that his other selves, frightened by the seventh Doctor and his atrocities, will mentally imprison him in a coffin-like Room With No Doors. Chris, already hurting from his recent failure to save Liz Shaw, abandons all self-confidence when he learns the Doctor's will "die" as well.

The Doctor and Chris encounter time travelers Penelope Gate and Joel Mintz, a member of Admiral Summerfield's underground, and stop Joel from trying to prove his manhood by interfering with Japanese history. Suddenly, the bird-like Kapteynian aliens arrive and battle with Umemi and Gufuu's forces for the suspension capsule. The Doctor, trying to save a small girl from the crossfire, is skewered by an arrow and apparently dies. A devastated Chris buries him, but the Doctor, merely in a healing trance, crawls out of his grave and overcomes his fear of Death.

Chris rallies some self-respect and discovers that the pod holds a psionic Kapteynian in cryogenic suspension. The Doctor releases the telekinetic alien and Gufuu, having overwhelmed Umemi's troops, relents now that his prize has escaped. With Chris acclimated to his failure to save Liz, the Doctor takes Joel and Penelope home, even as his thoughts turn to his past

and his family on Gallifrey.

Memorable Moments

The scene where an arrow kills a small girl the Doctor's carrying – and runs him through as well – vividly shows how the Doctor has suffered trying to help others. A devastated Chris breaks down and begs the Doctor not to die. Chris accidentally buries the Doctor alive, ironically saving his life from roaming samurai bands who are decapitating corpses. The Doctor crawls to the surface of his grave, symbolic of his confronting his own mortality and impending regeneration.

Sex and Spirits

Chris drinks himself into a hangover.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor once failed to defeat an unknown enemy named the jiki-ketsu-gaki and 18 died as a result.

Continuity

The Doctor compares his fourth and fifth regenerations to feeling good on a fast moving vehicle, until the sudden stop where you go through the windshield ("Logopolis," "The Caves of Androzani"). Ex-companion Tegan Jovanka told Joel Mintz that she misses the Doctor ("Resurrection of the Daleks").

The death of Liz Shaw and her cut off words to Chris, "You bastard, you could have killed me," still haunt him. We learn that at the end, the Silurian Imorkal mercy-killed her (*Eternity Weeps*).

The Doctor previously met Joel Mintz, when the Doctor unwillingly previewed his eighth incarnation. Also in 1996, Admiral Summerfield still runs his escape route and has met Liz Shaw (*Return of the Living Dad*).

The next Doctor likely won't be Time's Champion (*Love and War* and more). The Eternal Death, last seen in *Happy Endings*, is on-hand as the Doctor crawls out of his "grave." With his regeneration approaching, the Doctor wonders about his next-of-kin, leading to events in *Lungbarrow*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor's seventh regeneration draws near. He wants to decide how it happens, but looks forward to being free from his burdens. He also wants to be unconscious for the event. He finds regeneration somewhat terrifying, with the knowledge that he's going to die again and again. Away from Gallifrey's medical facilities, regeneration puts additional stress on the Doctor.

The Doctor's regenerations appear to be having less longevity. The Doctor is now at least 1,003, but was 953 in "Time and the Rani," meaning the seventh Doctor lived for only 50 years. Benny threw a surprise birthday party for him last year.

The seventh Doctor believes that after regeneration, his other selves may put him on trial and imprison him as he imprisoned the sixth Doctor. Much of this stems from the Doctor's personal belief that he deserves to be imprisoned. He begins this novel thinking the sixth Doctor still wants to tear him apart, then comes to realize that the sixth Doctor in some ways is not dead because he, the Doctor, is alive.

The Doctor's blue eyes can trace ultraviolet patterns. He writes on a typewriter. He shouts and screams in his sleep. He painted a copy of "The Death of Arthur," complete with a Dalek and a smiley badge pinned to Merlin.

The Doctor has visited this era before and has high regard for the Roshi, an old friend with a good tea room. The Doctor swears by Fugue and Toccata. He's a Royal Society member. He can check for telepathic ability by touch. He's an expert archer. He can escape from a restraining Prompter of Confessions device.

The Doctor meditates in the lotus position rather than sleeps. Emptying his pockets takes an hour.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris fears being left in charge and prefers a soldier's role. Needing strength, Chris prays to the Goddess. By story's end, he puts his angst, especially about Liz Shaw's death, behind him.

Chris has traveled on the TARDIS for at least two years. He's now 26. His birthday is September 5, and he's visited it five times in the last two years, as the Doctor lands there when Chris needs cheering up.

Chris' grandfather went senile and the family struggled to care for him. When granddad died, Chris' father insisted on a traditional funeral with an open casket. Chris' mother carried him out of the funeral home because he didn't want to see granddad shut in the casket forever. An older Chris realized granddad was subsequently vaporized. He hasn't seen his parents

in a year.

Chris is a crack shot and regards swords as clumsy. While playing baseball, Chris first realized he was going to die someday.

• *The Doctor and Chris*: The Doctor's concern over his impending regeneration telepathically manifests itself in Chris as dreams of the Room With No Doors. The Doctor's been teaching Chris Zen archery.

• *Penelope Gate*: A 27-year-old Victorian time traveler, red-haired and a bit plump, who landed in May 1996 and took Joel Mintz as a traveling companion. Penelope's son died, less than a year old.

• *Joel Andrew Mintz*: He hasn't seen Chris and the Doctor for 13 years. Joel is still skinny and bespectacled. He's met the eighth Doctor. The seventh Doctor was impressed with Joel's handling of the Gaffney Incident, though was less pleased about Joel's feeble attempts to improve life in Japan and alter time.

• *Psychokinetic*: Name for the Kapteynian telekinetic who escaped his Caxtarid oppressors, but crashed in Japan. Although his body was in cryogenic suspension, his mind was able to heal and perform god-like miracles as he attempted to communicate. He has senses in more than four dimensions.

• *The TARDIS*: You feel the TARDIS' background sound more than you can hear it. The Ship has a 20th century fridge containing a fossilized Archaeopteryx, a skateboard and a single glass bottle of milk.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Regeneration was designed to happen slowly and under proper medical care. It was never meant to be an emergency procedure.

• *Kapteynians*: An avian species, with beaks and black feathers. They're routinely enslaved by the Caxtarids and transported to the Caxtarid homeworld, which is the fourth planet of Lalande 21185. As such, it's illegal for Kapteynians to have psychic powers. Their home planet is Kapteyn 5.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Egg*: A fist-sized, Doctor-made object that detects minor fluctuations in the timestream. It can display its findings by color or by taste. The egg also serves as a power source.

• *Prompter of Confessions*: A Caxtarid restraining device that's a

variation on the "Manacle of Flesh." The Prompter partially inhibits the motor nerves so you can't escape, but can move poorly and scream. It then stimulates the brain's nerve centers, causing pain without any real harm.

Ships

Penelope Gate's time machine: A Tzun battery powers the engine.

Phenomena

Psychokinesis: Supercooling the body, such as through cryogenics, may augment this ability.

History

• Of the 60 species on Kapteyn 5, which are all crammed onto its four continents and two oceans, the Caxtarid eradicated four, struck bargains with eight and enslaved the rest. The enslavement was recorded in Historian's *Account of the Kapteynian Peoples*.

• Voltranons once invaded Earth using a field that neutralized internal combustion engines. The year 1998 was full of alien incursions, including a second attempt by the Ra'ashentani.

At the End of the Day

A fine, fleshy banquet as only Kate Orman can organize it. The plot, while finely-tempered, is almost incidental as a backdrop to the Doctor and Chris' emotional struggles. An arrow that's shot through the Doctor and a young girl he's carrying is one of the most vivid and symbolic images from the series. With the specter of the Doctor's regeneration hanging over every page, it's almost like we're bidding a farewell to fond friends, making *The Room With No Doors* a much-needed epilogue to the Virgin New Adventures.

Lungbarrow

Author: Marc Platt. Virgin New Adventure #60. Release Date: March 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The seventh Doctor and Chris, with Leela, Romana and Dorothée.

Travel Log

The House of Lungbarrow on Gallifrey.

Chronology

Immediately before the FOX TV movie "Doctor Who: Enemy Within."

Summary

The Doctor, having been thinking about his old House and Cousins, subconsciously influences Chris through the TARDIS' telepathic circuits. A tranced Chris sets the Ship's coordinates, and the TARDIS materializes in the House of Lungbarrow on Gallifrey. It is the Doctor's old home – and the place that the renegade Time Lord counts as the worst place in the Universe.

Eight hundred and seventy-three years ago, the Doctor argued with Quences, Lungbarrow's Kithriarch and head of household, about the Doctor's choice of occupation. The Doctor walked away from his Cousins and the Doctor's Family, thinking the Doctor had been officially ostracized, illegally wove a replacement for him in the form of Cousin Owis. Thus, as the Doctor left Gallifrey, the Family was found guilty of exceeding its allocation of Cousins. As is the punishment for such a crime, the House was excommunicated from the Gallifreyan Matrix and buried in the mountain where it resided.

For 873 years, the Doctor's 45 Cousins have been trapped within the House, waiting for the Doctor to return as he traveled the Universe. Now, the Doctor finds all but six of his Cousins are missing. He is also accused of having stabbed Quences, a Time Lord at the end of his final incarnation, to death just before his will was to be read.

The Doctor finds his Cousins buried in the House's lower levels, as their isolation has driven them into a zombie-like state. The Cousins, believing

the Doctor to be the source of their discontent, beat him into a coma and he approaches a regeneration crisis.

The Doctor's Cousin Innocet, together with Chris and the Doctor's allies on Gallifrey – Romana, Leela and Dorothée – join in a telepathic union to enter the Doctor's mind and revive him. Thus, they view the Doctor's history before leaving Gallifrey, and how he possesses the DNA of the Other, a famed and feared Gallifreyan (*see Sidebar*).

The Doctor recovers and finds evidence that on the night Quences was murdered, his Cousin Glospin, fearing he wouldn't inherit the House, regenerated and copied the first Doctor's form, then killed Quences and regenerated again. However, the essence of Quences' mind, safely hidden in the Doctor's tutor robot Badger, awakens and officially leaves the House to the wayward Doctor. But the sentient House, finally understanding that Quences is dead, grows distraught that there is no Kithriarch. As the Doctor's zombie-like Cousins evacuate, the House commits suicide, plunging off a cliff to its doom.

President Romana revokes Lungbarrow's excommunication and declares a new House will be built for the Cousins. Chris decides the time has come to leave the Doctor and travel on his own, so Romana gives him a time ring.

The nefarious Celestial Intervention Agency, having often opposed the Doctor, now pledges to leave him alone if Romana will send him after the remains of the Master – a task for which the Matrix predicts a 96 percent fatality rate. The Doctor agrees to the mission, planning to outfox the odds once again, and departs for Skaro as his friends watch on.

Memorable Moments

We witness the first Doctor's initial moments in his new TARDIS, the console covered in cobwebs. And, like the Doctor's companions, we watch in rapt attention as the Other enters the central Loom bank. We cheer as the Doctor meets Susan for the first time.

The House of Lungbarrow's death grips you in awe. Cousin Innocet's brave death and regeneration cuts at the Doctor. And the final moments in which the Doctor departs from Gallifrey to his fatal mission, with his friends and family watching, pull at your heartstrings. It's a unique moment of intimacy and closeness, in a series too often about loneliness.

Sex and Spirits

The Doctor's ex-companion Leela and her mate Andred get pregnant.

Dorothée has some brandy with her CIA-generated duplicate.

Ass-Whuppings

The House of Lungbarrow kills itself. The Doctor's Cousin Glospin is terminated. Cousin Owis kills Cousin Arkhew. Susan reports that her parents died. Innocet is killed but regenerates. One of Ace's friends (possibly a lover), died when Dalek troops blew up Crocarou Station.

Quences' Ghost tears at the Doctor and rips his flesh. Worst of all, The Doctor's Cousins beat him and put him in a life-threatening coma.

A Gallifreyan pig-bear once tore Leela's arm badly. She's also gassed and her wrist broken. A staser bolt also incapacitates K-9 Mark I.

The manipulative CIA shoots Dorothée dead for 20 minutes – restoring her with Gallifreyan technology – and uploads her memories.

Continuity

The suggestion is made that Leela is the Doctor's mother. Keep in mind that the Doctor in "Doctor Who: Enemy Within" is half-human on his mother's side. Leela, who's descended from Earth, pair bonded with the Gallifreyan Andred in "The Invasion of Time." There's a moment in Lungbarrow when the Doctor looks into Leela's eyes, as if he's seeing something he hasn't seen before – as if he's recognizing his mother. That the Doctor asks Leela to name the child after him seems further evidence. All of this, of course, is implicit enough to be taken as sheer coincidence. Draw your own conclusions.

Omega was lost in the constellation of Ao ("The Three Doctors"). Satthralope dismissed the hermit on the hill because he was too expensive and a bad influence ("The Time Monster," "Planet of the Spiders"). Lord Ferain, Director of Allegiance at the CIA, contacted the Doctor in "Genesis of the Daleks."

The Sisterhood of Karn was introduced in "The Brain of Morbius." Leela still carries Janus Thorns ("The Face of Evil," etc.). Leela and Andred were pair-bonded in "The Invasion of Time."

The Doctor says that originally, he wanted to enroll Dorothée at the Academy on Gallifrey. (That would have happened in the proposed TV story "Ice Time" if Season 27 had happened.) Romana gives the Doctor her sonic screwdriver ("Horns of Nimon"), explaining how he had one in "Doctor Who: Enemy Within."

Ben Aaronovitch first introduced The Other in his novelization of "Remembrance of the Daleks." Much of Gallifreyan history – and the foundation for Lungbarrow – was laid in Platt's *Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*. Elements of the Pythia (also *Time's Crucible*) would seem to remain, as she speaks to the Doctor in a vulture's form (also *Time's Crucible*). Jason Kane's clone isn't mentioned, suggesting that he and Dorothée have split up (*Happy Endings*, *The Death of Art*). Romana became President in *Happy Endings*. It's reiterated that the Doctor is the Eighth Man Bound, a concept introduced in *Christmas on a Rational Planet*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor*: The Doctor contains the genetic heritage of the Other (*see Sidebar*). He can remember waiting to be born (this awareness may also come from the Other's presence).

The Doctor's 44 Cousins were present at his birth, and Housekeeper Satthralope smacked him. His Cousins laughed because of his belly button (remember Time Lords are Loomed and lack belly buttons, but the Doctor is half-human). The mark led to his nicknames, "Wormhole" and "Snail."

The first Doctor deliberately failed his chapter certificates in officiating and legislating, to make his colleagues underestimate his intelligence and try to escape the crushing boredom of Gallifrey office duty. Quences wanted him to rise above the rank of Cardinal, but the Doctor tired of Gallifrey's officiousness and was relieved to be disinherited. He vowed never to return to Lungbarrow. He was roughly 430 when he left Gallifrey.

The Doctor's adventurous lifestyle has resulted in premature regenerations and his contemporaries have not regenerated nearly so much. It is concretely established that the Doctor is in his seventh incarnation and that the incarnation as played by William Hartnell was the first Doctor.

The Doctor can't get to his room in Lungbarrow because of a lagoon in the North annex. When he was thrown out, he left an experiment running with some hybridized water-sligs that he crossed with a red-pettaled orchid. After 130 years, they broke out, big as ichthydiles, and established a breeding colony in the annex. Forty-seven years ago, one of them took up residence in the kitchen.

The Doctor knows something about opera. The first Doctor decided against stealing a Type 53 TARDIS because he didn't trust them.

• *Chris Cwej*: Chris' astral form floats around Lungbarrow and witnesses

events from the present and the past. Whether this is a feature of Chris' latent telepathic abilities or due to the presence of Gallifrey's high telepathic field is unknown. It's possible the Doctor's Cousin Arkhew, also astral-projected, assisted with the process. Chris can deflect simple telepathic probes from Time Lords.

Chris graduated in 2975 in a class of '26.

• *Susan Foreman*: Susan's mother died when she was born, in the same instant the Pythia cursed Gallifrey to sterility. Susan is therefore the last natural-born Gallifreyan (until Leela's child). Susan's father died in battle. The Other is Susan's biological grandfather, but she recognizes the Other's essence in the Doctor.

• *Leela (a.k.a. Lady Leelandredloomsagwinaechegesima)*: The big news, of course, is that the Doctor's ex-companion Leela becomes pregnant. Her homeworld isn't registered in the Matrix.

• *President Romana*: The Dromeian and Arcalian Chapterhouses oppose many of Romana's reforms. The Chairman of Argolis ("The Leisure Hive") gave her a four-dimensional art form that allows you to walk into an image of an artistic concept. With it, Romana made a garden based on the Claude Monet's paintings.

• *Dorothée McShane*: She hasn't seen the Doctor for a year in any Time Zone. She lost her Harley, but won it back. Dorothée still believes in the Doctor. She still serves as Time's Vigilante.

• *Castellan Spandrell* ("The Deadly Assassin," *Blood Harvest*): After two aborted attempts to resign, Spandrell finally quits as head of Gallifreyan security.

• *Castellan Andred* ("The Invasion of Time"): Leela's mate, who succeeded Spandrell. Andred comes from a long line of military ordinals, including his Cousin Redred, a captain in the Prydon Chapterhouse Guard put into stasis in Lungbarrow 673 years ago. Andred and Redred belong to the House of RedLooms.

• *Rodan* ("The Invasion of Time"): Has been sent on a cross-cultural liaison course.

• *Chancellor Theorasdavoramilonithene*: A member of the Patrexes Chapter, and Romana's second-in-command.

• *K-9 Mark I*: Learns Andred's security codes, giving it access to 8,346 other systems. This K-9 is vulnerable to Gallifreyan staser bolts.

• *K-9 Mark II*: After spending some time with the Tharils ("Warriors'

Gate"), this K-9 finally discovered how to return to N-Space.

• *The Hand of Omega* ("Remembrance of the Daleks"): Omega's solar manipulator misses its creator and hangs around the Omega Memorial. It befriended the Doctor, recognizing the part of him that was the Other.

• *The Pythia* (*Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible*): The Doctor once encountered the banished Pythia by a rust-colored wall and she showed him the Doors to the Past. On the other side, she said, was the Gate of the Future. She then became a harpy and tore him apart.

• *Badger*: A bulky, furry, animal-looking robotic tutor with curling horns on his head. Badger patiently was a present from Quences to protect and teach the Doctor during his brainbuffing (Time Lord education). Badger waited 673 years for the Doctor in a cupboard. Quences put a part of his consciousness in Badger.

• *Priestess Charkesta*: The Karn Ambassador to Gallifrey.

• *Time (a.k.a. The Rose Woman)*: The Doctor's Eternal patron, seen by Innocet on the day the Doctor was born. She sits at the Door to the Past. She spoke to the first Doctor.

• *The Terrible Zodin* ("The Five Doctors," "Attack of the Cybermen"): A celebrated sword-swallower at the Grand Festival of Zymymys Midamor. Zodin could perform amazing tricks with a scimitar.

• *Lord Cardinal Lenadi*: Led the Prydonian Chapter during the Doctor's time on Gallifrey.

• *The House of Lungbarrow*: The Doctor's home, located on Mount Lung in the Southern Gallifreyan Mountains. The House was allotted 45 Cousins. For violating this quota, the House was ostracized and erased from the Bureau of Loomographic Records. It's forbidden to say the word "murder" in the House. The transmat booth was located in the South Wing.

The House was two days from Rassilon's Rampart and overlooked the river Cadonflood.

• *The TARDIS*: The bathroom contains super-buoyant bathwater, so you can't drown. The Doctor can disable the TARDIS completely. It can levitate in response to the Doctor's mental commands.

• *The Doctor, Chris and the TARDIS*: As the Doctor's head gets too full of memories, the TARDIS side-shunts some of his subconscious thoughts into the nearest available database (*Timewyrm: Genesys*) – some of them wind up in Chris' head. The TARDIS uses Chris to lay coordinates to Lungbarrow after the Doctor thought about his family and mortality.

Character Development (The Doctor‘s Cousins)

• *Innocet*: Of all the Doctor’s Cousins, she loved him the most and placed the well – being of others before herself. Innocet tried to protect the other Cousins, in stasis, from being discovered by the House. She tried to keep the Doctor away, but was killed by an insistent Badger and forced to regenerate. Innocet has a remarkable talent for telekinesis and telepathy.

• *Quences (a.k.a. Quencessetianobayolocaturgrathadeyyilungbarrowmas)*: The 422nd Kithriarch of Lungbarrow, and the last to date. Quences lived about 7,000 years and served as Ordinal-General of the Brotherhood of Kithriarchs, the heads of the Houses. He was the Doctor’s benefactor. Quences finally transferred part of his mind into Badger.

Owis: Cousin that was Loomed to replace the Doctor when he left Gallifrey. Owis is now 675 and rather stupid. Glospin suggested that now that the Doctor was back, there were too many Cousins and Owis would be terminated. Owis believed the lie and killed Cousin Arkhew to “make room” for himself.

• *Glospin (a.k.a. Glospinninymortheras)*: Cousin Glospin was 1,711 and in his fourth incarnation. He had a high level of skill with genetics, having worked in the Eugenics Factory.

• *Satthralope*: At age 302, Satthralope became Housekeeper to Lungbarrow. During the House’s entombment, she didn’t leave her room for 112 years – or her chair for 71.

• *Jobiska*: An older, rather senile Cousin who gives various numbers as to her age and regeneration.

• *Rynde*: Served as Epicural Overseer to the Dromeian Chapterhouse.

• *The Doctor’s Cousins (other)*: The Doctor’s other Cousins include Arkhew (deceased), Maljamin, Farg (who died 200 years ago), the hungry Celesia, Almund, Tulgel, Chovor the Various, DeRoosifa, the multi-chinned Salpash, and Luton, who got stuck 506 years ago in the East chimney and regenerated for 11 candledays.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords*: Time Lords are born from the Looms fully-grown as adults. Even at five years, Time Lords are aware and shockingly intelligent. They undergo training called “brainbuffing.”

The Other proved that Gallifreyans can renew their regenerations by

jumping Looms and be reborn into new Families (possibly explaining how the Master was offered a new life cycle in "The Five Doctors").

Premorphic trauma can abort a Time Lord's regeneration. Not even Houses witness regeneration, as it's considered a private moment. Top-of-the-line eugenicists such as Glospin can regenerate and copy another Time Lord's form if they have a cell sample. Most Gallifreyan injuries heal in a day, but some burns run so deep, not even regeneration can heal them. A Time Lord's later incarnations tend to be shorter in longevity.

Purebred Time Lords have no belly buttons. On a Time Lord's Deathday, their minds are assimilated into the Gallifreyan Matrix. Sepulchasm is a Time Lord game. There's also a card game with Flames, Souls, Clouds, Deeps and Dominoes for suits.

• *Gallifreyan Houses*: The sentient Houses are the oldest beings on Gallifrey, grown during the Intuitive Revelation. The furniture in them is three times too large to make newborn (yet adult-sized) Gallifreyans feel like children. Cousins can declare "Housepitality," taking guests under their protection. Robotic Drudges perform House maintenance. Housekeepers are forever bound to the Houses. Houses that conduct unauthorized Looming are excommunicated from the Gallifreyan Matrix.

• *Eternals* ("Enlightenment"): The Gallifreyans keep decorated lattice spheres to honor them: red/black for Death, white for Pain and an indeterminate, shifting color for Time.

• *Tharils* ("Warriors' Gate"): Have legends of Vlasolf the Timewalker.

Alien Planets

• *Gallifrey*: The planet itself is a temporal anomaly, existing in N-Space, but in an exclusive timestream. Gallifrey therefore moves at a different speed from the rest of the Universe. The forests contain a beast like a striped pig-bear.

• *Karn* ("The Brain of Morbius"): Lies in conjunction with the frozen gas giant Polarfrey.

• *Kasterborous*: In mythology, he pulled a chariot of silver fire to which the gods yolked him. Gallifrey is located in his constellation.

Places to Go

• *Tharil Embassy*: Located on Level 84 of the Gallifreyan Capitol. Prince Whitecub serves as Ambassador.

• *Crevice of Memories That Will Be*: The abyss the Pythia threw herself into.

Stuff You Need

• *Gallifreyan Looms*: The devices that weave new Gallifreyans record every time a Time Lord regenerates. Looms weave at random on a basic template, meaning you can't choose what you look like.

• *The Triumphs of Rassilon, The Book of the Old Time* ("The Deadly Assassin") and *The Record of Rassilon* ("State of Decay"): Gallifreyan books with interpretations about Rassilon, the Other and the Old Time.

• *Attar of Asafoetida*: A Gallifreyan restorative, like smelling salts.

Organizations

• *The Celestial Intervention Agency (CIA)*: The CIA evolved from the core group of Rassilon's guards. If the Agency detains you, no plebeian or litigation can overrule them. Almoner Crest Yeux is a member. Some Arcalian guards support the group. The Doctor's Cousin Glospin was also said to have Agency ties. Lord Ferain ("Genesis of the Daleks") served as director of allegiance but was likely removed from office thanks to his interrogation of Dorothée for the CIA. He kept a book entitled *An Alternative History of Skaro: The Daleks Without Davros*.

The Agency has been known to kill subjects (such as Dorothée) for only 20 minutes, then upload their memories into the Matrix. The Agency pledged to leave the Doctor if he retrieved the Master's remains, knowing the errand would prove fatal ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

• *Honorable Central Population Directory*: Located at the Gallifreyan Capitol, it determines a set quota of Cousins for each House.

History

• In the Old Time, at least four provincial outer-worlds raised temples to Rassilon against his direct edict.

• In the third century after Rassilon's death, Rassilon's Rampart was built to keep the marauding Shobogans out.

• The Doctor was present in May 29, 1913, at *Le Sacre du Printemps* at the Ballets Russes. While a riot occurred, he stayed in the wings with Nijinsky, beating time for the dancers.

At the End of the Day

This is the book all the New Adventures have been building toward. We turn full frontal with the Doctor to learn of his origins and see the consequences of his inactions (*nothing* on TV has taken place without the Cousins living in their darkened hell). And with two Doctors, four companions, two K-9s and a host of supporting cast members ranging from Rassilon to the Other, it's hard to imagine how *Lungbarrow* could be any more comprehensive. It's one of the most ambitious "Who" novels ever, worthy of considerable praise, which builds toward the teary-eyed moment where the Doctor voyages off to be killed. It's a book that cannot be missed – if you can find a copy.

Sidebar: The Other

The Other, along with Rassilon and the solar engineer Omega, was one of the Triumvirate who ruled Ancient Gallifrey. He was also instrumental in development of time travel and the Eye of Harmony, plus the Gallifreyan Looms and their Houses.

Officially, it is believed that Rassilon banished the Other from Gallifrey, and the holiday called Otherside celebrates his casting out. But the following facts, based on the Doctor's own memories, seem to be the truth:

After the mystical Pythia was banished from Gallifrey – 9.6 years after the Omega was lost – Rassilon's forces moved against dissenters who sought refuge in the Pythia's temple. Meanwhile, the Other rebuked Rassilon's violent ways and felt there was no place for him in Rassilon's totalitarian-like regime.

The Other visited with his granddaughter Susan, who helped him coin the term TARDIS from "Time and Relative Dimensions in Space." He advised Susan's nanny, Mamlaurea, to take Susan and flee to Tersurus (said to be barren in "The Deadly Assassin," but perhaps a civilization once existed there.)

The Other, likely feeling he couldn't start a new life away from Gallifrey, gave his life essence to the original Loom, the Prime Distributor that fed the subsidiary Looms in their Houses. The Other's essence was recycled – to be reborn as a part of the Doctor's genetic make-up in the House of Lungbarrow. Not even the Doctor was aware of his special genetic inheritance, although the Doctor's genetic codes are still out of synch with Lungbarrow's Looming template.

P.S. The Doctor's "extra faces" as seen on the mind visualizer in "The Brain of Morbius" could in fact belong to the Other. (This rather clashes with the point that the Other, as a natural-born Gallifreyan, probably wouldn't have ever regenerated.) Given that the "past Doctor incarnations" theory as presented in "Morbius" is mostly rejected by fandom, so it's as good an explanation as any.

Sidebar: The Gallifrey Doctor

Prior to the Doctor's departure from Gallifrey, he had duties as a Scrutationary Archivist – whatever the hell that means. He also worked in Prydonian Chapterhouse's Bureau of Possible Events. He sought advancement, but the Registrar of Continual Observation, for whatever reason, rejected his application.

Meanwhile, Quences, the head of the House of Lungbarrow, consulted the future-seeing Bench of Matricians and knew the Doctor would greatly influence Gallifrey's future. Quences therefore wanted the Doctor to be the Family's first Cardinal. But the Doctor – wanting to be a doctor – argued with him. This ultimately led to Quences disinheriting the Doctor, although Quences willed Lungbarrow to the Doctor, probably as a way of luring the prodigal son back Home.

The Doctor's spiteful Family proceeded to Loom a replacement Cousin – even though the Doctor had not been officially excommunicated. Before the Doctor left Gallifrey, he informed the Cardinal Prime of the Prydon Chapterhouse that Lungbarrow had violated its quota of Cousins. The Chapter Council of Cardinals served edict on the House of Lungbarrow and concurred with the Doctor's findings. The House was excommunicated from the Matrix and the Prydonian Chapter and buried.

Doctor, not knowing Lungbarrow's fate, but disgusted with Gallifreyan life, stole a TARDIS and proceeded to leave Gallifrey. He was accompanied by the Hand of Omega ("Remembrance of the Daleks"), Omega's sentient stellar manipulator, which recognized the Other's biodata in the Doctor and befriended him.

As the TARDIS left Gallifrey, the Hand's power took the Doctor's TARDIS back to the Hand's home in the Old Time on Gallifrey.

There, the Doctor found a Gallifrey torn by strife as Rassilon asserted his authority. He met the Other's granddaughter, Susan, who had been unable to escape Gallifrey – as the Other advised – because the spaceport had closed. Susan had lived on the streets for a year in tattered clothes, selling books for food. When she saw the Doctor, she recognized her grandfather's essence in him. The Doctor, still not understanding his link to the Other, accepted Susan as his first companion, and you pretty much (we hope) know the rest.

Eighth Doctor Stories

The Dying Days

Author: Lance Parkin. Virgin New Adventure #61. Release Date: April 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Benny.

TARDIS Log

The Doctor's house in Adisham, May 6, 1997; Trafalgar Square, London, same day; St. Oscar's University, planet Dellah, May 8, 2593.

Chronology

[Note on the 2014 ebook: The print version of *I, Who* placed *The Dying Days* (from the Doctor's perspective) between *Alien Bodies* and *Kursaal*, while conceding that the reasons for doing so were fairly spurious. As the eighth Doctor is age 1012 in *Vampire Science*, but is here 1200, *The Dying Days* would seem to take place much later on in the Doctor's lifetime. Even allowing that the eighth Doctor and Benny again meet up in the Big Finish audio *The Company of Friends*, however, placement of *The Dying Days* remains fairly elusive.]

Summary

After Benny meets the newly-regenerated eighth Doctor at his house in Kent, a helicopter carrying Martian soil crashes near the Doctor's house. When the curious Doctor investigates the newest mission to Mars, he finds that astronauts disturbed the tomb of an Ice Warrior Marshal and were killed. Knowing there will be retribution, the Doctor attempts to warn the authorities even as an Ice Warrior warship arrives over London.

Forces led by former Minister of Science Lord Greyhaven, who is working with the Ice Warriors, revolt and take over the government. Greyhaven becomes prime minister and Martian Marshal Xznaal is made King of England. When Xznaal decides that the Doctor is too great a threat,

he unleashes the Red Death, a sentient, lethal assassin gas, on the village of Adisham. To stop the bloodshed, the Doctor runs into the town to deliberately draw the gas to him and then goes comatose. The gas, thinking it has killed its target, dissipates harmlessly. The Doctor takes a number of days to recover and for a time is thought dead by his allies.

As Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart leads UNIT troops against the provisional government, Greyhaven realizes his "allies," the Ice Warriors, are actually intent on raping Earth of its resources. Greyhaven therefore destroys Xznaal's territory on Mars by exploding the abandoned Earth Orbiter. Meanwhile, the Doctor disarms the Ice Warrior's warship, which is destroyed by the Royal Air Force. With victory achieved, the Doctor takes Benny to her new job as chair of archaeology at St. Oscar's University on the planet Dellah.

Memorable Moments

The newly-regenerated Doctor asks Benny if she's shrunk, then realizes he's grown. At the Mars mission party, Benny is mistaken for Emma Thompson and consoled on her divorce. Before Benny douses an Ice Warrior with vodka to torch him, she takes a sip. The Doctor risks the lethal Red Death gas to save a cat. Before it envelops him, he offers the Red Death a jelly-baby. And, in one of the most teary-eyed moments of the series, the Doctor and Benny part company.

Sex and Spirits

Benny was 24 when she went rolling in the dirt of Mars with Tim ("That dirt gets everywhere," she says). Benny suspects the Doctor's homosexual contact might fancy him. Alexander Christian thinks Jo Grant blames him for failing General Science ("Terror of the Autons.").

To celebrate the last Virgin NA, champagne flows freely at the Mars mission party. As a tribute to his longest-serving companion, the Doctor gives Benny the very first magnum of Brut Impérial, bequeathed to him by Napoleon for services rendered. Before she and the Doctor part company, Benny impulsively kisses the Doctor hard on the lips and pushes him onto the bed. What happens next is anyone's guess.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor's sonic screwdriver reflects one Martian's sonic attack and kills him, while Bernice torches another Martian. The Martian warship is

destroyed. Many Adisham residents fall to the Red Death. The clan of Argyre and its leader Xznaal are exterminated.

Continuity

Former British Space Program head Ralph Cornish ("The Ambassadors of Death") is seen with his soon-to-be-murdered boyfriend, Timothy Todd. There's been no further contact with the radioactive alien Ambassadors from that story.

Without the Doctor's help, UNIT repelled a Bandril attempt to destroy Earth's ozone layer ("Timelash") and a Drahvin attack ("Galaxy Four").

Brigadier Winifred Bambera married extra-dimensional warrior Ancelyn ("Battlefield"). The TARDIS' console room in "Doctor Who: Enemy Within" is actually the Ship's "first" console room.

Attendees at the Mars mission party include Richard Dawkins' wife, the lovely Lalla "Romana" Ward; Geoffrey Hoyt, actually Tom Baker's character from "Medics,"; Dame Emma Knight, the character Emma Peel from "The Avengers," aged 30 years; and Lady Crieghton-Ward, actually Lady Penelope from "Thunderbirds."

Benny from here launches into her own series of Virgin New Adventures, beginning with Paul Cornell's *Oh No, It Isn't!*. She met Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart in *No Future* and Brigadier Bambera in *Head Games*. Kadiatu and aM!xitsa help Benny get to Earth, but leave before violating the People/Time Lords non-aggression treaty (*The Also People*). The mental block placed on the Brigadier by the Doctor prevents him here from recognizing Benny (*No Future*). In a moment of self-affirmation, the Doctor refers to himself as the Eighth Man Bound (*Christmas on a Rational Planet*). Benny misses her ex-husband Jason (*Eternity Weeps*).

The fanzine *Who's Who and What's That?*, seen in *Return of the Living Dad*, has gone to glossy paper and a color cover. Veronica Halliwell, Director General of M15, appears here but is assassinated in *System Shock*.

The Brigadier says he met the eighth Doctor in Hong Kong in 1988, when they discovered the secret of the Embodiment of Gris, an entity mentioned in "The Daleks' Master Plan." Colonel Crichton ("The Five Doctors"), was promoted to general in 1995 after the *Downtime* fracas with the Yeti, only the third time he fought extra terrestrials.

With hilarious tongue-in-cheek, the Virgin novel *Who Killed Kennedy?* is reported as having exposed UNIT's operations. M15 orders a crackdown and keeps a computer database of everyone who ordered a copy, watching

for possible subversives. Writer James Stevens ("The Mind of Evil") has disappeared, but his co-author David Bishop still lives in London. In a delicious irony – on the fact that Virgin was losing the "Doctor Who" license – Home Secretary Staines here orders that the publishers of *Who Killed Kennedy?* be raided and shut down immediately.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor refers to himself as the Champion of Life as well as Time. He can carry out a spectrographic analysis and keeps one of the finest mineralogical databases in the Universe. The eighth Doctor has the seventh Doctor's pocket watch. He doesn't remember UNIT's phone number. He can walk backwards without even slowing. The Doctor only met Colonel Crichton a couple of times, but didn't like him much.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* A letter dated 2593, almost 25 years after Benny's time, offers her the chair of archaeology at St. Oscar's University on the planet Dellah. She's also found a publisher for her memoirs.

Ten years ago her time, Benny excavated tombs on Mars' Mare Sirenum. The years from 1963 to 1989 (ring any bells?), from Kennedy's assassination to the Berlin Wall's fall, are one of her specialties. She went with Jason to a "Star Trek" marathon, where she saw "Star Trek IX" and "Star Trek X." She now has an aching belief that all young people are off having more fun than she is. She still isn't fond of hugging. She has some knowledge of electronics.

On Mars, she went to the casinoplex at Deucalionis. She speaks Martian. She knows a Martian prayer of lamentation.

• *The Doctor and Benny:* The Doctor gives Benny his question mark umbrella and Wolsey the cat.

• *Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart:* At the end of this story, the Brigadier is finally promoted to General.

He was a lieutenant in Africa, and says he wasn't promoted to general because of politics. His wife Doris, now an Internet whiz, inherited their home from her aunt and supports them with her salary.

The Brigadier's father died in the Sahara, fighting Mussolini alongside Montgomery. General William Lethbridge-Stewart came down from Scotland to London with King James in 1603. Two General Lethbridge-Stewarts, ancestors of the Brigadier's, were at Naseby and Waterloo.

The Brigadier knew apartheid was wrong, but thought Nelson Mandela was a communist terrorist. Some skywatchers think the Brigadier is a myth

and a legend. His postal code is BN45 7ED.

• *Kate Lethbridge-Stewart:* Her phone number is 0122 69046.

• *Brigadier Winifred Bambera and Ancelyn (*"Battlefield"*):* Ancelyn and Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart explained the Doctor's regenerative abilities to Winifred. Ancelyn sometimes handles matters of national security.

• *Alexander Christian:* When Lethbridge-Stewart was promoted to Brigadier, Christian became Colonel in his place. Christian later became an astronaut who visited Mars twice before Mars Probe Thirteen, the mission on which he was framed for the murder of his crewmates to silence his knowledge about Mars.

• *The TARDIS:* Can selectively search through every television broadcast on Earth.

Alien Races

• *The Time Lords:* Xznaal says the Galactic Constitution states that Time Lords are forbidden to interfere in affairs such as the Martians' "alliance" with Earth.

• *Ice Warriors:* Martian voices sound less harsh on nitrogen-rich Mars. "Ice Warriors" is a rough translation of the Martians' term for themselves, although it's literally closer to "polar bears." Water is a source of Martian wealth. Disturbing a Martian Marshall's tomb is almost the worst sacrilege under Martian ecclesiastical law. The penalty is summary execution, with the offender's clan facing reparations. Martians have extended lifespans. They have red forked tongues and respect the Time Lords. Helium can affect their voices.

Alien Planets

• *Mars:* Mars has a perfectly breathable atmosphere, even if the soil is infertile.

• *Dellah:* The orbital lift there has permanently altered the weather patterns, meaning it rains a lot.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Properly attuned, it can reflect a Martian's sonic attack.

• *The Red Death:* Invisible in Mars' atmosphere, It seethes out of control in Earth's fertile biosphere.

• *The Hay Wain:* Famous painting by Constable that Xznaal uses as a serving tray.

Places to Go

The Doctor's House (Adisham, Kent): Nobody's lived there for more than two weeks at a time. It has one bathroom – a frequent source of contention between the companions. The Doctor says the house can look after itself, hinting it's sentient like the TARDIS. It has leftover T-Shirts that say, "My friend went to San Francisco and all he got me was this lousy T-Shirt" and "It's pronounced 'Cwej.'"

Organizations

UNIT has a branch (NUIT) in Paris. The Doctor helped the Brigadier draft UNIT engagement protocols. The group's existence is now an open secret.

Ships

Martian Spaceships, notoriously slow, have big mounted sonic cannons that take 35 minutes to power up. Martian spaceships lack force fields.

Time Travel

According to the laws of Time, once the Doctor and Benny arrive at the British Museum, they can't just sneak forward a half hour in the TARDIS, but must wait.

History

• The ritual of entombing Martian Marshals in blocks of ice (as water is a rare commodity on Mars) carried over to the Egyptian custom of surrounding mummies in gold.

• The Doctor claims to be the first person to have conquered Mount Everest.

• The Mars mission party in this, the last Virgin novel, is attended by Stephen Hawking, "Newsnight" presenter Jeremy Paxman, Richard Dawkins, Jarvis Cocker, Chris Evans, Gillian Anderson, Richard Branson, Alan Yentob and someone who might be Mystic Meg or Lady Di.

• Britain first reached Mars before 1977. Lord Teddy Greyhaven served

as Minister of Science in the 1970s, and masterminded British agents in keeping secret that Mars had an almost-habitable atmosphere. A double-O agent even swapped Viking data at Cape Canaveral. Alexander Christian's disastrous Mars Thirteen was the last mission until this story.

• May 6, 1997, is the date of the first public alien arrival on Earth. When Lord Greyhaven's provincial government took control, the Prime Minister was assassinated. The Portsmouth docks were devastated. Members of Parliament are arrested. Greyhaven becomes Prime Minister but is killed foiling his Martian allies. Xznaal, who based himself in the Tower of London and had the ravens removed, briefly usurped Queen Elizabeth II as the United Kingdom's monarch. The Queen was returned to the throne on Nov. 23, 1997, with the Brigadier, Doris, the fourth Doctor, Romana and K9 in attendance.

• The Arcturan Treaty, 2085, is regarded as Earth's first official, peaceful contact with aliens.

• Fighting in the Thousand Day War was mostly centered on Olympus Mons, the future location of Jackson City.

• The Martian Fields of Death were discovered by Benny's crew in 2565.

At the End of the Day

Sterling. Perhaps more than any other "Who" novel, *The Dying Days* is inherently about hope, with the promise of a new Doctor and the ushering in of the Benny New Adventures. It epitomizes TV episodes that changed Doctors – a time of sadness for losing something familiar, but a time of bravery and joy for gaining something new. Parkin in typical fashion keeps the Doctor and Benny here center-stage, and even when the Doctor disappears, supposedly killed by the Red Death, the story is *still* about him through the thoughts of other characters. As we toast the end of the Virgin line, *The Dying Days* therefore ends showing what the Doctor has meant to the lives of his colleagues – and to us as his readers.

The Eight Doctors

Author: Terrance Dicks. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #1. Release Date: June 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Samantha Jones, plus more previous Doctors and companions than you can shake the Rod of Rassilon at.

TARDIS Log

Totters Lane, Earth, 1997; Earth, 100,000 BC; The War Planet, time unknown; London, circa 1970s; Vampire Planet, time unknown; Eye of Orion, time unknown; Gallifrey during the Doctor's second trial; Metebelis III, time unknown.

Chronology

Immediately after the FOX TV movie, "Doctor Who: Enemy Within."

Summary

The newly regenerated eighth Doctor falls prey to a small diamond the Master left in the TARDIS and the crystal robs the Doctor of his memories. Struggling to regain his identity, the Doctor finds faith in the TARDIS to navigate him to where he needs to be, and pilots the Ship to Totters Lane, Earth. There, he saves young schoolgirl Samantha Jones from some drug dealers. Unfortunately, police suspect the Doctor of dealing drugs and haul him away. Baz Bailey, the main drug dealer, gets a lowlife mob to protest at the police station, trying to recover his drugs in the confusion. The Doctor steals Baz's dope to keep it away from him, reaches the TARDIS and dematerializes.

The TARDIS directs the eighth Doctor to various points in his own timeline, progressively encountering his first five incarnations and re-gaining their memories with each meeting. During the sixth Doctor's trial, the eighth Doctor saves Gallifrey from total revolution by asking Rassilon to free ex-President Borusa for a bit. Borusa's noblest incarnation (from "The Invasion of Time") sways the Time Lords to depose the corrupt High Council and elect honest leaders.

The eight Doctor continues traveling and meets the seventh Doctor, then returns to Gallifrey. He learns it was Rassilon who piloted the Doctor's journey, making him lend assistance to his past selves when they needed it. Rassilon reminds the Doctor that he has unfinished business on Earth, and the Doctor returns just as the police arrest Baz. Eager to avoid an explanation to the police, Sam leaps into the TARDIS as the Doctor dematerializes. At Sam's insistence, the Doctor promises her just one trip through time and space…

Memorable Moments

The eighth Doctor, at the sixth Doctor's trial, says: "I should like to call – myself!" The High Council roars with the appearance of the past Borusa, striking a rare noble chord in Gallifreyan history.

Sex and Spirits

The sixth and eighth Doctors down goblets of Rassilon's Red, Gallifrey's finest vintage. The Doctor used to drink Best Old Shobogan at the Golden Grockle, the toughest tavern in Gallifrey's Low Town.

Ass-Whuppings

A drashig eats Councilor Ryoth. A Raston Warrior Robot annihilates a Sontaran pack. The Master shrinks a car driver. The Doctor himself skewers three vampires and zaps a giant spider with the Master's Tissue Compression Eliminator. Vampires bleed the fourth Doctor near-dry.

Continuity

The eighth Doctor visits all of his past incarnations at various points in TV history. To wit: The first Doctor during the failed jungle escape in "An Unearthly Child," the second Doctor on the War Planet in "The War Games," the third Doctor immediately after "The Sea Devils," the fourth Doctor in the aftermath of "State of Decay," the fifth Doctor after "The Five Doctors," the sixth Doctor right before "The Ultimate Foe," and the seventh Doctor before the TV movie "Doctor Who: Enemy Within."

Some other notes: Engin's post of co-ordinator ("The Deadly Assassin") was retitled Keeper of the Matrix ("The Ultimate Foe"). Flavia was elected president of Gallifrey in "The Five Doctors." The High Council was deposed in "The Ultimate Foe." Rassilon revives the incarnation of Borusa

seen in "The Invasion of Time." *See notations in other sections as they apply. Work with us, here.*

The Roger Delgado Master here retrieves his TARDIS from where he hid it in The Face of the Enemy.

Borusa's Timescoop ("The Five Doctors"), already destroyed by Ruath in *Goth Opera*, is here eaten by a drashig ("Carnival of Monsters").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* It's again established that the Doctor as played by William Hartnell was the first Doctor while the Paul McGann version is the eighth. An entire Sontaran Alien Recognition Manual describes the Doctor. He played truant from school to drink with the Shobogans in Low Town during his early days, sometimes accompanied by the Master. By author Dicks' account, he seethed with anger against the High Council – likely because of their non-interference policy – wearing Prydonian orange and scarlet robes, then left in anger and took his TARDIS, largely because they wouldn't put up with his arrogance. Someone who called him "Grandfather" said she wanted to go with him. The Doctor remembers his mother smiling and his father holding him up to see the stars.

• *The seventh Doctor:* Had a mid-life crisis. Refreshed, he decides to redo the TARDIS' interior in Gothic-style ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

• *The eighth Doctor:* He cautions the first Doctor against arrogance, and convinces his second self that he should summon the Time Lords (in "The War Games") and argue for the good he's done if the Time Lords catch him. He tells the third Doctor that he will one day get his freedom and end his regeneration by choice. He gives his fourth self a needed blood transfusion. The eighth Doctor aids his sixth self in quelling the revolution on Gallifrey, and tries to tell his predecessor about his impending death, but the seventh Doctor won't hear of it. Like every other Doctor, he meets Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam's a thin, wiry girl with blue eyes and close-cropped hair, wearing black jeans, a white T-shirt and trainers. She runs three miles every morning and does gymnastics. She doesn't take drugs, eat meat, smoke or drink Coke. Drug-dealer Baz "Basil" Bailey wants her to get her addicted to drugs so she'll stop welching on him to the police.

• *The Doctor and Romana:* They don't have compatible blood.

• *The Master:* After his escape in "The Sea Devils," the Master fled to Devil's End and escaped in his TARDIS, which was disguised as a Stone of

Sacrifice. Much later, the Master, in a plan to best the Doctor, ingested a deathworm, paying the Morgs for their services with the gold he offered Sabalom Glitz ("The Ultimate Foe"). He hides his TARDIS in the space-time continuum before surrendering to the Daleks, part of his plan to be "killed" and take over the Doctor's body ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

• *Rassilon:* Has enough power to physically summon a Time Lord's past incarnation. (Whether the incarnation is drawn from the past or if Rassilon can actually transpose a Time Lord's personalities is unclear.) He may have arranged for the Doctor to travel with Samantha Jones for some unknown purpose.

• *President Flavia* ("The Five Doctors"): Though having undergone several regenerations since "The Five Doctors," Flavia preserves most of her looks. The fifth Doctor suspected Flavia wouldn't work too hard to find him, because she wanted to be president.

• *Castellan Spandrell and Co-Ordinator Engin* ("The Deadly Assassin"): Like Flavia, they look similar to their selves in "The Deadly Assassin," though Spandrell looks a bit younger. Spandrell also keeps files on Time Lords about to be executed or punished (the "Black" File), those to be pardoned (White) and those whose fates are undecided (Grey).

• *The Valeyard* ("Trial of a Time Lord"): After the Doctor's sentence, the Valeyard tried to have the sixth Doctor shot, thus creating an alternate timeline to gain the Doctor's regenerations. The arrival of the eighth Doctor canceled that history. It is suggested that the Celestial Intervention Agency somehow created the Valeyard to stop the Doctor from revealing the Ravolox Affair in "Trial of a Time Lord."

• *Miss Olive Hawthorne* ("The Daemons"): Seems to have latent telekinetic abilities during crises.

• *Tarak* ("State of Decay"): A column on the Vampire Planet honors this late rebel leader.

• *Ivo* ("State of Decay"): Plans to make the town hall on the Vampire Planet into a village inn.

• *Raston Warrior Robot* ("The Five Doctors"): According to legend, a race that was old when the Time Lords were young destroyed by their own fantastic weapons. One such weapon, a Raston Warrior Robot, feeds on atomic radiation in the atmosphere. It converts energy to matter, and attacks by locking onto the electrical impulses of the brain. If confronted by two beings of the same brain-wave pattern, the robot grows confused and shuts down. Severed body parts can flow like quicksilver and reattach.

• *Kagar*: Shobogan leader the Doctor aids in escaping. In return, Kagar agreed to hold off the Shobogan revolution during "The Trial of a Time Lord."

• *The TARDIS:* Meeting yourself is allegedly impossible in a Type 40 TARDIS (but this routinely happens). The white, traditional console room still exists.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Impeachment of Gallifreyan presidents carried out in absentia is questionable. Ex-Presidents can call for Presidential Inquiries – half a dozen Time Lords are selected for the Committee. A Gallifreyan golden guinea will buy you a few drinks at a bar. Time Lords sometimes suffer a mid-life crisis and undergo treatments of drugs, neurosurgery, counseling and – in rare cases – forced regeneration. Some recover, but others wander off into Gallifrey's Outlands ("The Invasion of Time").

• *Shobogans* ("The Invasion of Time"): They shoot so poorly, you're safer running at them. They speak highly of the Doctor.

• *Sontarans:* The Sontaran Medal of Pacification goes to teams who destroy at least 10,000 alien life forms. They have a Sontaran Recognition Manual called *Know Your Alien*.

• *Vampires* ("State of Decay"): It takes several exposures for vampire toxin to establish itself in the bloodstream, so victims are repeatedly brought close to death. Hence, a certain stamina is required for conversion.

• *Vervoids* ("Terror of the Vervoids"): Weren't a genuine species, but a dangerous experiment gone awry.

• *Deathworms* ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within")*:* Parasitic creatures tamed by the savage, jewelry-loving Morgs. Deathworms incubate in hosts until the moment of death, then burst forth and pass the original host's consciousness into another person's body.

• *Giant Spiders* ("Planet of the Spiders," *More Short Trips*: "Return of the Spiders"): Some survived the death of the Great One and are hunted.

Places to Go

• *Kasterborous (*"The Hand of Fear"*):* Gallifrey's constellation is 29,000 light years from Earth.

• *The Eye of Harmony* ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within"): The main Eye, a black hole bottled by Rassilon, exists on Gallifrey, beaming power to

symbolic manifestations in each TARDIS. (Although a continuity goof for the TV movie, this was actually established in *Cat's Cradle: Witch Mark*).

• *Space Station Zenobia:* Property of the CIA, used as the site of the Doctor's second trial ("Trial of a Time Lord"), It was also the covert HQ for Operation Ravolox.

Organizations

Celestial Intervention Agency (a.k.a. CIA): The CIA wasn't able to get the Doctor's termination sanctioned. Instead, the CIA instigated his second trial to conceal the Ravolox affair. The Secret Security Committee, an inner group of the Gallifreyan Inner Council, liaisons with the CIA.

Time Travel

By rescuing the sixth Doctor from execution, the eighth Doctor creates two timestreams and hence there are two sixth Doctors running about. The effect finally normalizes and the two sixth Doctors merge. Whenever the eighth Doctor meets one of his past selves, a temporary stasis bubble freezes everyone but the Doctors.

History

• Flavia's first presidency on Gallifrey ("The Five Doctors") was accompanied by an age of prosperity. The CIA spread rumors that she hadn't been properly elected to prevent her investigating the Ravolox Affair ("The Trial of a Time Lord"). Flavia called an election, convinced she would win, but the CIA's pawn Niroc won in a landslide. He was deposed in "The Trial of a Time Lord."

• After the High Council's role in the Ravolox affair was revealed, the High Council was deposed ("The Ultimate Foe"). CIA squads prepared to take charge, but the temporary return of ex-President Borusa caused reform, not revolution. Afterward, the Magnetron was again used to draw the Earth and its solar system back into its proper place in time and space. The Time Lords then rolled back time so memories of the crime were erased (also "Trial"). Flavia was re-elected president.

At the End of the Day

A total clusterfish. If you're a newcomer, abandon all hope, and if you're a "Who" veteran, prepare for pages upon pages of rehashed stories. Unlike

Dicks' previous celebration, TV's "The Five Doctors," *The Eight Doctors* tries to stitch almost everything that's wrong with "Who" continuity and goes totally overboard to protect the integrity of President Flavia and others. By the time you're done with eight Doctors worth of continuity, not to mention an out-of-place Borusa, two Masters, a sixth Doctor alternate timeline, two Flavias and an explanation of the Master's deathworm thrown in just for kicks, you'll feel like someone dropped an anvil on your chest. Oh, and by the way, we also gain a new companion.

Vampire Science

Authors: Jonathan Blum and Kate Orman. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #2. Release Date: July 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

San Francisco, 1976 and 1997.

Chronology

For the Doctor, three years have passed since his last regeneration in "Doctor Who: Enemy Within."

Summary

San Francisco, 1976. Young biochem student Carolyn McConnell meets the eighth Doctor and his companion Sam in a bar, where they're hot on the trail of a ruthless vampire named Eva. The Doctor captures and Eva, seeking the location of San Francisco's vampire coven, but a struggle between them results in Eva being staked. Carolyn is profoundly moved by the experience, and the Doctor gives her a signaling device to call him if the vampires return.

San Francisco, 1997. Carolyn suspects the vampires are out hunting again. When her boyfriend James goes missing, she summons the Doctor, who allies himself with UNIT and begins investigating a series of high-profile murders. The only connection between the deaths is a nightclub called "The Other Place," and despite the Doctor's protests, Sam insists on coming along to help him. On the dance floor, a vampire bites her like an overripe strawberry – proving to Sam that when you travel with the Doctor, bad – if not lethal – things can happen.

A group of young vampires, led by the upstart Slake, are out of control, sparking a generational war with their elders because they're bored. The Doctor starts helping meets with the coven's true leader, Joanna Harris, a 1,000-year-old vampire hoping to scientifically release her people from their bloodlust. The Doctor and Harris, as a show of trust, agree on a

bloodfasting, a mingling of blood that makes them dependent on each other's lives. If Harris dies, so does the Doctor and vice versa.

As Sam considers ending her days of travel in the TARDIS, Carolyn considers joining. Meanwhile, the Doctor, Harris and Carolyn work on a blood substitute that will nourish the vampires and eliminate the need for them to hunt.

Slake and his allies butcher the city's older vampires, except for Harris, then wage open war. The Doctor admits that perhaps negotiations have failed and asks Harris to concoct a deadly silver nitrate solution to kill the uncontrollable upstarts. Slake captures Sam, but the Doctor has booby-trapped an abandoned theatre. When the vampires arrive to confront the Doctor, the theatre's augmented lights scorch them. The vampire pack still manages to drag the Doctor down and feast on his blood, but unexpectedly, they turn to ash, consumed by the silver nitrate solution the Doctor swallowed.

The wounded Doctor asks Harris to save his life – to make him a vampire. As Harris bites, the silver nitrate in the Doctor's blood kills Harris' vampire cells, but her human ones survive thanks to the bloodfasting. She greets the world as a human for the first time in centuries. UNIT Brigadier-General Kramer takes both Harris and Carolyn on as scientific advisors, while the Doctor departs with Sam, who's resolved to continue her travels.

Memorable Moments

With his life bloodfasted to the vampire Harris, the Doctor dangles out a window, prepared to commit suicide to stop Harris killing Sam. Harris reciprocates by killing a man so the bloodfasted Doctor experiences it. The Doctor then pays for the man's funeral with Harris' credit card and makes her attend.

Vampire Eva pulls down on the Doctor's stake to kill herself, but he fights against it. Vampire crack squirrels attack the heroes. In a bloodcurdling moment, Sam and Harris are chased in the dark by Weird Harold, a vampire even Harris is afraid of. And oh hell, most of the book falls under this category.

Sex and Spirits

Carolyn carries a potent curiosity – and a healthy amount of lust – for the Doctor.

Ass-Whuppings

Shackle keeps a ten-inch stack of files of 193 people believed killed by the vampires. The Doctor, James and allies stake vampire crack squirrels through the heart. Sam torches the vampire Weird Harold, then injects him with deadly silver nitrate.

Some time before that, Weird Harold chomps his fangs into Sam's throat and starts sucking. The young vampires bite and drain the Doctor as well.

Continuity

Some mention is made of the war between the Time Lords and the descendents of the Great Vampires ("State of Decay"). The Doctor gives Carolyn a hypercube similar to the one he used in "The War Games."

A bartender dresses as Death from the Sandman comics. The Doctor explains that when, totally out-of-character, he killed Lord Zarn's vampire followers in The Eight Doctors, "I didn't know myself well enough at the time to know that's not what I do."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* It's always debatable how old he is – he probably lost count – but the Doctor says he's 1,012 years old. Instead, he prefers counting by the age of his current incarnation: three. He can metabolize a silver nitrate and taxol compound that would kill humans and vampires.

The Doctor left Sam for an entire year of his time to take care of business, then returned to the moment when he left and apologized over and over. He hasn't had a haircut in this incarnation, so Harris gives him one. Carolyn finds a note that says "Happy birthday, grandfather." Notice the use of the plural as the Doctor tells her: "I hardly have any dealings with them."

The eighth Doctor has green…no, blue…no, wait, green eyes. A pharmacist on Lacaille 8760 gave him a half-hour lecture about lipids. He makes an excellent breakfast of omelets and pancakes, and knows a great deal about Brigadier-General Kramer's family. While bloodfasted to Harris, he experienced her sensations and couldn't see while her eyes were closed.

• *Samantha Jones:* Claiming to believe in "everything," Sam keeps young blond, unbelievably short hair and looks very butch. She wears a Greenpeace T-Shirt each day, and once played hooky to go to a gay rights march. Her parents were 60s children in the truest sense of the word, so her

only options for rebellion were to become a major drug addict or join the Conservative Party. The Doctor helped her get an Alterian driver's license, and she keeps a forged ID.

Never-say-die Sam once climbed onto a roof to spray-paint "Anorexics die for business (pound sign)" She doesn't believe in the death penalty, but gleefully thinks vampires should be staked. She heavily defends rainforests.

Sam's room in the TARDIS has a beautiful Victorian writing desk, an ergonomic chair from the mid-2050s, a huge wardrobe, a 14th century Persian rug and a four-post bed.

• *Carolyn McConnell:* As a University of California at San Francisco undergrad, pre-med student Carolyn dreamed of finding a cure for cancer. She liked to go to bars and meet people by pretending to sketch. She dreamed of becoming a stagehand at some theatre, and years later moved in with a lighting designer, James Court. After meeting the Doctor, Carolyn avidly learned astronomy.

• *Brigadier-General Adrienne Kramer:* Tough-as-nails, UNIT General Kramer met the seventh Doctor when Washington D.C. was about to disappear down a time rift. A black woman in her fifties, Kramer thought the seventh Doctor was "a manipulative little weirdo who was always up to something behind my back." She conceded that chicks dig the Doctor's time machine.

• *Joanna Harris:* If ever a vampire tried to make use of eternal life, it was Joanna Harris. After spending 200 years as a librarian, a period when she first heard of the Time Lords, genetics finally developed to the point where she could grow human clones with no higher brain functions – a ready-made food source for vampires. Problem was, Joanna couldn't grow them fast enough, and the Doctor strenuously objected on moral grounds to humans, even brainless ones, being raised as meat.

• *The TARDIS:* Two bats named Jasper and Stewart inhabit the library. Another TARDIS room contains an entire frikken' hillside, sunlight and thousands upon thousands of butterflies. The TARDIS moves Sam's bathroom a bit each day, probably as a practical joke. There's also a music room.

Alien Races

Vampires have self-motivation problems – many who hit the 400-year-mark literally stop moving. Rebellious members are sometimes culled, as was the case in San Francisco, 1956.

Conversion doesn't take place if you get bitten – an exchange of blood is needed. Rigor mortis sets in for about an hour, then you get better. A vampire's "blood" is blackish-purple.

The San Francisco vampires could be seen in a mirror. A combination of silver nitrate and taxol proved fatal to them – so to speak. Vampires who are too far injured can dig into the Earth and enter a healing coma for a few years.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Hypercube*: A useful communications device, but it doesn't always pin-point you in the right time zone. The hypercube can show reflections of the sender's memories.

Organizations

UNIT keeps files on people who have had possible involvement with the Doctor. There's also a whole SETSO (Survivors of Extra-Terrestrial/Supernatural Occurrences) program for counseling purposes.

Phenomena

• *Bloodfasting:* A technique used by vampires through the centuries as a means of avoiding conflict. By sharing blood, participants become vulnerable to each others' injuries. Typically done between just vampires, it also affects Time Lords.

• *The V Factor:* The virulent gene that makes vampires vampires.

History

Joanna Harris was born in Canterbury the day William the Conqueror died.

At the End of the Day

A playful – if sometimes overly sappy – story. The husband-and-wife team of Blum and Orman constantly make like Burns and Allen, providing an endlessly entertaining story, yet giving a solid foundation that re-establishes the Doctor's character from the FOX TV movie. (Listen close and you can even hear the movie's music in the background.) The rebel-without-a-cause Sam's vampire bite gives her some nice development – trying to decide if traveling with the Doctor is really a safe thing. And the

new Doctor proves how damn naïve he is, rejecting every solution Harris has for curbing the vampires and then killing them.

The Bodysnatchers

Author: Mark Morris. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #3. Release Date: August 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

London and Zygon ship, January 11, 1894.

Chronology

For Professor Litefoot, five years have passed since "The Talons of Weng-Chiang."

Summary

Seeking an issue of "last month's" *Strand* magazine, the Doctor and Sam arrive in London, 1894, and meet a dying man who's seen horrors in the factory where he works. The man disappears into the fog, but the man's half-eaten remains are later found. The Doctor enlists the aid of the fourth Doctor's old friend, Professor Litefoot, convincing the professor that he's an associate of the fourth Doctor. He also claims Sam is his niece.

The Doctor checks out the victim's workplace, a bottle factory, and becomes suspicious of the strange-acting owner, Nathaniel Seers. The Doctor contacts Seers' daughter, who later runs into the TARDIS and says Seers has murdered her mother. But the Doctor, Sam and Litefoot are being led into a trap – both Seers and his daughter have been replaced by the shapeshifting Zygons, aliens seeking to eradicate humanity and turn it into their homeworld.

The Zygon commander, Balaak, orders the captured Doctor to surrender the TARDIS, threatening the other hostages. The Doctor partly convinces his guard, a scientist named Tuval, that it's wrong to slaughter mankind, but finally drops Tuval in a TARDIS time bubble.

Escaped, the Doctor sneaks back to the Zygon ship and injects an anaesthetic into the milk supply. Unfortunately, the Zygons have a severely adverse reaction to the drug and all but Tuval and Balaak die. The

remaining Zygon duo manage to steal the TARDIS, but the Doctor has programmed it to return to London. Litefoot enters and shoots an attacking Balaak dead in self-defense.

With Tuval's help, the Doctor replicates the Zygon summoning signal in the TARDIS and draws the Skarasen, young reptilian animals slaved to the Zygons, inside. The Time Lord then drops Tuval and his Skarasen charges off on an uninhabited planet to start a new colony. Much later, the eighth Doctor again visits Litefoot and confesses to his old friend that he's a time traveler.

Sex and Spirits

None, though the Doctor strips to thermal long johns to scuba dive.

Ass-Whuppings

In a top grisly moment, Sam finds the head of a child attached to nothing more than a bloody length of spinal column.

The entire Zygon crew, barring commander Balaak and scientist Tuval, have an adverse reaction to the Doctor's anaesthetic and snuff it; the Zygon ship later self-destructs. Professor Litefoot shoots the Zygon commander Balaak deader than disco.

Tuval knocks Sam aside and she crashes into a console face first, KO'ing her also. In a nasty move, a dying Zygon injects the Doctor with gooey green venom, poisoning him.

Continuity

The fourth Doctor first met Professor Litefoot in "The Talons of Weng-Chiang." Sam wears Leela's clothes from that story, and Litefoot again uses his Chinese fowling piece. The fourth Doctor fought a different group of Earth-stranded Zygons in "Terror of the Zygons." Some of the Doctor's erratic behavior in the FOX movie "Doctor Who: Enemy Within" is explained as regeneration trauma.

The Xaranti, enemies of the Zygons, appear in *Deep Blue*. The Doctor confirms that Leela is married with children (*Lungbarrow*). The Doctor here dodges a question about Jack the Ripper's identity, foreshadowing *Matrix*. Years after this story, the Doctor turns somber when Litefoot asks about Sam, foreshadowing their parting in *Interference*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Thinks his last regeneration was "closer to death than ever before" and brought deeply buried aspects to the front, such as his romantic nature and tendency to ramble about his origins. He's read Conan Doyle's "The Final Problem" 437 times. He drinks Darjeeling and eats dry-roasted gumblejack fish fritters ("The Two Doctors").

His eyes are blue and he can recognize Earth by the smell. He carries Delphonian coinage known as ad dur'alloi, but has never been to Paraguay.

The Doctor produces a small business card with Litefoot's address. He can scuba-dive, and use a digital compass to track Zygon energy emissions. He has never piloted a Zygon ship, but quickly learns.

• *Samantha Jones:* Seventeen-year-old Sam has a wood-paneled TARDIS room that looks like something from *Pride and Prejudice*. It previously belonged to Nyssa, but has been restructured. Sam is small, wiry, wears Chumbawamba, Levellers and Greenpeace T-Shirts and listens to Mory Kante. Her classmate, Tony Blanchard, was (literally) a total dopehead.

Sam desperately hopes to be an asset to the Doctor, and when she fails to save a heart attack victim with mouth-to-mouth, she refuses to cry because the Doctor "never lets it out."

• *Professor Litefoot:* The intrepid professor lives at 4 Ranskill Gardens, is almost 60, and remains good friends with Henry Gordon Jago. He believes the Doctors are investigators together and that "Doctor" is a sort of code name. His parents were enraged when he gave up his army legacy and his father didn't speak to him for the last 20 years of his life. He finally accepts the Doctor's claim of being a time traveler.

• *Henry Gordon Jago:* Dear Henry, the owner of the Palace Theatre, has been a bit dyspeptic of late, and on Litefoot's advice, has gone to see his sister in Brighton for a few weeks.

• *The TARDIS:* Does the Chameleon Circuit work? The Doctor insists the damn thing jammed, but Balaak scans the Doctor's mind and learns it's functional. The Doctor admits he could fix the Circuit, but the power drain would render the TARDIS immobile.

Unauthorized users of the central console are trapped in time bubbles, even as the Ship's bounceback circuit moves it to pre-set coordinates.

The TARDIS doors can be returned to a raw energy state via a localized mass inversion wave (whatever the hell that means) so bigger objects can

come through. Zygon drive systems are compatible with the Ship.

Alien Races

• *Zygons:* The Zygons are hermaphrodites. Each adult lays round, creamy white eggs in clusters of between five and 20, about three or four times in a lifetime. Zygon society is rigidly divided into warrior-engineers, scientists and civilians. Zygons reach adulthood relatively small and slim, with smooth, maggot-white skin. Potential warrior-engineers are sterilized to draw out a Zygon's latent aggressiveness. Their appearance then changes to become the burly, orange-colored shape TV viewers recognize.

A warrior Zygon's palm suckers can inject a poisonous green ooze that can stun, paralyze or kill. Zygons like to play board games. Their average life span is 700 to 1,000 years.

Zygon technology, what the Doctor calls "organic crystallography," using organic bits that aren't sentient, is unique to a particular star cluster in the Biphaelides System. It's incompatible with the Doctor's biology. Zygons perfected telepathy after years of research and mentally control the Skarasen. They can monitor each other through "synchron responses." They're also narrow-minded – Zygon warlords must stick to their decrees, however stupid, lest they appear weak.

• *Skarasen:* Reptile creatures that, if you've seen the woeful special effects in "Terror of the Zygons," you'd swear look like sock puppets. Skarasen are grown outside the womb. Babies are 30 to 40 feet long, and can live for centuries. The Doctor's Venusian lullaby pacifies them.

Time Travel

The Doctor can predict future events in the TARDIS and try to change them, but cannot undo events in the past of his timeline.

Ships

Zygon Ships: A bit more living creature than spacecraft, Zygon ships look like a cross between a lobster and a spider. The organic ship's self-destruct unit dumps a toxic chemical into its heart and veins, inducing a massive coronary – the subsequent chain reactions causes complete disintegration. The ship can actually stand up and walk, and has green blood.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* The Doctor's sonic screwdriver "doesn't exist in this century." Zygons destroy it with a little super-burning blob of flesh. The screwdriver could scramble a Skarasen's synapses and open organic Zygon locks. The screwdriver's bulb part glows a fierce cherry-red.

• *The Doctor's Pridian Flare:* The Doctor used such flares, coated in dilumium and completely waterproof, at the Festival of N'tapu on a visit to Kakara. The locals thought he was trying to assassinate the High P'nbar and nearly executed him.

• *Daxamoil Suit:* The Doctor bought at least two Daxamoil suits off a Verulonian dealer on Peluvia. The suits mold instantly to your shape and self-seal, yet stay flexible, waterproof and fireproof. They automatically keep your body temperature ideal for your species, and donate elements to your biochemistry so you can breathe underwater. Unfortunately, the suits run out of elements to donate after three or four hours and turn brittle and opaque, quickly flaking.

History

• The planet Zygor was destroyed in the 14th century by a stellar explosion instigated by the Zygons' enemies, the Xaranti. The Zygons subsequently became nomadic. Three hundred years ago, a Zygon fleet was ambushed by a Xaranti attack force and nearly destroyed, though some survivors crashed on Earth.

• The Doctor rescues a person from the Zygons who's suspiciously named "Mr. Stoker," and knows him by name. Zygon tentacles animate a cowl, causing Stoker – perhaps author Bram Stoker of "Dracula" fame – to react in terror and be inspired.

• A number of the Doctor's friends invented slide fasteners, cylinder phonographs and pneumatic tyres – often without his help.

At the End of the Day

Passable, at best. A work that copies much of "Zygons" and "Talons" but sadly pales before them. With a title like *The Bodysnatchers*, it doesn't deliver the gory horror and nastiness you might expect, and doesn't add to the astute Professor Litefoot's character.

Genocide

Author: Paul Leonard. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #4. Release Date: September 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam, with Jo Grant.

TARDIS Log

Paratractis (alternate Earth), January, 2109; Tanzania, 2,569,878 BC; African plains, circa 3,630,000 BC; the Imperial Throne, time unknown.

Summary

Horse-like Tractites, fleeing the destruction of their homeworld by Earth colonists, find a time-traveling tree. They elect to travel to Earth's past and wipe out pre-historic man. But their first attempt lands them in the 20th century, where one Tractite, with a sprout from the time tree, allies himself with the insane UNIT Captain Hynes. Meanwhile, the rest of the Tractites travel 3.6 million years into the past.

History is therefore threatened on two fronts. Both the time-travelling Hynes and the main Tractite force can cause humanity's destruction. And when the Doctor and Sam return to Earth in 2109, they find humanity long-dead and the now-peaceful Tractites firmly in control.

Unfortunately, the original timeline and the "Tractite" timeline timelines can't both survive, and as a result giant chunks of history literally fade into nothing. The Doctor desperately dematerializes the TARDIS as everything vanishes.

The TARDIS travels back 2.5 million years – the point where a time-travelling Hynes arrived with a Tractite-engineered virus to poison pre-historic man. The Doctor meets up with Jo Grant who accidentally traveled with Hynes to the past while trying to find her friend Rowenna. The Doctor convinces Jo that she and Sam must stop Hynes' plot while he deals with the main Tractite group. Hynes' scheme fails when his disease carriers, including Rowenna, are killed by wild dogs and he's butchered by pre-historic humans.

Meanwhile, the Doctor TARDIS-travels back another 1.07 million years

to the original Tractite colony on Earth and is captured. The Tractite leader, Mauvril, thinks the Doctor a threat and starves him for many weeks. At the Doctor's request, a compassionate Tractite named Kitig, depressed that his people are murdering humans, chisels messages into the landscape that tell Sam and Jo, in "the future," where to locate the buried TARDIS.

Jo and Sam program the TARDIS to home in on the Doctor, and arrive at the Tractite colony just as he escapes. Chaos ensues. To save her timeline, Jo finds a Tractite laser cannon and obliterates the Tractite colony. The Doctor is appalled, but humanity is saved.

The TARDIS departs to take Jo home, even as Kitig, the only Tractite survivor, elects to remain in the past, carving more of the vital messages so Jo will see them in the future and rescue the Doctor. At the end of his life, Kitig destroys the time tree by travelling to Earth's past, perishing as Earth's solar system forms around him.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor tells Sam that the importance of the human race pales before the stability of the Time Vortex, showing how insignificant mankind can be.

Mauvril tortures the Doctor, then asks him for his forgiveness, because she's "doing what's best for the Universe." Jo Grant, a character of pure package stuffing in the TV series, grows in importance and decimates the Tractite settlement.

Sex and Spirits

An apeman gropes Sam's left breast. Benton keeps whisky and gin on his desk.

Ass-Whuppings

Earth colonists destroy Tractis – two million Tractites die in the capital of Noctutis alone. The entire Paratractis timeline is obliterated. Jo's friend Rowenna and her associate Julie are killed by wild dogs. Hynes dies, killed by distrusting barbarians. Sam panics at a laser cannon's controls, blows a Tractite to smithereens. Jo destroys the Tractite settlement of Quan-Nafarnis.

Hynes' virus infects Sam, causing fever. The starved Doctor grows so skeletal, he smells of death.

Continuity

Grace's boots, given to the Doctor, are covered in mud, but so the Time Lord thinks about giving them micromolecular repair ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor says his party dress, taken from San Francisco, actually comes from Savile Row in 1892. He has blue-green eyes. He claims to have visited Tractis many times, especially a restaurant up the Bror coast. He can fake illness by turning blue. He's always wanted to visit the Rift Valley area of Africa around "this time." He collects back issues of *Strand* magazine and needs issues #35 to #47.

Emaciated to a near-skeleton, the Doctor still has enough energy to run for freedom. The Doctor fully recuperates simply by sleeping for 12 hours.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* The Doctor tells Sam to leave the Tractite Kitig behind as his whole timeline is being destroyed. Sam blatantly disobeys the Doctor's instructions and lets Kitig into the TARDIS.

• *The Uncreator (a.k.a. The Destroyer of Worlds):* The Tractite leader Mauvril, fearing the Doctor would undo the Tractite timestream, wove into Tractite mythology a being called the Uncreator – he who brings about the End of Time. It's recorded in the *Book of Keeping* that the Uncreator must be destroyed immediately upon his arrival.

• *Samantha Jones:* By licking a Tractite book primed with pheromones, Sam sensually experiences the death-throes of several Tractites. She's not fond of jelly babies, especially red ones. Sam's hippie parents often abandoned her to Gran or friends as they went to save the whale, go on marches and weekend protests. Sometimes, she marched with them, not understanding what was going on. Sam's still 17 and has a TARDIS key. She refuses to kneel in the presence of the Earth Empress.

• *Jo Grant:* Now separated from her husband Cliff, Jo raises her son Matthew in a two-bedroom house in Hackney. Cliff lives fairly close. Jo holds down two jobs and has a decorating style that's hopelessly 70s.

Jo says UNIT books record her membership since 1971 (which can't be right, given most UNIT chronologies). She has some weapons knowledge, and badly needs to exercise.

• *The Doctor and Jo:* They haven't seen each other in 20 years, but Jo dreams of the Doctor asking for her help – this could be coincidence or a

sort of telepathy. Jo knows the Doctor instantly despite his new body. He grievously disagrees with her for destroying the Tractites – she argues there was no choice.

• *Matthew Jones:* Jo and Cliff's son Matthew likes computer games. He sometimes wishes he had a normal mum – so does Jo.

• *RSM John Benton:* Much of the fire of Benton's former UNIT days extinguished. He "grew up," got married, sired three kids and has a job to hold down.

• *Rowenna Michaels:* Jo's friend, who went on protest marches with her and Cliff. An intruder shot and paralyzed Rowenna two years ago.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor buries the late Rowenna Michaels and Julie Sands in the TARDIS hillside. The Ship sat in a volcanic vent for 1.07 million years, inert. Through the TARDIS' telepathic link, Jo mentally communicates with the Doctor even though they're 1.07 million years apart. The Doctor reactivates the TARDIS with some of his artron energy.

The Doctor's TARDIS can protect alternate-timeline creations such as Kitig, even if their timeline is erased. One TARDIS corridor is made from stone, with glittery gray flags. The secondary TARDIS room is still in service. You'll find a first aid kit under the harpsichord.

Alien Races

Tractites: Rather complex creatures. Tractites are half-horse, half-ox, with strange, double-jointed non-human arms and three fingered hands. They've got four eyes – a large pair to the sides of the head and a smaller pair near the nostrils. They have two wormlike tongues and muscular arms covered in white fur.

Tractites are said to be among the nicest beings in the galaxy. However, children are regarded as property – you're literally owned by your parents.

Tractites have social relations with Earth Reptiles and sometimes wear black body armor. Their sense of smell tells them if Tractites are near and which ones are pregnant.

Alien Planets

• *Tractis:* Noted cities include Tafalis and Daranos. Noctutis was the capital.

• *Paratractis (a.k.a. alternate Earth):* Afarnis is the Tractite equivalent of Great Britain. The Tractites here are experts at physics.

Stuff You Need

• *The Time Tree:* Noted for orange leaves and a hunger to consume heavy metals. You can time travel simply by plucking its seeds, which also grow into new time trees. The time tree can force a divergence in time, but can't rewrite it from the start.

• *Tractite Library:* A disorganized greenhouse where books are recycled in black soil near pineapple plants. Tractites don't view information as being permanent, and don't work to make it so. Librarians constantly make new copies and update them.

• *The Imperial Throne:* Made from fake ebony and Draconian galaxite. The Empress' hand rests on the obsidian magnaflux drive that gives her instantaneous transport. The Doctor has a fake Imperial Throne from the beginning of the fourth millennium.

Organizations

• *UNIT:* Information about UNIT can't be found anywhere on the Internet.

• *The Watchers of the Keeping:* Tractites who watch for the coming of the Uncreator to kill him. They're also warned to protect innocent humans from Tractites who falsely identify them as the Uncreator. There's a Watcher in every Tractite city.

Time Travel

As with *Blood Heat*, it is clear that parallel timelines drain energy from the real universe. As these competing timelines eradicate history, only fulcrum points, possible points of change, survive. Such points are linked to the Doctor's personal timeline, because in this instance, the direction history will take depends on his actions.

History

• Kitig carved his messages to Jo and Sam in quartzite. Pieces of them endured at least 1.07 million years. Perhaps you've seen one.

• The Doctor has met the Venerable Bede and personally knows Oscar Wilde.

• Human colonists overran Tractis, seeking the planet's xantium, cardinium, coffee, pixirin and opium. The Tractites became slaves and were later killed. The Earth Empress, with the Doctor's intervention, named

Tractis a Protectorate of Eta Centauri 6. Earth Reptile Ambassador-General Menarc served as the Empress' representative. Earth immigrants on Tractis later formed a separatist party and assassinated council members. The Empire deteriorated, and a bloody war erupted.

At the End of the Day

Genocide isn't perfect, but succeeds by the finesse of the cast. Jo Grant has rarely been written better (she's correct in her end argument with the Doctor) and Sam proves she's full of conviction, if a bit stupid. The story draws a lot from the time-travel conspiracy in "Invasion of the Dinosaurs" and isn't likely to "Gosh Wow" you with surprises, but evolves into a strong read within the traditional "Who" format.

War of the Daleks

Author: John Peel. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #5. Release Date: October 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

The garbage scowl *Quetzel*, circa 4693. The TARDIS goes to Skaro via a captured Thal ship.

Summary

A garbage scowl named the *Quetzel* accidentally sucks up the TARDIS, but the Doctor's Ship is fortunately unharmed. But an old horror returns when the Doctor finds the *Quetzel* holds a Dalek life pod with Davros, the creator of the Daleks, in suspended animation.

The Thals, alerted by a *Quetzel* crewman about the pod, quickly arrive and seize the spaceship. Delani, the Thal commander, favors asking Davros to re-engineer the Thal race so they can defeat the Daleks. The Doctor strongly argues against such a scheme and Delani's second-in-command, Ayaka, ultimately kills her dictatorial leader.

A signaling device in Davros' pod alerts a nearby Dalek force and the Thal ship is captured after a fierce battle. The Doctor, Sam, Davros and the surviving Thals are taken – much to the Doctor's surprise – to the "destroyed" Dalek homeworld of Skaro so Davros can stand trial. The ruling Dalek Prime informs the Doctor that it learned of Davros' role in the destruction of Skaro and used its crude time-travel abilities to trick Davros into destroying the planet Antalin instead. The Dalek Prime now intends to stir a rebellion against itself, drawing Davros' supporters into the open. The Dalek Prime will then purge the Dalek race down to its most loyal elements.

At Davros' trial, Daleks loyal to him storm the courtroom and everything erupts in laser blasts and Dalek guts. The Doctor, Sam and the Thals break free and head for the Thal homeworld, but the Doctor suspects the escape was too easy. Sure enough: In the ship's hold, miniaturized by dimensional engineering, is an entire Dalek factory. Desperate, the Doctor has the

TARDIS fling the factory through the Vortex. It randomly lands on the planet Vulcan, where the Doctor destroyed it in a previous incarnation.

His Daleks defeated on Skaro, Davros is sentenced to death. He is placed in a dispersion chamber and "atomized" when a Spider Dalek activates the controls. But the last of Davros' supporters, curiously enough, was also a Spider Dalek…

Memorable Moments

Ayaka tells the Doctor he's to blame for the Thals being so violent because he taught them how to fight (in "The Daleks").

The Doctor points out that Delani is fighting to destroy the Daleks, but Ayaka is fighting to save the Thals, and that the two are not the same thing. Much later, he realizes that by destroying Davros, he will be following the Dalek Prime's wishes, inadvertently becoming a Dalek agent.

Sex and Spirits

Quetzel crewman Loran, the isolated, horn dog that he is, tells Sam he needs a woman on his intellectual level. Sam leaves him hanging with the news that she's jailbait. She feels some shivers, however, to know the Doctor has fond regard for her. Meanwhile, *Quetzel* engineer Chayn fancies the Doctor and wonders if he could use a good engineer in the TARDIS.

Ass-Whuppings

The Thals employ a nuke against the Daleks in the opening battle. The populated planet Terakis is sacrificed with a planetbuster to destroy half the Dalek Eighth Fleet. Davros perhaps dies (yeah, I don't believe it either…)

The Doctor tricked Davros into destroying the planet Antalin, not Skaro, in "Remembrance of the Daleks," but still wiped out Davros' Daleks. He also takes out two Daleks with his sonic screwdriver.

The Daleks are reported as wiping out millions of Antalinites. A war on Hesperus kills thousands of Daleks, plus 817 Mechanoids.

Continuity

The Doctor here jettisons a Dalek factory into the Time Vortex. His second self already encountered and defeated it on the planet Vulcan ("Power of the Daleks"). The Doctor last encountered Davros and "destroyed" Skaro in "Remembrance of the Daleks." The Thals, appalled by

their acts of violence in "Genesis of the Daleks," became the pacifists the Doctor met in "The Daleks." The Thal named Ayaka and her daughter are the descendents of Rebec ("Planet of the Daleks"). Space Special Security Agent Dryn Faber, who knew the late SSS Agent Marc Cory ("Mission to the Unknown"), still battles the Daleks. The Master's trial was indeed in the past, before Skaro was destroyed ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

Surprising though it might seem, events in this book and *Legacy of the Daleks* aren't connected. Sam learned about Davros and the Daleks in *Genocide*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor says he is 1,000 years old, give or take a few weeks. One of his previous selves programmed the TARDIS' force field circuits. He hasn't seen a Bussard ram jet in centuries.

The Doctor somewhat blames himself for what the Thals have become. History tells him the Daleks will survive, but he doesn't know who will lead them. His sonic screwdriver can destroy a Dalek's brain with ultrasound on contact. The Doctor has a copy of *War and Peace* autographed by Tolstoy.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam has watched "Star Trek" and enjoys Darjeeling tea. She approves of destroying the Dalek factory, realizing it's easy to have an anti-war stance when you're not at war.

• *Davros:* The creator of the Daleks spent about 30 years in protective suspension after escaping in "Remembrance of the Daleks." He immediately recognizes the Doctor in his new incarnation. His supporters can be recognized by a low-tone pulse.

• *The Dalek Prime:* The last survivor of the original Daleks and the ancestor of billions of Daleks, the Dalek Prime had guided the Dalek race throughout history. It experimented on itself and altered Davros' genetic codes.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor says the TARDIS is "almost infinite" in size. One room is a painter's study, with a painting of St. Mark's Square in Venice. Fixing the TARDIS lock requires disconnecting the time rotor. An emergency system returns the TARDIS to Gallifrey. Treacherous Dalek subroutines could, if left unchecked, eject the console room into the Vortex. The Doctor dematerializes the TARDIS from around a fusion bomb that's inside the Ship, leaving the bomb alone in the Vortex.

Alien Races

• *The Daleks:* Daleks don't need survival pods because they can survive in space. They climb stairs with telekinetic force ("Remembrance of the Daleks") and can fire their guns 1,000 times without recharging. Solar collectors repower their units automatically. They never sleep and have standing orders to kill the Doctor on sight. They essentially have no art, decoration, poetry or music because they're only interested in conquest and war. They communicate with one another using radio waves, and can disguise themselves with chameleon circuits.

• *Daleks (color codes)*: Gray Daleks are expendable foot soldiers with limited intelligence. Blue Daleks serve as corporals and sergeants. Red Daleks enjoy some autonomy and actual intelligence. Black Daleks are even smarter, while Gold Daleks are considered elite. At the top is the Dalek Prime.

• *Dalek Striders:* Walkers with eight long, flexible legs to carry them over terrain. They're 10 times the size of a normal Dalek. Striders house four cannons.

• *Spider Daleks:* Only slightly larger than the regular warriors, but with a similar eight-legged arrangement as the Striders.

• *Marine Daleks:* Torpedo shaped, with an eye stalk in front. A gun stick and grappling arm appear halfway down the body.

• *Thals:* Having long abandoned their pacifist ways, all Thals who serve in the military must have a child first to carry on the lineage. They now realize the Doctor regenerates.

Alien Planets

• *Skaro:* The Dalek homeworld is no longer radioactive. The name "Skaro" meant "home" in the old Kaled tongue.

• *Antalin:* Planet located about 10 parsecs from Skaro. Antalin had an advanced civilization, but the Daleks turned it into a slave world, with millions of natives forced into the mines for the Dalek war effort.

History

When the Daleks broke out of their captivity from "Genesis of the Daleks," the Thals knew they were outnumbered and fled Skaro before "Remembrance of the Daleks." Mechanoids ("The Chase") colonized the planet Hesperus, but the Daleks overran it.

At the End of the Day

The top question is: "Why?" *War of the Daleks* makes revisions to Dalek history that are about as needed as sex pills for teenagers. Every Dalek story from "Destiny" on up becomes a mockery and Davros, perhaps the quintessential "Who" villain, turns into one the biggest-fooled boobs the Whoniverse has ever spawned. By itself, *WotD* might have been a brisk-paced, high-action story with decent moral issues (the Thals are becoming Dalek-like, etc.), but a single chapter of unholy history revisions will skewer you in pitchfork-like fashion and ruin the experiment.

Sidebar: Dalek Continuity Changes

Brace yourselves.

While the Daleks held Earth captive in 2167, they raided the Ministry of Defense vaults and discovered Professor Rachel Jensen's records detailing how Davros had destroyed Skaro ("Remembrance of the Daleks"). When the Dalek invasion failed, the Daleks tried using their limited time travel to overturn the defeat, but only created a parallel timeline. But the Daleks learned that time travel alteration was possible.

They decided instead to trick Davros into believing he had succeeded in destroying Skaro. They first found Davros in suspended animation in the original Kaled bunker, inert from a blast by his own creations ("Genesis of the Daleks"). Davros' memories were ltered and the captured lanet Antalin was changed to look like Skaro. The Daleks made Antalin's surface sterile and radioactive, killing millions of Antalinites.

Their next gambit was to make it appear that the Movellans, actually humanoid-based Dalek servants, to be at "war" with the Daleks. In so doing, they revived Davros and claimed to need his aid. But Earth authorities captured Davros and imprisoned him on Earth ("Destiny of the Daleks"). The Daleks arranged for Davros to be sprung and given access to time-travel technology that he might go back to the 1960s and seize the Hand of Omega, the stellar manipulator that had destroyed Skaro. The Daleks pretended the Movelland had "won" the war to prompt him to get the Hand ("Resurrection of the Daleks"). But Davros escaped, formed his own army of Daleks and instigated a Dalek civil war. He was again captured and taken to Skaro for "trial," but was again allowed to escape ("Revelation of the Daleks").

Finally, he fulfilled his destiny of taking his Dalek forces in search of the Hand of Omega. The Doctor, not realizing the Randomizer had taken him to Antalin instead of Skaro ("Destiny of the Daleks"), pre-programmed the Hand with Antalin's co-ordinates. When Davros used the Hand, the Doctor's program whiplashed as intended and turned Antalin's sun a super-nova ("Remembrance of the Daleks"). Skaro was its war facilities were saved and Antalin was destroyed.

Alien Bodies

Author: Lawrence Miles. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #6. Release Date: November 1997.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

The eighth Doctor: Geneva Neutral Province and Borneo, East Indes ReVit Zone, late 21st century; Planet Quiescia, time unknown. The Doctor also voyages to Mictlan. The third Doctor: Planet Quiescia, time unknown.

Summary

When the Doctor and Sam arrive in the East Andes ReVit Zone in the late 21st century, they find alien representatives, many of them from Time Lord splinter groups, gathered at an artificial city for an auction. There, Mr. Qixotl prepares to sell "the Relic," a corpse containing biodata so rare, it could be the most powerful weapon in the universe.

Confronting Mr. Qixotl, the Doctor makes a horrifying discovery – the Relic's corpse is his own. Chaos breaks out when a non-physical, telepathic bidder named the Shift sets the other bidders against one another and the Kroton delegation brings a Warspear into Earth orbit to claim the Relic. The Doctor materializes a fellow Time Lord's TARDIS around the Warspear, reflecting the Krotons' weapons back and destroying them. The Doctor also mentally traps the telepathic Shift's mind in his own.

Mortally wounded by a Kroton, Mr. Qixotl gives the Relic to the Celestis, another Time Lord faction, in exchange for a new physical body. When the Doctor voyages to the Celestis' home of Mictlan, they demand to collect on a bargain made by his future self that gives them his body. The Celestis try to mesmerize the Doctor's mind, but brainwash the Shift by mistake. The Doctor, pretending to be under the Celestis' spell, escapes with the Relic.

On the planet Quiescia, the Doctor buries the Relic, then primes a thermosystron bomb. The Relic is destroyed, and the Doctor leaves in the TARDIS with Sam.

Memorable Moments

When the Doctor's offered 40 percent for the sale of his own body, his jaw drops for the first time in centuries. Most dramatic of all, the Doctor buries himself on Quiescia. The stark simplicity of the scene – with no friends or foes present – is overwhelming for the Doctor and us as well. If this were to have been viewed as the series' epitaph, it would've made a fine one.

Sex and Spirits

"Dark Sam" (*see Character Development*) lost her virginity at age 15.

Ass-Whuppings

The eighth Doctor destroys a Kroton Warspear. He also kills an antibody with his sonic screwdriver. In an unpublished adventure, the sixth Doctor destroyed all but four Krotons at a colony they attacked. Qixotl is killed but physically restored by the Celestis. E-Kobalt blasts two Daleks. The Shift's platoon of Gabrielideans was wiped out.

Continuity

Celestis technology is similar to that which created the Land of Fiction ("The Mind Robber"). The Krotons first appeared in "The Krotons." The Celestial Intervention Agency, the group from which the Celestis sprang, was introduced in "The Deadly Assassin." A future war on Gallifrey destroys the Demat Gun ("The Invasion of Time") and the Sash of Rassilon ("The Deadly Assassin). Dronid is cited as Dr. Skagra's home planet in "Shada." Qixotl keeps Raston cybernetic lap-dancers ("The Five Doctors"). The Doctor took the Hand of Omega for hours of happy walks on Earth ("Remembrance of the Daleks").

Grandfather Paradox was first mentioned in Miles' *Christmas on a Rational Planet*. Mictlan, the land of the dead, is first mentioned (although not as the Celestis headquarters) in *So Vile a Sin*. We find the Doctor's biodata spread through time and space in *Unnatural History*, which details the origin of "Dark Sam."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Mr. Qixotl says the Doctor's biodata, already unique, will undergo further changes before he dies. By the end of his life, the Doctor's

reputation is so impressive, almost nobody risks trying to kill him. Most of the auction bidders believe the Doctor died on Dronid and his body was recovered from battle wreckage, caused by a struggle between the Time Lords and a time-active Enemy. According to Qixotl, the body was deliberately placed in the wreckage, but the corpse's pedigree is not clear-cut.

A future Doctor – probably the last and oldest – agrees to give the Celestis his body in return for their non-interference in the Time Lord war on Dronid. He added a few stipulations, implying a secret plan.

With preparation, the Doctor's mind can restrain the non-physical Shift. The Doctor's brain also splinters into a verbal psychosis that debates with him – rather like psychotically talking to yourself. The Doctor said the psychosis would correct itself – it apparently did.

The Sash of Rassilon altered the Doctor's biodata when he became President of the Time Lords ("The Invasion of Time"). This allows him to somewhat manipulate Mictlan, land of the dead. The Doctor is so independent, temporal blocks affecting Gallifrey don't work on him.

Three-and-a-half years after his last regeneration, the eighth Doctor still hasn't worked out his new identity. Although the seventh Doctor was good at chess, the eighth Doctor's neurosystem struggles to remember how the knights move.

A previous Doctor encountered Faction Paradox (*see Organizations*).

• *The Relic:* Originally recovered from an underground bunker on the ruins of Dronid in 15414, the Relic contained a body believed to be the Doctor's and fell into the possession of Faction Paradox. The Faction sent the Relic through the Time Vortex out of respect, and it randomly landed near the Phoenix Sunbowl on March 26, 2069. The American military recovered it and kept it at the Toy Store, America's alien artifact stronghold. The Relic was transferred to Los Angeles when the United States fell apart. At some point, it was acquired by Mr. Qixotl.

The Relic remained telepathic even after death, capable of combining its psionic power with the Doctor. It had two greek letters carved on it, the second probably being "theta."

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam has two sets of biodata, which indicates her timeline was split before she met the Doctor. It is theorized that the Doctor, linked to the Time Vortex by his unique biodata, needed a companion and unconsciously altered Sam's timeline.

In both of her histories, Samantha Angeline Jones is a vegetarian, born on

April 15, 1980, to educated, socially aware, middle class Londoners. Blonde Sam has known the Doctor seven months, three weeks and six days. She doesn't drink Coke.

• *"Dark Sam":* In Sam's original timeline, she dyed her naturally dark hair blonde and was arrested for shoplifting. She gained scars from a cigarette butt and from poorly injecting diamorphine, which got her arrested once. Sam was the only person in her class who didn't think homosexuals should be shot, was on Amnesty International's mailing list and planned to vote Labour. She drank heavily. The drug dealers in Totter's Yard (*The Eight Doctors*) were her friends. She lived on a bedsit at King's Cross. Most of "Dark Sam's" dangerous tendencies were eliminated from her timeline to create Blonde Sam.

• *Mr. Qixotl:* Qixotl has information concerning the Doctor's death and fears someone will discover his involvement. He has a stolen TARDIS. "Qixotl" is the name of the god of ludicrous profit on Golobus.

• *The Shift:* A former Gabrielidean soldier, conscripted by the Time Lords' Enemy as their representative. The Shift can kill using imagination tumors. The Doctor downloaded the Shift into one of the TARDIS' telepathic cells.

• *TARDISes*: In the future, Type 103 TARDISes are partly organic with extensive chameleon circuits and weapon systems. They can be mated to similar TARDISes in the Time Vortex.

TARDIS interiors can withstand a thermonuclear blast without scorching, but damage is rendered in shapes such as singed panels to alert the occupants. The interior of a Faction Paradox TARDIS withstood a Kroton Warspear's assault with no problems.

The eighth Doctor's TARDIS has internal gravity compensators that can slow a 46-story fall. The third Doctor's TARDIS can materialize around objects.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* The Sash of Rassilon alters the biodata of Time Lord Presidents to allow better access to the Matrix. Gallifreyan civil servants are rigged with self-destructing psychic wiretaps to stop them from revealing too many secrets.

A Time Lord's eyes can see luminescent black light. Time Lords metabolize alcohol too quickly to get drunk. Some can force-regenerate themselves, creating black, organic blast-proof skin.

• *Krotons:* Krotons evolved as a predatory, quasi-organic tellurium-based crystal called the Kroton Absolute on the planet Krosi-Apsai-Core. The Absolute could mimic its prey's abilities, and ultimately patterned itself after servo robots owned by human colonists. The Kroton Absolute consequently became millions, perhaps billions of semi-sentient, armored crystalline entities that were psychologically linked through mental vibrations.

Kroton weapons, largely produced on the looms of Quartzel-88, can fire a spray of corrosive crystals that's lethal to Daleks. Kroton command is broken into groups called "lattices." The four Highest Brains, nothing more than large cranial units, rule the Krotons. Krotons adjust their shapes for various environments, using a spider form for low-gravity space flights. For heavy combat, they can appear as devastating tanks. They use corrosive spores against enemy spaceships.

• *Anarchitects:* A primitive computer virus that dissects the essence of any structure. Anarchitects can instantly dissolve constructions such as bridges.

Alien Planets

• *Dronid:* An ambitious Time Lord Cardinal once built a power base there to overthrow the High Council. The planet was supposed to be called "Drornid," but a typo appeared in *Bartholomew's Planetary Gazeteer*.

• *Quiescia:* A planet composed of nothing but blue and jagged rocks, with turquoise mountains.

Stuff You Need

• *Biodata:* Biodata is the sum of a person's physical and temporal being, incorporating DNA and the sum of said person's history. If you know how to alter someone's biodata, you can theoretically make changes to their being that ripple through their entire timestream.

• *The Doctor's Pockets:* The Doctor's voluminous pockets comes from his reading Yeltstrom's *Karma and Falres: The Importance of Fashion Sense to the Modern Zen Master.*

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver: The Doctor uses the Mark One sonic screwdriver that was destroyed centuries ago (he says time works differently for Time Lord tools). The Zygons destroyed the Mark Five screwdriver in The Bodysnatchers. The "temperamental" screwdriver appears and disappears at crucial points.*

• *The Eye-Spy Book of Alien Monsters:* The standard UNISYC text on alien beings mentions Time Lords.

Organizations

• *UNIT and UNISYC:* UNISYC ultimately superseded UNIT. Tours of duty in the organization, because of the likelihood of alien contact and combat, prove unsettling – UNISYC personnel are 15 times more likely to commit suicide than the average human being.

• *Faction Paradox:* Dedicated the worshipping of temporal paradoxes, Faction Paradox rejected traditional Gallifreyan conventions and embraced a shamanistic spiritualism based on biodata. The Faction in particular reveres the figure named Grandfather Paradox, the epitome of a man who goes back in time and kills his grandfather – would such a man exist? Grandfather Paradox is speculated to have removed himself, like the Celestis, from the timeline. Disgraced Faction members must kill their younger selves as punishment, destroying their timelines in a paradox. The Faction has artifacts from many alternate timelines.

• *The Celestis:* In the future, members of the Celestial Intervention Agency form the Celestis by detaching themselves from history and removing themselves from the material plane to exist as pure ideas. As such, they're hard to destroy, but need fresh ideas and concepts from the living. The Celestis can put dying minds back into bodies, enslaving them as zombie agents. Mictlan, the Celestis' base, exists outside the physical Universe as pure information, and was likely built using the Matrix.

Celestis members are split between supporting the Time Lords or the Enemy in the Time Lord war.

• *The United Nations and World Zone Authority:* Having cleaned up the aftermaths of the Doctor's battles for 300 years, these groups would have eliminated him, but thought he was immortal and feared retribution.

Time Travel

Despite being mentioned in "The Three Doctors" and other stories, there's disagreement on what the First Law of Time is. Rassilon's technology stops Time Lords from investigating their own futures. The Gallifreyan Matrix can only extrapolate and make educated predictions. By being at the auction, the Doctor breaks a Law of Time, though he isn't sure which (a nice wink at how snarled "Who" continuity really is).

History

• The third Doctor and Sarah Jane Smith recovered the body of Laika, a small dog that died aboard the Russian satellite Sputnik II. They buried Laika on peaceful Quiescia, the system furthest distant from Earth still in the Milky Way Galaxy.

• A "baggy" Doctor (likely the seventh, possibly the second) helped UNISYC fight the Montana Republican Militia at Saskatoon in 2054, and blew up the Militia's thermosystronic weapons.

• By 2064, General Tchike had erased the Doctor's presence from the UN files. Nobody below the rank of Brigadier now knows of the Doctor's existence.

• By 2069, the United States is un-united. The Wars for Independence leveled Phoenix, Ariz.

• In the far-flung future, the Time Lords make war against a time-active enemy and lose their technology and biodata codes. The future Time Lords ally with the liquid Gabrielideans. A major battle occurred, circa 15365, on the planet Dronid, where the Time Lords seeded a clockwork bacteria to protect their secrets. The war's outcome is unknown.

At the End of the Day

A story about death with much life to it, *Alien Bodies* ranks among the most daring "Doctor Who" novels by its sheer willingness to deal with the Doctor's death. At the same time, Miles also endlessly peels Time Lord society to show its various forms (Faction Paradox, the Celestis, etc.) and constantly innovates on the Doctor's abilities (the sonic screwdriver's temperament, the Doctor's psychosis, etc.). A haunting tale of mortality, *Alien Bodies* pushes the eighth Doctor's story forward like no other, and stands as one of the best "Who" novels ever.

Kursaal

Author: Peter Anghelides. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #7. Release Date: January 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Saturnia Regna, time unknown and 15 years later.

Summary

The Doctor and Sam arrive on the planet Saturnia Regna for a holiday at the Kursaal theme park – but arrive three years before it opens. Meanwhile, wild animals slaughter an archaeological group, from which only team leader Amy Saraband and business tycoon Maximilian Gray survive. The Doctor and Sam stumble upon the massacre, then pretend to be police pathologists when the authorities arrive.

Saraband tells Sam about Helping All Lifeforms (HALF), an eco-terrorist organization trying to preserve Saturnia Regna and hinder Kursaal's development. Suddenly, the Doctor and HALF leader Bernard Cockaigne are assaulted by the feral, undead victims of the archaeological team. The Doctor concludes a virus spread by the Jax, a race that once inhabited Saturnia Regna, is converting corpses and into Jax drones. The Doctor and Cockaigne escape as security officer Kadijk entombs a Jax cathedral with an excavation bomb.

Sam discovers that Gray himself is funding HALF, hoping to bankrupt Kursaal and acquire it cheaply. The infected Gray scratches Sam with his nails and taints her with the Jax virus. As she resists, he transforms into a werewolf and leaps for her. Either he misses or a Jax-infected Sam overpowers him – but Gray crashes through a window and plunges to his death. The Doctor and Sam discretely leave.

They return 15 years into Kursaal's future, on a second attempt to see its action park. Unfortunately, drug dealers now control the planet and the Jax virus in Sam prepares her to become a Jax queen. A ruthless, out-of-control Sam kills Cockaigne, then marshals some Jax drones caged in Kursaal's

zoo. In the Jax cathedral, Sam boasts the Jax virus will infect Kursaal's visitors and spread throughout the galaxy.

Kadijk tries to utterly destroy the Jax cathedral with a second, planted excavator bomb, but Sam kills him. The Doctor captures her and pilots a shuttle toward the cathedral, then bails out in an escape pod. The shuttle collision and bomb explosion re-entombs the Jax. Thanks to the Doctor's medicines, Sam is cured of the infection. But unbeknownst to the Doctor on Kursaal, Cockaigne, now a Jax drone, continues to spread the Jax infection.

Memorable Moments

In a nice bit of symbolism, the Doctor and Sam, on a park adventure ride, successfully pilot the ship and "save" everybody. A Jax-possessed Sam tugs at the Doctor's hand and is surprised when it pulls away – because she's holding a Jax drone's severed paw.

Security man Bandros talks to a cigar-smoking, wolf-costumed tourist. Moments later, he finds the tourist's arm severed at the elbow, but still holding the cigar. He immediately looks in the back seat and sees a Jax, moments before he's killed.

Sex and Spirits

A younger Sam held hands with John Govan all the way home from the Coal Hill disco. She snuggled to his fake-fur collar, but the mope failed to take the hint. She spread a rumor that he was a lousy kisser.

As a mind-controlled Queen of the Jax, Sam wants the Doctor as her consort. An old woman thinks a moonlight-lit Doctor and Sam are going to kiss, but they simply go into the TARDIS instead.

Ass-Whuppings

The Jax cathedral is twice entombed. A Jax-infected Sam kills former HALF leader Bernard Cockaigne and Security Chief Paul Kadijk. She may have killed Gray Corporation owner Maximilian Gray.

Gray nails Sam with two of his nails and injects her with the Jax enzyme, thus transforming her into a quasi-Jax. Security officer Kadijk shoots Sam in the shoulder.

In a top grisly moment, Kadijk breaks the Doctor's fingers with the side of an axe – twice. He then knocks the Doctor out with the axe handle.

Continuity

The Doctor isn't fond of hospitals because of regeneration "birth trauma" suffered in "Doctor Who: Enemy Within." To gain his Mars-Venus shuttle pilot's license, the Doctor took ten monthly lessons from Frajnar Kumbolo, a soldier from the original Dalek wars. Halfway through his first day, the Doctor crash-landed into a caldera on Umbriel. Kumbolo merely said, "Same time next week, Doctor?" ("Robot")

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor knows about altocumulus and nimbostratus clouds. He carries everlasting matches. He earned a medical degree several lifetimes ago and knows how to perform autopsies.

The Doctor's pulse rate is 70 percent below human normal, his breathing is a quarter-normal and his temperature is obscenely low. One of his canine teeth is shorter than the others.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam can palm objects. She failed Year 7 biology. She's no good with computers, and once asked if a mousepad was good for Windows or Mac. Sam has an Uncle Norman, two nice classmates Melissa and Shobu, and two delinquent classmates named Mo and Mikey Clunes. She's watched "Babylon 5," and finds "Hemoglobin" the hardest word to spell.

• *Sam's parents:* Sam's Latin-speaking dad didn't swear. He worked with the Blood Transfusion Service. Sam's mother took self-help classes and had a dog named Plato.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* The Doctor's evasive on whether the TARDIS' abridged Information System details Sam's future.

Alien Races

• *Jax:* A vulpine species who hibernated in the Cronus system at least 1,000 years ago. On some Cronus worlds, Jax were worshiped but mostly driven out. The Jax symbol is a crescent of 13 points. Together with the outer circle, it represents the 14 planets the Jax inhabited, the last being Saturnia Regna. Jax typically follow a pack leader. When killed for real, Jax drones crumble to dust.

Alien Planets

Saturnia Regna (a.k.a. the Pleasure Planet of a Thousand Worlds):

Gray Corporation-owned planet, a Class Two leisure world.

Places to Go

Kursaal: Before budget cuts induced cutbacks, each section of this theme park highlighted a different culture in the Cronus system. Kursaal also had some space adventure rides.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Emits a high frequency that paralyzes Jax drones.

• *Jax Virus:* The Jax reproduce by infecting other humanoid life forms with an enzyme that metabolizes at body temperature. Only live hosts can become true Jax, though corpses can be animated as mindless Jax drones. The condition's reversible in live hosts until moonlight catalyses the transformation.

Organizations

Gray Corporation: Maximilian Gray served as owner, chairman and chief executive officer until his transformation into a Jax. After Gray's death, drug lords assumed control.

History

• One thousand years ago, humanoid settlers came to Saturnia Regna infected with the Jax virus. They built the Jax cathedral, but were killed off by the native wolves, who became the new virus carriers. The last of the Jax wolves hibernated in the Jax cathedral, waiting for humans to return.

• Cronus drug runners used Kursaal to traffic their clients.

At the End of the Day

A run-of-the-mill story that tries to be a werewolf story, but lacks too much horror and hair-raising suspense to be effective – barring one shocking moment with a severed arm. The choice of having the story's second half take place 15 years later disguises the thin plot, which could've easily ended halfway through.

Option Lock

Author: Justin Richards. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #8. Release Date: February 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

London, 1998.

Summary

With the TARDIS' artron energy drained and the time-ship grounded in modern-day England, the Doctor and Sam come upon the house of Norton Silver, an expert at hypnotism. But the nosy Doctor and Sam are captured by of an enigmatic brotherhood, a group with roots reaching back to the 13th century, led by Silver. For centuries, the brethren and their descendants have been infected by the group consciousness of the Khameirians, disembodied aliens who crashed on Earth. A nuclear explosion will give the Khameirians the energy they need to reconstitute, and the brotherhood, having gained much influence over the centuries, labors to make this happen.

Colonel Roskov, a brethren member, launches an unauthorized nuclear strike from the country of Krejikistan. This in turn forces the Americans to save themselves by revealing the existence of Station Nine, a space station capable of intercepting nuclear warheads with precision missiles before impact.

As the Americans turn control of Station Nine over to the United Nations to gain political favor, Colonel de Tannerie, another brethren member, is made station commander. By fooling the Pentagon into believing China has launched a nuclear attack, de Tannerie is given the arming codes to intercept the "missiles," but he trains Station Nine's arms on England to charge the Khameirian consciousness there with the energy of a detonation. Only when Captain Pickering, a British liaison to Station Nine and ally of the Doctor, realizes the China threat isn't real and kills de Tannerie, does all seem well.

Desperate to fire Station Nine's missiles, Silver forces the Doctor to pilot the TARDIS to Station Nine, intent on launching the missiles himself.

Pickering finally explodes Station Nine, killing himself, plus Silver and the Khameirian core within him, as the Doctor and Sam escape. The Doctor hopes the Khameirian consciousness died with Silver, as he had no descendants.

A month later, a much older version of Sam pays her respects to Silver's widow, and is chilled to learn that the woman is pregnant. She hopes her face does not betray her fear.

Memorable Moments

In a delicious bit of surrealism, the Doctor examines a painting and notices a reddish brown streak – the artist's blood from when he killed himself. En route to confront the possessed Earthlings and prevent nuclear Armageddon, the child-like Doctor stops to examine a kestrel.

Sex and Spirits

Sam quietly fancies Captain Pickering, and feels a part of herself die with him. The Doctor walks into a movie-watching room and comments, "I love a good flick," to which Sam replies, "I beg your pardon?"

Ass-Whuppings

In flashback, a Khameirian cruiser is shot down, destroying the crew's physical forms.

Continuity

Since *Kursaal*, the TARDIS visited a couple of paradise resorts, on a tour of the monuments of Marsuum, and (accidentally, the Doctor claims) a mountain in the Vasterial Wastes of Julana.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor can read several volumes in a night, and can recall them well enough to cite page numbers of certain passages. He has an advanced sense of mathematical angles. A Yogloth once attacked the Doctor. He carries field glasses and still drives like a maniac. The Doctor's voice – perhaps by sending out a cancellation wave, perhaps by his sheer charisma – can lower the volume of other people speaking.

He has been reading *The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde*. He has signed the Official Secrets Act several times, likely in various bodies.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam has been trying to grow her hair (successfully) and give up biting her nails (unsuccessfully).

• *Captain William Pickering:* British military officer, sent to Norton Silver to be trained to resist interrogation through mind control. Certain code phrases were already embedded in Pickering's cerebrum, as the phrase "Free will is not an illusion" sent him into an indomitable rage. The code phrases, ironically enough, created an option lock where he acted on pre-programmed instructions and had no power of choice.

• *Norton Silver:* The brotherhood leader formerly consulted for the Ministry of Defense and other organizations. He is skilled at hypnotism and brainwashing techniques.

Alien Races

• *Khameirians:* A notorious race, with an unparalleled will to live. Khameirians are wrinkled, with bone-like features and short, curled horns, resembling gargoyles in many ways. They were about four-feet tall, and their bulky shoulders looked like wing casings. The Doctor believes their homeworld is in the Antares sector.

Desperate Khameirians can transfer their life essences into a chamber. And when a group of Khameirians crashed to Earth, they put their mental consciousness into the so-called Philosopher's Stone, waiting for a burst of energy strong enough to allow them to reconstitute their bodies.

• *Yogloths:* Expert assassins, and great masters at conserving their effort. Yogloth have been known to turn and leave before their bolt is halfway down the guidance beam.

Places to Go

Station Nine: Station Nine was the ultimate nuclear war deterrent. It had a central spike adorned with aerials and receiving dishes. Commander Susan Rogers was head of Station Nine until it was turned over to the United Nations.

Most important, Station Nine had Nuke Kill capabilities. It could fire missiles at three times the speed of sound, each of which contain a dozen smart warheads that could seek a target and coordinate the trajectory of each target to avoid duplication.

Stuff You Need

• *The Philosopher's Stone:* About the size of an egg, the pale Philosopher's Stone seemed to be like marble, but looked as fragile as porcelain. It could absorb background energy, even artron energy, while trying to physically restore the Khameirian consciousness within it. Energy on the level of a nuclear blast was needed to cause true re-corporation. The Stone wasn't so much conscious as it possessed a desire or instinct. Given how much the brotherhood protected the Philosopher's Stone, it's uncertain how much it influenced stories of the alchemy tool of the same name, which was said to transmute lead into gold.

• *Khameirian Camouflage Field:* This worked in three ways. The first was visual, projecting an illusion to hide a Khameirian spaceship. The second was psychic – people who came too close felt ill. Finally, a physical barrier was in place.

Organizations

• *The Khameirian Brotherhood:* Originally composed of six men from the 13th century: Thomas Kilner, St. John Ross, Henry Tannian, William Wyrpe, Tobias Pryce and their leader, Matthew Siolfor. They were lonely and lazy, dabbling in philosophy when the crashed Khameirian collective mind influenced them to work toward the Khameirians' restoration. The six intermarried quite a bit, but their numbers and influence grew throughout the centuries, even as their names and nationalities slowly changed. Modern-day members included the brotherhood's leader, Norton Silver, plus Henry Tanner, Colonel Roskov and Pete Kellerman.

• *The American Government (1998):* In addition to President Dering, prominent officials include General Howard Kane, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and assassinated National Security Advisor Alan Ferrer. Jack Michaels serves as vice-president and Marion Hewitt is Secretary of State.

History

The Doctor was present when Pythagoras stopped outside a blacksmith's, heard the different blows of the hammers, and discovered that mathematics and other sciences, that is to say, numbers and the physical world, are connected.

In the 13th century, a Yogloth Slayer ship blasted a ship of the notorious Khameirians while they were rounding Rigellis III. The Khameirians crashed on Earth, and in addition to influencing Matthew Siolfor, lingering

mental images of them caused artists to use a recurring gargoyle theme.

The Doctor has apparently met Mrs. Dorothy Frances Gurney. He's discussed the historical Philosopher's Stone with Carl Jung.

At the End of the Day

A book that deliciously alternates between the quiet (the Doctor trapped in the pagan-loving English countryside) and the loud (nuclear armageddon is only minutes away). It's both a psychological heart-stopper with the dark potency of the Audrey Hepburn movie "Wait Until Dark," and all the technological adrenaline rush of a Tom Clancy techno-thriller. Though these elements might seem contradictory, they complement each other like beer and pretzels, meaning that in terms of pacing, variety and drama, other novels could learn a lot from Option Lock.

Longest Day

Author: Michael Collier. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #9. "Missing Sam" Part 1 of 4. Release Date: March 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Hirath, ex-Thannos system, 3177.

Summary

The TARDIS locates a temporal flux on Hirath, so the Doctor lands on the planet's moonbase to investigate. On Hirath, the Temporal Commercial Concerns (TCC) company leases land space to several races, who pay to dispose of their social and political dissidents. Impenetrable time-fiends, maintained from the moonbase, separate the land plots.

One of TCC's technicians, the drug-addict Vasid, becomes deranged and beams his partner Anstaar down to Hirath. When the Doctor and Sam arrive, the crazed Vasid also transports Sam to Hirath. The Doctor authoritatively calms Vasid down. The Time Lord also finds that the moonbase is actually an abandoned Kusk spaceship, converted by TCC, but filled with Kusks in cryogenic sleep.

In a cruel bit of timing, a Kusk rescue ship arrives and kills Vasid. The Doctor runs and transmats himself to Hirath. The Kusks follow, intent on retrieving a time-traveling probe they sent to study the histories of other races. The probe, which malfunctioned and destabilized the time barriers on Hirath, will give the Kusks information they need to conquer many planets. The initial Kusk mission to retrieve the probe failed, so the crew put themselves into suspended animation. Their ship was exploited by TCC.

Meanwhile, Sam endures the harshness of a Hirath penal colony. The Kusks arrive and decimate prisoners and jailers alike to secure the probe. Hirath's damaged time continue barriers spiral out of control and threaten to blow up half the galaxy if the probe isn't secured. The Doctor returns to the moonbase and considers fooling the probe's AI circuits into thinking it's in the past, when Hirath's moon was much closer. In a case of thought

becoming reality, the probe will rip itself apart.

Unfortunately, Sam drains the crippled moonbase's power by transporting back. With no other option, the Doctor uses his own body as a power conduit. The data hits the probe and it commits suicide. The electricity surge also kills the Kusks.

When Sam tries to give the electrocuted Doctor CPR, her passion for him bubbles over. She kisses and kisses him again and again, scrunching up his shirt. Embarrassed, a humiliated Sam runs away and knocks herself out. With the moonbase losing stability, TCC technician Anstaar finds Sam, bundles her into the Kusk ship and launches it, then takes an escape pod herself. The abandoned Doctor recovers on the moonbase without his companion at his side.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor talks to himself for lack of a companion. He cuffs a Kusk by opening the hatch cover of his VW. And probably best of all, Sam gives the Doctor some French "CPR." *(see next entry.)* Some readers liked it, some loathed it – but damn, you'll remember it.

Sex and Spirits

Sam's adoration for the Doctor runneth over as she admits to Tanith that she loves the Time Lord. While giving an electrocuted Doctor CPR, Sam kisses him with a passion that would make silent film actor Valentino blush, grabbing the fabric of his shirt all the while.

Among the more memorable innuendoes, the Doctor tells a recovering Anstaar: "Oh dear, you're as wet as I am," and "Pull down on the central shaft when I say now, all right?" referring to the sonic screwdriver. The Doctor says his Gallifreyan tutor was one of the most attractive people he'd ever seen. (Let's pray he's not referring to Borusa.) There's a joke about the rock/probe in the Doctor's trousers that he entirely fails to get.

Ass-Whuppings

A captured Sam is given a gun by the judicial K'Arme leader, told – purely for malice's sake – to bludgeon two rebels to death with the gun or watch as 200 prisoners are decapitated. Sam, felling sick, beats her head with the weapon until she's on her knees, senseless. The Doctor damn near fries himself connecting an electrical circuit with his body. Sam knocks herself semi-conscious running away from the unconscious Doctor she's just

smooched.

Continuity

The Doctor here gets separated from Sam, continues looking for her in *Legacy of the Daleks*, *Dreamstone Moon* and *Seeing I*. Time trees first appeared in *Genocide*. The Doctor finds out who's been installing artificial implants in people on Hirath in *Seeing I*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Gallifreyan symbol reminds the Doctor of his origins and what he rebelled against. He "sometimes" sleeps. His gray-blue eyes change to gray-green. The Doctor knows a neck pinch that holds people paralyzed. He's never heard of Hirath or the Kusks.

• *Samantha Jones:* Ordered to kill two men, Sam first trains her empty gun on her captor. When that doesn't work, she beats herself with it. (*See Memorable Moments*.) There were times at Coal Hill School that Sam just wanted to run away. Her parents live in Shoreditch as a reaction against *their* parents. (My, those rebels.) Sam tried drugs once, but it scared her to death. She then said no to caffeine, sex, gelatin and meat. By the way, she's let her hair grow out.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor's purple Volkswagen Beetle can fit through the TARDIS doors. Its filing cabinets contain first edition Dickens and first drafts of Alpha Centaurian poetry. Before materialization, the TARDIS' temporal probe registers the year. It can also scan for temporal disturbance at specific sites.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Their biofields makes them more-or-less immune to temporal embolisms, and might protect persons in close proximity also.

• *Kusks:* Big mamas, with phenomenal computer programming abilities. Kusks are massive, brown and shiny, with the texture and smell of charred flesh. They sport a thick white tongue, huge orange eyes and slender hands with six fingers. Their big-ass clubbed feet can kill with a kick.

A Kusk's fat thighs drip with a sweaty liquid that slops from the creature's midriff. Hardened breasts peer out from a bony ridge of muscle.

Their upper arms are like great clubs. A Kusk's head squats on a burnt brown neck. Its enormous skull has two giant orange-colored eyes. Their

jaws hang open. Their ears dangle like icicles. If you've seen the cover to *Longest Day*, you'd know Kusks have about as much sex appeal as Danny DeVito.

• *"Thannosians":* An unnamed race, native to the Thannos system. Anstaar and Vasid are members. Females have two tongues and an inner eyelid.

Alien Planets

• *Hirath:* Space is rented to the highest bidder, no questions asked. TCC cultivates time trees there. The planet's temporal distortion reaches beyond the planet's surface. Fifteen areas lack life. Several hundred toxic waste dumps hold lethal substances in the planet's future. Hirath only has one moon.

• *Ipmuss:* Alternate penal colony to Hirath, with a unique form of electromagnetic particles.

• *Thannos System:* Named for *Thenossus*, meaning "bead tapestry." The Inner World ancients apparently believed the planets were giant beads in the sky, blowing on space winds.

Stuff You Need

The Doctor's Volkswagen: Purple-colored. A force field protects the windscreen. Useful as a smokescreen if the Doctor hasn't scheduled a service.

Organizations

• *Thannos Multiplanetary Government (TMG):* The TMG, located on the Thannos Homeworld, owns the Thannos System, including the system's Inner Worlds and "backwater" Outer Worlds. There are 53 planets for Homeworld to absorb into its empire.

• *K'Arme:* Justice Control Force from the Inner Worlds, a rather nefarious organization.

History

The Kusks' numbers were greatly reduced in a long-ago war.

At the End of the Day

Longest Day's nickname of "The Longest Read" is an exaggeration – but not by much. It starts out with a feasible "trouble with time-rifts" premise, a la "Star Trek: The Next Generation," but digresses, gets snarled with too many hollow characters and flatlines somewhere in the middle. As villains, the Kusks are pretty clunky.

Legacy of the Daleks

Author: John Peel. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #10. Release Date: April 1998. "Missing Sam" Part 2 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, with Susan.

TARDIS Log

London, circa 2199.

Summary

Alone in the TARDIS, the Doctor wonders how to best search for Sam and receives a telepathic message of pain and anguish from his granddaughter Susan. He lands on Earth thirty years after the Dalek invasion, as two powerful domains, Domain London and Domain Haldoran, vie for control of the remnants of Earth. The Doctor meets Donna, a knight from Domain London. But shortly after, a mysterious scientific advisor named Estro gives Haldoran's forces Dalek weapons and they decimate London's troops.

The Doctor finds Susan's husband, David Campbell, and learns that Susan went to investigate a mysterious Dalek artifact designated DA-17. While searching for her, the Doctor, Donna and David are captured by Haldoran's men, and the Doctor realizes that Estro is his old enemy the Master. To be specific, Estro is the Master that fought the Doctor during his days with UNIT.

The Doctor and Donna overpower their guards and Donna kills Haldoran. The more-reasonable Barlow assumes command. The Doctor convinces Barlow that DA-17 is potentially dangerous must be secured. Upon trying to seize it, they battle the artifact's Daleks – the spearhead of a second invasion of Earth. The Doctor, David and Donna break into DA-17 and terminally overload the artifact's systems. They then re-encounter the Master, who seizes Susan and his ultimate goal: an experimental Dalek matter transmuter. Linked with his TARDIS' systems, the transmuter could destroy suns and cause other acts of mayhem. The Master tries to shoot the Doctor, but David throws himself in front of the bullet and dies.

The Master retreats to the barren world of Tersurus. Enraged by her husband's death, Susan uses the Master's telepathic circuits to create a psychic blast that overwhelms the villain and generates the message the Doctor heard. With the Master's Tissue Compression Eliminator, Susan forces the villain onto the surface of Tersurus and threatens to destroy the matter transmuter. When the Master refuses to yield it, Susan fires, destroying the device and ravaging the Master's body with energy. She then flees in the Master's TARDIS, setting the co-ordinates for a random destination.

The Time Lords sense the time disturbance on Tersurus and dispatch Chancellor Goth to investigate. After brainwashing Goth, the skeletal Master from here embarks on a scheme to renew his regeneration cycle in "The Deadly Assassin." The Doctor, left with the knowledge that Susan is safe, continues his search for Sam.

Memorable Moments

With his last breath, David agrees that the Doctor always keeps his promises. The Master refuses to give up the Dalek transmuter, so Susan shoots him.

Sex and Spirits

Susan uses her youthful body to make like bunnies with her husband David.

Ass-Whuppings

Some notable deaths for the "Whoniverse," including David Campbell and the Roger Delgado incarnation of the Master. The Master also kills a spy and a Dalek.

Susan kills two Robomen by ripping their control helmets off. The Daleks in DA-17 are wiped out. The Master miscalculates in an experiment and destroys a Dalek hatchery on Sayomin Three. The Master shoots the Doctor in the shoulder.

Continuity

Susan left the TARDIS and married David Campbell in "The Dalek Invasion of Earth." The Master raided the Daleks' files while in their employ. ("Frontier in Space"). He becomes the skeletal Master from "The

Deadly Assassin."

Events in this book and *War of the Daleks* aren't linked. The Doctor reads *The Songs of Innocence*, personally inscribed by Blake (*The Pit*). Susan and David's three "children" were first mentioned in "The Five Doctors" novelization. Leela and Andred proved in *Lungbarrow* that Time Lords and humans can interbreed, but it's not guaranteed, and Susan and David failed.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor drinks Earl Grey tea. Queen Elizabeth the First gave him a signed security pass. Leeds Castle is one of his favorite places.

He has excellent night vision, and says he has a Las Vegas act involving slight of hand. He can set up logic loops in Dalek circuitry and has several identical green coats in the TARDIS.

• *Susan Foreman Campbell:* Thirty years after leaving the TARDIS, Susan still looks 18 – a fact that strains her marriage to David, given that he's getting much older and her youth is hard to hide from friends. They have no children, but adopted three orphans and named them Ian, Barbara and David Junior. The kids moved out early, likely disturbed because Susan wasn't aging. She has worked as a Peace Officer for 20 years, and often fakes being 50 with a wig and make-up.

Susan possesses two hearts, can regenerate and can recognize both disguised travel capsules and the Doctor in his new body. Using a TARDIS' telepathic circuits, she can mentally direct her rage and anger in a focused blast. She can program a TARDIS for random coordinates and activate its defenses. She can reprogram Dalek logic circuits.

She sometimes blames the Doctor for abandoning her, but knows that isn't fair. The Doctor believes she would have been brainwashed and her thinking regimented if she'd stayed on Gallifrey.

• *The Doctor and Susan:* The Doctor hears Susan's telepathic cry of pain while traveling in the Vortex.

• *David Campbell:* Now 54, David is a Peace Officer, former boy scout and liaison to Lord London. Susan told him about regeneration.

• *The Master:* Took the identity of Estro, a word that's Esperanto for "Master." He has a mobile spy camera shaped like a fly and his Tissue Compression Eliminator, at close proximity, can affect a Dalek. The incarnation of the Master as played by Roger Delgado was the immediate predecessor to the skeletal version we see in "The Deadly Assassin."

• *The Doctor and the Master:* Can both speak Esperanto.

• *TARDISes:* Dalek scrambling technology prevents the Master's TARDIS from landing inside DA-17. His systems work with the Dalek matter transmuter.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* If Susan's anything to go by, natural-born Gallifreyans have two hearts, but Loom-born children such as the Doctor gain a second heart after their first regeneration. Regeneration violates Newton's Third Law. Some long-lived Gallifreyans are so complacent that getting a Gallifreyan waiter's attention can take about a week.

• *Daleks:* Can see using infrared. Hostile Dalek embryos will attack even Daleks.

Organizations

Peace Officers are humans who protect the public from Dalek artifacts.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Can set up a counter-pulse that shields people from Draconian infra-sonic sensors. It can also overload power packs and make them explode.

• *DA-17:* A Dalek research facility researching matter-transmission. It's also, unofficially, a back-up Dalek hatchery in case the Earth invasion failed.

History

• The Daleks killed the Royal Family and destroyed Buckingham Palace circa 2161. The Crown Jewels were evacuated during the occupation and remain missing.

• After the Dalek Invasion was defeated in 2167, England was divided into 100 domains which eventually pared down to 10. Some domains trained knights. Earth declined help from the colony worlds and preferred to solve its own problems. New London arose and rebuilding concentrated on the old city of Westminster.

• Several domains swore allegiance to either Domain London or Domain Haldoran, who both had independent power sources. Lord London's men killed him when he refused to surrender to Haldoran's forces, while

Haldoran was killed by Donna, his ex-wife and London's daughter. One of Haldoran's commanders, Barlow, assumed command of both regions.

At the End of the Day

A book that looks backward – and not into the right places. As with *War of the Daleks*, the compulsion to fill in gaps in continuity is just unnecessary. For more than 20 years since "The Deadly Assassin," viewers have been quite content not knowing how the Roger Delgado Master died, so there seems little point in revealing it now. Conversely, the book works to avoid the *new* meeting between the Doctor and Susan, refusing to build a new relationship between our main character and the companion he's clearly missed the most.

Dreamstone Moon

Author: Paul Leonard. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #10. Release Date: May 1998. "Missing Sam" Part 3 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Kusk ship and Dreamstone Moon, a satellite of Mu Camelopides. VI.

Summary

They're called dreamstones – hunks of alien rock that produce vivid dreams if you plunk one by your pillow. But when Anton La Serre, who records and sells his dreams, curiously tries a dreamstone, he's plagued by terrible nightmares. He therefore leaves for the Dreamstone Moon, the source of dreamstones, to discredit the industry and restore his business.

Meanwhile, Sam spends six days trapped aboard a Kusk ship (*see Longest Day*) and is finally rescued by the *Dreamstone Miner*. She joins a group of protestors seeking to protect the Dreamstone Moon's ecology, but the undertaking quickly turns deadly. In attempting to prepare a bunker for a dig-in, two of the protestors are killed, screaming about something that lies beneath the Moon's surface.

The Doctor tracks the Kusk ship to the Dreamstone Moon to find Sam, becoming concerned about the Moon's high frequency of moonquakes. The Doctor examines some dreamstones and concludes that the entire Dreamstone Moon is a living entity and the dreamstones are bits of its brain. The dreamstone mining kills the creature bit by bit.

Earth's military declares a state of emergency because of the moonquakes and secures the Moon. The moonquakes worsen and the Entity creates illusions of strange aliens – Earth soldiers butcher themselves trying to shoot the mirages. In the chaos, La Serre and Sam are captured by tentacled aliens suffused with dreamstone particles – beings that are part of the Dreamstone Entity.

La Serre realizes his nightmares are coming from his special empathic link with the Dreamstone Entity. He enters a deep trance to communicate

with it. The Doctor realizes that the Dreamstone Entity can only act out of fear and instinct. It telepathically bonded with professional dreamer La Serre, and his dislike of dreamstone's ruining his trade galvanized the Dreamstone Entity into reacting against the miners. The Doctor enters La Serre's dreams and convinces him the Entity will likely kill thousands of people if it's not stopped. As the Doctor explains that there aren't any monsters, La Serre peacefully dies and the Entity falls quiet.

Dreamstone Mining Corp abandons operations on the Moon and Sam forced to evacuate. Humiliated because she again left the Doctor behind, Sam takes an evacuation shuttle to Ha'olam before he can collect her. The Doctor is left to ponder that a maturing Sam doesn't need him anymore.

Memorable Moments

Sam understands, to her dismay, that her spider-alien friends are *serious* about mating and getting eaten. The final killer scene, when the Krakenite Aloisse suggests the Doctor go after Sam and he waffles.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor kills Anton La Serre with an argument, saving thousands of lives. The captain of the military dropship *Royale* destroys his ship, killing 1,000 crewman, fooled by the Dreamstone Entity's illusions.

Sam has a hell of a day. She pukes herself sick while eating mushy green stuff from alien eggs. She twice gets hit by decompression and perforates a lung. She's accidentally whipped by Krakenite and dreamstone tentacles. She falls off a ledge, gets her throat burned by hot gasses and inhales a lot of smoke. A plasma bolt burns her skin. *And then* she practically passes out upon hearing the Doctor's dead. Wimp.

Continuity

The Doctor has the cat he was given in *Legacy of the Daleks*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's retinal scan suggests he might be of Partriscisnad origin. ("That's a new one," he remarks.) He can put temporal tracers on people. He can speak in Krakenite clicks, though it's unclear if this is a function of the TARDIS translator or a natural ability.

• *The Doctor and Samantha Jones:* The Doctor suspects Sam declined to

contact him via communicator because she was doing well and growing as a person. He ultimately can't decide how much Sam is his responsibility.

• *Dreamstone Entity:* The Entity could generate mountain-sized illusions and create solid entities. It likely started life as an orbiting crystal, a child of its mother planet, Mu Camelopides VI.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS holds an implant suitable for Krakenite eyes.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS:* The Doctor can touch the telepathic circuits and thereby discover where the Ship's landed.

Alien Races

• *Krakenites:* Multi-tentacled creatures, with a single eye, rubbery skin and a beak-like mouth. Krakenites can survive vacuum for 30 minutes, have heard of Gallifreyans and can cocoon objects.

• *Arachnons:* Arachnons, as the name implies, are a spider race that lead fulfilling lives until they mate and get eaten (fun, *lots* of fun, then death). Males who act alike pair off as platonic companions before then, so that one of them survives to raise the children. Dead arachnons are honored with painted bone statuettes called "soul totems," which are cocooned.

• *Zmm-Zmm:* Insectoid natives of Occam's World. A cardinal insult merits your forfeiting a pint of blood every week to feed the grubs of the insulted party.

Alien Planets

• *Dreamstone Moon:* Satellite of Mu Camelopides VI, with low gravity – about 10 percent of Earth. Dreamstone Moon's star system eventually became an Earth colonial territory.

• *Occam's World:* Two-sunned human colony world.

Stuff You Need

• *Dreamstones:* If you can't dream, drop one of these puppies by your pillow and it'll kick-start your head. You can't tell a dreamstone's quality by appearance. Rather, you have to go by obscure, somewhat vague qualities such as "emotional resonance" and "color." The refining process destroys 95 percent of the dreamstones mined.

• *General Intelligence Portable Thought Files (a.k.a. GIPTF, gyps):* Media format on which dreams are recorded for playback.

Organizations

Dreamstone Moon Mining Company: Had rights to mine dreamstones and employed 4,000 people.

History

• Demonstrators protested weather control on Earth in the 2040s.

• Records exist in this period of the Doctor's involvement with UNIT and Brigadier Lethbridge-Stewart.

At the End of the Day

There's some good science fiction, including dream artists, quasi-human felines and nonchalant spiders who mate and get eaten; and some bad science-fiction, such as cliched moon-sized entities (the crystalline entity from "Star Trek: The Next Generation" comes to mind). *Dreamstone Moon* gets hamstrung continuing the "Sam-is-missing" storyline started in *Longest Day*. Sam and the Doctor share the same story but don't meet, and like overwatered Jell-O, the whole thing just doesn't gel.

Seeing I

Authors: Jonathan Blum and Kate Orman. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #12. Release Date: June 1998. "Missing Sam" Part 4 of 4.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

City of El Nath and Oliver Bainbridge Functional Stabilisation Centre, Ha'olam, all late 22nd century. Side trips are made to Gallifrey and Neo-Sydney for costume repair.

Summary

Having survived the perils of Dreamstone Moon, Sam is evacuated to the planet Ha'olam, where she finds herself destitute with no job and few skills. She spends a brief stint doing entry-level data entry for INC, an electronics firm and maker of interfacing eye implants, but finds the job soulless and quits.

The Doctor, captured while illegally searching INC's employment records for Sam, is imprisoned for espionage at the Oliver Bainbridge Functional Stabilisation Centre. At first, he doesn't think escaping will be difficult, given his talents. But the Time Lord tries to escape at least 106 times – and fails. Perhaps even worse, the center staff are nice to him and the accommodations pleasant.

The emptiness of doing nothing slowly consumes the Doctor. He finally realizes a secret implant, placed directly on his eye, allows a software program named DOCTOR to monitor his activities and predict his behavior, but he lacks the tools to remove it.

Three years pass. Sam eventually becomes a worker at Eurogen Village, a community for displaced Eurogen Corporation workers. But when INC purchases Eurogen Corporation and closes down the Eurogen Village, Sam makes it her crusade to expose INC's amoral business practices.

With some allies from the ex-Eurogen Village, Sam hacks into INC's medical databases. In doing so, she finds a record of the Doctor's imprisonment. The TARDIS, by telepathically projecting itself as a silver

cat, locates Sam and she instigates a jailbreak by setting the prison library on fire. Sam and her Eurogen friends help the Doctor escape using the TARDIS, which painfully removes the Doctor's eye implant.

Probing into INC's illicit use of Gallifreyan technology, the Doctor and Sam find a crashed alien spaceship with many types of alien equipment. It belongs to the centaur-like I aliens, a gestalt race that seed technology on various planets and later "harvest" the developments. The I, fearing the Doctor will now summon the Time Lords, storm the INC base and begin strip-mining the technology.

DOCTOR, having some of the Doctor's personality to better understand him, recognizes the threat the I poses and aids Sam in shutting down key I technology. The Doctor uploads DOCTOR into the I's organic spaceship to free it from their control and break the I's group consciousness. The plan succeeds, and the I become directionless drones.

The Doctor recovers from the I a pair of stolen eyes, belonging to a Time Lord named Savar, and prepares to take the eyes back to Gallifrey. DOCTOR, in typical Doctor-fashion, departs to wander the Universe. Sam considers staying on Ha'olam, but decides she has grown out of her infatuation with the Doctor. Deciding she can accomplish great good by traveling with the Doctor again, Sam departs with the Time Lord for new adventures.

Memorable Moments

Sam, shackled as a data-entry worker, ponders that you don't need to be turned into a Dalek or a Cyberman to lose any trace of humanity. After three years of the Doctor trying to escape and not being punished, Correctional Officer Rifaat breaks down and beats the toast out of the Doctor. The Time Lord responds: "Finally." Sam and friends try not to listen to the Doctor's screams as the TARDIS removes the eye implant. The non-vindictive Doctor later bounds up to Dr. Akalu, taunts him about his escape, and kisses him on the nose.

Sex and Spirits

Sam carries on a short but passionate romance with Paul, a Eurogen worker assigned to teach Sam about life on the settlement. Sam loved Paul because he shared the Doctor's language and habits, but the relationship only lasted five months. Her feelings for the Doctor, in fact, drove a wedge between her and Paul.

The Doctor comments there's nothing improper about Sam's attempt to give him mouth-to-mouth resuscitation in *Longest Day*. Sam comments: "There is when you try to get the tongue in."

Sam finally reconciles her passion for the Doctor and accepts him as a platonic traveling companion. That said, at story's end, she puts an almighty smooch on the Doctor's lips – just for good measure.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor's eye implant paralyzes him. He screams with pain as the TARDIS removes it.

Continuity

The bats Jaspar and Stewart still inhabit the TARDIS. A tailor in Neo-Sydney gives the eighth Doctor a *real* fancy-dress outfit ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within"). Leonardo da Vinci ("City of Death") taught the Doctor some brushwork.

The fate of Savar is revealed in *The Infinity Doctors*.

INC owns a controlling share in TCC, the company that experimented on prisoners on Hirath (*Longest Day*). The I's arsenal includes Caxtarid weapons (*Return of the Living Dad*). The transplant of a time tree from Hirath (*Longest Day*) to Tractis (*Genocide*) was likely the I's doing.

After *Genocide*, the Doctor fell asleep for 28 straight hours and fully recovered in a week. The TARDIS circuits were first incarnated as a cat in the Cat's Cradle trilogy. DOCTOR meets FLORANCE (*SLEEPY*) and they travel together.

Sam has become very aware of the existence of "Dark Sam" (*Alien Bodies*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor has a tumble-drier from Mars that cleans and repairs his clothes, which explains how he always wears the same outfit. His bathroom is white with house planets and a huge old-fashioned bath. The Doctor's respiratory bypass system kicks in if he falls asleep in the bathtub.

The Doctor's TARDIS computer terminal is part neural relay processor, part steam engine and part Apple II. He uses the alias "James Alistair Bowman." He once went bungee jumping from a plane. He thinks about

destroying the eye implant by gouging his left eye out, but can't do it.

He spent all of July 26, 2202, looking at a kaleidoscope. He can touch the sentient I ship and communicate directly through his nerve endings.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam's first TARDIS tenure lasted 10 or 11 months. She lands on Ha'olam as an 18 year old and leaves 21.

In London, she volunteered for a soup kitchen a couple of times. She's a sixth form dropout. She was on the Amnesty mailing list, but didn't go on marches. She speaks a little French and learns to type. Her time with INC teaches her some computer hacking skills. Her T-Shirt says the owner is fond of doing bellyflops in front of bulldozers.

• *Bernice Summerfield:* Benny appears to have written another archaeology work, this one entitled *Down Among the Dead Men Again*.

• *DOCTOR:* An AI security program that could skim only the Doctor's surface thoughts; it couldn't penetrate the Doctor's deepest memories.

• *Savar:* When the Doctor was a Gallifreyan student, Savar was a Time Lord who went on a mission but suddenly had to abandon his TARDIS. Savar's lifepod was mysteriously attacked and stripped bare by mysterious alien marauders, but none of the equipment would work without his eyeprint. The I stole his eyes, and when he finally reached Gallifrey, Savar's optic nerves tried unsuccessfully to regenerate for hundreds of years.

• *Life:* Another Eternal such as Death and Time. *Dr. Akalu:* Prison morale officer who studied the Doctor for three years.

• *Umphs:* A deliberate crossbreeding of anti-anti-virus routines and monster code from "Doom XIII." Umphs work in concert to be monumentally stupid and therefore sabotage your computer system.

• *The TARDIS:* The Ship somehow dusts itself. It can perform eye surgery on the Doctor, although he had to remain conscious for the eye-implant removal. The TARDIS data transfer module can morph to fit many plugs. Over the phone, the Doctor can give someone directions on how to pilot the TARDIS.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* A Time Lord's retinas are so sophisticated, they can some thinking on their own. In time, Gallifreyan retinas almost replaced fingers as the main method of communicating with machines.

• *I:* Centaur-like nomads with insect-like eyes. The I look like they're

made from broken chunks of blue-stained glass. The I can harmlessly secrete blue crystals through people to scan them.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Mark 9 Sonic Screwdriver:* It can blast the walls of the I ship apart, and also makes milkshakes.

• *The Doctor's Volkswagen:* It currently has dents, scratches and no engine.

• *I Implants:* Can link with IXNet and communicate with other implant-wearers.

• *Tinclavic* ("The Visitation"): A metallic polymer, ideal for building spacecraft because you can easily lock and unlock its molecular structure and therefore change its conductivity and magnetism. Many spacefaring species secrete it.

Organizations

• *Eurogen Corporation:* Workers who break their contracts and leave early must agree to have all Eurogen training and information erased from their minds.

• *IXNet:* INC's internal communications network, with 407,328 employees wired into it. *Gallifreyan Mind VII Probe:* Used by INC to send memos.

Ships

I Ship: The size of an intersystem vessel, an elegant gunmetal-gray, with veins of copper and black on its hull. The I attack by spiraling down their ship's metallic lines. Parts of it are made from tinclavic.

History

• DOCTOR threatens to expose secret, unspecified information about the Doctor's meeting with Amelia Earhart.

• In the 21st century, Middle Eastern countries turned to high technology and space industries as Earth's oil began to run out. As a result, numerous colony worlds are a mixture of cultures and languages.

• I implants were introduced on Ha'olam about 10 years before the Doctor and Sam's arrival.

• Cloning mindless humans for experimentation was banned in the early 21st century.

• Preciously little data exists on the Doctor, but DOCTOR locates 346 reports of TARDIS sightings.

At the End of the Day

Having almost exhausted the options for torturing the Doctor, Blum and Orman top themselves, turning the "Who" formula of imprisonment and brutality on its ear as the 1,000-plus-year-old Doctor goes near-mad in a prison where people treat him nice. *Seeing I* is an elegant and beautiful examination of how much the Doctor and Sam are acclimated to and a part of the violence they fought against, reducing the imprisoned Doctor to the level of a mere *nuisance* and then building him up again. The loneliness the Doctor and Sam feel for each other certainly fleshes out her character like no other book so far, and actually – and I hate to say this – is very, very rare proof that she's an "ideal" companion for the Time Lord. Overall, *Seeing I* shows rare vision, one of the best "Who" novels you're likely to read, with a lack of action, but not a lack of story.

Placebo Effect

Author: Gary Russell. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #13. Release Date: July 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Parked in space, time unknown; Earth, 23rd century; Micawber's World, late July, 3999.

Chronology

The Doctor and Sam spend a few holidays TARDIS-traveling after *Seeing I*.

Summary

For once, the Doctor takes Sam to a happy occasion. On the artificial planet of Micawber's World, his two ex-companions, Stacy Townsend and the Martian Ssard, are getting married. The ceremony is interrupted by the Church of the Way Forward, a religion that doesn't believe in inter-species breeding. Fortunately, Chase Carrington, who owns the planet, restores order and sends Stacy and Ssard on their honeymoon.

Micawber's World is also hosting the Intergalactic Olympic Games, though the Doctor's more interested in a Foamasi corpse being taken in for autopsy. Involving himself as usual for no apparent reason, the Doctor meets the Foamasi ambassador Green Fingers and realizes the criminal Foamasi Lodges are fighting each other. The Dark Peaks Lodge is forbidden to operate on Micawber's World, but has been infiltrating the Carrington Corp.

Meanwhile, geneticist Miles Mason has been infected by the insectoid Wirrrn, the Doctor's old enemies. Mason has developed time-release pills containing the Wirrrn infection. He secretly distributes them to Olympic athletes, allegedly to improve their performance. Actually, the pills are fast-acting or will lay dormant for months, then transform the athletes into Wirrrn and infect their homeworlds.

The Foamasi Lodges eliminate all Dark Peaks agents, including those

infected by the Wirrrn. The Wirrrn larvae then attack the Games. Athletes who took the fast-acting pills transform into Wirrrn grubs and chaos breaks out. But because the Wirrrn larvae are not fully developed, the Space Security Service beats them back.

Sam's investigations locate the Wirrrn's hideout, and the Doctor confronts the Wirrrn Queen. The Wirrrn, desperate for heat and energy, have holed up next to an electrical generator, even though they are vulnerable to electricity. As a fight breaks out, the Doctor tricks the Wirrrn Queen into swinging her pincers at Sam. The Queen hits the generator and electrocutes herself.

The surviving Wirrrn larvae break for freedom in two space carriers. One is destroyed, but the other docks with a deep-space cruiser and escapes to Andromeda. The Doctor manufactures a drug that purges the remaining athletes of the Wirrrn infection, though many will never be totally healthy. The Olympic Games plan to re-open in three weeks.

Memorable Moments

Stacy and Ssard's wedding is a nice bit of inter-TARDIS romance, the sort that's good to see. Sam, irritated that a TARDIS holographic globe is bossing her around, shoves it in a microwave and turns it on. The amalgamated Foamasi/Wirrrn creatures are vile to think about.

Sex and Spirits

Like Sam, Stacy was innocently in love with the Doctor. The sexual naivete of Kyle Dale, a member of the Church of the Way Forward, attracts Sam, but they part with only a small kiss. The Doctor crafts their likenesses in grass statues to help them remember each other.

Sam fancied the rock band Shortlist's lead singer because he reminded her of her classmate Stevie.

A double entendre as the Doctor comments on his extra-dimensional pockets: "You'd be surprised what else I've got tucked away in them." It's also said he "knows how Jadeans like to be touched."

Ass-Whuppings

Every Parad on Micawber's World dies from telepathic shock caused by the Wirrrn Queen. The Wirrrn Queen's telepathic message to her drones hammers the Doctor.

Continuity

The Technix debuted in "The Daleks' Master Plan." Two yellow-and-purple spotted horses usher at Stacy's wedding ("The Curse of Peladon"). It's suggested this story sparks the future massacre of the Wirrrn in Andromeda, mentioned in "The Ark in Space." The fourth Doctor repelled the Wirrrn's invasion of Space Station Nerva in that story. The Foamasi appeared in "The Leisure Hive."

While Sam was at a Greenpeace convention, the Doctor visited Benny in *The Dying Days*. He also traveled with Stacy and Ssard (*Radio Times* comics) for a year. Sam acquires a Meep toy, based on cuddly creatures hell-bent on conquest (*Doctor Who Magazine* comic strips).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* After books upon books of speculation, the Doctor concretely admits that an extra dimension is sewn into his pockets. The fourth, sixth and eighth Doctors are friends with Frankie, a Pakharian tailor. Three of the Doctors have been friends of the Federation Chairman. The Doctor does not know Dal Karlton, head of Space Security Service.

The Doctor has never had faith in terms of religion, but he has a birth sign. He believes John Gielgud from "Arthur 2: On the Rocks" is one of Earth's finest actors. The Doctor recognizes works by the artist Quinaposki. He cannot speak Foamasi, even with the TARDIS translator. He has gray-blue-green eyes.

He sleeps, a rare event. He also learns how to be a best man at a wedding.

• *The Doctors:* We concretely establish that different Doctors have different abilities. The eighth Doctor has the ability to read the patterns of time. He can therefore pull out bits of information about a person's timeline, dropping hints as to their past or future ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

Yet the eighth Doctor does not possess the third Doctor's mastery of unarmed combat, a talent achieved without any training. Nor does he have the seventh Doctor's ability to disrupt the brain's electrons by touch ("Battlefield") and to change moods and emotions. All Doctors but the fifth can discern praxis gases ("The Caves of Androzani").

• *Samantha Jones:* Has an interest in car maintenance and tinkers with the Doctor's Volkswagen. Now 21, Sam considers a trip back home. Sam learns of the Doctor's travels with Stacy and Ssard, but doesn't know about

Victoria or Tegan.

Sam's mother wasn't into religion. Her father was a lapsed Catholic, so they never went to Church. Curiously, her father, a doctor, also taught her to regard science as the ultimate truth. Sam went to confessional once, looking for answers. She now struggles with adhering to a God who allows war to happen, but is open to the idea.

Sam talks to herself. She went on campaigns to save whales, stop animal experiments, support gay liberation and demonstrate against racism.

She learns to use the Doctor's sonic screwdriver as a sonic vibrator (no, not for sex) and laser cutter.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* Sam carries the Doctor's ID. They've discussed making a sonic screwdriver for her. The Doctor recognizes how much Sam's matured.

• *Stacy Townsend:* Stacy became sterile as a result of traveling with the Doctor. She adheres to the Christian faith. She works in an office on Antares, sorting applications from planets wishing to join the Federation. Her parents are Christopher and Mary Townsend – the Doctor brought them to the wedding.

• *Ssard:* The Martian Ssard works for the Martian Commission on Io, locating fringe Martian groups who demand a return to Mars' warlike past. Ssard has some sympathies for them, but favors living in the present.

• *Stacy and Ssard:* This pair left the TARDIS two years ago. They had a honeymoon dinner on the world of Kolpasha. The Doctor previously told them about Sam.

• *Green Fingers:* Green Fingers leads the Foamasi Government and Bureau of Investigation, and serves as Foamasi Ambassador to the Federation. He also serves as the official Foamasi poisoner and assassin. Green Fingers is extremely thin, and his skin is a sickly green-yellow. He has no Lodge affiliation, but the Lodge Patriarchs report to him.

• *The TARDIS:* Can automatically dematerialize to avoid a space collision. It contains an ATM and a bust of Rassilon. Despite the TARDIS cathedral, it doesn't have a place of worship. The TARDIS once materialized in Rockefeller Plaza amid a bunch of shocked ice skaters. It contains a Lamerdine Spectral Bio-Analyzer and a holographic globe that projects holograms of planets. The TARDIS makes a fine cup of Darjeeling tea. The Ship wasn't helpful when the third Doctor had an interest in vehicles.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Have an arrangement of hemoglobin different from most Federation races.

• *Wirrrn:* Grubs often cling together, and have no mouths. They ingest without biting. Wirrrn Queens are 10 times larger than other Wirrrn and lay eggs. Queens can send telepathic commands to other Wirrrn, and allocate drones extra doses of independence. Queens live for centuries.

• *Foamasi:* Foamasi have hollow bones with double-joints every few centimeters. Most of their bodies are liquid, with small organs. Their tails retract. They can therefore compact their natural forms into synthesized espionage suits and look like other beings for up to 18 hours at a time. Some Foamasi assassins use self-elongating knives.

• *Martians:* Martian marriage ceremonies are brief, predetermined when the participants are young to keep the bloodlines pure. Rubbing a Martian's soft reptilian skin causes pleasure.

• *Technix* ("The Daleks' Master Plan")*:* The bald Technix are immaculate creatures, and supreme strategists for the Space Security Service. They're rare and expensive to clone and maintain.

Alien Planets

• *Earth:* The Guardian of the Solar System, in terms of importance, is comparable to the modern-day United States president. The Admin-proctor of Earth or Colonial Deputy of the Mars colonies equal the British and French prime ministers.

• *Micawber's World:* One of the Leisure Planets, and, according to Professor Thripstead's *Guide to Having Fun in the Milky Way*, one of the galaxy's most popular holiday locations.

It's an artificial planet developed by Carrington Corp., circa 3984, on an asteroid between Pluto and Cassius. Chase Carrington named it after his mother's maiden name. Forty-three geostationary space shuttles keep Micawber's World from drifting. Specks of a neutron star at the planet's center provide gravity. A pulsator orbits the planet, providing some light and heat, but a power generator keeps the planet from truly icing over. Carrington City is the World's main settlement.

Micawber's World has a Church of England church, one of the few off-Earth Christian churches.

• *Io:* The center of the Federation has an interspecies university.

• *Liasici:* Planet destroyed in the Foamasi/Argolis war but rebuilt by the Foamasi. It effectively serves as the Foamasi homeworld.

Places to Go

• *Intergalactic Olympic Stadium:* Nicknamed the 7,438th Wonder of the Universe, even though there are not 7,347 others (there are 700). It's four times the size of an Earth stadium, and cost the equivalent of three planets' agricultural profits to build.

• *Foamasi Temple:* Found on Micawber's World, it looks like a granite structure from Earth, 1924.

Stuff You Need

• *Wirrrn Pills:* An unknown element in the pills, which attaches to each molecule, triggers the Wirrrn transformation. Red-colored Wirrrn pills contain quick-working doses. Blue-colored pills have long-acting stronger doses.

• *Surveillance Dust:* A rather ingenious form of heat-sensitive microscopic particle recorders that makes verbal recordings.

Organizations

• *Foamasi Lodges:* There are four main Lodges: West, South, Twin Suns and Dark Peaks. For whatever reason, each Lodge's voice synthesizers follow a certain theme.

Each Lodge is headed by Patriarchs and has a different *modus operandi*. The West Lodge prefers infiltration; the South Lodge, extortion; and the Twin Suns Lodge favors blackmail. The Dark Peaks Lodge, only a couple of centuries old, has no official standing and is barred from operating on Micawber's World. They favor execution.

• *Carrington Corp:* Owned by Chase Carrington, Carrington Corp owned the Olympic copyrights, trademarks and registration for 3999. Carrington's assistant Ms. Sox served as head of security, and assumed command after his death.

• *Church of the Way Forward:* Religious group that doesn't discriminate, but believes that the Goddess teaches that races must not interbreed. Church leader Reverend Lukas fell under the Wirrrn's sway. *The Way Forward* is a noted Church text.

• *Galactic Federation:* There are 1,362 races in the Federation's

database. The Foamasi are Federation members.

History

• The Wirrrn's origins are unknown. In Andromeda, millions died fighting them. The Wirrrn Queen destroyed on Micawber's World colonized many planets with Swarm Leaders and Secondary Queens.

• Church leaders of the mid-20th century started the abolitionist movement that ultimately created the Galactic Federation. Christian missions went to many worlds. Missionaries interceded and saved the G'narlan civilization, prevailing against Earth's military junta of the time.

• The Intergalactic Olympic Games were held in 3991 and 3999, with 18 races taking part. By 3999, the rest of the galaxy adopted Earth's dating system and 24-hour clock.

• In 3999, Earth underwent religious fervor. Blakkis Moon 3 declared itself quarantined from a space infection. Paper is very rare.

• Also in 3999, a Royal Family exists. Prince Artemis, the Queen's son and Duke of Auckland, met his wife-to-be in a food mall. They had a set of twins, but divorced. King Garth made some serious political and social blunders. When he died from natural causes, there was much rejoicing.

• The Foamasi haven't waged war for 1,000 years.

At the End of the Day

Dreadfully boring. The wedding of Stacy and Ssard is interesting enough, but then pages and pages go by with terribly disjointed plots about the Foamasi, the Wirrrn and the Way Forward Church, with nothing really happening. There's a meaningless religious debate in the middle, purely for space filler. And just when the book shows a spark of life at the end, the Wirrrn stupidly defeat themselves.

Vanderdeken's Children

Author: Christopher Bulis. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #14. Release Date: August 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Deep space and the *Cirrandaria* hold, 3123; near Emindar, 3124; (via shuttle time-travel) 3143; *Cirrandaria*, in orbit around Emindar, circa 4123.

Summary

A discontinuity in the Time Vortex draws the Doctor's attention, and he traces it to a gigantic alien derelict in deep space. Ships from two competing civilizations have made claims to the alien vessel. One is a battle cruiser from Nimos, the other is the passenger liner *Cirrandaria* from Emindar.

The Doctor joins a *Cirrandaria* expedition to the derelict and concludes it's an experimental bridge through hyperspace, capable of teleporting vast battle fleets. An Emindar politician, J. Kale Rexton, admits that Emindar once found a similar derelict, badly damaged, and has been trying to repair it.

In the derelict's control room, the Doctor's party finds the alien controls perfectly labeled and described in English on little index cards. Rexton orders the controls photographed so Emindar can repair the damaged vessel in its possession.

Suddenly, gray, wraith-like beings overrun the *Cirrandaria*, kidnap many passengers and take them through the derelict's hyperspace tunnel. The Doctor leads two shuttles after them, but the ships emerge from the tunnel 20 years in the future. Both Emindar and Nimos are dead husks, having destroyed each other.

The Doctor realizes there's only one alien derelict, not two. At some point, the derelict in deep space will be damaged and thrown into the past for the Emindians to "find" and into repair.

The *Cirrandaria* is also in the future, reduced to a ghost-like, dephased

state by an upcoming catastrophe that damaged the derelict. The Doctor's party returns to the deep space derelict via the TARDIS. The ghostly *Cirrandaria* follows through the hyperspace bridge, hoping to rejoin with their former selves and stop the ship from being dephased.

Reinforcements from Emindar and Nimos arrive. Tensions flare hot and the first volley of the Emindar/Nimos war breaks out. The Doctor realizes the TARDIS can deliver a pulse that will destabilize the insane ghosts and kill them. But as the Doctor fires the pulse, Rexton tries to pilot the derelict back to Emindar and collides with a ship damaged from the battle.

The Doctor's pulse destroys the ghost *Cirrandaria*. It also puts the real *Cirrandaria* out of phase, *birthing* the ghostly duplicate it just destroyed and throwing it 1,000 years into the future. At the same time, the damaged derelict is blown into the past for Emindar to "find" and repair, conveniently using Rexton's information.

The Emindar/Nimos war proceeds and destroys both worlds. The solid *Cirrandaria*, safe in the future, re-colonizes Emindar. The Doctor labels the ghostly *Cirrandaria* crew "Vanderdeken's children," symbolic of the descendents of the mythical Flying Dutchman, cursed to a never-ending journey.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor, yet again the source of bad news, says that Emindar and Nimos are doomed and probably nothing can stop it. The Doctor: "All we can do now is limit the suffering."

Ass-Whuppings

Civilizations on Emindar and Nimos destroy each other – the battle fleets fight to the last, including the battle cruiser *Indomitable*. The Doctor terminates 2,000 ghosts aboard the de-phased *Cirrandaria*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* For once, the Doctor registers under his real name – something quite alien and virtually unpronounceable. He says he's been a solider and fought in multiple wars. He can read "almost any language" and smell subtle toxins.

The Doctor's made a hobby of post-spaceflight industrial archaeology, and wrote an article on it for *Interstellar Pangraphic*. He has never seen a

hyperspatial bridge like the derelict. The eighth Doctor has some hypnotic abilities. He can hack into Emindian computer systems.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam overcomes her dislike of guns to save crewman Dessel from a wraith.

• *The TARDIS:* The alien derelict's interference could make the TARDIS time-ram an object. The TARDIS' oil lamps, candelabra and torches don't seem to burn down or need refilling as often as they should. The TARDIS has an unreliable spaceship guide. It can monitor Emindian and Nimosian transmissions.

The TARDIS has a sleep room with a neural dampener that, at setting eight, neutralizes bad dreams. The TARDIS' interior is shielded from normal space and can sever the *Cirrandaria* ghosts' patterns.

Alien Races

• *Cirrandaria ghosts:* Intangible, and able to shape-shift into a myriad of animal forms. They didn't age and fed off organic life energy. Many of the crew went insane from this transformation, but some of the saner ones fashioned armor and weapons from the dephased *Cirrandaria*, the only substance that could hurt them. The ghosts could make other beings intangible, and use a vortex field to move themselves through space.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Can repel the *Cirrandaria* wraiths with ultrasonics. The screwdriver also radiates bright light.

• *The Doctor's Normalizer:* A torch-shaped device, ending in metallic discs that formed a projecting cone. It made the wraiths more solid or more intangible by combining sonic screwdriver frequencies, bioelectric wavelengths and a narrow-spatial distortion field.

Organizations

• *Galactic Federation:* Emindar and Nimos aren't members. A Federation Central Assembly exists on the planet Mizar.

• *Federation Moderators:* Identified by the symbol of the Federation shield, and scarlet and black bands. Moderators are highly respected and serve as independent troubleshooters. Their powers backed by the Federation. Non-Federation worlds respect them as impartial judges and juries.

Ships

• *Alien Derelict (aka hyperspatial bridge):* You might ask where this ship originated. It didn't. It was not made, it was not constructed. It just happened, the product of a closed time loop to bring about the destruction of two civilizations – as History intended. The derelict was tubular, its two ends separated by a gap of light years. Eight spires protruded from each end. Half of the ship extruded into hyperspace. The derelict, with the mass of a small asteroid, bent gravity to stress the time-space continuum and create a hyperspace tunnel.

• *Cirrandaria:* An Emindar stylized passenger liner, with a capacity of 2,000 passengers. It hailed from the Em Minor Spaceport.

• *Indomitable:* A Nimosian battle cruiser, shaped like a compact bullet, armed with plasma bolts and a tractor beam. It was destroyed in the great war between Emindar and Nimos.

• *Hermes of Cyrene:* Federation freighter that rescued Federation passengers from the *Cirrandaria*.

Time Travel

Many time effects must be balanced. For example, when Sam is regressed along her timeline to a 10 year old, a slab of organic material was aged the same amount.

If you try to twist space, such as with a hyperspatial bridge, you inevitably affect time. Closed time-loops are a damn menace.

• *Probability Nexus:* A mutable point in space/time where some history can be changed. The Doctor was unable, during a probability nexus, to save the civilizations on Emindar and Nimos, but restored the *Cirrandaria* crew to health.

Phenomena

Crazy as it sounds, objects in closed time loops are not created. They have no origin. They were never "born," "created," "crafted," "conceived" or any other term you might use if you had a Thesaurus about your person. The alien derelict fulfilled this function by appearing out of nowhere. It was shaped by a temporal nexus that was fueled by people's fears and hopes about the possibility of war. This feedback altered certain facts. The lock on the derelict's entry port, for example, had an easily solvable puzzle, since it was crucial the Emindians and Nimosians get aboard. The interior was

strangely accessible to humans. Every step of the way, events happened to make the derelict a target for Emindar and Nimos' greed. And it worked.

History

The Doctor told Shakespeare that people would mistake "Lay on, McDuff," for "Lead on, McDuff," but the Bard didn't listen.

At the End of the Day

So long as you understand the concept of closed-time loops, *Vanderdeken's Children* makes a lot of sense. You'll probably need two readings to absorb all the book's nuances, as with TV's "Ghost Light," but it's easier reading than you might think. The complexity's actually worth working out, delivering a time-travel puzzle with all the style, smartness and braveness of "The Next Generation." (You can even hum the "Next Gen" theme music at points. Trust me, it works.)

The Scarlet Empress

Author: Paul Magrs. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #15. Release Date: September 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Hyspero, Abbasid Era, Third Decade.

Summary

The Doctor and Sam, shopping on the planet Hyspero, a world inhabited by mythological, almost mystical alien creatures, where they find an abandoned bus. The Doctor recognizes the bus as a TARDIS belonging to Iris Wildthyme, a fellow Gallifreyan who's in love with him. Unknown to the Doctor, Iris is dying, poisoned from having eaten a Kaled mutant. The Scarlet Empress, the ruthless and cunning ruler of Hyspero, has offered to cure Iris if she reunited the Four – a mercenary band that acted as the Empress' assassins. The Empress suspects that one of the Four stole a glass jar that contains her ancestor, the *original* Scarlet Empress named Cassandra, and wants it returned.

In Iris' bus, the Doctor and Sam find one of the Four, the half-reptilian Alligator Man, tied up by Iris. In turn, they rescue Iris from the bottom of a well where the Alligator Man's savage dogs trapped her. The adventuresome Alligator Man, now understanding that Iris seeks to reunite his old colleagues, agrees to help Iris' group. They embark on a quest and finds the other Four members: the cybernetic Duchess, the Bearded Lady and the Mock Turtle. The Bearded Lady admits that she stole the Empress Cassandra, even as Iris' condition deteriorates.

The Doctor and his allies discuss how to deal with the Empress' treacherous nature and the Empress, sensing their betrayal, sends a variety of threats against our heroes. The Duchess falls in love and merges with a giant spider, but the newly combined Spider-Duchess falls in battle to the Empress' giant walrus. Finally, the Doctor's party arrives at the Scarlet Palace. Cassandra, convinced her descendant has become a tyrant, destroys

the current Scarlet Empress with bolts of lightning and brings order back to the throne.

The Doctor then appeals to his ally Kabikaj, a djinn of the insect world, for live-restoring honey and that heals Iris. She sneaks away in her TARDIS, but sends the Doctor and Sam a video of her regenerating into a sexy blonde bombshell.

Memorable Moments

The emergence of the cybernetic Spider Duchess and the subsequent Duchess/Walrus battle proves deliciously surreal. There's also an odd dream image of all the Doctors' heads on spikes, giving advice. Iris' regeneration at the book's climax is gleeful and allows us to celebrate the return of youth.

Sex and Spirits

Iris flirts with the Doctor, claiming to have some type of love for him. She frightened the Doctor by proposing to him once, in Venice. Iris kisses the Doctor on the cheek, and her regeneration into a younger body opens up possibilities.

Ass-Whuppings

Townsfolk in Fortalice kill each other as part of the Grand Fracas. The Alligator Man explodes a giant walrus. The Four destroyed a Dalek scout ship. Scarlet Empress Julia and her *Kristeva* crew were lost in battle with hundreds of birds.

The Doctor and Sam endure painful insect stings.

Continuity

The Doctor's frightened by spiders ("Planet of the Spiders").

Iris Wildthyme first appeared in *Short Trips:* "Old Flames," and reappears in *More Short Trips:* "Femme Fatalle."

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor's memories of his previous incarnations can be a bit clouded. His previous selves sometimes speak to him and consider him "the young chap, the new boy, the tea boy." The various Doctors have

scribbled commentary in his library books. The eighth Doctor dislikes the dress sense of the sixth and seventh Doctors.

The Doctor dislikes analysis, deconstruction, psychology and psychoanalysis. His eyes are gray, then turn blue-green. He collects books, yet doesn't seem to read them. He's a big of the comic series *X-Men*.

The Doctor is still somewhat confused about his origins. He doesn't know much about Gallifrey's Southern Hemisphere. He's visited Hyspero before. He can pilot Iris' TARDIS.

The Doctor once hailed rationality, but now sees himself as a ethnomethodologist. He still holds fast to the beliefs of science, but isn't so quick to dismiss "sorcery" in different contexts. He hates hierarchies, especially hierarchies of truths. On Hyspero, the Doctor can work "magic" like a Vizier and summon the insect djinn Kabikaj.

The Doctor's never been allergic to animals, except for a type of birds on Hyspero. He communicates telepathically with the Scarlet Empress. Until this story, a giant fish hadn't swallowed him. He knows theories on the morphology of the folk tale.

• *Samantha Jones:* She carries a saw-toothed blade. She can't stand poached eggs. She packs extra clothes in her knapsack, because her mother stressed the importance of clean underwear. Sam knows some hand-to-hand combat. She has seen "The Wizard of Oz." She wears a "Throwing Muses" T-Shirt.

Sam's grandmother is regarded as an embarrassment to her family, who think of themselves as "right-on" and enlightened. Sam gets along well with her grandmother.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* Sam suspects that deep down, the Doctor resents his alienation from Time Lord society…and to some extent, the Universe.

• *Iris Wildthyme:* Iris grew up in a great house in the southern mountains of Gallifrey. Dozens of Aunts ruled her family. Her favorite Aunt was named Baba. When Iris was quite small, her mother vanished with an off-worlder. After her Aunts died, Iris set out and found a wounded TARDIS, abandoned in the wilderness. The Time Lords leave her alone.

Iris' fifth incarnation is the older woman we meet in "Old Flames" and *The Scarlet Empress*. She regenerates into a sex kitten – about 30 with honey-blonde hair and a look of Jane Fonda about her.

Iris' astral self can travel on various animals and molecules and observe events secretly. She glows orange when she's in a healing trance.

Unlike the Doctor, Iris hasn't had a companion for years. Iris smokes, drinks heavily and listens to Top 40 music. She knows a specially adapted version of Venusian Aikido.

• *Iris and the Doctor:* Iris has met all of the Doctor's incarnations. She knew the Doctor's first self before his hair turned white, and says he was a bruiser with a feel of old Empire about him. She had Christmas dinner with the fifth Doctor, Tegan and Turlough. Iris can sense the Doctor's presence, perhaps by telepathy. She has recorded all of the Doctor's adventures, and re-tells them to people as if they were her own.

• *The Scarlet Empress (a.k.a. The Queen of Jam, the Glass Sultan):* The current Scarlet Empress, unlike her grandmothers, wanted to keep power. She went insane, lost most of her faculties and had a terrible human rights record. Cassandra killed her.

• *Cassandra:* The first and oldest Scarlet Empress. If freed, Cassandra can manifest herself as an eight-meter tall elegant woman with blonde hair. She can fire bolts of lightning that can destroy another Empress. She can also teleport beings across Hyspero.

• *Kabikaj:* A djinn of the insect world, able to control swarms. The lingering stings of his subjects, if he wished, weren't fatal, but stayed with you for life. He could make the stings disappear by mental command. Kabikaj could also make life-preserving honey.

• *Iris' TARDIS:* Iris' TARDIS, disguised as a bus, says it is the No. 22 to Putney Common. The Ship is cobbled together from spare parts. A pair of laundered tights hold the dimensional stabilizers together. Iris' last companion fled her company, claiming the Ship was a death trap. Iris' Ship goes into shock after short trips.

The controls are similar to the Doctor's TARDIS. Iris can turn the lights on by voice command. A pocket dimension links the water tap to a private reservoir in Canada.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* If Iris is right, eating Kaled mutants damages Time Lords beyond the ability to regenerate, although we must take Iris' stories with a grain of salt. Talk about former selves and regeneration among Time Lords is considered taboo, rather like talking about sex on Earth.

• *Draconians* ("Frontier in Space")*:* As a challenge, Draconians eat live Kaled mutants.

• *The Scarlet Empresses:* All Scarlet Empresses sit in glass cylinders,

shrouded in life-preserving unguents. As such, they have no real bodies and live for thousands of years. It was predicted the Empresses would rule for 900 generations. As each Empress retired, she was placed in a vault with her predecessors and successors, basically to sit on a shelf, it seems. The Scarlet Empresses have progressively gotten larger – the first Empress, Cassandra, fit in a small jar, but hundreds of generations later, the jars have become six feet tall.

The Scarlet Empresses predict the future by capturing people with eyes of a certain shade of blue and dissolving their flesh in a corrosive cauldron. Only the victims' heads live on to give advice. Cassandra ended the practice.

• *Hyspero Species:* Hyspero's different races, many of which seem almost magical, include giant spiders, enormous fish with short-term memories and djinn (a.k.a. ifrits) that eat the flesh of the dead.

Alien Planets

• *Hyspero*: The planet has a 21-hour day cycle. Its literature celebrates successful thieves and assassins. The Scarlet Empress polluted the planet's seas with waste from her life-extending experiments. The capital city, Hyspero, is famed for shopping.

Places to Go

• *Fortalice:* City on Hyspero where the natives enjoy the benefits of their technology and are totally cut off from the rest of the planet. They have no laws, tyrants, monarchs or progress. The Library has 1,001 volumes. Many texts refute the existence of things you can find outside of Fortalice. The "Grand Fracas" is a celebration in which the city's Executioner augments antagonisms with a mechanical device and the townsfolk release their built-up tension as violence. The people worship Our Lady of Flowers, a woman who cultivates plant life.

• *Kestheven (a.k.a. Kssven, Kest, Cha'vin, Kaastn and Keeisht):* A large wooded region on Hyspero, inhabited by peaceful bears that often try to shave themselves.

Organizations

• *The Four:* A mercenary band composed of the Alligator Man, the Bearded Lady, the Cyborg Duchess and the Mock Turtle, who served aboard the ship *Coriolanus*. They acted as the Empress' private mercenaries, but

refused to destroy the Empress' daughter Julia and left her service. The Empress caught the Mock Turtle, a low-level telepath who could command fish, and froze him. The rest scattered. The Alligator Man, who could command wild dogs and breathe blue fire, later devolved and truly became a reptile.

• *Scarlet Guard:* The Scarlet Empress' personal military force. The bodies of the Scarlet Guard are covered in blue and green tattoos, each unique and illustrated with the flora and fauna of the planet. As such, they are walking embodiments of skillful, anesthetized pain. The Guardsmen are bald and have teleport equipment. They're pledged to protect their bodies, as the Scarlet Empress collects their skins.

Phenomena

Across the Universe, people believe the souls of sleeping persons enter spiders.

History

• Hawk-like alien beings once landed on Hyspero, and were revered by the natives. The hawk creatures had no interest in ruling the planet, and left Cassandra, the first Scarlet Empress, to look after their affairs. Cassandra built the Scarlet Palace and founded the tattooed Scarlet Guard.

• One of the Doctors was "instrumental" at Trafalgar.

• The Doctor has met Queen Christina.

• In Venice, the Doctor and Iris met Oscar Wilde after his imprisonment. While there, they fought some "fish people" (perhaps the Silurians, Sea Devils or Pescatons).

• The Doctor met Greta Garbo, Isherwood, Bertrand Russel and Aldous Huxley in California.

At the End of the Day

A sensuous story, full of colors and scents. The Doctor/Iris relationship steals the show, with Sam being pushed to the sidelines (and we're better here for it). There's not much action, and there's a bit more text than with most novels, but it's a story of magic realism that lovingly surrounds you and is rather like being with Bob Hope, Bing Crosby and Dorothy Lamour in the "On the Road…" movies.

The Janus Conjunction

Author: Trevor Baxendale. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventures #16. Release Date: October 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Janus Prime, Sept. 14, 2211. The Doctor and Sam travel via the link to Menda.

Summary

The TARDIS narrowly avoids an abnormal mass in hyperspace and the Doctor directs his Ship to the planet Janus Prime in the Janus system. There, desperate mercenaries stage attacks on shipwrecked colonists on Menda, turning against the people they were hired to protect.

Janus Prime, contaminated by radiation from an ages-old war, has poisoned the mercenaries and driven their leader, Gustav Zemler, insane. Zemler's men have augmented the planet's giant-spider inhabitants to attack the Mendans and sent them through the Link, a hyperspace wormhole that connects the two worlds. Meanwhile, Zemler's mercenaries capture Sam and the radiation taints her.

Zemler, completely unhinged, decides his men are beyond all hope and prepares to activate a doomsday weapon, the remnant of a conflict between the long-passed civilizations on Menda and Janus Prime. The doomsday device can move each planet's moons to a parallel orbit on either side of the Janus sun, thus completing the hyperspace Link and upsetting the sun's gravity, making it a black hole.

As a last-ditch effort, the Doctor proposes using the ancient doomsday controls to make Janus Prime's moon crash the planet and disrupt the weapon, thus saving Menda. The Doctor, with his allies, the Mendans named Lunder and Moslei, arrive on Janus Prime and confront Zemler as Janus Prime's moon hurtles toward them. During the confrontation, Lunder shoots Zemler dead.

However, Zemler has disabled the doomsday weapon's controls, meaning

the Doctor cannot return Janus Prime's moon to its normal orbit. Also, the Link has been disabled now that the moon has moved. Moslei, dying from Janus Prime's radiation, sacrifices his life by throwing himself into the Link. This completely destabilizes it and shorts out the doomsday weapon's influence, allowing Janus Prime's moon to return to its normal orbit.

Sam dies from the Janus Prime radiation, but the Doctor takes the TARDIS into a temporal orbit and devises a serum against it. He then returns just before he left and saves her. They leave the colonists on Menda, now free from danger.

Memorable Moments

In a top grisly moment, Sam holds the Mendan Vigo as radiation turns his body turns to porridge, a river of glistening slime that runs all over her. As his flesh melts, she can see his ribs bend like heated plastic. A dying Sam herself turns to ooze while waiting for the Doctor.

Sex and Spirits

For once, the Doctor takes a shower and struts around in a white towel.

The TARDIS cellar has a couple barrels of questionable Best Old Shobogan ("The Invasion of Time").

Ass-Whuppings

Sam dies at 019.04 Mendan time, but the Doctor saves her.

The original Janusians once wiped out the original Mendans. Zemler and his men killed some Cybermen but were court-marshaled for the deaths of 132 unarmed civilians. Sam torches some spiderlings.

A radiation-infected Sam loses a lot of peeled skin and most of her hair. As her condition deteriorates, Sam becomes a puddle on the Link room floor. After the Doctor saves her, she stays in a coma for five days, then recovers for two more.

Sam also takes a laser hit shot in the shoulder and passes out. Her wound gets infected, and she reopens it with a knife to remove a tracer. Transference along the Link knocks a weakened Sam out.

The Doctor gets clubbed multiple times – including kidney shots – with a rifle butt and collapses. He's knocked off his feet by a buckling door.

Continuity

The colonists' star charts of the Janus system were copied from Dalek records ("The Dalek Invasion of Earth"). The Doctor isn't scared of spiders despite his adventure on Metebelis Three ("Planet of the Spiders"). The Doctor trained on the Mars-Venus routes circa 2511 ("Robot"). Sam knows there's a spare TARDIS key in a cranny above the "P" in "Police Box" ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within"). That story first mentioned the still nebulous "temporal orbit" concept.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Some of the Doctor's senses are in the fourth dimension, so he can sense space-time deformities. He can identify superdense metal polymers by smell. He can also sense negative ions, gravity shifts and to some degree an atmosphere's nitrogen-oxygen ratio. He can measure telepathic wavelengths in micropars. He can internally chart time to a hundredth of a second. He has blue eyes and likes blue skies.

He's something of a doctor of psychology. He telepathically learns of the Janusian race memory from spiderlings. He can pick pockets.

The Doctor can test serums on himself by entering a Tibetan healing trance while his Time Lord biochemistry analyzes the serum and makes alterations. His hyper-accelerated metabolism conducts multiple changes in only a few hours.

The Doctor once convinced a machine intelligence that worlds were colliding and destroyed it. He sees the future enough to know he and Sam skip a Mendan party.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam studied songs from before 1871, which is preparation for her attending the inaugural performance at the Cairo Opera House. She still worries about her parents and her prolonged absence. She has seen "Stargate."

Sam runs three miles every morning without fail. She overcomes her dislike of guns to aid the Doctor. When poisoned by radiation, Sam hopes she dies before she goes bald, but doesn't regret anything. In her last moments, she wishes she believed in God.

• *The TARDIS:* Contains hyper-spatial mass sensors. Its flight path may be affected by gravitic multiloops. The outer shell can resist spideroid acid. It measures radiation in the Korman Radiation Scale.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Their brains can pick up reduced-frequency alpha waves in exceptional circumstances. Their pheromone signatures are completely different from humans.

• *Janusians:* Giant spiders, once civilized but now no smarter than cows. They are immune to their planet's radiation. Janusian eggs are off-white spheres. Spiderlings telepathically convey the Janusian race memory until they become adults. Stronger spiderlings eat weaker ones.

• *Spidroids:* Cybernetically augmented Janusians. A booster duct in the chelicerae reroutes digestive fluids so spidroids can spit acid. They like chocolate.

Alien Planets

• *Janus system:* Located 27 light years from Earth, the system is named after the two-faced god Janus. Earth astronomers designated the system's red giant sun Janus GM2797. The system's two planets, Janus Prime and Menda, are on diametric opposites of the sun, separated by 280 million miles.

• *Janus Prime:* Lingering radiation makes the sand glow on Janus Prime, so named as the system's first planet. Thanks to the Janusian Doomsday Device, Janus Prime's moon cast the planet in perpetual eclipse. The Doctor's intervention restored the moon to its proper orbit. Janus Prime has a toxic radiation count of 8.6 on the Korman scale.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Sonic Screwdriver:* Can be converted into a saser (Sound Amplified by the Stimulated Emission of Radiation) lance, a mode that's rather ineffective against barydium.

• *Janus Doomsday Device:* The Janus Prime spiders and the Mendans co-built two special moons, one for each of their planets. Each moon had the equivalent of one solar mass, with most of mass kept in hyperspace. If the artificial moons were aligned in a row between the planets, the hyperlink through the Janus sun would make it go supernova. The change of the Janus sun to a red giant threw the gravitational balance off. Had the device been activated, it would have created a black hole.

• *Janus Doomsday Device Control Columns:* Blue columns, one each on Menda and Janus Prime, partly made from a superdense metal polymer. Janusian spiderlings could telepathically manipulate the devices, on a frequency of 284.9979 micropars. Two humanoid telepaths could have

substituted.

• *Korman Radiation Scale:* Means of measuring radiation. Eight point six is definitely toxic.

Time Travel

The Doctor takes the TARDIS into a temporal orbit ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within") and works on a radiation serum for a day and a half. He is then able to return shortly before he left and save Sam, who had originally died. This would seem to contradict the Doctor's inability to save Adric in "Earthshock."

Phenomena

• *Janus Prime radiation sickness:* In humans, this disease destroys lipids, the membranes that hold each cell together. Cumulative exposure results in insanity and causes the skin to melt away. Ironically, telepathic abilities may increase. Overexposed bodies collapse if removed from the Janus Prime environment. At death, one turns almost instantaneously into mush. The Doctor manufactured a restorative serum that included spiderling enzymes.

• *Telepathy:* In humans, telepathy is controlled by a gland and carried by alpha waves. Bonded metal polymers can assist with telepathic transmission.

• *The Link:* A fold in space-time that connected the planets of Menda and Janus Prime, created by the partly aligned Janus doomsday weapon. After use, the Link goes into standby mode for a few hours. Transition over the 280 million miles involved takes 59.72 seconds.

History

• Millions of years ago, advanced civilizations on the sister planets of Menda and Janus Prime ended their war and agreed to construct a doomsday device that would destroy the entire solar system – a deterrent from further conflict. In a subsequent war, the giant spider creatures of Janus Prime wiped out the humanoids on Menda, but not before the Mendans riddled Janus Prime with isotope decay bombs. The spiders acclimated to the radiation, but lost their telepathy and devolved into savagery. The Mendans had also activated their half of the doomsday device, permanently eclipsing Janus Prime with its moon. In later millennia, the Janus sun turned into a red giant, making the weapon unstable and creating a fold in space-time that

allowed the hyperspatial Link to join the planets.

• By 2162, New Paris had replaced Paris, which was destroyed by the Martians. Some gene banks were made illegal. A hostile conflict broke out on Alpha Kundekka in 2198.

• A group of Cybermen took hostages on Titan 317, but were destroyed by Gustav Zemler and his men. Unfortunately, the hostages died also. The survivors of Zemler's squad were dishonorable discharge and became mercenaries.

• Human colonists hired Zemler's troops to protect them on their journey to a new world. A rogue meteor damaged the ship and stranded them in the Janus system, which led to the conflict between the soldiers and colonists.

At the End of the Day

What starts out as a standard marooned colonist tale – complete with guns and soldiers – turns into something greater. *The Janus Conjunction* is very clean, with a brave, tight-nit cast that shows tremendous growth (for starts, the soldier Lunder becomes a lover). It's a well-ordered, enjoyable story of cosmic destruction with good twists, that can be violent and a bit gory without going over the top. You hear a staccato of doom during the engaging, must-finish ending.

Beltempest

Author: Jim Mortimore. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #17. Release Date: November 1998.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

The ring system orbiting Belannia VI, time unknown.

Summary

The sun in the Belannia system sends out shock waves and the disturbance wracks the TARDIS. The Doctor and Sam are ejected from the TARDIS beach onto separate spots on the moon of Belannia VI. The TARDIS is swept away as the Doctor and Sam scramble to survive.

The Doctor finds himself on a medical frigate that crashes on Belannia VI. By cannibalizing the frigate, the Doctor constructs gravitic generators that redirects some of the shockwaves' energy and buys the moon some time. Meanwhile, Sam encounters a religious cult obsessed with death and meets the "immortal" Eldred Saketh, a man infected by healing nanomachines from a dead civilization on Belannia II. Saketh gives the gift of "communion" to other refugees, infecting them with the machines and making them immortal as well. Sam is also infected. In time, the nanomachine intelligences take control of their new hosts.

Three unnamed, planet-sized entities arrive in the Bel system, sending out empathic messages. The Doctor decodes the visions and realizes the planet-beings are the parents of a lifeform gestating inside Bel's sun. Unfortunately, the child's birth-cycle is erratic because the Bel colonists once disposed of toxic chemicals in the sun. If the fetus dies, the resulting supernova will destroy the system.

The nanomachine intelligences within Saketh make him reprogram the Doctor's generators to destabilize the sun, triggering an energy release that will let them evolve. Sam convinces them to at least stabilize the sun back into a red giant, thus saving the lives of the nanomachines' hosts in the process.

The star gives birth to the entity and reverts to a red giant, able to support life. Some of the system's inhabitants infected by the healing nanomachines survive, but many are killed from radiation. As the nanomachines enter the next stage of their evolution, Sam and the others are freed. The Doctor and Sam locate the TARDIS from the ring system around Belannia VI, and leave as the planet-sized beings depart into space.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor risks his life exploring dangerous wreckage to recover a captain's family snapshot. His energy-transferring devices absorb 583 quadrillion ergs of a tidal wave's potential energy, but he wonders where to put it.

Ass-Whuppings

Globally, this must be a record for the novels. One sunburst alone destroys Belannia I and a moon while devastating three inhabited worlds and killing 17 million people. The moon of Belannia VI is also destroyed, killing thousands. A quick military/civilian space war destroys five navy ships and more than 107 civilian ships. The Doctor's spaceship crashes, causing a tidal wave that kills ocean and sky dwellers. The continent-sized, alien Hoth land in an ocean, killing thousands.

A crowd tramples Sam. She later burns her hand to know the nanomachine influence has ended.

Continuity

The Doctor has wired a replay button from the ship's erratic gramophone to his deck chair ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within").

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* In his early 90s, the Doctor admitted he liked to play with his perigosto (pogo) stick, and other Gallifreyan students mocked him for 50 years. The Doctor's parents "opted out of their responsibilities" when he was young and the Universe became his foster family.

The Doctor can read two books at the same moment. He has decrees in psychology and the social dynamics of machine intelligence. He had a two-week apprenticeship at Kwik-Fit. He can build gravitic generators that cancel gravitational wavefronts. He can also build devices that can transfer

at least 583 quadrillion ergs of potential energy.

He more and more agrees with the Time Lords' non-interference rule. He's fond of Broken Orange Pekoe tea. He's empathic with the Hoth, more so than other beings. The Doctor often thinks of a beach in terms of base silicates, animal life, water and biostates, but not as a *beach*. He taps out a jazz rhythm in his sleep.

Asked: "Do you have gods, Doctor?", he replies: "Doesn't everyone?"

The Doctor listens to Louis Armstrong's "We Have All the Time in The World" and can do Richard Dreyfuss impersonations. He knows the Kyrie from Faure's *Requiem*, and also Wagner's "Ride of the Valkyries." He watched Puccini's *Madame Butterfly* in either Paris or Chandrasekhar City on Alpha Leonis Seven.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam wants children, but wonders why childbirth has to hurt so much. She played "Join the Dots" as a child. She can juggle.

Her first visit to church scared her – she found it big, rather dark and full of smiling people. The next Sunday, she "fell" in the fishpond so her family would be late, but was sorry that her mother missed the sermon. However, she does have some religious yearnings, as she gives Saketh the opportunity to prove his religion is right. She finds enough faith to "kill" herself and become infected with the Belannia II nanomachines, thus saving an injured family.

Sam's strongly empathic with the Hoth. She hates ham because her mother packed ham sandwiches for school lunches every day until Sam was eight. She doesn't like eggs either, or anything people force her to do.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* Sam throws the Doctor's old-fashioned bag, plus any useful items inside, away to prove she doesn't need his help.

• *The TARDIS:* Has a beach with palm trees.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Are partially resistant to alpha, beta and gamma particles.

• *Belannia II nanomachines:* Ruthlessly efficient healers that extend basic immortality to their hosts and the ability to survive in outer space.

• *Hoth:* Vast, ancient intelligences adrift in Belannia XII's oceanic oceans. The Hoth are extremely inclusive and don't take well to strangers. They only remember backwards. (*See History.*)

• *Unnamed Planet-Sized Beings:* Three of them mate (perhaps a requirement for reproduction, perhaps not) and place their children in suns

to incubate. Gestation normally takes six million years. Birth or stillbirth results in the suns going supernova. The planet beings are naturally capable of interstellar flight.

• *Hanakoi:* Dwellers in the Bel system who love space and flight. Their architecture represents the unattainable. The Parliament building exists as a statement of the aspiration to peace, the perfect state. The Hanakoi mostly have human-like motivation, but don't communicate with metaphor.

• *Aquatic Crocodilians:* Telepathic beings from Aquaatus VI. Their environment causes brain damage to all of their embryos, making them only useful as protective hosts for other embryos.

Alien Planets

• *Bel system:* Contains 23 planets. Colonists inhabit all but Belannia II, where death cult members go to die, and Belannia XXI. None of the system's species retain interstellar flight. Notable planets include:

• *Belannia II:* A ferocious yellow ball of incandescent hydrogen. A technologically advanced civilization once lived there, but decayed to barbarism when the sun became a cool red giant and the planet iced over.

• *Belannia XXI:* A gas giant and the only planet in the Bel system unable to support Belannian life. Half a dozen civilizations used it as a weapons dump.

• *Farnham's World:* Largest of three moons around Belannia XII. The citizens of First Town built deep shelters to survive the sun's shockwaves.

Stuff You Need

"Wall's Dalek Death Ray" Lolly: A cute ice cream.

Phenomena

Puccini's Madame Butterfly: A work so near perfect, it was simultaneously written on at least seven different worlds. The furthest example from Earth was on Larksup's World in the lesser Magellanic cloud.

History

• Ten million years ago, three planet-sized beings mated and placed their child to gestate in the sun of the Bel. Much later, the Belannians spent 500 years chucking biological and chemical weapons into their sun, which altered the baby's life cycle, almost killing it.

• The Hoth colonized Bel's outer gas giants when their race was less than two million years old. They almost died out twice, leading an inward-looking life. By the time of *Beltempest*, only five Hoth remain.

At the End of the Day

A joyous portrayal of the Doctor permeates *Beltempest*, with a rock-solid characterization of Paul McGann's erraticness from the FOX movie. The Doctor babbles, forgets and is continually distracted – *yet* he's whole-heartedly optimistic and open. However, the novel's religious tones are wayward, depressive and even sacrilegious at some points. There are too many nebulous races (nanomachines, Hoth, planet-sized beings) for our good, and the giant, world-sized alien plot has now been done *ad nauseam*. In short, there's lots of terrible world-devastation, and then it just ends.

The Face-Eater

Author: Simon Messingham. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #18. Release Date: January 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor and Sam.

TARDIS Log

Proxima 2, 2131.

Summary

Bodies on Proxima 2, humanity's first interstellar colony, turn up with their faces wiped completely smooth. Security Exec Ben Fuller finally sends out a distress call that the Doctor and Sam answer. They learn the leading suspect in the killings is Jake Leary, the sole survivor of a mountain expedition he's believed to have murdered.

To learn more about the native Proximans, telepathic rat-like creatures and Proxima's only native lifeform, the Doctor speaks with xenoanthropologist Joan Betts. But shortly thereafter beneath Proxima City, a shape-shifting creature kills Betts. The Doctor tries to escape, but falls down a large hole and breaks his leg.

Sam in turn finds that Fuller is dead, replaced by a shape-shifter, and crashes a car escaping him. The unconscious Doctor is located and warns the colony leaders of an entity the Proximans call "F-Seeta," or "Face-Eater." The Doctor says the Face-Eater a thirst for human life energy and has generated many shape-shifting servants. But an innocent Leary returns from the mountains and reveals the "Doctor" himself is a shape-shifter, programmed on a surface level to believe it *was* the Doctor. Leary then hacks the creature with an axe.

In the mountains, the real Doctor links minds with the Proximans and learns that the Face-Eater is a gestalt merger of their race, designed to protect them from external threats. In time, the Face-Eater's hunger grew out of control and the Proximans put it into suspended animation, guarding against its return. Unfortunately, Leary's expedition woke the beast up.

The Face-Eater, nourished by energy from the dead colonists, openly

attacks the settlement as a massive physical mass. The entity tries to assimilate the Doctor's mind, but finds it cannot absorb the multiple personalities of a regenerated Time Lord. The Face-Eater becomes disorientated and the Proximans rally against it. The Doctor considers how to reprogram the creature from its central control unit, but the Proximans elect to terminate the monster. This saves the colony but destroys the Proximan group mind, costing the race its telepathy and racial memory, reducing them to ordinary mammals.

Memorable Moments

There's a decent twist when the fake "Doctor" rips out of his skin and we realize we've been watching a shapeshifter. In a bit of sudden drama Alfred Hitchcock would have appreciated, Leary takes a fire axe to the duplicate.

Sex and Spirits

Sam points out that while Ben Fuller, who pulled her from a burning building, got from her cursing, screams, blood, pus and vomit – he isn't going to get anything else.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor's duplicate kicks it. The gigantic Face-Eater bursts into Proxima City's central plaza and sweeps bodies aside.

The Doctor falls down a hole and breaks his leg. Heat from the Face-Eater cavern blasts him. Flames toast Sam and smoke chokes her – she falls unconscious for three days. Sam's car crashes, knocking her out and covering her with blood.

Continuity

Betts investigated Sea Base One's remains for her book *The Life and Customs of the Marine Saurians*, on the psychology and culture of the Sea Devils ("Warriors of the Deep").

Sam has fast recuperative powers, and worries some trace of the nanites from *Beltempest* lingers in her system. The shapeshifter that took the Doctor's identity remembered his imprisonment in *Seeing I*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor loves xenoanthropology. He has blue eyes. He

can enter a healing trance and expertly repair a broken leg in four days. He can slip out of rope bonds. He sometimes feels the need to pee. He can telepathically link with the Proximans.

• *The Doctor, his companions and Global Mining Corporation (GMC):* GMC lists the Doctor and his companion as security consultants, allegedly recruited in Albania, 2127. GMC believes there are only two agents: "The Doctor," seconded from UNIT upon its disbandment, and his female associate who has a number of identities, including Jo Grant, Sarah Jane Smith and Ace. This female associate is marked as graduating Geneva Corporate University in 2124. Both the Doctor and his companion have White security ratings

• *Samantha Jones:* The Doctor gave Sam a lockpick that opens doors and file cabinets. She went to a lot of parties without telling her mom and dad.

• *F'Seeta (a.k.a. The Face-Eater):* A gestalt entity created by the Proximans as the sum of their race, designed to protect them against outward threats. The F'Seeta fed on life energy, wiping the faces of its victims smooth in the process.

It commanded a group of shapeshifters that were extensions of its being and could take telepathic readings of their victims and transform into them. Yet the shapeshifters had under-developed senses.

The F'Seeta was extremely long-lived. It physically manifested itself as a great quartz lake. It could make long-buried fears in humans come to the surface. It couldn't mentally absorb the Doctor, a regenerated Time Lord with previous personalities.

Alien Races

Proximans (a.k.a. Rats): White, almost hairless rodent creatures with tiny black orbs for eyes. They live in boltholes. While the Face-Eater existed, the Proximans had a group mind, telepathic abilities and latent shapeshifting powers that they didn't use. They had a tendency to repeat what humans said, like parrots. Without the Face-Eater, they lost their telepathy, organization, group mind and racial memory. They became individualistic, semi-intelligent mammals.

Alien Planets

• *Proxima 2:* Colony world with 5,000 colonists, a high percentage of which were not born on Earth (hence they were called "Space Children" or "Roaming Spirits"). The rat-like Proximans and their Face-Eater were the

only indigenous lifeforms. Proxima City is the planet's only town.

• *Earth 2:* Another human colony.

Stuff You Need

Focal mark: A Doctor-coined term that denotes a symbol that aids with the concentration of telepathic abilities. The Proximans used such marks to focus their mental power and ward off the Face-Eater.

Ships

New Horizon: The Proxima 2 colony ship, two and 2/3 kilometers long by one km 30 in diameter. It was Earth's first large-scale colony transporter, and an ancient prototype for supralight travel. The ship's journey to Proxima 2 took two years.

History

• Universal concrete was discovered in 2115, and can be made from virtually any planet's minerals.

• In 2128, human colonists arrived on Proxima 2 on the *New Horizon*. The settlement became humanity's first totally alien environment. A second wave was due to arrive there in 2136. Helen Percival served as Supreme Executive of the colony until she was killed in an uprising.

At the End of the Day

An average shapeshifting alien story that heavily resembles elements of "Star Trek: Deep Space Nine" (the F'Seeta's great quartz lake=Odo and the Founders' Great Link, etc.). There's some decent characterization, but it's very fragmented and becomes a murder mystery without much mystery.

The Taint

Author: Michael Collier. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #19. Release Date: February 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Sam and Fitz Kreiner.

TARDIS Log

Archway, England, and Azoth's hidden base in Bethnal Green, 1963; London, 2134.

Summary

When the TARDIS randomly lands in 1963, the Doctor stops at a florist shop and meets a 27-year-old clerk named Fitz Kreiner. Suddenly, an escaped mental patient named Oscar Austen storms into the store, rambling about an alien cave filled with demons. Austen is re-captured by his doctor, Charles Roley, but the Doctor becomes curious about Austen's work.

The Doctor finds that Roley's patients all contain a self-regenerating leech, passed down through the generations and designed to run an alien program in the brain of each host. The patients share ancestral memories of a devil-filled cave where the leeches were first implanted.

Meanwhile, a robotic humanoid named Azoth attacks Sam and Fitz outside a nightclub, hoping to perform an experiment on Sam's unique, two-fold genetic structure (*see Alien Bodies*). Azoth kills a drunk while trying to get at Sam, but she and Fitz escape. As Sam rejoins the Doctor, police seek to question Fitz in the drunk's death and Fitz flees to Roley's house to find the Doctor and Sam – the only friends he seems to have.

Azoth attacks again, captures Sam and implants her with a leech. Suddenly, Sam can see monsters flying through the air, feeding off everyone present and in the street. Sam escapes and tells the Doctor about Azoth's references to his late masters, the Benelisans.

The Doctor concludes that the invisible flying creatures, called "the Beast," ordinarily feed harmlessly on a population and leave. Unfortunately, they wiped out the Benelisans, whose numbers were too low. Azoth and the leeches are products of Benelisan technology, designed to seek out the Beast

and eradicate them. But on Earth, the leeches' programming has become corrupted through the generations.

The Benelisan leeches alter the mental patients' brains and give them the ability to wield electro-magnetism. As a consequence of their new power, the patients are driven more insane and prepare to unleash a storm of suffering upon the world. The patients damage Azoth, but the Doctor recovers the robot's head. He uses it to make Sam's malfunctioning leech go dormant, and then discovers Azoth is armed with a bioelectrical pulse, designed to destroy all life present if the Beast cannot be stopped. Unable to stop the patients from exacting terrible pains on humanity, the Doctor reprograms Azoth's head to slay only those infected with leeches and therefore kills the patients, including Fitz's mother. Sam survives because her leech was comatose (presumably, the Doctor later removes it). The Doctor asks Fitz, now wanted by the police for questioning in the drunk's murder, to become a fellow traveler and a shell-shocked Fitz accepts. They depart, knowing the Beast will eventually leave Earth by the 22nd century to feed elsewhere.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor asks a complete and total stranger to babysit his borrowed car and drive it around the block if needed, fearing a traffic ticket. Sam's sight of the Beast crawling over everyone in Bethnal Green chills the blood.

The Doctor advises Fitz that if he fails to return, there's a metronome in the TARDIS that will help Fitz keep good rhythm. As the Doctor prepares to unleash Azoth's bioelectric pulse, Fitz understands how events wrap themselves around the Doctor's business and agenda. They argue about how much of Fitz's infected mother is still his mother (The Doctor: "I told you, she *isn't*!" Fitz: "*How can you be sure?*")

Sex and Spirits

Fitz's clumsy attempts at female relations are a hoot and a holler. He smiles at a brunette and she walks right past. The first time he sees Sam, he looks at her tits.

Sam, on a date with Fitz, begrudgingly downs a gin and tonic. Fitz spontaneously kisses Sam and – ugh – gives her tongue. Sam thinks it's like kissing an alcoholic ashtray. Sam thinks an internal, insightful analysis of how much better Fitz is for living in a non-technical age. Simultaneously, Fitz scopes out Sam's ass.

Fitz strips a concussed Sam down to her bra and underwear, then strips and crawls in beside her. In a top comedy moment, she wakes up beside his naked form and screams, jolting him out of bed at 6:00 am. He covers himself with a small plant. He tries to convince her that she "thanked" him for saving her last night and would she like to thank him again? She quickly leaves.

Ass-Whuppings

The most notable deaths are Fitz's mother and the Benelisan organic robot, Azoth. The murder of the drunk named Chubby motivates Fitz's travel in the TARDIS. The Beast wiped out the Benelisans.

A leech burrows into Sam, with excruciating pain. Stress from the leech infection makes Sam nauseous and collapse.

Continuity

The Doctor plays "Twinkle, twinkle, little star" on a recorder, as he did in "The Three Doctors."

Azoth says Sam's DNA is "special" and she wonders if it's because she's traveled in the TARDIS. In fact, it's because of her duplicate time track, in which she's dark-haired and living in a bedsit in King's Cross (*Alien Bodies*). Sam worries the microorganisms that infected her in *Beltempest* might leave her vulnerable to madness. The Doctor uses the memory transferring "soul catching" for the first time since his third self did it in *The Devil Goblins of Neptune* (he also uses this ability in *Dominion*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Using the neuronic-rendering data he gleaned from a Benelisan leech, the Doctor can partially remodel some of his synapses to let him talk to the Beast. His record for stripping down positronic brains is 3.24 minutes.

The Doctor visited a cave on Benelisa, after the planet had been dead for aeons.

The Doctor has never tried soul catching with beings out of phase with this dimension. He naturally speaks French. He bears a few war wounds. He can telepathically calm schizophrenics. He doesn't believe that he arrives everywhere by chance.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam's digital watch says she's been traveling with the

Doctor again for six months. Her grandmother went senile. Sam has watched "Black Adder," and knows about the Moomins, Pacers, House Sound of Chicago or Kel and Kim. She does elocution. She's seen "Star Trek II: The Wrath of Khan." She's not sure there is a God, but refuses to blame Him for her crappy life.

• *Fitz Kreiner:* Fitz Kreiner, now 27, was born to Otto and Muriel Tarr Kreiner when Muriel was 38. After Fitz's father died, his mother grew ill again and he was put into foster care. He dodged his National Service and now works in a florist's shop. He smokes like a chimney. Fitz thinks of his ailing mother as a pain in the backside. He only injects stuff orally.

Fitz has a classic comic book reader's syndrome of thinking there's something special about him if only, *if only*, someone would stop and take notice.

Fitz considers people very stupid, and tells tall tales, especially about how J.R.R. Tolkien was born from a union between "R.J. Tolkien" and a French prostitute named Frodo.

Fitz lives in a tiny third floor flat in Archway. He's got an ancient brown armchair and a radio. He doesn't have a TV, but does possess a rubber plant and a carpet speckled with cigarette burns.

Fitz is an excellent guitarist. He performs under the alias of Fitz Fortune to not advertise his German heritage. Kids on his block celebrated VF day by kicking the crap out of him.

Fitz thinks his nose is too long and misses stubble when he shaves. He does passable impersonations and different voices. He considers stealing a wad of money the Doctor gave Sam.

Fitz's grandfather was an only child who remembered the alien, Benelisan cave. He now rests in Highgate Cemetery.

Fitz ends *The Taint* officially on the run, wanted for questioning in the drunk Chubby's death. His TARDIS room has a double bed with a radio, a clock with no hands and a little spotlight built into the springboard.

• *The Doctor and Fitz:* Like his mother, Fitz carried a Benelisan leech, but the Doctor removed it. The Doctor said Fitz's mother wouldn't feel a thing as she died. He lied. Fitz's mother called for him in those moments. Fitz comes to accept the Doctor's role in his mother's death.

• *Neville Fitzwilliam Tarr:* One of Fitz's great-grandfathers from his mother's side. Neville Tarr was born in 1790 and frozen by Azoth in 1827, part of a control group to measure against infection from the Beast. His brother Freddie was allowed to roam free. Azoth killed Neville Tarr for

letting Sam escape.

• *Azoth:* Benelisan organic computer, armed with a telepathically propelled, bioelectrical pulse as a last resort on worlds where the Beast infection was too strong. His remains were dumped in the TARDIS.

• *The TARDIS:* The Doctor improves the TARDIS scanners and allows them to see through various spatial distortions. The TARDIS rids itself of the Beast by traveling through the Time Vortex. The TARDIS has multiple swimming pools and saunas.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* With proper concentration, Time Lords can see the Beast.

• *The Beast:* Organic, self-replicating monsters that float invisibly and have nozzle-like mouths. They feed on the life force of other living beings and grow bloated. However, they're not murderers and only endanger small populations. The Beast mostly exists in a pocket dimension, beyond the range of human sight.

• *Benelisans:* On Benelisa, technology was based around crystallography. Dying from the Beast, the people took their revenge quite seriously. Their organic computers, which had heightened precision and perception, developed a neural program that interfered with the Beast. The computers tried to spread the cure to other worlds, but the program wasn't always compatible with alien brains. They therefore developed the Benelisan leeches as a way of rerouting neural pathways and making the program compatible. (Even then, as this story proves, it wasn't always successful.)

• *Benelisan Leeches:* The Beast are the infection. The leeches, a biosynthetic organism, are the cure. Leeches are passed on genetically. They transmits a retrovirus and an unknown protein that alters the host's DNA, allowing them to grow back if removed. Leeches also alter their hosts' neurons, dendrites and axons, adding an unknown matter between the synapses. Neurons are enhanced to interact with over 500,000 others.

Persons infected with leeches can "see" the Beast. Developed leeches hold sway over their underdeveloped counterparts. A malfunctioning leech can jam the abilities of other leeches. The proximity of a leech triggers a waking call in its fellows. Due to their sympathetic resonance with one another, their power, especially over electro-magnetism, grows as their numbers and proximity increases.

Alien Planets

Benelisa: Benelisa's region of space was near black holes, white holes and other anomalies that affected the Benelisans' evolution.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Volkswagen:* The Doctor's road tax won't be valid until at least 1993.

• *The Doctor's Electronic Brain-Simulator:* A device mainly used to construct detailed brain analogies and test psychotropic drugs.

• *The Doctor's Carrying Case:* A pocket dimension inside makes the case trans-dimensional, allowing for a large, weightless storage area. Among other things, the case contains tranquilizer pads and the Doctor's intelligent blade.

• *The Doctor's Intelligent Blade:* It knits cut flesh together without leaving a scar.

Phenomena

Benelisa Program: A Benelisan-created program, somewhat intelligent and designed to be run in alien brains. The program remembers its creation in fluid vats on Benelisa billions of years ago. It was designed to implement an endless variety of contain-and-destroy programs to kill the Beast on all alien worlds. Some hosts were frozen while others were allowed into society to breed. The program was passed on genetically so the Beast couldn't return in later generations.

History

• The destruction of the Benelisans is conveyed through symbolism and hard to understand. It seems likely that centuries ago, dimensional interfaces near Benelisa allowed the Beast to travel there. The Benelisans, few in population, fought the Beast and constructed combative robots such as Azoth, but the Beast drank the Benelisans dry and killed them. The Beast then fled, using the interfaces for travel.

• Robotic Benelisan agents kidnapped a select group of humans from Earth and engendered them with the Benelisan leeches in 1822.

• By 2134, the Beast had moved on from Earth.

At the End of the Day

A dark, colorful romp that alternates between moody and playful. *The*

Taint cleverly molds Fitz as the epitome of a companion who gets into trouble, as the current readership empathizes with his age and struggles. Both the Doctor and Sam find themselves in realms of misrule (the Doctor, an asylum; Sam, Fitz's bedroom). Overall, a superb set-up that makes Fitz a companion to watch, and *The Taint* something to be read on ill-lit evenings.

Demontage

Author: Justin Richards. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #20. Release Date: March 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Sam and Fitz.

TARDIS Log

Vega Station, time unknown.

Summary

At Vega Station, a tourist resort near the neutral zone between Canvine and Battrul space, the Doctor and Fitz agree to see who can win the most at a casino. Fitz, however, attempts to show off to a casino crowd and loses all of his money.

Meanwhile, security arrangements are made for an art exhibit showcasing the late artist Toulour Martinique. His last work, a self-portrait painted on the night of his murder, is entitled *Murdering Art* and oddly shows Martinique's throat being cut by two demons. Interestingly, Martinique, before his death, discovered a process by which his special painting scanners could reproduce a person's DNA, then literally make that person a part of the painting. Alternatively, one can manifest an item from a painting as a physical form.

Martinique's ex-lover, Tullus Gath, and his ex-sponsor, Henri Blanc, are using Martinique's discovery to animate the demons from his paintings, commit sabotage and blame the crimes on the wolven Canvine. Gath and Blanc, Battrulians who are both xenophobic, hope to spark a war and crush the Canvine. Also, they're investigating the potential profits from using the painting technique.

However, the Doctor, investigating the sabotage to the Station, is approached by the "late" Toulour Martinique, who suspected Gath and Blanc were having an affair. Martinique therefore painted himself into *Murdering Art* and, after Gath and Blanc murdered the original Martinique, the painted Martinique used a device, pre-painted by Martinique into his painting, to free himself.

Gath and Blanc, their plan nearly uncovered, set the painting demons on a crowd of exhibit watchers. The Doctor, using paint stripper, wipes away parts of the title in *Murdering Art* to reveal it's actually titled *Murdering Martinique*, and that the "demons" killing Martinique have Gath and Blanc's faces. The painting demons go berserk, realizing Gath and Blanc affronted their creator by murdering him, and besiege Gath and Blanc. At the same time, Fitz sets *Murdering Martinique* afire. Gath, Blanc and their demonic attackers, symbiotically linked to their painted counterparts, erupt in a ball of flames.

Satisfied that justice has been served, the painted Martinique affixes himself to a painting with a peaceful setting as the Doctor and his companions enjoy a little more of the now-peaceful Station.

Memorable Moments

Fitz literally tries to act like James Bond, pretending to be a roulette connoisseur, but nobody cares. Fitz defends himself from a paint demon, the Devourer of Souls, with a dinner knife and feels something sticky, then realizes it's only gravy, not blood. (In some ways, the indignity of having gravy on his hand strikes him as being worse than blood.)

Sex and Spirits

Sam drinks a burning pink liquid rather like antifreeze. "Bond-like" Fitz drinks martinis – shaken, not stirred. The Doctor carries a hip-flask of brandy as an "explorer's survival kit." Fitz ends the story chummily drinking beer and having crisps with the Canvine named Bigdog.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor and Sam each kill a painting demon with paint stripper. The assassin Solarin (*see Character Development*), saves Fitz but is killed by the Devourer. The Devourer bites it when its painting, *Defying the Angel*, goes up in flames. Fitz ignites Martinique's paintings, killing Blanc, Gath and the painting creatures.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* When Vega Station was still young, the fourth Doctor visited it soon after it opened and won a jaw-dropping number of millions playing cards and backgammon in the casino. However, he didn't cash out

the casino chip with his winnings. Had he done so, he would have broken the bank. Vega Station's managers therefore made the Doctor owner *in absentia* rather than go under. Vega Station manager Stabilo therefore hired the assassin Solarin to kill the Doctor, lest the Doctor come in and start running Vega Station. But the Doctor's casino chip was drug into a Martinique painting by a demon.

The eighth Doctor is cautious with his money in the casino, but wins steadily at backgammon and a game similar to blackjack. He can mentally remember 200 spins of a roulette wheel, calculating the odds. He's always wanted to try poker. He can hear ultrasonics beyond the range of human hearing, and change ultrasonic cards by whistling the correct pitch.

He has the limited ability to see in total darkness. He's an expert in detection and questioning, as well as power system repair. He's stronger than a normal human. He has a connoisseur's palate. He is immune to Martinique's painting process.

• *Samantha Jones:* She's never been to an opera until this story, and doesn't know the rules of gambling games. She's visited the Tate Gallery, and her parents took her to see the Louvre and Musée D'Orsée in Paris. She prefers impressionist art.

• *Fitz Kreiner:* Has read *Casino Royale*, and saw "Dr. No." He sucks at roulette and gambling in general. His knowledge of quantum physics is dreadful. He's "giving up" cigarettes because his supply of Camels is running out. He doesn't have a TARDIS key. He doesn't appreciate opera. He has no idea what a matter transmitter is.

• *Hazard Solarin (a.k.a. Kamil Solarin):* A professional and widely feared assassin, skilled in the use of glass weapons. Solarin stays ahead of the opposition by doing things at random, such as choosing hotel rooms by rolling dice. Solarin actually has an honorable streak and was hired to protect Battrul President Drexler during her visit to Vega Station.

• *Devourer of Souls:* The most fierce of the paintings demons, with a goat-like head, evil horns, a long tongue and blood red eyes.

• *Ambrose Forster and Newark Rappare:* Antique dealers who attempted to destroy Gath and Blanc's collection of Martinique paintings, thus driving up the price of their Martinique forgeries.

• *The TARDIS:* The Ship is due for a 10 million year service.

Alien Races

Canvine: Giant wolflike creatures with long claws and bloodshot eyes –

quite similar to the Jax (*Kursaal*). The Canvine love opera, and frequently eat raw meat at it.

Alien Planets

Canvine Homeworld: Located 18 light years from Vega Station.

Places to Go

• *Vega Station:* A Battrul-run enterprise, near the neutral zone separating Canvine space from Battrul space. The Canvines tolerate it as a business enterprise, and outwardly, Vega Station appears to be a casino, hotel and cultural center. However, it secretly serves as an early-warning system, monitoring Canvine space. The Canvine spy Bigdog was allowed to stay on Vega, so both sides could monitor the other, yet pretend not to know what each was up to. Harris Stabilo served as casino manager and chief executive officer for the Battrul government.

• *Vegan Central Bank:* Only deals with encoded gaming chips and electronic transfer. Cash is a no-go. Cassey Cage serves as head of security.

Stuff You Need

• *Demontage:* The opposite of montage. A work where you must peel away the layers to see what's beneath.

• *"On a Clear Day":* One of Martinique's paintings, with a pleasant pastoral scene in which grotesque demons hide in the trees.

• *"Defying the Angel":* Another Martinique painting, with the Angel Yaladriell. Beside him is the evil Devourer of Souls.

Organizations

Caruso Excursions: Tour group owned by Caruso, the only Canvine living on Vega Station and secretly a Canvine government agent.

Phenomena

Martinique's Painting Technique: Three-dimensional scanners scan a person's entire worldly self, reconstructing their DNA in transporter-like fashion as an artifact of the painting. By a process similar to matter transmission, "real" people may become objects in the painting. Alternatively, a person might be linked to their painted self, meaning any

harm that happens to the painting also happens to the original person.

As a reverse of this process, painted creations may be brought to life, made from oil and canvas. Such "activated" creatures can leave the paintings as they wish, or be summoned. Real people can leave the paintings by mechanical "escape" devices painted in by Martinique.

History

Fifty years ago, the Battrul/Canvine war mostly resulted in a draw and a treaty was drafted. A buffer zone was placed between their two sectors. President Robyn Drexler later replaced the military leadership that controlled Battrul since the war, and signed a permanent peace accord with Canvine representative Bigdog.

At the End of the Day

Surprisingly atypical for a "Who" work, Demontage proves relaxing and fun, one of the more easy-going and domestic "Who" novels. It falls apart somewhat if you nit-pick the details (the characters' motives are clear, but how they mean to achieve them sometimes isn't), but the story keeps moving and deftly stops you from noticing any of its cracks, becoming an underrated painting/horror story in the vein of H.P. Lovecraft.

Revolution Man

Author: Paul Leonard. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #21. Release Date: April 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Sam and Fitz.

TARDIS Log

Near Earl's Court Station, June 1967; East Worldham, June 5, 1968; Ramsgate, February 14, 1969; Total Liberation Brigade house, East Cheam, and Wembley Stadium, May 18, 1969.

Summary

A growing number of time discontinuities prompts the Doctor to research the activities of "The Revolution Man," an unknown anarchist carving his "R" mark on global monuments. Fitz makes the acquaintance of a waitress named Maddie, who describes for him Om-Tsor, a drug that seems to make dreams become reality. Fitz tries to secure the drug for the Doctor to analyze, but a mysterious Chinese agent shoots Maddie.

A telekinetic poltergeist hits the music band of Ed Hill, Maddie's boyfriend, and Ed disappears, lifted away. The Doctor arranges for Maddie to get to a hospital, and Fitz decides to leave the Doctor's company to care for her.

By 1968, anarchist Jean-Pierre Rex admits to the Doctor and Sam that he was using Om-Tsor as the Revolution Man, but a *new* Revolution Man telekinetically kills Rex. Maddie, determined to learn the truth about Om-Tsor, goes with Fitz to Nepal, where Ed found Om-Tsor on a pilgrimage. When Chinese soldiers capture Fitz, Maddie activates his signal device and summons the Doctor. As the Revolution Man's attacks force the world powers to mobilize, each side not knowing who to blame but feeling helpless, and the threat of World War III grows. Using the TARDIS sensors, the Doctor determines that unless events change, Earth will die on May 18, 1969.

The Doctor's party travels to 1969, where Maddie discovers that her missing boyfriend Ed Hill has become psychokinetic through his use of Om-

Tsor. Ed faked his death and now leads the terrorist Total Liberation Brigade (TLB) as the new Revolution Man. Partly insane, Ed hopes to destabilize the world's governments and create anarchy, sparking "The Revolution" and perhaps a more socialist regime. Meanwhile, Fitz has become a Chinese agent, brainwashed by their limited stocks of Om-Tsor, and negotiates with the anarchists to gain more of the drug for the Chinese government.

Maddie, swaying toward Ed's goals and perhaps influenced by his Om-Tsor power, captures the Doctor. Ed's psionic powers, now out of control, disrupts the TARDIS' Eye of Harmony and the Ship swells to the bursting point, threatening to destroy life on Earth. Fitz panics and shoots Ed in the head. Ed momentarily keeps living, powered by Om-Tsor. The Doctor, to save Earth, finishes the job and shoots Ed dead. The Time Lord then uses Om-Tsor to empower himself and prevent the world's missiles from being launched. Fitz rejoins the TARDIS crew, his conditioning broken, and begrudgingly admits to Sam that he panicked when he shot Ed. Meanwhile, Maddie retains Ed's philosophy – if not his psychokinetic power – and continues as leader of the TLB, renamed the Revolution Man cult, for some years.

Memorable Moments

Fitz's departure brings a lump to the throat. Fitz the craven coward gets trapped in a truck with a corpse. Sam talks to Maddie and discovers that you only fall in love once – everything afterward is just relationships.

Sex and Spirits

Fitz gulps wine in a bar named "The Revolution." Fitz leaves the TARDIS to be with Maddie and they presumably become lovers. Ex-prisoner Pippa says he doesn't mind if Sam is a dyke. Sam has a brief and whimsical image of settling down with the Doctor, but dismisses it. In a bit of a double entendre, as a door opens, Maddie whispers to Fitz: "I'll go down."

Ass-Whuppings

Fitz shoots Ed Hill right in the head, though the Doctor finishes the job by plugging the back of Hill's neck. Maddie, unused to Om-Tsor's power, causes a train disaster in the Himalayas that kills 361 people. The Pentagon reports that 14 servicemen died aboard the U.S. aircraft carrier

Constitution as the Revolution Man carved his mark.

Ed Hill telekinetically squishes Sam until she turns blue. Ed later telekinetically chokes Fitz and batters both Sam and Fitz with telekinetic force.

Continuity

The Doctor mentioned he met Mao Tse-Tung in "The Mind of Evil."

Fitz doesn't feel guilty about Ed Hill's death, but is more remorseful about the deed in *Dominion*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor stayed on the warm, green Gabby's World for his 800th birthday. The Doctor keeps a phone service in Kent that relays messages to his companions.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam wonders if her parents, Allan and Margaret, are at the East Worldham pop festival in 1968. She travels under the name of Mrs. Evelyn Smith. Her passport has a passable photo of her 17-year-old self. Sam's room has an adjustable 23rd century bed that she's never used.

• *Fitz Kreiner:* Fitz spends hours in the TARDIS library. He isn't sure about the history between 1963 and the end of the century. He has gray eyes. He's trying to quit smoking but isn't succeeding all that well.

When Fitz leaves the TARDIS for two years, interest from the Doctor's bonds supports him. Guitarist Fitz can play Rolling Stones and Beatles songs. He still has a hard time being brave and sometimes cries when trapped.

While gone from the TARDIS, Fitz becomes a brainwashed agent of Communist China, negotiating a bomb/Om-Tsor trade between the Chinese and the Total Liberation Brigade. During that time, he loses some of his humor and youth. He feels the Chinese system works for the good of the people – more good than the Doctor has achieved in his time Ship.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* The Doctor and Sam have worked out a note dropping system for when they're working undercover. The Doctor will routinely leave notes at one location *unless* he actually has something to say. He'll then drop notes at another site. The Doctor also taught Sam a meditation technique that revs her body with adrenaline and grants enhanced strength.

• *The Doctor, Sam and Fitz:* Sam holds Fitz responsible for Ed Hill's

death, convinced that the Doctor never murders people and was pressured to do so because Fitz panicked.

• *Sam and Fitz:* Sam taught Fitz some maneuvers to help escape from attackers.

• *The Revolution Man:* Jean-Pierre Rex originally committed terrorist acts as the Revolution Man, using power he gained from the drug Om-Tsor. Rex was disturbed by the lengths of Om-Tsor's power and relinquished the role. Ed Hill felt that Rex hadn't gone far enough, killed him and usurped the role. The Doctor, of course, later defeated Hill.

• *The TARDIS:* Fitz speculates the TARDIS telepathic circuits not only translate languages, but enable the travelers to be somewhat invisible. The TARDIS medical room contains a blue surgical containment web with lasers that cut away at damaged flesh. Shiny robots the Doctor calls healers patch in pieces of organic polymer.

Ed Hill's psionic interference disrupted the TARDIS' Eye of Harmony. As a result, the Ship's exterior enlarged greatly. Had it exploded, it could have destroyed Earth.

• *The TARDIS and Fitz:* Fitz stumbles and hits the correct console controls. The Doctor says this is because the TARDIS still likes Fitz.

Places to Go

The Revolution: A café near Piccadilly Circus.

Stuff You Need

• *Om-Tsor (a.k.a. Rubasdpofiaew):* A powerful telekinetic enhancer, used by the non-sentient brasdpods of Tau Ceti Minor to help them catch food. "Rubasdpofiaew" is the closest human equivalent of its real name. Om-Tsor creates a psychic resonance. With practice, you can use it to control the minds of others or feel when they die. Om-Tsor is addictive. The drug is powerful enough that two users in telekinetic battle can cause weather disruptions and even tsunami.

• *The Doctor's Calling Card:* A dark-blue card with white writing that says, "Police Call Box, Press to Call." It has a button like a small white, hatched window. If you press this button, the Doctor is summoned. He gave one such card to Fitz.

• *The Doctor's Jeweled Brooch:* The Doctor gives Sam a brooch that registers spatial distortion.

History (Alternate)

The Revolution Man's terrorist acts caused the world powers to gird themselves for war. The Total Liberation Brigade then bombed a United States Embassy using a Chinese bomb, igniting conflict. Nuclear Armageddon destroyed Earth on May 19, 1969.

History

• Om-Tsor was first discovered on Earth when the Manchu Chinese arrived to rule Tibet. A group from the lamasery of the Silver Monkey lost their way among the mountains and the younger monks, desperate to live, ate the Om-Tsor flowers. They gained immense telekinetic abilities and used their power to make their valley a holy place and garden. The Chinese eventually overran the monastery and threw the monks out, taking the Om-Tsor.

• Between 1967 and 1969, the Revolution Man's "hits" included the Golden Gate Bridge in San Francisco, the floor of St. Peter's Cathedral, Red Square in the Soviet Union and the deck of the U.S. aircraft carrier *Constitution*.

• The Om-Tsor mantra ("Back from the dead, better than before, I will save you from the Third World War!") became a Top 30 hit in 1967.

• Jean-Pierre Rex was widely regarded as the "King of Anarchists" until his death in 1968.

• Maggie Burton, leader of the Revolution Man Cult, died in Paris on December 12, 1973, after a history of drug addiction. The cult's popularity faded with her.

• In the future, the Doctor was in Havana for Fidel Castro's funeral.

At the End of the Day

More a Fitz/Sam story than a Doctor tale, *Revolution Man* tries too hard to revolve around social issues, but hamstrings itself and is riddled with plot holes. We're left hanging as to what the hell the "Revolution" is, beyond just rationalizing it as pure anarchy. It's implied the United States and China caused the nuclear holocaust, but it's not made clear. It's good to see the fledgling Fitz take center stage, but the concept of "aging" companions (i.e. Ace, Sam and now Fitz) has gotten tedious. Perhaps most of all, the Doctor's final solution – shooting Ed Hill – is supposed to be dramatic, but harkens back to the blood-drenched, gun-filled Colin Baker

era and lacks mystery.

Dominion

Author: Nick Walters. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #22. Release Date: May 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Sam and Fitz.

Travel Log

The Dominion and Sweden, July 31, 1999.

Summary

A swirling tunnel breaches the TARDIS' defenses, sweeping Sam into its depths. The TARDIS, heavily wounded, largely turns to sludge and the Doctor and Fitz evacuate the Ship. They find themselves in Sweden, 1999, where the Doctor uses his UNIT credentials to investigate missing persons reports and the appearance of alien carnivores – both connected to the TARDIS' ailment.

The Doctor and Fitz find Department C19 and UNIT performing alien clean-up operations and are taken to the C19 base. Professor Jennifer Nagle, a UNIT scientist, explains how she used captured alien equipment in a teleportation experiment. The Doctor informs Nagle that she's created a permanent wormhole to a pocket dimension and that all life on Earth is threatened. Random branches that extend from the wormhole are responsible for damaging the TARDIS, plus transporting various locals to the pocket universe.

Sam awakens in "the Dominion," the pocket universe in question, where a nothingness called "The Blight" is consuming the land and its various races. The frog-like T'hiili worry that their race will not survive if the Blight kills their new Queen. Meanwhile, they fight the carnivorous Ruin, who flee through the wormhole. After a fierce battle with UNIT soldiers, Earth's higher gravity kills the Ruin.

The TARDIS partly heals and the Doctor pilots it to the Dominion, where the rescues Sam and a mere 14 of the T'hiili, including their Queen. The Doctor concludes the Blight is our Universe, converting the energy of pocket universes as it expands. As the Doctor and his Shipmates watch, the

Dominion is totally consumed.

With the Dominion's death, one end of the wormhole comes loose and whiplashes to Earth. The Doctor contains the energy release with the TARDIS, although the C19 base is destroyed and Nagle dies retrieving her notes. The Doctor deposits the last remaining T'hiili to thrive and renew on a habitable planet.

Memorable Moments

A newborn Ruin hatches from a kidnap victim – a la "Aliens" – in a gross and messy moment. Nagle and the Doctor have many confrontations, especially her threat to carry on the TC Warp Generator with only her mental notes: "You're gonna have to kill me to stop me." The Doctor rejects Nagle because she's not afraid or sorrowful.

He cradles a lost T'hiili, alone and far from home, as if it were a sorrowful child. Sam goes fetal, calls for the Doctor, looks up to see Fitz, then goes fetal again.

Sex and Spirits

The sexually naïve Doctor, amazed that Fitz is alive, kisses him squarely on the lips out of sheer joy. Later, the scenario repeats itself – and Fitz quickly shakes the Doctor's hands. Just before the Dominion wormhole hits the TARDIS, Sam kisses the Doctor. Kerstin considers asking Fitz to stay with her but doesn't.

Ass-Whuppings

Fitz shoots two Bane. The Blight consumes "billions" of races in the Dominion, and all of the T'hiili race but 14 survivors. Hundreds of T'hiili commit suicide rather than succumb to the Blight. The T'hiili Queen telepathically stabs at Fitz. The Doctor is staggered from Soul-Catching with a T'hiili.

Continuity

The Doctor still carries his third persona's UNIT pass ("Battlefield").

The Doctor detects a temporal anomaly in San Francisco, leading to events in *Unnatural History*. Fitz is more remorseful about killing Ed Hill in *Revolution Man*. The Doctor employs Soul-Catching for the first time since *Dancing the Code*. Department C19 first appeared in *Who Killed*

Kennedy?

Major Gareth Wolstencroft helped repel the first Auton invasion in "Spearhead From Space." He also served in Kebiria (Dancing the Code).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Without the TARDIS' presence in his mind, the Doctor makes a series of snap judgements and wrong conclusions – he is truly incomplete. For lack of the TARDIS, his ability to sense peoples' timelines becomes inaccurate.

The Doctor can recognize Earth by its gravity, air pressure and air density. He can name the era by its pollution content. He can hypnotize people with his silver pocket watch. His body burns though tranquilizers quicker than normal. He loathes pastel color schemes and regards them as "soul-sapping."

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam, now 22, wears a Mansun T-Shirt. The Dominion wormhole destroys her TARDIS room.

• *Fitz Kreiner:* Fitz cannot speak Swedish. He learns of UNIT for the first time. He still smokes Camel cigarettes. He cries with joy at as fertilized T'hiili Queen sings.

• *The TARDIS:* Some wormholes, especially those routed through singularities, can penetrate the TARDIS. If so attacked, the TARDIS diverts all available power for healing and large parts of it melt into goo. The telepathic circuits go dormant. The TARDIS' exterior reverts to its natural shape: a gray cube, three meters in length. Before the wormhole's destruction, the TARDIS was affixed to it and would have created a dimensional tear anywhere it went. The gravity in various rooms can be adjusted. The dimensional stabilizers contain energy outbursts.

• *The Doctor and the TARDIS:* If the symbiotic link between TARDIS and its user (the Doctor) is broken for too long, the TARDIS will die.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Have sensitive noses. They kept a humanoid form because it's so adaptable.

• *T'hiili:* Frog-like Dominion natives, with pale green skin and thin limbs. They have webbed feet, elongated heads and black tongues. Younger T'hiili have yellow hair, older ones go gray. They have round blue eyes.

Their salivary glands, which extend from a white tube in their head,

produce enzymes with multiple effects. One enzyme, if taken by a non-T'hiili, allows for telepathic communication.

Reproduction primarily depends on a Queen, fertilized after a ceremony by a T'hiili's secretions. The Queen then transforms into a giant egg sack and lays thousands of eggs. Before the Queen dies, she lays a clutch with a new Queen and her new T'vorba.

The T'hiili are superstitious farmers by nature. True thinkers are rare. The T'hiili are preyed upon by the Ruin and the Bane, and often commit suicide rather than submit.

• *T'vorba:* Augmented T'hiili who exclusively guard the Queen. They have leather-like armor, stronger limbs and moth-like wings.

• *The Ruin:* The Ruin have hourglass-shaped orange bodies and six black legs about 10 feet long. They plant their eggs in live hosts, where they gestate and burst from their victims' chests in a biggie blood blister.

• *The Bane:* Primitive creatures, reptilian, covered in cactus-like spines. They're armed with flashing teeth and six-pointed claws.

Places to Go

The Dominion: The pocket universe of the Dominion seemed to stretch into infinitely. The Doctor's party didn't have much time to explore it, though the terms "planets" and "suns" might not be relevant. Earth's higher gravity will pulp the organs of Dominion residents. Parts of the Dominion glow neon pink and have black rock. Everything appears to be flammable.

Sam explored a series of interconnected caverns. Each had "sky-seas" of various colors that looked like giant lava lamps. The sky-seas don't have a mass you can feel, but have a quantity that aids with flight.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's Cybernetic Mosquito:* A 30th century device, used by an ill-willed corporation on colony worlds to take blood samples from plague victims. The Doctor uses the device to draw blood.

• *The Doctor's Dimensional Inhibitors:* Small glass pyramids, kept in the TARDIS, that radiate emerald light and stabilize space-time.

• *Telecongruency Warp Generator:* A collaboration of unknown alien equipment, constructed from captured alien vessels. It forms a Zeta Node at a distant location and establishes a telecongruency beam to it, allowing objects to teleport directly between the two points. Unfortunately, the

telecongruency beam can be warped if it passes through a black hole or other singularity, forming a permanent wormhole.

Organizations

Department C19: A C19 base in Sweden, a neutral, out-of-the-way country that aliens seem to avoid, held recovered alien equipment. The Dominion wormhole destroyed it.

Ships

T'hiili dirigibles are grown from seeds.

Time Travel

Some wormholes can be used for time travel.

Phenomena

• *The Universe and the Blight:* Our universe constantly expands, drawing energy from pocket universes through black holes or Charged Vacuum Emboitments ("Logopolis"). In the Dominion, what was referred to as "The Blight" was a wall of our universe converting everything there into energy. Not even the Guardians (The Key to Time season) can stop this process.

• *Dominion Wormhole:* (No offense to "Deep Space Nine" viewers.) Created by Professor Nagle using captured alien equipment, it linked the Dominion to Earth but had tiny side branches. With the destruction of the Dominion, the wormhole whiplashed and eradicated itself.

History (Dominion)

Fitz taught the T'hiili the use of fire.

At the End of the Day

A compact, displaced aliens story that had the makings to be ordinary but instead draws you in like a wormhole. We see how the Doctor flounders without the TARDIS and is hated for living (Wolstencroft: "People die when you're around.") Overall, a modernized UNIT story, packed with symbolism and philosophical conflict, plus an ending tied with fine catgut.

Unnatural History

Author: Jonathan Blum and Kate Orman. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #23. Release Date: June 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Fitz and "Dark Sam."

TARDIS Log

San Francisco, 2002.

Summary

The Doctor detects a dimensional scar in San Francisco, a remnant of the singularity that erupted on New Year's Eve, 2000 (in the FOX TV movie). Unfortunately, blonde-haired Sam is absorbed into the scar's depths, so the Doctor seeks out the original, dark-haired Sam, currently living as a drug-user in a London bedsit. With much encouragement, Dark Sam returns to San Francisco with him, and realizes the Doctor is hoping she'll fall into the scar and restore Blonde Sam. She flat-out refuses and the Doctor softens his attitude toward her.

With the scar's energy attracting a number of alien creatures and affecting San Francisco's gravity, the Doctor places the TARDIS in the dimensional scar to contain its output. Unfortunately, the TARDIS will explode from the pressure in two days. The scar will permanently seal if the TARDIS' substance is sacrificed, so the Doctor desperately seeks an alternative.

He begs Professor Daniel Joyce, a Time Lord living at Berkeley, to perfect a dimensional stabilizer. Meanwhile, a young agent of Faction Paradox watches events with interest. Even worse, the Doctor must contend with the extra-dimensional Griffin the Unnaturalist, the agent of a secret Society that catalogs all aliens. Griffin also rewrites the biodata of anomalies to make them ordinary.

The Doctor foils an attempt by the Unnaturalist to rewrite the Doctor's biodata and make him human. The Doctor gives Joyce's stabilizer to Dark Sam, then mistakenly shouts a coded command that only Blonde Sam would understand and distracts the Unnaturalist. Dark Sam, unwilling to let the Unnaturalist kill the Doctor, jumps into the scar and restores Blonde Sam,

who knows to fire the stabilizer at the Unnaturalist's extra-dimensional specimen case. The specimens escape, crowding around the Unnaturalist and pushing him into the scar. The extra-dimensional case itself unfolds into the scar, permanently sealing it and saving the TARDIS.

The Faction Paradox agent, with some glee, tells the Doctor that Blonde Sam came into being because she touched the Doctor's biodata in the dimensional scar – an effect that rippled through space-time and retroactively split her timeline. In short, Blonde Sam created Blonde Sam, creating a paradox. The Doctor, haunted that they've played into Faction Paradox's hands, helps Blonde Sam pretend to be Dark Sam and provide a cover story for her absence.

Memorable Moments

In a moment of potential murder, Dark Sam, suspecting that the Unnaturalist's biodata bottle will create Blonde Sam, shatters it. The Doctor one-ups the Faction Paradox agent by exposing him as being *ordinary* and no more than a servile lackey toad. The Unnaturalist pins Fitz's head with a two-dimensional blade and threatens to add the third dimension. Fitz is compressed into the Unnaturalist's specimen case.

The running argument between the Doctor and Dark Sam, who feels her whole history was rewritten solely for his benefit, pops when the Doctor finds the Unnaturalist in turn can rewrite the Doctor's biodata. Dark Sam drives home the Doctor's hypocrisy with: "Looks like the shoe is on the other foot."

Sex and Spirits

Okay, here's the biggie: Dark Sam and Fitz do the wild thing because they're human, won't manipulate each other and because they've had a really bad day. Dark Sam wanted to stay with Fitz and tells Blonde Sam this in a postcard. Blonde Sam also has some love for Fitz, but he misses Dark Sam too much.

Dark Sam and the Doctor have some wine and continually flirt. She gives him one of the series' most sensual massages. Frustrated, she snogs him, but he doesn't respond one bit.

A ten-year-old Doctor was caught skinny-dipping with a female Cousin.

The Doctor pours out a beer in remembrance of his ally, the psi-expert Kyra, killed trying to probe the Unnaturalist.

Ass-Whuppings

Dark Sam doesn't so much die as get written out of existence. The Unnaturalist kills the aforementioned Kyra while escaping a Doctor-set trap.

A Faction Paradox agent stabs the Doctor's left side and it repeatedly tears open. Dark Sam once broke her arm spray-painting a billboard. Griffin painfully twists the Doctor's biodata.

Continuity

The opening of the TARDIS' Eye of Harmony in San Francisco created the dimensional scar. Because the Doctor's biodata was exposed at the time from his regeneration, the scar pulled his biodata through multiple layers of space and time. ITAR lost its funding after the atomic clock debacle ("Doctor Who: Enemy Within"). The Doctor takes a moment, offstage, to call on Grace Holloway (also "Enemy Within").

Professor Daniel Joyce first appeared as Professor Chronotis in "Shada."

Blinovitch was a Faction Paradox agent ("Day of the Daleks," "Mawdryn Undead").

Alien Bodies both debuted Faction Paradox and first detailed "Dark Sam," Sam's original timeline. The TARDIS crew dropped the T'hiili in a yellow dimension and spent some weeks letting the Ship heal after events in *Dominion*.

The Doctor hasn't dropped acid since the unusual events in *The Left-Handed Hummingbird*. The Doctor's VW Bug, introduced in *Longest Day*, is here destroyed. The Transmerica Building and its tight pyramidal needle satisfy Orman's craving to put pyramids in all of her works. The Doctor isn't sure if Flavia or Romana is president of Gallifrey (*Lungbarrow*). Molly's, where Fitz used to play guitar, is now a restaurant and National Farmers' Union bank (*The Taint*). Fitz's duty as a Chinese agent lasted eight months (*Revolution Man*).

A line from *The Infinity Doctors*, where it's mentioned that the Doctor's father is a professor at Berekely, but that his name in *not* Ulysses, hints that Professor Joyce might be the Doctor's father. Joyce's assistant is curiously named Larna, the name of the Doctor's star pupil from *The Infinity Doctors*. The Doctor's shadow is missing, hinting he's a pawn of Faction Paradox and foreshadowing events in *Interference*.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Grandmother Time isn't pleased with the Doctor for getting out of line. He can't alter biodata. He keeps a close eye on his biochemistry and can detect alterations down to a molecular level.

The Unnaturalist calculates that 53 percent of the Doctor's biodata contains 17 conflicting streams. The Doctor can concentrate a bit of kinetic energy in his fingertips to open bottle caps. To impress someone, he'd go to the Halergani-run Perspective Centre, where you can see the whole galaxy through a glassed-in floor. He can stun people by pushing two fingers into their chest. His medical kit can cure drug addiction with a single dose of medicine. He can summon Faction Paradox with his biodata. He can undo restraints in the fourth and fifth dimensions.

It's suggested that the name of the Doctor's father was banned for his consorting with aliens, and that every record of him was deleted.

At the start of the Doctor's eighth life, he had no idea what he was supposed to do and was happy. He had flashbacks for decades because he took one of Jo Grant's hay fever tablets.

• *The Doctor and Samantha Jones:* The Doctor and Blonde Sam have worked out a series of numerical code-phrases. "Number One," for example, means run like hell. They both like omelets for breakfast.

• *Samantha Jones:* Dark Sam's parents were somewhat aware of Blonde Sam from postcards she sent them, plus a confidential visit by the military (after "Vampire Science").

• *"Dark Sam":* Sam's original self smokes and works at a video shop. She shoots smack and never calls her parents. She wrote some letters for her schools' Amnesty chapter. She has a gold stud pierced in her belly and doesn't know self-defense. At age six, the playground children laughed at her about a rumor that she'd wet her pants. The dimensional scar repeatedly rearranged tiny bits of her biodata. She's hated tomatoes since she was six. Blonde Sam told Dark Sam's friends she took a job with Amnesty in New York.

• *Griffin the Unnaturalist:* A freelancer sponsored by the mysterious Society, the Unnaturalist comes from our universe but resides partly in higher dimensions. He captures exotic animals and beings, altering contradictions so they fit in his catalog. He can manipulate how many dimensions his tools have. He can rewrite biodata with special potions. He can remove senses, such as the Doctor's ability to perceive violet and ultraviolet.

• *Professor Daniel Joyce:* The new identity of Professor Chronotis

("Shada") teaches at Berkeley. He once built a small nuclear bomb to demonstrate to academic officials how easy it was. He claims not to be a Time Lord, but that he's dealt with them in the past. He's been "Joyce" for a couple of years, has a wife named Anne and a daughter in her 30s.

The Doctor trusts Joyce, but doesn't know Joyce buys biodata from the Unnaturalist and is possibly a Faction Paradox agent. Joyce warned the Unnaturalist to leave the Doctor and Sam alone, and took control of the Unnaturalist's servile Henches. The Doctor once spent a week cleaning up after Joyce's unspecified visit to Youkali ("Return of the Living Dad").

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS' plasmic shell – its dimensional skeleton – can contain a dimensional scar's energy surges and permanently seal it if broken down. The TARDIS logs contain discontinuities.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Regeneration re-weaves a Time Lord's biodata into time and space and leaves it open to manipulation. The Doctor incorrectly thinks it's impossible to change a Time Lord's history.

• *Kraken:* A rare creature of the higher dimensions that instinctively grazes on exotic matter, such as the dimensional scar.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's VW:* The Doctor wrecked his VW Bug while driving in San Francisco. In exchange for learning the truth about Blonde Sam, the Doctor lets Faction Paradox melt down the car's metal and so it can be used to make itself in 1976. The VW's license plate read Y2K.

• *The Book of Lies:* A book of alternate history, allegedly shown only to the highest levels of Faction Paradox. The book's contents change as alternate history is rewritten. A copy exists at St. Oscar's University library on Dellah, though Benny says not to believe a word of it.

• *Time Lord Message Cubes* ("The War Games")*:* Teleporting cubes that travel best when the epistopic interfaces of space-time are properly aligned.

Organizations

• *Faction Paradox:* All Faction Paradox agents lose their shadow. They use biodata in their rituals. They can intercept Time Lord message cubes, and gather in the Eleven-Day Empire.

• *The Doctor and Faction Paradox:* In exchange for the location of the

Unnaturalist's hideout, the Doctor gives them a memory from just after his Looming, when he released a cobblemouse into his House.

Time Travel

The Doctor tricked the Dalek Empire into tangling its timeline so its history collapsed under the weight of the paradoxes ("The Daleks," "The Dalek…", oh, hell's bells, pick any Dalek story).

A Blinovitch generator can bleed off the potential energy of time travel, yet use such energy to power said time travel, creating a paradox.

Phenomena

Biodata: Psionics or those who work in the higher dimensions can reprogram biodata, although only in rare instances where it's exposed. It is philosophically and physically impossible to break biodata streams. The Unnaturalist could synthesize biodata revisions in liquid form.

At the End of the Day

A smashing, thirst-quenching work that you must read and can't just skim. Ironically, it might disappoint because expectations for the intrepid Blum and Orman team are getting outrageously high – and rightly so. *Unnatural History* throws you right into the action, then takes its time, unveiling just how much the Doctor will sacrifice to get Blonde Sam back. It's a book about identity (Sam's and the Doctor's), and in typical Blum/Orman fashion, puts a lot of irons in the fire (Dark Sam, Faction Paradox, the Unnaturalist and Joyce, just to name a few) and comes out making a lot of sense. Take your time with it.

Autumn Mist

Author: David A. McIntee. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #24. Release Date: July 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Sam and Fitz.

TARDIS Log

The Battle of the Bulge, and inside the Sidhe rift, Dec. 15, 1944.

Summary

The TARDIS shows undue attention to Earth once again and materializes at the Battle of the Bulge. Unfortunately, the TARDIS crew goes out to explore and is separated by the wartime fighting. The Doctor becomes a medic for the Allied forces while the half-German Fitz, to survive, serves as a corporal in the German army.

Sam fares the worst, as she's severely injured in by a crossfire. And when German soldiers patrol the battlefield, hunting for survivors, they mortally wound Sam with a bullet through the heart.

Sam is rescued and her body altered by the Sidhe, fairies from mythology who inhabit Earth's upper dimensions and take mortally wounded humans to become replacement Sidhe. They have been drawn to the battle by a tear in the barrier between their realm and Earth, even as the fighting threatens to spill into the Sidhe's dimension.

Unfortunately, the Queen of the Sidhe, named Titania, takes a fancy to the Doctor and upsets her partner, the being of chaos named Oberon. In her altered state, Sam sees that the historical arrival of The Beast (from *The Taint*) is causing the dimensional rip. The tear is also pulling in the Beast and killing them. The Doctor proposes closing the rip with the TARDIS' dimensional stabilizer and a large amount of ferrous material, such as a Panzer tank taken from the Germans.

The TARDIS materializes on the USS *Eldridge*, de-phased by the rift, and remagnetizes the battleship. The Doctor confronts the jealous Oberon, but as the rift begins closing, the magnetized *Eldridge*'s iron traps the fairy king. As the rift finally shuts, Oberon's dimensional cohesion is destroyed.

However, another aspect of Oberon will take his place as Titania's consort.

The Beast are freed to feed upon Earth's population as the Doctor's party has already witnessed. As the Doctor prepares to depart, having located Fitz as well, Sam realizes she's still got some Sidhe DNA in her system and has gone through more changes than any sane person should endure, and asks the Doctor to drop her – for good – anywhere on Earth near 1997. With great sadness, the Doctor agrees.

Memorable Moments

Sam realizes she's literally been through so many transformations, it's impossible to know who she is.

Sex and Spirits

Fitz wonders in what ways Sam is the same as Dark Sam, whom he slept with in *Unnatural History*. He hasn't discussed the liaison with Blonde Sam. Titania takes a fancy to the Doctor. She even steps out of her dress, though it seems unlikely anything happens.

Ass-Whuppings

Sam is hit by bullets in the lower back and thigh, then mortally wounded but restored by the Sidhe. The Doctor destroys one aspect of Oberon. An electrical discharge blasts the Doctor.

Continuity

The Sidhe were first mentioned in McIntee's *First Frontier*. The Doctor warned Sam about Mictlan, home of the Celestis, here said to be a realm of the fairy domain (likely a figurative statement). The reason for the TARDIS' fascination with Earth is explained in *Interference*. The Doctor still isn't casting a shadow (*Unnatural History*, *Interference*).

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* The Doctor is now 1,018 years old, indicating he's been sneaking off for further adventures. General Montgomery's headquarters has the Doctor registered as John Smith 55583, who drove an ambulance at El Alamein (several lifetimes ago). The Doctor can fly an L5 spotter plane. The Sidhe call him "the Evergreen Man," presumably because through regeneration, he keeps renewing himself.

He can recite poetry from *Giles Earle: His Booke* (1615) by Anonymous, his favorite poet. The Doctor skirts (so to speak) around the issue as to whether he could change sex when he regenerates. He hates driving stick shifts.

• *Samantha Jones:* Because of her restoration by the Sidhe, Sam probably has some Sidhe DNA left in her. She wears a "Pinky and the Brain" T-Shirt. She never saw much of "Star Trek: Deep Space Nine."

• *Fitz Kreiner:* Fitz doesn't speak German (but can thanks to the TARDIS translation system). His father came from Leipzig, Germany. Fitz doesn't know how to properly render people unconscious. He was never much of a churchgoer, although he went with his mother to Sunday morning services.

• *Titania and Oberon (a.k.a. the Amadan na Briona):* As the Sidhe Queen, Titania personifies order. Oberon, her consort for political reasons, not spiritual, balances her by being an agent of chaos. Both Titania and Oberon have many aspects, but only one is dominant. Titania is bound from interfering in Oberon's operations, lest another of her aspects replace her.

• *The TARDIS:* The Ship now has a kitchen, perhaps to accommodate Fitz's desire for one. The TARDIS microwave works without being plugged in. The log fire never seems to go out.

The TARDIS can materialize around a German tank. It can de-phase enough to enter the Sidhe rift, but not enough to fully enter the Sidhe realm.

The Doctor can lock the TARDIS' exterior doors, then enter through the same doors and be in the white console room, which is three miles from the main console room. The Doctor removes the spare dimensional stabilizer from the white console, as all consoles have one.

Alien Races

Sidhe: The Doctor calls them "psychomaterial constructs from a parallel evolutionary path." We would view them as similar to woodland elementals. As electromagnetic beings, they can shift between our dimension and their own, gaining intangibility, teleportation and limited time travel. As such, their powers are grounded and neutralized in the presence of iron.

For the most part, they live at peace with mankind. As part of an ages-old agreement, the Sidhe take mortally wounded humans into their realm and craft them as replacement Sidhe. Without humanity, the Sidhe would be alone. The Sidhe are immortal but can be killed. They can edit biodata. They are experts at poison and assassination.

They can warp their forms and shapeshift into other beings. Enemies who know their true names may neutralize their power (this is likely the result of a psychological Sidhe limitation).

Alien Planets

Gallifrey: The Doctor calls it a "quaint little green planet in a quiet neighborhood."

Places to Go

Sidhe Realm: Earth exists in four dimensions, but the Sidhe realm exists in those four and seven more. The Sidhe therefore alter their dimensional perception to enter our world.

History

The Doctor says *Homo sapiens* have been on Earth for six million years, yet recorded history only goes back 10,000 years. During the interval, humans and the Sidhe made war, but eventually came to a truce. In time, human dealings faded into racial memories and became fables of fairies stealing babies (part of a crossbreeding program or simple human paranoia).

At the End of the Day

An action-based tale with little story; a conflict without context that could happen basically anywhere. Oberon is a generic villain who's nasty for the sake of being nasty (and strangely enough, he doesn't really do anything bad). Lots of emotional issues are glossed over, and the book's very sloppily tied to *The Taint*. Overall, *Autumn Mist* proves that historical novels only work in a bigger, more personal context.

Interference (Books One and Two)

Author: Lawrence Miles. BBC Eighth Doctor Adventure #25 and BBC Past Doctor Adventure #25. Release Date: August 1999.

TARDIS Crew

The eighth Doctor, Sam, Fitz and an older Sarah Jane Smith; the third Doctor and a younger Sarah Jane Smith.

TARDIS Log

The eighth Doctor: London, Sam's Shoreditch home, Sarah's Croydon home, Geneva, Saudi Arabia, Newbury, Esher and Anathema, all August 1996; and Foreman's World, 38th century. The third Doctor: Foreman's World, 38th century; and Gallifrey, thousands of years ago.

Chronology

For the eighth Doctor and Sam, about a year after *Seeing I* and a few months after *Unnatural History*. For the third Doctor and a younger Sarah, between "Monster of Peladon" and "Planet of the Spiders," and after *Alien Bodies*. For the older Sarah, before *System Shock*.

Summary (Book One: Shock Tactic)

A group of aliens open trade negotiations with the United Nations for the Cold, a new type of weapon that makes people disappear instantly. But the United Nations, unsure how far this new group can be trusted, summons the Doctor for advice.

The Doctor agrees to investigate and quickly splits his forces. Sam monitors the "aliens," actually members of the Remote, a Faction Paradox offshoot group directed by a computer network. Sam also meets an undercover Sarah Jane Smith, who's investigating the Remote for friends in the United Nations. But the Remote agents get suspicious, capture Sam and take her to their city of Anathema, a settlement in space on a Time Lord warship.

Meanwhile, the Doctor drops Fitz in Geneva to monitor the United Nations, but United Nations officials doesn't trust Fitz and freezes him with the Cold, which can also put people into stasis. A frozen Fitz sleeps until the

26th century, where leaders on Ordificia, a Faction colony, accidentally awaken him. Faction Paradox evacuates Ordifica as the Time Lords attack it, and Fitz, far removed from the Doctor and his own time, and thinking he has few options, elects to become a Faction agent.

The Doctor himself traces a lead to Saudi Arabia, where the Remote originally peddled their technology, but is captured by the Saudis as a spy and tortured in prison. To gain a respite, the Doctor reweaves the mathematical equations that bind his Time Lord structure to the Universe, and temporarily transports himself to a sealed holding room in the TARDIS. Because the Doctor's equations inadvertently mingle with timestreams of past TARDIS travelers, Sarah Jane is also drawn to the holding room and speaks with him. However, the Doctor's strength fades and both he and Sarah return to their locations on Earth.

The Doctor makes another attempt and this time, arrives in the TARDIS holding room and speaks with his third incarnation. The eighth Doctor warns the third Doctor about possible interference with their timestream, but again cannot sustain his equation and returns to the prison.

In the third Doctor's TARDIS, a younger Sarah Jane is horrified to find blood seeping from the walls, floor and ceiling of the console room, a premonition of evil to come. The TARDIS is then pulled to a complex space-time event on the floundering Earth colony called Dust. There, the third Doctor and Sarah meet carnival show manager I.M. Foreman, even as Faction Paradox senses a valuable opportunity on Dust and dispatches a warship to the planet.

Summary (Book Two: The Hour of the Geek)

The older Sarah Jane uses Remote technology to find the TARDIS, home in on the eighth Doctor and rescue him. The Doctor locates Sam on Anathema, but Remote agents Kode and Guest, acting on pre-conditioned impulses, force the Doctor to slip through the Cold's Gallifreyan defenses and arrive at the heart of the Time Lord warship. The Doctor deduces that the Time Lords, their temporal powers blocked by their time-active Enemy, dispatched the warship three billion years ago to travel across space, not time, and devastate the Enemy's original homeworld. But unknown to the Doctor, that homeworld is Earth.

The Doctor convinces Guest that the Cold is the warship's ultimate weapon. If released, it will punch a hole in space-time and suck the Enemy's homeworld into another universe, where the monsters there will

destroy it. Guest, realizing that the Cold isn't the "God" he believed it to be, breaks his programming and orders the warship to depart for parts unknown.

With the Remote no longer a threat to Earth, the Doctor, Kode and Sam return to the older Sarah's house. There, Sam accepts Sarah's offer to stay in Sarah's spare room and help with her journalistic projects. The Doctor understands, and he and Sam part company.

The Doctor then turns his attention onto Kode, who, in the Remote tradition, has been "remembered," or reborn, from a lump of biodata until the original pattern is obscured. The Doctor finds Kode was originally based on Fitz, and uses Remote technology to restore his former companion.

Meanwhile, destitute Remote forces arrive on Dust to seize I.M. Foreman's TARDIS-like carnival show. I.M. Foreman reveals himself as a priest from early Gallifrey in his first incarnation. However, Foreman's later 12 lives compose the carnival show performers. To defeat the Remote, Foreman takes a risk and releases the uncontrollable Number Thirteen, his final life, more a force of nature than a person. Number Thirteen does its job and absorbs the Remote forces, but is perhaps even more of a threat.

The third Doctor quells the elemental's hunger by convincing it to use the Remote technology it consumed to merge with Dust's biosphere. Number Thirteen does so, achieving a new state of peace, even as the planet's biosphere enters a state of flux. Faction Paradox, waiting for such a moment, releases a virus onto the planet, designed to worm its way into Thirteen's exposed biodata and subvert the entire planet to the Faction's will.

The Doctor, believing his work done, tries to leave, but is halted by Magdelana Bishop, the first defender of the Dust colony. The Doctor reassures Bishop that he is a time traveler and that the danger to the colony has passed. Bishop, convinced that time travelers have brought nothing but destruction to the planet, unloads her shotgun into the Doctor.

The third Doctor dies, in the dust, with Sarah Jane crying over him.

As the third Doctor regenerates in a very paradoxical fashion, the molecules of the Faction virus mistakenly latch onto his exposed biodata and spare the new Foreman-based planet. Sarah takes the reborn fourth Doctor back to the TARDIS and history largely continues, except that the Faction virus will worm its way into the Doctor's biodata more with each incarnation. The fourth, fifth, sixth and seventh Doctors won't be affected, but the Doctor's eighth incarnation will belong to Faction Paradox.

Memorable Moments

The Doctor paints mathematical equations with his own blood, continually reopening his wound since it heals so fast.

In a dramatic foreshadowing, the TARDIS console room is consumed with blood. Even the roundels turn pink. I.M. Foreman later considers that his blood, his genetic legacy, is the most important thing about him. He sets the record for regenerations in one scene, as his first 12 lives turn into each other.

And, of course, the third Doctor's death and Sarah's tears are moving; it's an event sure to be talked about for some time to come.

Sex and Spirits

Interference is the only story where we gotta break this category down:

The Doctor: Book One ends on a cliffhanger, as the now female I.M. Foreman (*see Character Profile*) offers to let the eighth Doctor stay the night. It's hinted that something physical may have happened between them. The eighth Doctor admits that he sometimes gets urges, not for sex, but to be intimately close to an equal such as the intelligence of Foreman's World. The female I.M. Foreman kisses the Doctor in parting.

Sarah Jane Smith: Sarah sleeps with a man named Paul, and worries he might think her an alien fetishist "after last weekend." One of Sarah's pregnancy tests gave a false positive reading because the Doctor's universal vaccine altered her biochemistry.

Sam: Sam fancied her physics professor. She and the Doctor distinctly do not kiss as they part. We see Sam and Sarah in the future, best friends, drinking Bacardi.

Fitz Kreiner: The United Nations holds Fitz captive for a bit before freezing him, and occasionally supplies girls to fulfill his needs. As a time-traveling Faction agent, Fitz has at least two liaisons on Anathema, 1800. Like all Remote agents, Fitz goes sterile, suffused with temporal-stabilizing biodata. He didn't really care, not wanting to spawn kids who are miserable like him. We don't know if the Fitz "restored" from Kode can have children.

Ass-Whuppings

The Doctor's third incarnation. Number Thirteen absorbs the Remote crewmen and their ship. IM Foreman dies 12 times over.

In a Saudi prison, the Doctor receives a snapped ulna, incessant beatings and torture with shock batons. Number Thirteen sideswipes Father Kreiner

(*see Character Development*) and consumes an arm.

Continuity

I.M. Foreman's carnival show built itself on Earth as the junkyard where Ian and Barbara meet the first Doctor. Foreman's time sensitive show had attracted the Doctor's TARDIS. Susan took her last name from the I.M. Foreman sign ("An Unearthly Child"). The location was also featured in "Attack of the Cybermen" and "Remembrance of the Daleks."

The Voord on Marinus, a planet in the Voora Marinii group, had receiver aerials on their foreheads ("The Keys of Marinus").

The Doctor invented Venusian aikido (the third Doctor era). The Doctor can change how objects are mathematically mapped onto the continuum for transmigration ("The Ambassadors of Death"). The Doctor's space-time telegraph morphs to fit the period ("Revenge of the Cybermen"). The Doctor bought Sarah's stuffed owl at a jumble sale in Brighton in 1948 ("The Hand of Fear"). The pattern for the Seal of Rassilon ("The Deadly Assassin") scrambles the neurosystems of beings from outside our Universe, such as Vampires ("State of Decay"). The TARDIS only has a fake self-destruct system ("Attack of the Cybermen").

The TARDIS sensed something unhealthy was going to happen to the crew and kept returning to Earth, trying to take readings and evaluate the problem (*Dominion* through *Autumn Mist*).

Faction Paradox first appeared in *Alien Bodies*. Grandfather Paradox was first mentioned in *Christmas on a Rational Planet*. The Eleven-Day Empire was first mentioned, and the Doctor's shadow first vanished, in *Unnatural History*. K9 Mark III's parts are now contemporaneous, though his design is 50th century. This goes against his deactivation in *Decalog 3:* "Moving On."

Rassilon's vampiric tendencies were established in *Goth Opera*. Sam knows the truth about Jack the Ripper (*Matrix*). The Order of the Rectangle (*The Plotters*), the Cult of the Black Sun and Luminus (*Tragedy Day*) are enigmatic Time Lord secrets.

Sarah's sex buddy Paul was first mentioned in *Christmas on a Rational Planet*.

I.M. Foreman's universe-in-a-bottle (*see Stuff You Need*) factors heavily into the Benny New Adventure *Dead Romance*, also by Miles. Father Kreiner, here lost, is most likely the one-armed man that appears in that story.

Character Development

• *The Doctor:* Because of the third Doctor's paradoxical death and infection by the Faction Paradox virus, the eighth Doctor will likely become a Faction agent. Many Faction agents lose their shadow, the Doctor included, but the Faction supplied the Doctor with a fake shadow so he wouldn't notice he was being dominated by them. The Doctor didn't hear of Faction Paradox until his fourth incarnation, although this is changed by events on Dust.

The Doctor can employ a rarely used talent with his metabolism and alter how he is mathematically mapped onto the Time Vortex. For a limited period, he can transmigrate to the TARDIS holding room. Painted mathematical symbols here aid with his concentration.

The Doctor can distinguish humans by their syntax. He has 69 distinctive chromosomes, divided into 23 homogeneous triads. He reads *The Time Machine* once every regeneration. This is the first time the Doctor visits Sarah's home. His normal body temperature is 36 degrees (we don't know the scale used).

The Doctor is reluctant to change time, not because it's against the rules, but because he's afraid he'll be corrupted like the Master. His fillings were fitted in his second incarnation and seem to regenerate with his body. Cardinal Brabbajaggl taught a young Doctor that magic doesn't exist. His memory blots out answers to things that might drive him mad.

• *Sarah Jane Smith:* Twenty years after she left the TARDIS, Sarah is getting far-sighted. By 2000, Sarah is married, probably to the aforementioned Paul (the Doctor promised to attend the wedding). She collects Puffin originals and has a spare TARDIS key she uses as a paperweight. She now can't remember the Doctor's third regeneration properly. She moved away from London, then moved back.

• *Jeremy Fitzoliver* (*The Paradise of Death*, *The Ghosts of N-Space*)*:* Sarah's ex-co-worker has friends in the British Home Office and has worked in the Middle East.

• *Samantha Jones:* Sam is now 22. An Ogron broke her father's arm. Now back on Earth, Sam thinks she'll visit her parents again.

• *The Doctor and Sam:* On August 19, 1996, the Doctor visited a 16-year-old Sam in her Shoreditch house, when she was tripping on drugs supplied by classmate Mark Lessing and open to suggestion. She believed he was actor James Stewart. His influence helped her develop as someone who sometimes tried to enjoy herself and not always save the world.

• *Sam and Sarah Jane:* We see snippets of the future, where an older Sam is best friends with Sarah Jane and addresses an assembly of people, apparently at Sarah Jane's funeral.

• *Fitz Kreiner:* Fitz was frozen by the Cold in Geneva, 1996, then awakened in Augustine City, Ordifica, 2593. One of the Faction Paradox leaders, Mother Mathara, initiated him at age 29 into Faction Paradox, and he served a tour of duty aboard the Faction ship *Justinian* as navigator, and at Anathema at the turn of the 19th century. At age 33, he contemplated suicide by jumping as a release from his unfulfilling life, but chickened out. The Faction later gave Fitz' biodata to the Remote so they could strike copies, then took the original Fitz to the Eleven-Day Empire, where he eventually became a Father in the Faction. He was "remembered" as Remote agent Kode.

The TARDIS doesn't trust Fitz yet and he knows it. He's read *Lord of the Rings*.

• *Father Kreiner:* The oldest-living of the Remote and actually a future version of the "real" Fitz. Father Kreiner hunted and killed many renegade Time Lords. On Dust, he wanted to kill the Doctor for perceived injustices. Kreiner's dwarf star gauntlets ("Warriors' Gate") allowed him to hook onto Foreman's escaping carnival show, and he was flung into the Time Vortex. He was protected by his armor, and drawn by I.M. Foreman into her universe-in-a-bottle (*see Stuff You Need*).

• *K9 Mark III:* Sarah's little helper has state-of-the-art communications technology pioneered by Royal Ordnance. He can drive Sarah's Land Rover. K9 Mark III can detect artron energy. He uses safety software from I2 (*System Shock*). His whistle has a sonic chip that boosts its range. The Doctor has built a K9 Mark IV.

• *Grandfather Paradox:* The leader of Faction Paradox hacked off one of his arms to eliminate the monitor tattoo the Time Lords carved into his shoulder. Some Faction members emulate this.

• *The Cold:* A sentient substance, likely based on validium ("Silver Nemesis"), that partly existed in our Universe, and partly on the plane of the Great Vampires ("State of Decay"). The Cold constantly displayed faces of bat creatures and others from that plane, and could transport people or objects there. The Cold was sealed in a black globe, protected by defenses only a Time Lord could pass. Long-term Cold exposure causes neural and genetic interference.

• *The eighth Doctor and Magdelana Bishop:* Due to the paradoxical

nature of the third Doctor's death, their memories of the event are hazy and they settle their differences.

• *Carol Bel (*"The Mind of Evil," "The Claws of Axos"*):* The Brigadier's assistant left the military for a business career in 1979. In the mid-80s, she worked for a weapons research company.

• *A Geek:* The title of Book Two comes from a sideshow performer who bites the heads off live animals.

• *The TARDIS:* The TARDIS is an intricate space-time event, mapped onto the continuum by a mathematical code series. The dematerialization lever has morphed into a switch. A red phone booth on a hill in the TARDIS connects to the console room. The TARDIS has a room sealed off from the rest of the Ship, designed to trap intruders from other universes. Temporal grace currently isn't working. The Ship keeps a copy of Fitz's memories.

In Saudi Arabia, two troopers get into the TARDIS and Sarah locks them in a cupboard near the billiard room. They subsequently escape out and remain loose in the TARDIS.

The Doctor could loosely pilot I.M. Foreman's freakshow, a traveling space-time event, with the TARDIS console.

Alien Races

• *Time Lords:* Time Lord biodata is normally shielded, but is exposed during death or regeneration. Such an event releases loose artron energy tachyons in the air. It's possible that Time Lords at their final death melt into ooze. Charging a planet's ley lines with raw time will burn out a Time Lord's nervous system. Some Time Lords employ *internal chronometry*, a skill to tell the time to the nanosecond without any measuring device. The Doctor never picked up this knack.

Gallifreyans used to be shielded against the Blinovitch Limitation Effect, but the Time Lords removed this protection to discourage time travelers crossing their own time streams.

• *Time Lords and the Enemy:* The Time Lords are likely losing their war, as the gambit to destroy the Enemy's original homeworld of Earth would have irrevocably damaged history, destroyed a large segment of space-time and mutually annihilated both sides. The Time Lord warship traveled spatially, as the Enemy could have time-blocked it.

• *Ogrons* ("Day of the Daleks," "Frontier in Space")*:* Are used as a servitor species by 17 known galactic powers. Ogrons speak from their stomachs most of the time, and their diaphragm and chest cavities allow

them to communicate in a subsonic language. Ogrons are actually quite intelligent and poetic, but most of what they say is rendered as meaningless words about rocks.

• *Ogron Lords:* Agents of Time Lord groups, with time-travel codes wired into their biodata.

Alien Planets

• *Gallifrey:* Gallifrey has the same rotational cycle as Earth, so Gallifreyan years equal Earth years.

• *Foreman's World (a.k.a. Dust):* Lies in the Dead Frontier, on the opposite side of Mutters' Spiral from Quiescia (*Alien Bodies*). Dust was claimed by Earth 1,000 years ago but never developed. It was renamed Foreman's World when I.M. Foreman merged with its biosphere.

• *Ogron homeworld:* Located at co-ordinates 0110011 by C2.

Places to Go

• *The Eleven-Day Empire:* The heartland of Faction Paradox. In September 1752, England adopted the Gregorian calendar and to accommodate this, the calendar was instantly rotated forward from September 2 to September 14. Faction Paradox, in a move of delicious impossibility, now occupies the missing 11 days. Any TARDIS that sets co-ordinates for those days, assuming it will accept the program, will end up in the Eleven-Day Empire. The realm is also inhabited by ravens from the Tower of London, which are exempt from many rules of time.

Six hundred and thirty Faction Mothers and Fathers, most of whom started out as human, sit in the House of Commons. The speaker's chair is always empty, awaiting the return of Grandfather Paradox.

• *I.M. Foreman's carnival show:* A complex event that travels through time and space, but isn't connected to an extra-dimensional framework or direct power source like the TARDIS. The show moves by retroactively building and disguising itself as a new patch of space-time on its target planet. The effect takes years to stabilize, and may cause dents in the space-time continuum that lures other time travelers. Foreman used meditation techniques to telepathically program the show. Unlike TARDISes, the show can travel to ancient Gallifrey. It wasn't designed for immediate transport, and was destroyed while escaping Foreman's World.

Stuff You Need

• *The Doctor's S-reg Mini Metro:* A replacement for the Doctor's ruined VW. Sam doesn't like it.

• *The Doctor's binoculars:* Made in the Filipino Protectorate, 4993, the binoculars can see through walls and loosely display conversation.

Organizations

• *Faction Paradox:* The Faction formed during a cultural crisis on Gallifrey. Initiates to the faction have their biodata rewritten by a Faction virus. Ley lines at Faction colonies are tapped to relay power. Faction technology often rebuilds the matter around it.

• *Faction Paradox and the Remote:* The Faction eventually became corrupt and started peddling time technology, so the Time Lords eradicated many Faction colonies. One such colony, Ordifica (the Benny New Adventure *Ghost Devices*) in the 26th century had a large media net, where the Faction corrupted the planet's transmissions, thus forming the Remote to be their front-line soldiers. The Time Lords again retaliated and the Faction moved the Remote survivors to Anathema.

• *The Remote:* Remote members act on signals and impulses given by the Remote media net, many of which seem to be random.

Remote technology makes its members go sterile, so the group procreates by "remembering" or rebirthing its members from their biodata. The process is like making a copy, meaning each generation gets simpler and more stereotypical than the previous one. Remote technology gives limited control of biospheres, enough to trap I.M. Foreman's carnival show.

Ships

• *Time Lord warship:* A disc, about six or 7,000 km across, bearing the Seal of Rassilon. The warship was invisible to detection and could dematerialize. Guest wiped its navigational program.

• *Faction Paradox warships:* Only six remain, which are used exclusively by members of the Family. The warships are built from alien skeletons, even that of a Daemon ("The Daemons").

Phenomena

Rassilon Imprimatur ("The Two Doctors"): A Rassilon-created feature that maps Time Lords onto the Time Vortex as pure mathematics.

History (Apocryphal)

A Faction Paradox-told story says that Rassilon's early time-travel experiments punctured time and space and allowed thousands of Great Vampires to swarm into our Universe. (*The Pit* makes the same claim.) The Cold, a product of that universe, tried to follow, but Rassilon sealed the holes with containment shells that became new planets. It's suggested that bowships were not Rassilon's idea ("State of Decay").

History

• The Daemons ("The Daemons") lost a war against an unnamed enemy and their homeworld was infested by lesser species.

• Unnamed aliens discovered the Ogron homeworld in 1855. The planet first had contact with Earth in 2540.

• The Doctor inspired the character of the Devil in Bulgakov's *The Master and Margarita*, the Time Lord's first use as a political metaphor.

• The alien Kalekani (mentioned by Jo in *Dancing the Code*) created a terraforming virus that would make other races devastate their own worlds and cover every inch with green plants. On Earth, this manifested as the sport known as golf.

• UNISYC (*Alien Bodies*), a UN security group, was founded in 1994.

• In the United States, the order of the Presidents ran: Clinton, Dering, Springsteen and Norris. In Britain, the Prime Ministers were: Major, Blair and Clarke.

• Microsoft Chairman Bill Gates apologized for an incident at the Festival of Ghana, where Microsoft-programmed robots started killing people.

• Sarah wrote a book that caused three MPs to resign.

• Early in the 21st century, human civilization collapses due to disasters, major wars and nuclear terrorist incidents. By mid-2050s, the world government is desperate to maintain order and outlaws religion (*St. Anthony's Fire*). Anarchy shortly breaks out. By the 2060s, new governments form, creating two power blocks poised for war by the 2080s ("Warriors of the Deep").

At the End of the Day

Astounding. A cornucopia of concepts, and probably the most

comprehensive "Who" book ever. However, it's best if you walk into *Interference* without any expectations (except that it will be good), as the work is *not* a dual-Doctor story in the vein of *Cold Fusion*.

It's too soon after *Interference*'s release to know what sort of legacy it will leave, but it's a brew of ideas and ambition that *demands* you read it, becoming bigger than its individual parts. Sam leaves the TARDIS, but that isn't enough. Fitz becomes an agent of Faction Paradox, but that isn't enough. The Doctor meets one of his predecessors, then dies in a move that will keep readers talking for some time. And it still isn't enough. From beginning to end, *Interference* is a masterwork that takes risks and wins, the culmination of years of novels that opens up a whole Vortex of possibilities. It'll be interesting to see where we go from here.

Sidebar: IM Foreman

In "An Unearthly Child," the very first "Who" TV story, we encounter the first Doctor in a junkyard said to belong to "IM Foreman." Although nothing is ever seen of this individual, the Doctor's granddaughter Susan, lacking a surname of her own, sees Foreman's name on a sign and takes it as her own. However:

IM Foreman: The being known as IM Foreman was formerly a Gallifreyan priest. He wasn't a Time Lord, but his position merited him full regeneration privileges. Unfortunately, regeneration in Foreman's day was a newly developed, sometimes unstable procedure. Thus, while the first I.M. Foreman was blind, specialized in stigmata and could catch bullets in his teeth, his second incarnation, Mohandas the Geek, ate every type of animal and plant imaginable. This galvanized Foreman's system with a medley of DNA that further mutated each incarnation. This culminated in Foreman's last life, the elemental Number Thirteen.

It was while wandering on early Gallifrey that Foreman found his 12 other lives in a pit, all of them without any memories. None of them realized they existed in the same place and time due to a temporal paradox. Foreman was the original incarnation. Together, they formed Foreman's carnival show, but after they'd loosed Number Thirteen from its shackles to deal with the forces of the Remote, Foreman's first 12 lives fled and were caught as their carnival show exploded – over early Gallifrey. Each of Foreman's lives were mortally wounded and regenerated into their successor. The original Foreman then came and found them, creating a paradox.

The Doctor and IM Foreman: The Doctor considers Foreman one of his philosophical ancestors, one of the first to leave Gallifrey, and the individual who inspired the Doctor and other renegades. During the Doctor's time on Gallifrey, Foreman's unnamed religious order (perhaps the same group that spawned the Meddling Monk) didn't exist.

IM Foreman and Magdelana Bishop: To keep some tie to the human realm, Foreman assumed control of the female Magdelana, who willingly gave up her body to achieve a new state of being. Her memory is mostly dormant, but intact. Foreman's intelligence animates her body.

Sidebar: The Universe in a Bottle

To test her new power over bio-systems, I.M. Foreman drew some of the Time Vortex into a bottle and created a mini-universe, populated by duplicates of many things in our Universe.

The Doctor sees a version of his seventh self in the bottle. Many Time Lords from our Universe fled into the bottle, likely seeking an escape route from the Enemy. I.M. Foreman discovered the bottle was stolen and suspects the eighth Doctor might have taken it.

The fact is, this bottle is meant to be the universe of the Virgin New Adventures. Simply put, *every* Virgin New Adventure, either the Doctor New Adventures or the Benny New Adventures, take place in the bottle. However, the bottle is leaking, which is why there are references to the Virgin stories in the BBC Books.

The Universe in a bottle in fact plays a key role in the Benny New Adventure *Dead Romance*, in which Chris acts as an agent for an unnamed group (can we say, Faction Paradox?) and a one-armed man (obviously Father Kreiner) shows up.

P.S. Bottled or not, the Benny New Adventures seem worth your consideration and *Dead Romance* is as good a place to start as any. Enjoy.

Additional Sidebars

Top Five Historicals

• **The Witch Hunters (by Steve Lyons)** – A historical web in the tradition of "The Aztecs" – with the historical setting just a backdrop for the Doctor's personal loss.

• **The Plotters (by Gareth Roberts)** – A hilarious, farcical romp, catching the mood of the Hartnell era perfectly.

• **The Empire of Glass (by Andy Lane)** – A tapestry that includes Shakespeare, Christopher Marlowe and Galileo – and makes sense.

• **The Roundheads (by Mark Gatiss)** – The TARDIS crew matures, with Ben sailing on the high seas and Polly betraying a beloved.

• **Sanctuary (by David A. McIntee)** – An extremely emotive story, not for its history, but for the love between Bernice and soldier Guy de Carnac.

Top Ten Dramatic Moments

1) **The Doctor buries the Relic (Alien Bodies)** – In a supreme showing of self-will and determination, the Doctor buries the Relic – his own body. The forward-looking Doctor, in a nice bit of symbolism, leaves and doesn't look back.

2) **John Smith: "Throw down your gun." (Human Nature)** – At a school attacked by aliens, teacher John Smith tells the armed schoolboys that violence isn't the answer. It's a perfect showing of the Doctor's motto: "Never be cruel or cowardly."

3) **Prison breaks the Doctor (Seeing I)** – Three years of nothing – even in a nice, well-kept prison, slices the Doctor's spirit.

4) **Roz defies the Doctor (So Vile a Sin)** – He told her he couldn't protect her, but Roz intervened in Earth's civil war anyway, proving there were personal duties above the desires of even a Time Lord.

5) **Larna kills herself (The Infinity Doctors)** – The "clever" Doctor harmlessly stabs Time Lady Larna through the heart, but Larna – solely to show the Doctor he can't always win – pitches around and makes it a killing blow.

6) **Blood on the TARDIS walls (Interference)** – A gruesome image, foreshadowing the third Doctor's "death."

7) **The fourth Doctor and Romana depart the Universe (The Well-Mannered War)** – One of the series' more playful moments, symbolically ending the Virgin novels.

8) **The fifth Doctor restores the seventh Doctor's conscience (Timewyrm: Revelation)** – A rare moment of stability for the perpetually troubled Time Lord.

9) "**Dark Sam" sacrifices herself (Unnatural History)** – To save the Doctor's life, Dark Sam becomes Blonde Sam – the person she hates the most.

10) **The Doctor can't prove that murder isn't justified (Original Sin)** – As the seventh Doctor – the incarnation most prone to blowing up planets – argues to the killer Zebulon Pryce that: "Killing is wrong except when it's right and I know the difference," Pryce responds: "That's the only answer I could give when they put me on trial."

Top Ten Comedy Moments

1) **Benny snogs the eighth Doctor (The Dying Days)** – The most scandalous moment of all, as Benny says, "There's one thing I have to do," then kisses the Time Lord and throws him on a bed.

2) **The Doctor's companions bury him in sand at a day on the beach (The Also People)**

3) King James boozes (The Plotters) – King James sprawls on an armchair, legs dangling over one arm, head thrown back over the other, as a boy pours wine into his upturned mouth – a perfect example of the farce that is *The Plotters*.

4) Peri slugs the Doctor (Bad Therapy) – Twenty-five years after the Doctor abandoned her, Peri belts the Time Lord and we all feel the punch.

5) **Iris tells the Doctor's stories as her own (The Scarlet Empress)**

6) The Kroton E-Kobalt dismantles some Raston cybernetic lap dancers (Alien Bodies) – There is little more to tell.

7) **The unstable TARDIS becomes a Gingerbread House (Conundrum)** – Much to the Doctor's irritation.

8) **The Doctor fixes Mrs. Cwej's irradiator with Tobias Vaughn's brain crystal (Original Sin)** – When the Cwej household microwave breaks down, the Doctor has his enemy's

9) **The sing-a-long (Sky Pirates!)**

10) Sandwiches on the Doctor's ass (Dreams of Empire) – "One is a young male wearing a skirt. The other is older and shorter and he's got a sandwich stuck to his bottom."

Top Ten Recurring Cast

... and we don't mean the main novel companions such as Benny or Sam. We're talking about characters who turn up in at least two books, to bring the Doctor pleasure or pain. The parenthesis denote each character's first appearance.

1) **Iris Wildthyme (Short Trips: "Old Flames")** – The irresistible, indomitable Iris is only one novel and two stories old, and we just adore her. For being brazen – if not always for experience – she's a fine match for the Doctor.

2) **Irving Braxiatel (cameo: Legacy; full: Theatre of War)** – Astute, worldly and slightly devious. That the Benny New Adventure *Tears of the Oracle* reveals Brax is the Doctor's brother doesn't bother us a bit.

3) **Grant Markham (Time of Your Life)** – Technically a Doctor companion, the intuitive Grant's stage time is still small – and we keep clammering for more.

4) **Dark Sam (cameo: Alien Bodies; full: Unnatural History)** – Sam's original timeline was near-destitute and not always nice to know – but damn interesting to read about.

5) **Sherlock Holmes and John Watson (All-Consuming Fire)** – The Doctor has always been Holmes-like, and this pair fit the TARDIS crew like Holmes' well-used pipe.

6) **Patience (Cold Fusion)** – Sensuous, sinuous and just a little sultry, Patience, as the Doctor's wife, would rank higher, but we never saw *that* much of her.

7) **Vincent and Justice (Cat's Cradle: Warhead)** – A pair whose lives were woven into the Doctor's in a snarled ball of yarn. By the end of "The War Trilogy," you'll know their every triumph and tragedy.

8) **Kadiatu (Transit)** – Often cited as a recurring novel character, Kadiatu's character was sometimes too confusing for her to rank higher. She was best used in *The Also People* – where she didn't speak most of the time.

9) **The new Master of the Land of Fiction (Conundrum)** – Couldn't be more different from the Land's original Master – and nicely symbolic of modern-day slackers.

10) **The *Schirron Dream* crew (Sky Pirates!)** – A frolicking,

lighthearted bunch that we're glad to see has a life in the Benny New Adventures.

Top Ten Gory Moments

1) **The Doctor makes a lithopaedian child grow (Damaged Goods)** – The Doctor ends a psionic threat by psionically making a lithopaedian – a calcified still birth – grow out of its mother, killing them both. This is terribly messy proof that *Damaged Goods* is among the most mature "Who" novels.

2) **The Lord Chancellor bites a Sontaran's head off (Shakedown)** – The insect-like Chancellor munches down. Again, you can do this at home with a baked potato.

3) **Some senior citizens combust (Nightshade)** – There's something chilling about the elderly going up in flames.

4) **"A cat will lick your heart" (Managra)** – A literal bit of fun and festivities in the Countess of Blood's castle.

5) **Vampire Eric tears his own head off (Goth Opera)** – Eric's a pawn sacrificed by vampire lord Yarven to rattle the Doctor – and it works on us.

6) **Sam finds a child's head (War of the Daleks)** – That doesn't seem *quite* so comparatively bad, until you consider there's a little bit of spinal cord to go with it.

7) **The talking dolphin massacre (Storm Harvest)** – One moment, they're happily talking to us, the next, the vicious Krill make them into dolphin meat. Haters of "Barney" will likely cheer.

8) **The N-form tears a human's flesh (Damaged Goods)** – Imagine a hundred little tentacles emerging and separately nibbling away and absorbing someone's meat.

9) **A blood-bloated baby reads Sam's timeline (Alien Bodies)** – Complete with umbilical chord, this kid was part of Faction Paradox's little batch of biological tricks.

10) **Jan becomes a Hoothi (Love and War)** – Imagine someone puffing up like a giant mushroom. Cornell's skilled wording here is key.

Top Ten Books for Newcomers

Presuming you're someone who remembers the key stories of the "Who" TV show – but hasn't sampled the novels – may we recommend, in order:

1) **Gareth Roberts' Fourth Doctor books (The Romance of Crime, The English Way of Death, The Well-Mannered War)** – Deft and daffy, perfectly capturing the flavor of Tom Baker's later years. The effort for newcomers is effortless.

2) **The Sands of Time (by Justin Richards)** – An intoxicating, emotive adventure for viewers of "Pyramids of Mars."

3) **Vampire Science (by Jonathan Blum and Kate Orman)** – For people who have seen the Paul McGann TV movie, this galvanizes them into the eighth Doctor books.

4) **Goth Opera (by Paul Cornell)** – Its connections to *Blood Harvest* are actually minimal, and it's a pithy little vampire romp.

5) **Theatre of War (by Justin Richards)** – The most meaty of Justin Richards' many stand-alone stories.

6) **The Highest Science (by Gareth Roberts)** – A good intro book for the novel seventh Doctor and Benny, unburdened by the overwhelming changes of the previous *Love and War* and *Transit*.

7) **The Infinity Doctors (by Lance Parkin)** – While you're tempted to steer newcomers from this one, consider that there really aren't any overt links to other books, or even the show – which is why it's so good.

8) **Nightshade (by Mark Gatiss)** – A frightful little bit of stand-alone horror.

9) **Millennial Rites (by Craig Hinton)** – So long as you've seen "The Trial of a Time Lord," there's something for everyone here.

10) **Timewyrm: Exodus (by Terrance Dicks)** – Even though it's part of the "Timewyrm" series, *Exodus* stands alone as a sequel to "The War Games."

Top Ten Companion Tortures

1) **Benny tortured by Nazis (Just War)** – And we do mean tortured by Nazis, with all the realism that implies. It's a bit of Earth-spun horror that strikes too close to home.

2) **Sam turns to a puddle of ooze (The Janus Conjunction)** – Radiation makes Sam's lipids turn to mush. Fetch the TARDIS bucket and mop.

3) **Fitz pin-cushioned (Unnatural History)** – Giffin the unnaturalist sticks Fitz through the head with a multi-dimensional knife.

4) **Benny licks Gabriel's hand-wound (Falls the Shadow)** – Purely for humiliation's sake, the telekinetic Gabriel makes Benny do this.

5) **Ace bereft in London (Matrix)** – Ace is separated from a crazed Doctor who might kill her – in a London that's no help.

6) **Nyssa becomes a vampire (Goth Opera)** – Nuff said.

7) **Nyssa becomes a mummy (The Sands of Time)** – She's still cute, though.

8) **Nyssa becomes an anti-matter creature (Zeta Major)** – Dear God, have we forgotten she's a "Who" sex symbol?

9) **Ace/Benny birth parasites (Parasite)** – And that's only the beginning of their hideous wounds (*see Ass-Whuppings*).

10) **Benny addicted to bubbleshake (The Highest Science)** – An intoxicating drink snares Benny, who gulps it and says: "I think it's going to kill me."

Top Ten Companion Triumphs

1) **Benny reunited with her father (Return of the Living Dad)** – The loss of her father – and not knowing if the stories of him being a coward were true – ate at Benny perhaps more than her mother's death. Here, she finally learns the truth.

2) **Roz destroys an N-form, wins Earth's civil war (So Vile a Sin)** – Roz' greatest story comes at the cost of her own life.

3) **Ian, Barbara and UNIT repel an invasion from a parallel world (The Face of the Enemy)** – The Doctor's not home, but Earth's still safe.

4) **The TARDIS defeats the Carnival Queen (Christmas on a Rational Planet)** – With chaos having a choke-hold on all of creation, the TARDIS outwits everyone and saves the laws of physics.

5) **Chris becomes self-actualized (The Room With No Doors)** – Chris finally learns to survive without the Doctor or Roz.

6) **Ace sides with the Doctor (No Future)** – Ace chooses the Doctor over the Time Lord Mortimus, in many ways forswearing a life of violence and destruction.

7) **Benny forgives the Doctor (Just War)** – Not that the Doctor deserved mercy for inadvertently getting Benny tortured, but this act shows her mettle as a human being.

8) **Ace outwits the Doctor (Lucifer Rising)** – Ace, older and tougher, turns the tables on the Doctor and uses *him* to carry out a mission for IMC.

9) **Ben Jackson survives high-seas adventure (The Roundheads)** – Ben puts his survival skills to good use, courageously winning a high-seas fight to the death.

10) **Sam rescues the Doctor (Seeing I)** – Three years older, Sam finds the TARDIS and extracts the Doctor's butt from prison.

Top Ten Things We Wish Hadn't Happened

1) **Dalek retcon (War of the Daleks)** – If you're like us, you were breathless at the end of "Remembrance of the Daleks" as the Doctor destroyed Skaro. *War of the Daleks* says nay, every Dalek story from "Destiny" on up was a grand deception. Whatever.

2) **The Doctor shoots Ed Hill (Revolution Man)** – Point: The eighth Doctor should not solve problems with blatant violence.

3) **The death of Liz Shaw (Eternity Weeps)** – Killing off Liz, would actually have been fine except for making it a sub-plot. *Eternity Weeps* reads story, story, death of Liz Shaw, story, story. She deserved better.

4) **Illicit Dodo sex (The Man in the Velvet Mask)** – Glad as we are to see the novels have a sexual maturity, talk here of Dodo's "corruption" goes a bit far.

5) **John Smith goes fetal (Human Nature)** – We understand why John Smith was overwhelmed by *Human Nature*'s events, but he's a damn wuss here. Stand up and be a Time Lord. Or at least a man.

6) **The Doctor deliberately rejected Ace (Deceit)** – There's no point in having the character drama of *Love and War*, only to state it was all a set-up.

7) **Leela as the Doctor's mother (Lungbarrow)** – A frivolous, off-handed notion that would make Andred the Doctor's father – which makes us want to puke.

8) **The third Doctor confronts the eighth Doctor (The Eight Doctors)** – The childish third Doctor should know that threatening violence against your future self is lame.

9) **Kamelion's brief return (The Ultimate Treasure)** – Another last-minute notion that unwisely attempts to redeem the tragedy that was Kamelion's robotic life.

10) **The Doctor gets drunk (Transit)** – C'mon, this is something we just don't want to see.

Top Ten Doctor Enemies

1) **The Doctor** – In many ways, the heart (or hearts) of "Who" is a man perpetually trying to do the right thing, and who's at war with himself because of the costs involved – often the lives or trust of friends. The Doctor often loses, even when he "wins." When the Doctor is bold, people often die. When the Doctor is insecure, people often die. His choices create hardships for himself, not the least of which is his own internal schisms making him become the Valeyard. Bottom line: It's hell being him.

2) **Faction Paradox (Alien Bodies)** – If you're a Time Lord, the Faction – with its reverence of paradoxes – is poison.

3) **The Hoothi (Love and War)** – Able to conscript the dead – and transform the living – the Hoothi were near-unstoppable. The Doctor beat them largely by luck.

4) **The Valeyard (Millennial Rites, Matrix)** – Mostly a comic-book villain on TV, but a sinuous foe in the novels.

5) **The Ferutu (Cold Fusion)** – Alternate Time Lords so powerful, they killed 20,000 Unitatus members in the blink of an eye.

6) **The Timewyrm (the Timewyrm series)** – A creature of raw cosmic power, hampered mostly by her own greed.

7) **The Carnival Queen (Christmas on a Rational Planet)** – In many ways, the ultimate bane to the logical Doctor and his Universe.

8) **Ruath and her vampires (Goth Opera)** – Mankind's natural predators, even more so deadly with Ruath's Gallifreyan technology.

9) **Huitzilin (The Left-Handed Hummingbird)** – As Huitzilin became more powerful, the Doctor ceased to exist.

10) **Griffin the unnaturalist (Unnatural History)** – A foe who came damn close to rewriting the Doctor's biodata and making him human. Griffin memorably pin-cushions Fitz with a multi-dimensional knife.

Top Ten Doctor Triumphs

1) **The fifth Doctor restores the Doctor's conscience (Timewyrm: Revelation)** – After *Timewyrm: Revelation*'s roller coaster of terror, the innocent fifth Doctor is mentally freed, healing the Doctor's schismed mind.

2) **The Doctor bests the Pythia (Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible)** – The Doctor informs the mystic Pythia that science will win, and the witch banishes herself from Gallifrey, paving way for the Intuitive Revolution.

3) **Lungbarrow restored (Lungbarrow)** – The Doctor returns home, 873 years later, and reclaims the status of his Family house.

4) **Earth's timeline saved (Blood Heat)** – The Doctor saves our Universe from a premature death – even though he destroys a parallel reality to do it.

5) **Earth's timeline saved (Genocide)** – The Doctor saves the Universe again, this time by crushing an alien Tractite timeline.

6) **Death loses her bet (Sleepy)** – As per a bet with the embodiment of Death, the Doctor prevents anyone from dying.

7) **Managra defeated (Managra)** – A nice bit of symbolism, as the Doctor's creativity overwhelms Managra, a creature of recycled ideas.

8) **Mortimus defeated (No Future)** – Mortimus tried to take everything that was the Doctor's – his companion, his UNIT status, etc. – but the Doctor didn't yield and Mortimus fled, hounded by his insecurities and doubts.

9) **Joanna Harris restored (Vampire Science)** – The Doctor, faced with defeating a vampire horde and saving Sam, takes the time to cure vampire Harris of her condition – without resorting to violence.

10) **The sixth Doctor reaffirms himself (Millennial Rites)** – Battered by his experiences with his evil future self, the Valeyard, the sixth Doctor vows to never threaten his companions' lives. It's a key and noble moment, even if he later fails at this goal.

Top Ten Doctor Defeats

Everyone loses sometimes – even the Doctor. We eliminated from this tragedies like the death of Liz Shaw, where the Doctor wasn't involved at all.

1) **The death of Roz Forrester (So Vile a Sin)** – The Doctor warned Roz he couldn't protect her if she became involved in Earth's civil war. Ultimately, the choice was Roz's – but her death still gave the Doctor (literally) a heart attack.

2) **Ace rejects the Doctor (Love and War)** – The Doctor saves the planet Heaven – by sacrificing Ace's lover.

3) **Guy de Carnac lost (Sanctuary)** – The Doctor failed to save Guy, Benny's greatest love, from attacking Church soldiers.

4) **The third Doctor killed (Interference)** – The third Doctor takes a shotgun blast and paradoxically dies on the planet Dust.

5) **The Doctor imprisoned for three years (Seeing I)** – Sam tells a freed Doctor: "[Three years is] a blink of an eye to you." He responds: "It was three years of *nothing*."

6) **Vincent shot (Warchild)** – The Doctor uses Vincent, a budding psionic, as a weapon. Vincent, betrayed by virtually everyone he knew, goes rogue and dies.

7) **Koschei becomes the Master (The Dark Path)** – He was the Doctor's best and oldest friend, yet Koschei felt betrayed by his own people – and the Doctor – and yielded to his dark nature.

8) **The Doctor destroys a parallel timeline (Blood Heat)** – To save our Universe, the Doctor terminates a parallel reality – an act that destroys his companions' faith in him.

9) **Angela killed (Time of Your Life)** – The sixth Doctor, already fearing his dark side will get people killed, watches his newest companion die before the alien Network.

10) **An unnamed girl dies (The Room With No Doors)** – The Doctor flees with a child – but an arrow penetrates both of them.

Top Ten Doctor Atrocities

We're not implying that the Doctor was not justified in these acts, or that he's a psychopathic killer. Anything but. However, he does have an impressive body count:

1) **"Silurian Earth" reality (Blood Heat)** – At stake: Our Universe. The loss: One reality, and the faith of the Doctor's companions.

2) **Tractite timeline (Genocide)** – A similar set-up, with Sam eventually more sympathetic to the Doctor than Ace or Benny.

3) **Six hundred million people (Eternity Weeps)** – Purged on parts of Earth infected with the deadly Agent Yellow and sterilized.

4) **Hoothi dirigible (Love and War)** – A race almost like anti-life, capable of animating the dead. The Doctor torched 'em.

5) **Chelonian battlefleet and Zamp-loop ship (Zamper)** – The Doctor convinces the Chelonians they must die to destroy the lethal Zamps.

6) **Kroton warspear (Alien Bodies)** – Killed by their own energy beams – arranged to reflect by the Doctor.

7) **The duplicate Cirrandaria (Vanderdeken's Children)** – The Doctor destroyed this ghost ship, but two civilizations still fell.

7) **Vampires (Goth Opera and Vampire Science)** – The former group fried by an alien sun, the latter killed ingesting a lethal toxin from the Doctor's own veins.

8) **A half-dozen telekinetic psychopaths (The Taint)** – Delusional people with the power to take over Earth; the Doctor blew their heads off.

9) **Ed Hill (Revolution Man)** – Shot to prevent World War III.

10) **Rebecca Nurse (The Witch Hunters)** – The Doctor arranged her execution to preserve history in Salem, Mass.

Top Five Short Stories

1) **"Continuity Errors" (by Steven Moffat, Decalog 3)** – A choice story about the Doctor altering and again altering someone's history – and their still saying "no" to his request for a library book. Breathtaking.

2) **"Schrodinger's Botanist" (by Ian McIntire, Perfect Timing)** – One of the novel line's best memory plays, focusing on Grant Markham.

3) **"Model Train Set" (by Jonathan Blum, Short Trips)** – Jon Blum makes the Doctor's simple hobby larger than life.

4) **"Femme Fatale" (by Paul Magrs, More Short Trips)** – Iris Wildthyme returns, again spreading her "stories," with much style.

5) **"The Last Days" (by Evan Pritchard, Short Trips)** – Ian is on the firing line this time, and his sacrifice to save history rattles one's spine.

Short Stories (highlights)

Note: For the sake of sanity, we've limited these anthology sidebars to stories that have a bearing on continuity.

Decalog

• **"Scarab of Death" (by Mark Stammers)** – On Beta Osiris, the fourth Doctor and Sarah Jane discover that the powerful Osirian Horus, brother of the evil Sutekh ("Pyramids of Mars"), died centuries ago when his life-support failed.

• **"Prisoners of the Sun" (by Tim Robins)** – The Time Lords here decide that the Doctor, while a useful agent, must be kept busy on Earth, and they let the Master escape from Shada ("Shada"), leading to "Terror of the Autons."

Decalog 2: Lost Property

• **"Where the Heart Is" (by Andy Lane)** – The Doctor acquires a house ("The Three Doctors") from Dantalion, an alien doctor, and gives it to a budget-crunched UNIT.

• **"The Trials of Tara" (by Paul Cornell)** – The Doctor and Bernice return to the planet of Tara ("The Androids of Tara"), where Count Grendel's forces, including the sweet executioner known as the Kandyman ("The Happiness Patrol"), attack Queen Strella's castle. The Kandyman is doused with red wine and melts. King Reynart returns, having freed himself from a temporal trap laid by some witches, and defeats Grendel. On the gracious Doctor's suggestion, Reynart restores Grendel's family name of Gracht. Notes: Reynart bequeathed the Doctor some Taran fields for his service, including the Pavilion of the Summer Winds ("The Androids of Tara").

Decalog 3: Consequences

• **"Moving On" (by Peter Anghelides)** – Sarah Jane lost a few years when the Doctor returned her to Earth ("The Hand of Fear"). Between 1995 and 2001, she publishes seven Metropolitan stories and 12 novels based on her adventures with the Doctor. Years later, she writes Moving On, her swansong to the line. Meanwhile, K9 Mark III, needing replacement parts

that aren't available in Sarah's time period, finally breaks down. She places him in a cardboard box in her attic.

Short Trips

• **"Old Flames" (by Paul Magrs)** – In the 18th century, the fourth Doctor and Sarah find a double-decker bus that belongs to Iris Wildthyme, a Time Lady in an older body who's enamoured of the Doctor. After the Doctor stops a cat-like alien from stealing Iris' TARDIS, Iris departs, leaving behind her companion, a young man named Turner.

• **"Mondas Passing" (by Paul Grice)** – Ben Jackson and Polly, returned to Earth and now married to other people, gather in a hotel on New Year's Eve, 1987, to celebrate their adventure with the Cybermen in Antarctica ("The Tenth Planet"). They consider having a liaison, but decide against it and return to their lives.

More Short Trips

• **"Good Companions" (by Peter Anghelides)** – We learn that Tegan Jovanka, after her return to Earth ("Resurrection of the Daleks") stayed in a convalescent home and became convinced that the Doctor was a figment of her imagination. She marries William Haybourne, a chair at St. Cedd's, but outlives him. At age 73, she meets Anna, a companion of a future Doctor, who uses both Tegan and Anna to banish a group of paradoxical Sigrarnons back to their home dimension.

• **"Femme Fatale" (by Paul Magrs)** – We re-meet Iris Wildthyme, who regenerated into a blonde bombshell in The Scarlet Empress. Though her memoirs, we view an adventure with her, the eighth Doctor, Sam and a plot to shoot Andy Warhol in 1968.

Perfect Timing

Perfect Timing was a 1998 fund-raiser for The Foundation for the Study of Infant Death,. It wasn't intended as canon, but:

• **"One Perfect Twilight" (by Craig Hinton)** – The Doctor uses the TARDIS' Combinatorix Engine, which generates the mathematics that form the TARDIS, to probe Kamelion's memories. He learns Kamelion was constructed on Ooolatriis by the Ooolatrii, sentient octopoids filled with hubris. The Ooolatrii used their metamorphing servants to invade Xeriphas, but the Xeriphin dominated the robots and turned them on their masters. The Ooolatrii, stunned their will was not all-powerful, collectively died. The servants, their programming complete, committed suicide. Unfortunately, Kamelion's programming malfunctioned and he alone survived, leading to his encounter with the Master.

• **"Schrodinger's Botanist" (by Ian McIntire)** – The sixth Doctor and Grant share many adventures, sometimes with an amiable Legion as a companion. The Legion stays on a volcanic planet to lead humans left destitute by a Wirrrn attack. Still later, Grant helps the Artificial Intelligence FRANK combat a computer virus, lest a habitat dome lose its life support. Grant succeeds, but is knocked unconscious. When he awakens, the Doctor has gone, but left him the resources to start a new life. Grant in time marries a cellist named Becky. They have some children, including a daughter named Emily. Years later, the sixth Doctor returns, saying he left Grant because he didn't want another companion's blood on his hands. Grant berates the Doctor for having a martyr's complex and not letting his companions make their own decisions. Grant storms out, likely to never see the Time Lord again. Note: No problem if this stands as Grant's exit story.

• **"Doctor-Patient Relationship" (by Kate Orman & Jon Blum)** – The eighth Doctor and Grace meet for breakfast and spend the day together. She's not ready to became a TARDIS crewmember, but they agree to meet once a year. Ultimately, the Doctor stops by and Grace leaves him a note that she's living with a man named James now. The Doctor leaves Grace a Time Lord message cube and a note to call him when she's ready. Note: This was intended as the first chapter of Vampire Science, but Grace's presence in that story is replaced by Caroline, so this becomes apocryphal.

The Best Novels

1) **Alien Bodies (by Lawrence Miles)** – A book that thankfully refuses to look at the Doctor's past and ponders his future.

2) **The Also People (by Ben Aaronovitch)** – One of the best books as an overall package – full of drama, humor, wit, sex and life.

3) **Human Nature (by Paul Cornell)** – Although arguably not a better love story than *The Infinity Doctors*, *Human Nature* focuses on that as its main thread and is a continual fan hit.

4) **Cold Fusion/The Infinity Doctors (by Lance Parkin)** – We lumped these two together because they can be read separate, but the plot thread between them (the Time Lady Patience) will move you to read both.

5) **Seeing I (by Jonathan Blum and Kate Orman)** – Blum and Orman, out of ways to torture the Doctor, reinvent the model.

6) **The Witch Hunters (by Steve Lyons)** – One of the more terrifying works because for once, the inhumanity (at Salem) was real.

7) **Just War (by Lance Parkin)** – Shocking in its realism and finely tuned, with the Doctor's off-handed remarks costing lives.

8) **The Well-Mannered War (by Gareth Roberts)** – The most polished of Roberts' fourth Doctor books, driven by quick wit and a constantly improving TARDIS crew.

9) **Timewyrm: Revelation (by Paul Cornell)** – The earth-shaking novel that first – and arguably best – changed the "Who" paradigm. *Revelation* might rank higher, save that later books borrowed from it and pushed the "Who" envelope.

10) **The Sands of Time (by Justin Richards)** – The often-passive fifth Doctor proves you don't need to destroy planets to save the Universe – or one's friends.

Runners-Up

• **Goth Opera** – A clear-cut adventure, absolutely true to the fifth Doctor's character.

• **Millennial Rites** – A work that lovingly reinvents the characters of Melanie Bush, the Valeyard and the sixth Doctor.

• **Lungbarrow** – A stellar, innovative work as the culmination of seventh

Doctor novels, but by itself reads a bit thick.

• **Interference** – *Interference* is so innovative, it's actually a no-brainer for the Top 10, save that it's *so recent*, it's legacy is
unclear. We're hoping and praying that with author Miles stating he'll never write a "Who" book again, *Interference* isn't swept aside because, like good drama, it *demands* you read what happens next.

Also Recommended

When doing Top 10 lists, a book or an idea has to be *damn* strong to rank it. That said, there are a number of other "Who" books, wonderfully strong, that deserve your time and consideration. Here's a sample, in alphabetical

Demontage (by Justin Richards) – One of the juiciest stand-alone eighth Doctor stories with Fitz. Fitz's attempts to act like James Bond in a casino are priceless.

The Devil Goblins of Neptune (by Keith Topping and Martin Day) – Wild and wacky, A UNIT story with true *alienness* about it.

Dreams of Empire (by Justin Richards) – Richards, known for modelling self-contained stories, also fashions this chess-based novel with much menace.

Head Games (by Steve Lyons) – A work that ties many threads, but unveils the Doctor's conflict (literally) with himself.

The Hollow Men (by Keith Topping and Martin Day) – A homespun tale of a lifelong terror in an English village.

Illegal Alien (by Mike Tucker and Robert Perry) – A relaxed Cybermen story, with little inter-TARDIS angst.

Managra (by Stephen Marley) – English majors will get more out of this lavishly literate book – but try it anyway.

The Scarlet Empress (by Paul Magrs) – A "magical" adventure without magic, about as close to fantasy as "Who" can get while remaining "Who."

Vanderdeken's Children (by Christopher Bulis) – If you're grooving with the concept of closed time loops, this is damn haunting.

"The War Trilogy" (Cat's Cradle: Warhead, Warlock and Warchild, by Andrew Cartmel) – A story where the Doctor's sometimes sidelined, yet sizably contributes to the bloody conclusion.

The Case for Ambition

To say that after 36 years of reinvention, the "Doctor Who" story is now out of ideas is a statement of convenience – if not downright laziness sometimes.

At many, many points in the series' history, the producers could have refused to reinvent the Who model. After Jon Pertwee's era – just to cite one example – the show could have folded and the creators said, "Sorry, we'll never achieve a level of greatness beyond what we did with the UNIT years. Thank you very much, you've been a great audience. Good night." Instead, they persevered as long as the BBC let them – and we're all better for it.

"Who" endured while other series were canned because it's format is naturally one of change and evolution. Even now, years after the Paul McGann movie, we cannot lose sight of that or we're doomed. The novelists face the challenge of reinventing the "Who" wheel without making it unrecognizable. The fans, for their part, must accept that today's "Who" cannot *just* consist of the fourth Doctor passing out jelly babies (although there's certainly a place for it) and be open to new characters and plots.

But we believe in these novels or we wouldn't have done this reference guide. The challenge is up to us all. God bless you.

Other Ebooks Available from Mad Norwegian Press

The Geek Girl Chronicles

- Chicks Dig Comics: A Celebration of Comic Books by the Women Who Love Them; edited by Lynne M. Thomas and Sigrid Ellis
- Chicks Unravel Time: Women Journey Through Every Season of Doctor Who; edited by Deborah Stanish and L.M. Myles
- Whedonistas: A Celebration of the Worlds of Joss Whedon by the Women Who Love Them; edited by Lynne M. Thomas and Deborah Stanish

Essay book by Catherynne M. Valente

- Indistinguishable from Magic; edited by Lars Pearson

Doctor Who-related essay collections and critique books

- About Time 3: The Unauthorized Guide to Doctor Who (Seasons 7 to 11) [Second Edition], by Tat Wood, with additional material by Lawrence Miles
- About Time 5: The Unauthorized Guide to Doctor Who (Seasons 18 to 21), by Lawrence Miles and Tat Wood
- About Time 7: The Unauthorized Guide to Doctor Who (Series 1 to 2), by Tat Wood, with additional material by Dorothy Ail
- Ahistory: An Unauthorized History of the Doctor Who Universe [Third Edition], by Lance Parkin and Lars Pearson
- Queers Dig Time Lords: A Celebration of Doctor Who by the LGBTQ Fans Who Love it, edited by Sigrid Ellis and Michael Damian Thomas
- Running Through Corridors: Rob and Toby's Marathon Watch of Doctor Who (Vol. 1: The 60s), by Robert Shearman and Toby Hadoke
- Time, Unincorporated: The Doctor Who Fanzine Archives (Vol. 1: Lance Parkin)
- Time, Unincorporated: The Doctor Who Fanzine Archives (Vol. 3:

Writings on the New Series); edited by Graeme Burk and Robert Smith?

Sci-Fi Reference Guides and Critique Books

- Dusted: The Unauthorized Guide to Buffy the Vampire Slayer by Lawrence Miles, Lars Pearson and Christa Dickson
- Redeemed: The Unauthorized Guide to Angel, by Lars Pearson and Christa Dickson
- Wanting to Believe: A Critical Guide to The X-Files, Millennium and The Lone Gunmen, by Robert Shearman

Faction Paradox novels

- This Town Will Never Let Us Go (Faction Paradox #1) by Lawrence Miles
- Of the City of the Saved (Faction Paradox #2) by Philip Purser-Hallard
- Warring States (Faction Paradox #4) by Mags L. Halliday
- Dead Romance (Faction Paradox #0) by Lawrence Miles

About the Author

LARS PEARSON has served as editor-in-chief and publisher of Mad Norwegian Press since 2001, overseeing such works as the Hugo Award-winning *Chicks Dig...* essay book series and the (to date) seven-volume *About Time* series, a seminal work on *Doctor Who*. With Lance Parkin, he co-writes the definitive *Doctor Who* timeline *Ahistory* (which is now 30,000 words bigger than *War and Peace*). For three years, he was a staff editor at Wizard Entertainment, working on such magazines as *InQuest Gamer*, *ToyFare* magazine and *Wizard: The Guide to Comics*. As he discovered one day while shuffling Scrabble tiles about for no particular reason, his name can be rearranged to spell "Slap No Rears." Whatever his misgivings about the quality of *I, Who* (as the groveling introduction to this ebook indicates), he does recognize that it's the wellspring from which so much of Mad Norwegian eventually flowed.

Publisher / Editor-in-Chief
Lars Pearson
Design Manager / Senior Editor
Christa Dickson
Associate Editor
Josh Wilson

Mad Norwegian Press
1150 46th Street
Des Moines, Iowa 50311
madnorwegian@gmail.com
www.madnorwegian.com
And please join the Mad Norwegian Press group on Facebook!

Table of Contents

Table of Contents
- Feature Articles
- Story Entries
- The Infinity Doctors and Other Stories
- First Doctor Stories
- Second Doctor Stories
- Third Doctor Stories
- Fourth Doctor Stories
- Fifth Doctor Stories
- Sixth Doctor Stories
- Seventh Doctor Stories
- Eighth Doctor Stories
- Additional Sidebars
- Other Ebooks Available from Mad Norwegian Press
- Credits

Foreword / an Apology to the I, Who ebooks (2014) by Lars Pearson
Original Foreword to I, Who (1999)
Introduction by Sylvester McCoy
Novelist Round Table
Did You Know?
The Crucial Bits
- The Infinity Doctor and Other Stories
- Missing Adventures
- The New Adventures
- Eighth Doctor Adventures

The Infinity Doctors and Other Stories
- The Infinity Doctors
- Who Killed Kennedy?
- The Face of the Enemy
- Downtime

First Doctor Stories
- The Sorcerer’s Apprentice
- The Witch Hunters
- Venusian Lullaby
- The Plotters
- The Empire of Glass

- Salvation
- The Man in the Velvet Mask

Second Doctor Stories
- Invasion of the Cat-People
- The Murder Game
- The Roundheads
- Dreams of Empire
- Twilight of the Gods
- The Dark Path
- The Final Sanction
- The Menagerie

Third Doctor Stories
- The Eye of the Giant
- The Scales of Injustice
- The Devil Goblins from Neptune
- Sidebar: Songs from The Devil Goblins of Neptune
- The Wages of Sin
- Dancing the Code
- Speed of Flight
- Catastrophea
- The Paradise of Death
- The Ghosts of N-Space

Fourth Doctor Stories
- A Device of Death
- Managra
- Evolution
- System Shock
- Millennium Shock
- Last Man Running
- Eye of Heaven
- The Shadow of Weng-Chiang
- The Romance of Crime
- The English Way of Death
- The Well-Mannered War

Fifth Doctor Stories
- Cold Fusion
- The Sands of Time
- Zeta Major
- Goth Opera
- The Crystal Bucephalus

- Deep Blue
- Lords of the Storm
- The Ultimate Treasure

Sixth Doctor Stories

- Burning Heart
- Players
- State of Change
- The Nightmare Fair
- The Ultimate Evil
- Mission to Magnus
- Time of Your Life
- Killing Ground
- Mission: Impractical
- Business Unusual
- Millennial Rites

Seventh Doctor Stories

- The Hollow Men
- Sidebar: Songs from The Hollow Men
- Illegal Alien
- Matrix
- Storm Harvest
- Timewyrm: Genesys
- Timewyrm: Exodus
- Timewyrm: Apocalypse
- Timewyrm: Revelation
- Cat's Cradle: Time's Crucible
- Cat's Cradle: Warhead
- Cat's Cradle: Witch Mark
- Nightshade
- Love and War
- Transit
- The Highest Science
- The Pit
- Deceit
- Lucifer Rising
- White Darkness
- Shadowmind
- Birthright
- Iceberg
- Blood Heat

The Dimension Riders
The Left-Handed Hummingbird
Conundrum
No Future
Tragedy Day
Legacy
Theatre of War
All-Consuming Fire
Blood Harvest
Strange England
First Frontier
St. Anthony's Fire
Falls the Shadow
Parasite
Warlock
Set Piece
Infinite Requiem
Sanctuary
Human Nature
Original Sin
Sky Pirates!
Zamper
Toy Soldiers
Head Games
The Also People
Shakedown
Just War
Warchild
SLEEPY
Death and Diplomacy
Sidebar: Shug Speaks
Happy Endings
GodEngine
Christmas on a Rational Planet
Sidebar: Eighth Man Bound
Return of the Living Dad
The Death of Art
Damaged Goods
So Vile a Sin
Bad Therapy

Eternity Weeps
The Room With No Doors
Lungbarrow
Sidebar: The Other
Sidebar: The Gallifrey Doctor
Eighth Doctor Stories
The Dying Days
The Eight Doctors
Vampire Science
The Bodysnatchers
Genocide
War of the Daleks
Sidebar: Dalek Continuity Changes
Alien Bodies
Kursaal
Option Lock
Longest Day
Legacy of the Daleks
Dreamstone Moon
Seeing I
Placebo Effect
Vanderdeken's Children
The Scarlet Empress
The Janus Conjunction
Beltempest
The Face-Eater
The Taint
Demontage
Revolution Man
Dominion
Unnatural History
Autumn Mist
Interference (Books One and Two)
Sidebar: IM Foreman
Sidebar: The Universe in a Bottle
Additional Sidebars
Top Five Historicals
Top Ten Dramatic Moments
Top Ten Comedy Moments
Top Ten Recurring Cast

- Top Ten Gory Moments
- Top Ten Books for Newcomers
- Top Ten Companion Tortures
- Top Ten Companion Triumphs
- Top Ten Things We Wish Hadn't Happened
- Top Ten Doctor Enemies
- Top Ten Doctor Triumphs
- Top Ten Doctor Defeats
- Top Ten Doctor Atrocities
- Top Five Short Stories
- Short Stories (highlights)
- Perfect Timing
- The Best Novels
- The Case for Ambition

Other Ebooks Available from Mad Norwegian Press

- The Geek Girl Chronicles
- Essay book by Catherynne M. Valente
- Doctor Who-related essay collections and critique books
- Sci-Fi Reference Guides and Critique Books
- Faction Paradox novels

About the Author